This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

**Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

**About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

- 15n 61143

HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY

FROM THE FUND OF
CHARLES MINOT
CLASS OF 1828

W. E. Adams

*Photograph by Robert Barrass.*] [*Rembrandt Studio, Newcastle-on-Tyne.*

# MEN OF MARK

# 'TWIXT

# TYNE AND TWEED.

By RICHARD WELFORD,

AUTHOR OF "A HISTORY OF THE PARISH OF GOSFORTH"; "ST. NICHOLAS' CHURCH, NEWCASTLE, ITS MONUMENTS, ETC."; "PICTURES OF TYNESIDE SIXTY YEARS AGO"; "CHRONOLOGICAL HISTORY OF NEWCASTLE AND GATESHEAD," ETC., ETC.

*IN THREE VOLUMES.*

VOL. II.

LONDON:
WALTER SCOTT, LTD., PATERNOSTER SQUARE,
AND NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE.
1895.

Per 6114.3

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
MINOT FUND
Nov 23, 1928

PRINTED BY WALTER SCOTT, LIMITED,
FELLING, NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE.

# CONTENTS.


| | PAGE |
|---|---|
| THOMAS, LORD DACRE | 1 |
| GRACE DARLING | 7 |
| W. N. DARNELL | 13 |
| ROBERT DAVELL | 18 |
| SIR ALEXANDER DAVISON | 21 |
| RICHARD DAWES | 26 |
| HENRY DAWSON | 31 |
| SIR RALPH DELAVAL (1) | 37 |
| SIR RALPH DELAVAL (2) | 44 |
| FRANCIS BLAKE DELAVAL | 48 |
| SIR FRANCIS BLAKE DELAVAL | 49 |
| JOHN, LORD DELAVAL | 55 |
| THOMAS DELAVAL | 60 |
| EDWARD HUSSEY DELAVAL | 61 |
| JAMES, EARL OF DERWENTWATER | 64 |
| WILLIAM DICKSON | 76 |
| JOHN DIXON | 80 |
| JOHN DOBSON | 81 |
| THOMAS DOBSON | 84 |
| STEPHEN DOCKWRAY | 88 |

PAGE

WILLIAM DODD . . . . . 91

RALPH DODDS . . . . . 94

ARMORER DONKIN . . . . . 97

SAMUEL DONKIN . . . . . 104

THOMAS DOUBLEDAY . . . . . 109

ROBERT DOUBLEDAY . . . . . 120

MATTHEW DUANE . . . . . 122

JOHANNES DUNS SCOTUS . . . . . 126

WILLIAM DURANT . . . . . 130

JEFFREY EKINS . . . . . 138

THOMAS ELLIOTT . . . . . 141

JAMES ELLIS . . . . . 143

CUTHBERT ELLISON (1) . . . . . 145

CUTHBERT ELLISON (2) . . . . . 148

CUTHBERT ELLISON (3) . . . . . 150

JOHN ELLISON . . . . . 152

JOSEPH ELLISON . . . . . 156

NATHANIEL ELLISON . . . . . 160

NATHANIEL ELLISON . . . . . 164

NATHANIEL ELLISON . . . . . 165

ROBERT ELLISON . . . . . 167

WILLIAM AND ELIZABETH ELSTOB . . . . . 172

RICHARD EMELDON . . . . . 180

JAMES EVERETT . . . . . 184

CHRISTOPHER FAWCETT . . . . . 191

GEORGE FENWICK . . . . . 197

SIR JOHN FENWICK (1) . . . . . 203

PAGE

SIR JOHN FENWICK (2) . . . . . 208

JOHN FENWICK . . . . . 215

JOHN FENWICK . . . . . 220

SIR JOHN FIFE . . . . . 226

GEORGE, FRANCIS, AND JOSEPH FORSTER . . . . . 235

JOHN FORSTER . . . . . 243

JONATHAN LANGSTAFF FORSTER . . . . . 248

THOMAS FORSTER . . . . . 254

WESTGARTH FORSTER . . . . . 260

RALPH GARDINER . . . . . 266

WILLIAM GARRET . . . . . 271

THE GIBSONS OF HEXHAM, ETC. . . . . 277

THOMAS GIBSON . . . . . 283

WILLIAM SIDNEY GIBSON . . . . . 286

GEORGE GIBSONE . . . . . 292

ROBERT GILCHRIST . . . . . 295

THOMAS GILLOW . . . . . 297

RICHARD GILPIN . . . . . 302

EDWARD GLYNN . . . . . 309

JOSEPH GLYNN . . . . . 316

SIR DANIEL GOOCH . . . . . 319

RICHARD GRAINGER . . . . . 321

JOHN AND BENJAMIN GREEN . . . . . 326

THOMAS MICHAEL GREENHOW . . . . . 330

SIR LEONARD GREENWELL . . . . . 337

ANCIENT NORTHUMBRIAN GREYS . . . . . 338

CHARLES, EARL GREY . . . . . 343

PAGE

FRANCIS GRAY . . . . . 349

GEORGE GREY . . . . . 352

SIR GEORGE GREY (1) . . . . . 357

SIR GEORGE GREY (2) . . . . . 358

GILBERT AND GEORGE GRAY . . . . . 364

HENRY GREY . . . . . 371

JOHN GREY . . . . . 376

GREYS OF BACKWORTH . . . . . 380

RICHARD GREY . . . . . 384

ROBERT GREY . . . . . 386

WILLIAM GRAY . . . . . 390

GEORGE GRIEVE . . . . . 396

TIMOTHY HACKWORTH . . . . . 403

WILLIAM ANTHONY HAILS . . . . . 410

CHRISTOPHER AND ROBERT HALL . . . . . 416

GEORGE HALL . . . . . 419

THOMAS YOUNG HALL . . . . . 421

SAMUEL HAMMOND . . . . . 426

EDMUND HANNAY . . . . . 432

ALBANY HANCOCK . . . . . 436

JOHN HANCOCK . . . . . 440

JONATHAN HARLE . . . . . 444

WILLIAM LOCKEY HARLE . . . . . 449

GEORGE HARRIS . . . . . 452

ROBERT HARRISON . . . . . 457

WILLIAM HARVEY . . . . . 461

THOMAS HASWELL . . . . . 466

PAGE

SIR ARTHUR HAZLERIGG . . . . . 473

JOHN HEADLAM . . . . . 482

THOMAS EMERSON HEADLAM (1) . . . . . 484

THOMAS EMERSON HEADLAM (2) . . . . . 489

GEORGE WHITFIELD HEARN . . . . . 492

ROBERT HEBBORN . . . . . 493

HUGH OF HECHAM . . . . . 496

ANTHONY HEDLEY . . . . . 498

THOMAS HEDLEY . . . . . 503

WILLIAM HEDLEY . . . . . 506

WILLIAM HEWATSON, OR HEWSON . . . . . 511

WILLIAM CHAPMAN HEWITSON . . . . . 517

JOHN HODGSON HINDE . . . . . 522

ROBERT HINDMARSH . . . . . 528

JOHN HODGSON . . . . . 533

JAMES, THOMAS, AND SOLOMON HODGSON . . . . . 543

RICHARD WELLINGTON HODGSON . . . . . 555

RICHARD HOLDSWORTH . . . . . 558

ANTHONY HOOD . . . . . 562

JOHN LIONEL HOOD . . . . . 567

JOHN CLARKE HOUSTON . . . . . 572

THOMAS HOUSTON . . . . . 575

BLYTHE HURST . . . . . 578

WILLIAM HUTCHINSON . . . . . 582

CHARLES HUTTON . . . . . 586

WILLIAM INGHAM . . . . . 593

THOMAS IONS . . . . . 599

PAGE

ARCHIBALD JACK . . . . . 606

JOHN JACKSON . . . . . 610

THOMAS JACKSON . . . . . 615

WILLIAM JACKSON . . . . . 619

SIR RALPH JENISON . . . . . 624

ROBERT JENISON . . . . . 629

WILLIAM JENISON . . . . . 635

ROBERT JOHNSON . . . . . 639

GEORGE JOHNSTON . . . . . 641

THE BROTHERS JOICEY . . . . . 645

# Men of Mark 'twixt Tyne & Tweed.

## Thomas, Lord Dacre,

"LORD DACRE OF THE NORTH."

"There was at that time [*temp.* Henry VII.] a very considerable and ancient family at Dacre, in Cumberland, of the name of Dacre; who to their paternal inheritance had received a large addition by marriage of the heiress of Multon, whose ancestor had married the heiress of Vaux (de Vallibus of Gilsland), and was descended from a daughter and co-heir of Morvil, whose ancestor had married the heiress Engain, who married the heiress of Trivers, who married a sister of Ranulph de Meschiens, to whom William the Conqueror gave Cumberland. Of this family, Thomas Lord Dacre of Gilsland married Elizabeth, baroness of Graystock and Wemm, in the 22nd Hen. 7, in which year she had special livery of her lands. He was son of Humphrey de Dacre, who succeeded to the Gilsland and Graystock estates as heir-male of the family by intail, whilst the paternal estate of Dacre descended by a female heir to the lords Dacre of the south."—NICOLSON AND BURN'S "HISTORY OF CUMBERLAND."

IN the reign of Henry VII., Thomas, ninth Baron Dacre, whose lineage is briefly traced in the preceding paragraph, was one of the keepers of the peace upon the Marches, and a trusted servant of the king in various treaties and truces with Scotland, as his father, Humphrey, Lord Dacre, had been before him. "He imitated the chivalrous example which his ancestor, Ralph, had set him a hundred and seventy years before," writes Jefferson ("Antiquities of Leath Ward"), "in carrying off in the night-time from Brougham Castle, Elizabeth of Greystoke, the heiress of his superior lord, and who, as the king's ward, was then in the custody of Henry Clifford, Earl of Cumberland, who probably himself intended to marry her." We meet with him first in Border history as Sir Thomas Dacre, deputy-warden of the West Marches under his father, in 1494. Bishop Fox, then newly translated to the see of Durham, was commissioned by the king in that year to proceed with three others to Coldstream, to meet an equal number of Scottish representatives,

in order, if possible, to conclude a perpetual peace between the two kingdoms by the marriage of Henry's daughter, the Princess Margaret, with James IV. of Scotland, and to settle reparations due for mutual damages. Sir Thomas Dacre was to have been one of the Bishop's colleagues on this important mission, but, before arrangements could be made for a conference, the impostor Perkin Warbeck had obtained a footing at the Scottish Court, and prevailed upon James to lead an army into Northumberland in support of his claim to the English throne. Five years of truce and truculence followed, and then the marriage proposals were renewed by the King of Scots himself. In the protracted negotiations which ensued Dacre had no leading share—they were undertaken and brought to a happy issue by lords of high degree—but he was one of the commissioners appointed to take delivery of the lordships and manors assigned for securing the princess's jointure, and played his part in the gorgeous pageant which accompanied her journey to the wedding. While she stayed in Newcastle "cam the lord Dacre of the North, accompanyd of many gentylmen honestly apoynted, and hys folks arayd in his liveray," who joined the procession and went with it through Morpeth, Alnwick, and Berwick to Lamberton, where James, with a gay and numerous court, was ready to receive her.

After the accession of Henry VIII., in immediate prospect of an outbreak between England and France, Lord Dacre and another were sent as ambassadors to Scotland to secure the neutrality of King James. They did not succeed. The Scottish monarch had many grievances and many complaints to make of the conduct of his brother-in-law, and no sooner had the latter passed over to Calais than he fitted out a fleet to aid the French, and made preparations to invade England. The Earl of Surrey was despatched to the North with 26,000 men to repel his advance, and, arriving in Newcastle on the 30th of August, 1513, was joined by Lord Dacre and other local men of rank with their tenants and retainers. Then came the battle of Flodden, and in that terrible encounter Lord Dacre acted with great bravery and achieved a great success. He commanded a body of reserve, consisting of 1,500 horse, "the bowmen of Kendal, wearing milk-white coates and red crosses, and the men of Keswick, Stanimore, Alston Moor, and Gilsland, chiefly bearing large bills," with whom, at a critical moment in the fight, he charged the division commanded by King James in the rear, and

turned the fortunes of the day. It was he also who, next morning, discovered the body of James among the slain. Writing to the Privy Council after the battle, he states that the Scots loved him "worse than any man in England," because he found their King slain in the field, "and thereof advertised my lord of Norfolk by my writing, and therefore brought the corpse to Berwick and delivered it to my said lord." He adds that he had burned and destroyed, from the beginning of the war, six times more than the Scots; in the East Marches land for 550 ploughs, and upwards of 42 miles, all laid waste and no corn sown, while in the West Marches he had destroyed thirty-four townships.

Lord Dacre, at this time, resided chiefly in Northumberland, occupying, as occasion served, his castles of Morpeth and Harbottle, and keeping a watchful eye upon events across the Border. While so employed, he was able to be of service to the widowed Queen of Scotland, whose position in the sister kingdom had become critical and perilous. In less than a year after her husband's death she had secretly married the Earl of Angus, and, being deprived of sovereign power upon the discovery thereof, she prepared to fly to her brother the king of England for protection. Lord Dacre received her in September, 1515, at his castle of Harbottle, where, within a few days after her hasty arrival, she was prematurely delivered of a child, known in after times as Margaret Douglas, mother of Lord Darnley, the unfortunate husband of Mary Queen of Scots. Dacre sent the news of her confinement to the brother of his royal guest, Henry VIII., and consulted him as to her removal, "as soon as she conveniently may, after her grace have sought the Church for her thanksgiving." By easy stages, resting at Cartington and Brinkburn, the Queen was taken to Morpeth Castle, which Dacre had "grandly decked" for her reception, and there remained till the beginning of April, when, accompanied by her host, she set forward on her journey to the English Court. Arriving in Newcastle on the 8th of the month, she was received by the Mayor, Roger Dent, and the following day crossed the Tyne on her way to London. Just before her departure, Dacre had been appointed one of three commissioners to renew the truce with Scotland, and, after taking leave of his royal guest, he met the Scottish representatives in London, and thus fulfilled his mission.

For the next three or four years Scotland was divided into two or more factions, each striving hard for the mastery, and disturbing the

peace of the country by fierce quarrels and lawless deeds of violence. In 1520, the truce then expiring had almost reached its term before the Government had taken steps to obtain its renewal. Thereupon, Ridpath tells us, the youthful King of Scotland wrote to Lord Dacre, "warden of all the English Marches," residing at Harbottle Castle, informing him that the great domestic affairs of the nation made it impracticable to send ambassadors to England, and entreating him to obtain a truce for a year, promising meanwhile to send an embassy to treat for a peace more enduring. Lord Dacre had authority to conclude short truces, as exigencies might require, and having reminded the Scottish Regency of his power in that respect, the Abbot of Kelso was appointed to meet him in the Middle March, and there a truce was concluded to last till January. In January he had a conference with three Scottish Commissioners, and prolonged the truce till June. Still the embassy was not sent to the English Court, and the proceedings dragged on till the return of the Duke of Albany to Scotland and the subversion of the Regency.

When Albany, seated firmly in power, sought to protract the negotiations by another temporary bargain, King Henry professed great indignation. He demanded the duke's removal as the price of his friendship, and, this being refused, Lord Dacre crossed the Border in February, 1522, and proclaimed that if the Scots did not agree to his sovereign's conditions before the first of March they might stand to their peril. The Scots would not agree to them, and active preparations for war were made on both sides. At the last moment the Scottish nobles refused to accompany Albany on an expedition into England, and he was compelled to negotiate with Lord Dacre for a suspension of hostilities. More conferences were held, but nothing definite came of them, and, in the spring of 1523, the Earl of Surrey led another army through Northumberland to punish the obstinate and defiant Scots. He ravaged the Merse and Teviotdale, and, while he burnt Jedburgh, Dacre took Farnihurst Castle. More short truces, tedious to enumerate, ensued, and it was not until the autumn of 1525 that Dacre and five other English commissioners were able to conclude a definite treaty of peace with Scotland to last for three years.

Among the State Papers of the period are interesting letters, written by "Lord Dacre of the North," to King Henry and the Privy Council, intermingled with favourable reports from others of his bravery in the field and his skill in conference. Extracts from

his ledgers and correspondence, while residing at Morpeth Castle, are printed in Hodgson's "History of Northumberland," and in Hearne's "Chronicles of Otterbourne and Whethamstede." From them we obtain valuable information of the state and manners of the country, of the perpetual worry and disquiet in which Scottish troubles kept the whole of the Borderland, from Tweedmouth to Solway Firth, and of the part which he sustained in its improvement and pacification. The following excerpt (modernised) is from a characteristic letter of his to Cardinal Wolsey, dated Morpeth, May 20th, 1524:—"And whereas in your several letters to me sent, your grace exhorteth me to see for the good order and rule of the inhabitants of Tindale, with correction of them and others, malefactors of the East and Middle Marches. My lord, your grace shall perfectly know that, since my last letter sent unto your grace, I have so endeavoured me that I have apprehended three of the most principal 'hedesmen' and captains of the same Tindale, that is to say, William Charlton of Bellingham, Roger Charlton, his brother, and Thomas Charlton of Careteth, by whom all the inhabitants were governed, led, and ready at their commandment. And also I have taken pledges of the reversion of all the other surnames of Tyndale, and them have in sure ward, for the good order and rule of the country. The foresaid William Charlton, what time as my lord of Surrey sent Sir Ralph Fenwick, bailiff of Tyndale, with fourscore horse for the apprehending of William Ridley in Tynedale, the same William Charlton, having two hundred of the said inhabitants retained bound and bodily sworn upon a book to him, alway to take his part, hearing of the said Sir Ralph being in the dale, assembled a part of them diligently, and freshly set upon the said Sir Ralph. And not only put him from his purpose of the attacking of the said Ridley, but also chased the said Sir Ralph out of Tindale to his reproach, for the which cause, and insurrection made, seeing that the said William could not be apprehended in the time of my lord of Surrey being there, and that I have him in sure custody, I think it good, under correction of your grace, and upon your pleasure herein to be known, he be justified here according to his demerit, for the fearful ensample of all other malefactors pretending to be 'hede' hereafter.

"And as unto Roger Charlton and Thomas Charlton, who amongst sixty others of Tyndale that I took at the Bridal of Colwell, in Northumberland, and had them 'reyned' in Newcastle afore Maister Brudnell and Fitzherbert, then justices of assize, whereof a

part were put to execution. And for most part of the residue of all others of the said inhabitants of Tyndale, the foresaid Roger and Thomas undertook should be of good demeanour from thenceforth, and should at all times requisite appear at sessions and assizes, whereupon they found sureties to the same judges by recognisance. And because they have forfected their lands, which by their powers mought have saved the same, and corrected and staunched their neighbours malefactors, for whom they undertook, and would not bring in in time. And also that they be principal receptors of all their friends and neighbours, stealers and common reavers of true men's goods. And over that had to their advantage a part of every goods stolen, and rest purposely to bear and maintain the same thieves from correction. In likewise I think, under your better advice, that they two appear before the king's justices, at the assizes to be holden within this shire of Northumberland in the month of August next coming. And by the same justices judged. And thereupon they, with others that I have, and ere the said Assizes come, God willing, shall have in good number, to be executed, seeing that neither for bond nor promise they would never be of good demeanour, or obedient unto our sovereign lord's laws. The premisses performed, and the said pledges that I have else in hold, be in sure keeping, without they find sufficient landed men bound for their sureties, I trust with God's leave the country shall be brought in such order as none of the king's subjects shall have cause of complaint hereafter, but that their moveable goods and cattle may peaceably go on their pastures surely, without stealing, or reiving of any English man from henceforth, like as they do now, blessed be God."

Lord Dacre died in 1525, shortly after he had assisted to secure the three years' peace with Scotland, and was buried beside his wife (she died in 1516) under a rich altar-tomb in the south aisle of the Choir of Lanercost. His eldest son, William—known in history as William Lord Dacre, of Gilsland and Greystoke—succeeded him in the title and great part of the estates. Lord William, like his father, became the terror of the Scots and outlaws on the Borders. He married Elizabeth, daughter of the fourth Earl of Shrewsbury, and took a leading part in the military and political movements of his time. Several of his letters upon Border life and warfare are printed in Nicolson and Burn's "History of Westmorland and Cumberland," and others are summarised in the Calendars of State Papers.

# Grace Darling,

THE HEROINE OF THE FARNE ISLANDS.

"Pious and pure, modest, and yet so brave,
Though young so wise, though weak so resolute."
—WORDSWORTH.

GRACE HORSLEY DARLING had lived to the full age of womanhood before she performed that act of bravery which has made her name famous throughout all lands. Born at Bamborough on the 24th November, 1815, the seventh child of William Darling, lighthouse-keeper, by his marriage with Thomasin, daughter of Job and Grace Horsley of Bamborough, she spent the greater part of her life on the rocky islands of the Farnes off the coast of Northumberland. William Darling succeeded his father as keeper of the Brownsman Lighthouse on the outer Farne in September 1815, a few weeks before the birth of his heroic daughter, and there he remained till the completion of a new lighthouse on the Longstone island, in 1826, gave him and his family a new home. At the Longstone Grace Darling was brought up from the age of eleven, making but limited acquaintance with the great human world ashore which hereafter was to resound with her praises.

On the evening of the 6th of September, 1838, a steamship named the *Forfarshire*, Captain Humble, left Hull, bound for Dundee with a general cargo and between sixty and seventy passengers. As she proceeded along the coast she encountered severe weather from the north, which, increasing in violence, induced the captain to try and make the harbour of Berwick for shelter. Failing in this effort he was compelled to put back southward and wait for the dawn. When morning broke he found himself close upon the Harker's Rock at the Farnes, and immediately thereafter the vessel struck broadside on the rock. At the same time a heavy sea broke over her, causing her to part nearly amidships. Forty-three of the passengers were drowned in a few minutes; nine of the crew and one passenger escaped in the jolly-boat, and were picked up by a Montrose brig; the rest managed to scramble on to the rock where they awaited deliverance.

Grace Darling, peering through the misty dawn from the light-

house window, saw that the tempest had left a wreck on the Harker's. She had been helping her father to protect their outside belongings before the tide should gain its highest point at 4.13 A.M., and it was about a quarter before five that she saw the remains of the wreck. She and her father tried to discover if there were any survivors, but, such was the force and volume of sea dashing over the vessel, that it was not until the tide had receded, about seven o'clock, that they were able, through their telescope, to discern living forms clinging to the rock. William Darling's experience enabled him to judge that although it might be possible to get a boat safely to the rock, yet no power such as he could command would enable him to bring it back. For he was not a very powerful man himself, and Grace was but a slender girl, under five feet three in height, and although not of weakly, was by no means of a robust, constitution. After consultation with her mother she determined to assist her father in an effort to take a boat to the place where the half-drowned people were clinging, trusting that some amongst them would be able to help in bringing the boat back to the Longstone. And so father and daughter set out on their desperate errand. The mother helped to launch the coble into the heaving waves, and then ascending the lighthouse to watch their progress, failed to see them, and swooned away. Meanwhile the middle-aged father and the brave young daughter, pulling with all their strength, gallantly propelled their unwieldy boat through the seething waters, now on the top of a high wave, and now in the trough of the sea, till they had covered the mile that, by the course they were obliged to take, intervened between the lighthouse and the rock. As they neared the scene of disaster they saw that eight men and a woman were alive—too many for the boat to rescue at once. William Darling, resigning his oar to Grace, leaped ashore to prevent the survivors jumping in and swamping his craft, and then selecting four of the men and the woman began his return journey. As soon as he had landed Grace and the woman and two of the men, he persuaded the other two to join him in a second trip to the rock, and thus the whole nine—five sailors and four steerage passengers—were saved from a watery grave.

Neither Grace Darling nor her father thought much of the services they had rendered. In his "Journal" William Darling entered the incident in the following simple and unaffected language:—"The steam-boat *Forfarshire*, 400 tons, sailed from Hull for Dundee on

the 6th at midnight. When off Berwick her boilers became so leaky as to render the engine useless. Captain Humble then bore away for Shields, blowing strong gale, north, with thick fog. About 4 A.M. on the 7th the vessel struck the west point of Harker's Rock, and in fifteen minutes broke through by the paddle axle, and drowned forty-three persons; nine having previously left in their own boat and were picked up by a Montrose vessel, and carried to Shields, and nine others held on by the wreck and were rescued by the Darlings. The cargo consisted of superfine cloths, hardware, soap, boiler plate, and spinning gear."

The public were made acquainted with the disaster, and with the bravery of Grace Darling, through the medium of the *Newcastle Chronicle* of the following week. Thus wrote the "special reporter," sent to investigate the circumstances on the spot:—"A number of the deck passengers and some of the crew were left with the wreck of the forepart of the vessel upon the Harker's rock. Their cries of distress reached the tower of the farthest Farne lighthouse, and Miss Grace Horsley Darling awakened her father. . . . At length he descried from some movement that there were living beings on the wreck, when this humane and truly heroic man and equally heroic daughter immediately perilled their lives in a small open coble in a tempestuous sea to save the lives of their fellow-creatures. They succeeded in saving from destruction five of the crew and four of the deck passengers. . . . They were carried to the Longstone Light-house, and for three days and three nights did this meritorious young woman, who had been the saviour of their lives, watch over and administer to the wants of the sufferers, some of whom were severely injured. Those unacquainted with the tempestuous state of the Farne Islands during a storm will be unable to appreciate the praiseworthy deed of daring performed by Mr. Darling and his daughter, Miss Grace Horsley Darling. By a dangerous and desperate effort, her father was landed on the rock, and the frail coble, to preserve it from being dashed to pieces, was rapidly rowed back among the awful abyss of waters, and kept afloat by the skilfulness and dexterity of this noble-minded young woman. . . . This perilous achievement stands unexampled in the feats of female fortitude. From her isolated abode, where there was no solicitation or prospect of reward to stimulate, impelled alone by the pure promptings of humanity, she made her way through desolation and impending destruction, appalling to the stoutest hearts, to save

the lives of her fellow-beings. One of the old seamen was moved to tears when he saw a young female of slender appearance perilling her life for their preservation."

This narrative, with its inaccuracies and exaggerations, was copied into all the newspapers and called forth a universal expression of admiration for the Northumbrian maiden whose heroism it described. From the Queen on the throne to the poorest of the poor, Grace Darling received greeting and thanks in the name of their common humanity. Meanwhile the Trinity House, desiring to ascertain the real facts of the case, addressed a letter of inquiry to William Darling, and received the following reply:—"In answer to your request of 29th ult. have to state that on the morning of the 7th September, it blowing gale with rain from the north, my daughter and me being both on the alert before high water, securing things out of doors, one quarter before five my Daughter observed a vessel on the Harker's rock; but owing to the darkness, and spray going over her, could not observe any person on the wreck, although the glass was incessantly applied, until near 7 o'clock, when the tide being fallen, we observed three or four men upon the rock: we agreed that if we could get to them some of them would be able to assist us back, without which we could not return; and having no idea of a possibility of a boat coming from North Sunderland, we immediately launched our boat, and was enabled to gain the rock, where we found eight men and one woman, which I judged rather too many to take at once in the state of weather, therefore took the woman and four men to the Longstone. Two of them returned with me, and succeeded in bringing the remainder, in all nine persons, safely to the Longstone about 9 o'clock. Afterwards the boat from North Sunderland arrived and found three lifeless bodies —viz., one man and two children, which they carried to the high rock and came to the Longstone with great difficulty and had to lodge in the Barracks two days and nights, with scant provisions, no beds, nor clothes to change them with."

Upon receipt of this letter the Trinity House awarded to William Darling a "free bounty" of £10. The Royal Humane Society gave to father and daughter a gold medal each; the Newcastle Association for the Preservation of Life from Shipwreck gave medals also, and all four were enclosed in one box, with presents of his own, and sent to the Longstone by the Duke of Northumberland. Other medals were sent by the Royal and National Institution for Preserva-

tion of Life from Shipwreck, and by the Edinburgh and Leith, and the Glasgow Humane Societies. Lloyd's committee voted a gift of £20 to Grace, and Sir Francis and Miss Angela Burdett Coutts sent her a special present of £30. The Treasury through its Secretary sent a letter addressed to the heroine herself, in which it was stated that "the attention of Her Majesty having been called to the intrepidity displayed by you, by which under Divine Providence the lives of nine persons were saved under circumstances of great peril and difficulty, Her Majesty has signified Her Pleasure that as a Mark of Her Gracious approbation of your conduct on the occasion the sum of Fifty Pounds should be paid to you." Other tributes flowed in till the lighthouse on the Longstone became a repository for all sorts of tokens of good-will and admiration. Still further to testify public interest in her welfare subscriptions were invited by the Mayor of Newcastle, the Ladies of Edinburgh, etc., and eventually a sum of £750 was invested in Government Stock for the benefit of Grace, and £270 for that of her father.

Grace Darling had suddenly become the most famous woman of her time. Artists hastened to the Longstone that they might illustrate their genius in the light of her heroism; poets seized on a theme so sublime and emotional; the Farne Islands became the great object of interest to travellers by sea, and the resort of curiosity-hunters from all parts of the kingdom. Yet the heroine remained unspoiled—the same quiet, retiring, unsophisticated maiden that she had ever been. To a lady who had lost a friend in the *Forfarshire* she wrote a letter, which not only gives an insight to her character, but shows in a simple and unpretentious way the round of duty which she continued to perform long after her fame had gone out to the ends of the earth. It is dated from the Lighthouse on the 25th of January, 1839:—

"You requested me to let you know whether I felt pleasure to be out in a rough sea, which I can assure you there is none, I think, to any person in their sober senses. I have seven apartments in the house to keep in a state fit to be inspected every day by Gentlemen, so that my hands are kept very busy that I never think the time long, but often too short. I have often had occasion to be in the boat with my father for want of better help, but never at the saving of any lives before, and I pray God may never be again. Since the loss of the *Forfarshire* the Trinity Masters have appointed my brother, William Brooks, to assist my father, but as our boat

requires three persons to work her in bad weather I may be again needed. I have been brought up on the Islands, learned to read and write by my parents, and knit, spin, and soe, or sew; indeed I have no time to spare, but when I have been on the Main I am quite surprised to see people generally after what they call getting their day's work done, they sit down, some to play at cards, which I do not understand, perhaps as well, for my father says they are some of the Devil's books; others to read romances, novels, and plays, which are books my father will not allow a place in our house, for he says they are throwing away time. Our books are principally Divinity; the authors Bishop Wilson, Willison, Boston, Milton, Hervey, Bunyan, Ambrose, Newton, Marshall, Cowper, Flavel, Baxter, and others, with a good many of the Religious Tract Society's publications; and Geography, History, Voyages and Travels, with Maps, so that Father can show us any part of the World, and give us a description of the people, manners, and customs, so it is our own blame if we be ignorant of either what is done or what ought to be done. You will perhaps be aware that our duty as Light-keepers requires one person to be in attendance at this season almost every hour out of the twenty-four, Sunday to Saturday."

Down to the spring of the year 1842, the heroine of the Longstone enjoyed her usual health. She was then on a visit to the Lighthouse on Coquet Island, which, but recently built, was occupied by her eldest brother. Upon her return to the Longstone she sickened, and in a short time it became evident that she was falling into a rapid consumption. Removed to Wooler for change of air, she made no favourable progress; taken to Alnwick to be tended by a medical man, recommended by the Duke of Northumberland, who had made himself her guardian, she showed no permanent symptoms of improvement. Her next removal was to a sister's house at Bamborough, and there, on the 20th of October, 1842, only a week after her removal from Alnwick, she quietly passed away.

The reader who desires to know more of Grace Darling, her father, her relatives, and friends, may read a little book published by her youngest sister, Thomasin, in 1880, entitled "Grace Darling: Her True Story. From unpublished Papers in possession of her Family;" and "The Journal of William Darling, Grace Darling's Father. From 1795 to 1860."

# W. N. Darnell,

RECTOR OF STANHOPE.

WEST SHEELE, or West Broomshields, in the parish of Lanchester, was for many generations the inheritance of the family of Darnell. William Darnell occurs as of "Wester Broomsheles" in 1567, and it is probable that the family were in possession of the estate much earlier, for Surtees, in his "History of Durham," describes them as being "indigenous as the Greenwells." One of their number, also named William, is mentioned by the same author as the maker of a curious testamentary provision, illustrating an obsolete wedding custom which Brand, in the "Popular Antiquities," explains at some length. The will is dated 1674, and the testator directed that his daughter Elizabeth should have, besides her marriage-portion, a "Bride-wain—that is, a waggon loaded with articles of use and luxury, inside and outside gear and plenishing" for the young couple, "to whom the wain itself, and the horses and oxen which drew it, were appropriated." From this interesting will-maker, through three descendants bearing his Christian name, came the Darnells of Newcastle.

A pedigree of the family, recorded at the College of Arms in 1832, commences with the will-maker's grandson, William Darnell of West Sheele, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Shuttleworth, of Elvet, in the city of Durham, and died in 1779, aged 86. Two of the sons of this marriage came to Newcastle and entered into business—George, who died unmarried in 1758, and William, who rose to a good position in the town as a merchant. The latter married, in 1763, Frances, daughter of Michael Dawson, of Newcastle, and relict of William Cook, of the same place. Their only son, William Nicholas Darnell, born March 14th, 1776, is the subject of this biography.

W. N. Darnell received his early education in the Grammar School of his native town. He was in his eleventh year when the celebrated master of the school, the Rev. Hugh Moises, retired, so that the greater part of his time would be passed under the direction of the great man's nephew, the Rev. Edward Moises. The Rev. Edward Hussey Adamson, whose admirable notices of eminent men educated

in that famous school are an invaluable storehouse of information to the local biographer, tells us that, at the end of his course in Newcastle, young Mr. Darnell was elected to the Durham Scholarship at Corpus Christi College, Oxford, and in due time became fellow and tutor, graduating B.A. in 1796, M.A. in 1800, and B.D. in 1808, and that among his pupils at college was the Rev. John Keble, author of the "Christian Year," who, in later life, paid him the compliment of dedicating to him a volume of sermons, "in ever grateful memory of helps and warnings received from him in early youth." His abilities as a tutor were, indeed, of a rare order, and he had the faculty of putting them to a good use. A practice which he introduced of delivering evening lectures brought him into prominence among Oxford men, and gave him considerable popularity. Promotion followed. In 1809, Archdeacon Thorp presented him to the Rectory of St. Mary-le-Bow, in the City of Durham; the following year he was appointed one of the preachers at Whitehall, and about the same time the Duke of Northumberland appointed him his chaplain.

Although he attained the patriarchal age of eighty-one, William Darnell did not live to see the further advancement of his son in the sacred calling for which he had trained him. He died April 13th, 1813, and was buried in his parish church of St. Andrew, in Newcastle. Near the entrance to the chancel of that venerable edifice, visitors read upon a mural monument the following tribute of filial affection:—

"In the burial place of this Chapelry lie the remains of William Darnell, merchant adventurer, a man whose strict integrity, sound understanding, and extensive information on commercial subjects, joined to a warm and benevolent heart, secured to him through life the confidence and esteem of numerous friends. Likewise of Frances, his wife, of whom it is not too much to say that she was a pattern of Christian graces to all around her. They lived for more than forty years in bonds of the most tender affection. Their good deeds speak for them on earth; their trust was that, through the merits of their Redeemer, they should not live in vain."

Some time before his decease the elder Darnell had alienated the estate of West Broomshields to the Greenwells, but he died wealthy; and by his will, after making provision for two surviving daughters, he left the bulk of his property to his son. The latter remained in charge of St. Mary-le-Bow till 1815, when he obtained from Bishop Barrington the living of Stockton-on-Tees. Then,

resigning the Durham rectory, and his fellowship of Corpus Christi, he married Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. William Bowe, headmaster of Scorton School, and took up his residence in the Tees-side town.

From this period Mr. Darnell's rise in the Church was rapid, and his preferments were substantial. The year following his marriage Bishop Barrington presented him to the ninth stall in Durham Cathedral, vacant by the translation of the Rev. Henry Phillpotts to the second stall. In 1820, the Dean and Chapter gave him the perpetual curacy of St. Margaret's, Durham, which Mr. Phillpotts, his friend and predecessor, had resigned for the valuable living of Stanhope; the following year the bishop promoted him to the sixth stall, and in 1827 he obtained from the Dean and Chapter the vicarage of Norham-on-Tweed. Nor was this all. By the marriage of his sister Lucy to the Rev. William Munton, son of the Rev. Anthony Munton, curate of St. Andrew's, Newcastle, and his wife Dorothy Stephenson (first cousin to the mother of Lady Eldon), a friendly relationship was established among the Stephensons, Surteeses, Darnells, and Scotts, which tended to his advantage. It brought him under the notice of the all-powerful Lord Chancellor, who, appreciating his merits, bestowed upon him the Crown living of Lastingham, near Pickering, in the North Riding of Yorkshire—"one of the largest parishes, with one of the most ancient and interesting churches in England." He had resigned Stockton upon receiving the appointment to St. Margaret's, but this Yorkshire living he permitted himself to hold along with his Durham preferments.

Between Mr. Darnell and the Rev. Henry Phillpotts an intimate friendship had existed from early youth. They were boys together at Corpus Christi College, and there was a family tie that helped to tighten their bonds, for Mr. Phillpotts had married a niece of Lord Eldon. Upon two occasions, as we have seen, the one succeeded the other in clerical appointments at Durham. And now another and much more important change awaited both. In 1830, Lord Eldon raised Mr. Phillpotts from the rectory of Stanhope to the bishopric of Exeter; and this high promotion enabled him to assist his friend Mr. Darnell. Desirous of retaining a connection with the diocese in which his controversial abilities had brought him fame and honour, Mr. Phillpotts arranged with the ecclesiastical authorities an exchange of preferment. Mr. Darnell resigned into

his hands the sixth stall at Durham, and received in lieu of it the coveted living of Stanhope—one of the richest in the kingdom. To that classic retreat, hallowed by the memories of illustrious predecessors—Bishops Tunstall and Butler, Keene and Thurlow—he removed his family, and there he passed the remainder of his days. A trusteeship of Bishop Crewe's charity, bestowed upon him in 1826, enabled him to exchange occasionally the leafy shades of Stanhope for the bracing breezes of Bamborough Castle, and thus his life was prolonged beyond the usual span. When he was eighty-eight years old, he lost his aged partner, and a twelvemonth later, on the 19th June, 1865, he also expired.

Outliving the friends of his prime, Mr. Darnell had been for over half a century a beneficed clergyman in the diocese of Durham; for thirty-five years rector of its richest living, and for some time a canon of the Cathedral. It was, therefore, fitting and proper that his remains should rest in the Cathedral yard, beside those of Archdeacon Basire, Dean Waddington, the Rev. James Raine, and other dignitaries whose lives and works have helped to make and adorn the history of the sacred pile which overshadows their tombs. An inscribed grave-cover preserves his memory at Durham; a street name perpetuates it in Newcastle.

"Mr. Darnell," writes Mr. Adamson in the little book before quoted, "was an accomplished scholar, a sound Churchman, and able divine, whose judgment and opinion, from his long experience, carried great weight in the diocese; a gentleman of refined taste and feeling, a patron of the fine arts, and himself, indeed, no mean artist." For him is claimed the authorship of the affecting ballad, "The Northern Star," which had been attributed to Mr. Alexander Crighton and others. His daughter, Mrs. Gibson, writing to the *Chronicle* from Warwick-on-Eden, near Carlisle, in 1890, asserts that the ballad was written by her father at Tynemouth, in 1810, "On the Loss of a Vessel called the Northern Star." These verses have had a remarkable popularity. They have been printed over and over again, and twice at least have been set to music:—

"The Northern Star
Sailed over the bar,
Bound to the Baltic Sea;
In the morning grey
She stretch'd away,
'Twas a weary day to me.

For many an hour
In sleet and shower
    By the lighthouse rock I stray,
And watch till dark
For the winged bark
    Of him that is far away.

The Castle's bound
I wander round
    Amidst the grassy graves,
But all I hear
Is the north wind drear,
    And all I see are the waves.

Oh roam not there
Thou mourner fair,
    Nor pour the useless tear;
Thy plaint of woe
Is all below—
    The dead they cannot hear.

The Northern Star
Is set afar,
    Set in the Baltic Sea,
And the waves have spread
The sandy bed
    That holds thy love from thee."

The late Lord Ravensworth, publishing in 1858 a translation of "The Odes of Horace," named Mr. Darnell as a friend from whose critical acumen he had derived advantage and received encouragement. His friend's contributions to literature were, however, chiefly theological. He published, in 1816, a volume containing eighteen sermons; edited, in 1818, an abridgment of Jeremy Taylor's "Life of Christ"; and issued at various times sermons preached on special occasions; "Aurea Verba," an arrangement of the greater part of the Book of Proverbs, under general heads; the "Wisdom of Solomon," with preface and notes; and a classified edition of the Psalter for private devotion. The book by which he is best known is "The Correspondence of Isaac Basire, D.D., Archdeacon of Northumberland, and Prebendary of Durham, in the reigns of Charles I. and Charles II., with a Memoir of his Life." A ballad of 212 lines from his pen, entitled "The King of the Picts and St. Cuthbert," illustrates Dr. Raine's sketch of the saint in his "History of North Durham," while "Lines suggested by the death of Vice-Admiral Lord Colling-

the brethren dispersed, and their property seized to the use of the king.

The Reformation made no alteration in the ecclesiastical status of Dr. Davell. Adapting himself to the changes of ritual, he pursued his course—upward and onward. Retaining his vicarage of Bedlington, the mastership of the Virgin Mary Hospital, Newcastle, and the Archdeaconry of Northumberland, he was appointed prebendary of Holm, in York Cathedral, on the 29th of May, 1541; his name occurs, also, about the same time, as a canon of Exeter, and prebend of the collegiate church of Lanchester. With all these preferments in hand, it is not to be supposed that he could properly discharge the duties appertaining to them. A Royal Commission appointed in February, 1546, to inquire into the condition of colleges, chantries, etc., in Northumberland and Durham, found that the Virgin Mary Hospital was entirely neglected by its well-endowed master. Thus ran the Commissioners' report:—"The hospital of our Lady called West Gate Spital, within the town of Newcastle, was founded, as it is reported, by the inhabitants of the town of Newcastle, to have a master continually resident upon the same, and a chaplain with him to say divine service there, and to keep six beadfolks in the almshouse there, and to lodge all poor and wayfaring people, being destitute of lodging, and to bury such as fortune there to die, at the costs and charges of the said master, and to distribute yearly nine chalders of coals among poor people, etc., which order is not observed at this present. Value according to this survey, £33 15s. . . . and remaineth clear, £29 9s. 4d., which Robert Davell, doctor of the law, now master of the said hospital, taketh and receiveth yearly to his own use, and is not resident upon the same hospital, nor is hospitality there kept, saving one priest, that keepeth the house and orchard, and hath five pounds yearly," etc.

John Leland, the antiquary, travelling through Durham and Northumberland on his "Laboryeuse Journey and Serche for Englandes Antiquitees, geuen of hym as a New Yeares Gyfte to Kynge Henry the viij., in the xxxvij Yeare of his Regne," received from Dr. Davell certain information respecting the neighbourhood of Newcastle, the Roman Wall, and the families of Delaval and Davell. The cautious old traveller could not accept all that his informant communicated, and although he wrote it down carefully in his elaborate manuscripts, he took care to qualify it by the neutralising statement—"As Mr. Dr. Davelle sayith, but sufficiently provid not."

Dr. Davell died in the early part of the year 1558. He had lived through many changes, and held the chief of his preferments to the end. Of him it might be said as of Simon Alleyn, the vicar of Bray—"In the reign of Henry VIII. he was Catholic till the Reformation; in the reign of Edward VI. he was Calvinist; in the reign of Mary he was Papist." If Dr. Davell had not died in the same year as Queen Mary, even the end of the quotation might have been applicable to him—"in the reign of Elizabeth he was Protestant." No matter who governed the realm, or who ruled the Church, he was determined to live and die Archdeacon of Northumberland and Vicar of Bedlington, and he carried out his determination.

## Sir Alexander Davison,

AN OCTOGENARIAN HERO.

HIGH up on the wall in the north aisle of St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, near the north entrance, is a dingy monument, bearing a long Latin inscription, which may be translated thus:—"In memory of Alexander Davison, knight, and Ann, daughter of Ralph Cock, his dearest wife, by whom he had five sons—Thomas Davison, knight; Ralph Davison, of Thornley; Samuel Davison, of Wingate Grange; Joseph, a wise captain (in the defence of this town against the Scotch rebels he fought stoutly, even unto death, and is buried hard by); Edward, a merchant, who died unmarried; also two daughters —Barbara, married first to Ralph Calverley, and then to Thomas Riddell of Fenham, in the county of Northumberland, knight; and Margaret, married to Henry Lambton, knight. This Alexander, at the time when that most treacherous rebellion was in progress, ever faithful to the good king and the royal cause, suffered the loss of his property with great fortitude; and at last, during the siege of this town of Newcastle, while fighting courageously the attacking army of the Scotch rebels (almost eighty years of age) he bravely breathed his last. On the eleventh day of the month of November, in the year from the Incarnation of Our Lord 1644, his eldest son, Thomas Davison, knight, erected this monument."

Alexander Davison, born in Newcastle in 1565, came of a family of respectable skinners and glovers who had long been domiciled in the parish of St. John. He was most likely educated at the Free

Grammar School, apprenticed to a merchant adventurer, and in due time entered on the rolls of the fraternity as a free brother. Nothing certain is known of his early youth and manhood, except that, in 1592, his name appears in the Register of St. John's as a surety at the baptism of Jean, daughter of Thomas Davison, skinner and glover, and again, in 1603, at a christening of a son of the same parents, named after himself, Alexander. On the 28th of August, 1597, he was married at St. Nicholas' Church to Ann, daughter of Ralph Cock, merchant—sister of the better known Ralph Cock who became sheriff, alderman, and mayor of Newcastle, and the father of four handsome and well-dowered daughters. Thenceforward his career, chronologically arranged, ran as follows:—

1611. At Michaelmas, Sir George Selby, "the king's host," was elected Mayor of Newcastle for the third time, and Alexander Davison was appointed Sheriff. The decay of the local hospitals had been under consideration in the early part of the year, and Mr. Davison was one of seven members of the Corporate body appointed to negotiate for letters patent with the object of reorganising these useful institutions upon a wider basis.

1621. In a subsidy roll of this year Mr. Davison is taxed for goods in the parish of St. Nicholas at the same rate as his brother-in-law, William Hall, Henry Chapman (the Mayor), and Alderman Warmouth—indicating that he was a merchant of good position.

1622. A special Court of the Hostmen's Company of Newcastle appointed Mr. Davison one of a committee of seven to regulate the production and sale of coal on the Tyne, and to prevent abuses in the loading of colliers. Thirty-two firms agreed that these seven should load all their coals, and distribute the money received in agreed proportions. To Mr. Davison was entrusted the loading of the coals shipped by himself, 450 tens (keels); Wm. Hall, 450; Lionel Maddison, 300; Robert Hodgson, 600; Thomas Hall, 120; and Mrs. Milborne, 60 tens respectively.

1626. In the summer of this year piratical Dunkirkers, hovering about the North-East Coast, brought the traffic of the Tyne to a standstill. Letters of marque were granted to Mr. Davison, William Hall, Thos. Chapman, and William Gibbins, under authority of which they fitted out the *Alexander* of 240 tons, to act as a convoy for the Newcastle coal fleet, and protect it from foreign rovers. Still further to prevent depredations at sea, the king prepared to fit out ships of war, expressing a belief that "owners of

coal-pits, the hostmen of Newcastle, owners of ships, and merchants, buyers and sellers of Newcastle coal," would be willing to contribute and pay so much a chaldron towards the cost of adequate protection. Of this "freewill offering" (6d. a chaldron) he appointed Mr. Davison collector. At the same time a special contribution was demanded from the seaports and maritime counties to provide means of strengthening the navy. It fell to the lot of Mr. Davison (who had been elected Mayor of Newcastle, and appointed an alderman) to inform his Majesty that the proportion which the town was called upon to bear—viz., £5,000—could not be raised. Having brought together the inhabitants able to contribute to such a charge, he found that, "by reason of the plague, decay of trade, losses in France, and by Dunkirkers," etc., they were "utterly disabled." The loan money assessed on Newcastle (£263 10s.) had been paid to the collector "at once, no one refusing," but the other sum it was out of their power to contribute.

1629. A house in the Close at the foot of Tuthill Stairs, occupied by the Rev. Yeldard Alvey, and soon to be vacated by him for the Vicarage of Newcastle, passed into Mr. Davison's hands. He had already purchased the manor of Blakiston, near Stockton, The Gore, at Thornley, and lands, etc., at Wingate Grange, all in the County Palatine, and was entering into engagements which indicated increasing wealth, and a desire to establish himself as the head of a county family.

1638. Alderman Davison was elected Mayor for a second term. By this time the North-Country was agitated and the whole kingdom excited by the threatening demeanour of the Scots. Thousands of Scotsmen had signed the National Covenant, and it was feared that they would seek redress of grievances by marching an army into England. Sir Jacob Astley and others were deputed to inspect fortifications and muster the train bands, guns and stores were sent to Newcastle, and the authorities were ordered to put the town into a state of defence. On the 15th November, the Mayor and his brethren wrote to Sir Thomas Riddell, the Recorder, then in London, stating that they had been already at excessive charges in repairing walls, gates, portcullises, etc., and the town was so much in debt, and the revenues were so greatly reduced by the small trade of ships, that if they were put to any further charges "neither the common purse, nor our particulars, are able to support it." A long list follows of the "directions and instructions" which Sir Jacob Astley, in

conference with the mayor and aldermen, had resolved upon for the safety of Newcastle, accompanied by a drawing of Sir Jacob's, showing how he proposed to distribute his artillery, and a sketch of the walls, gates, and towers of the town, drawn to scale. Copies of both these interesting plans are engraved in vol xii. of the "Archæologia Æliana."

1639. In April, the king came to Newcastle with a considerable army. Anticipating his arrival, the Mayor issued this curious proclamation:—"Whereas his Majesty intends shortly, God willing, to be at this town, and it is very fitting and necessary that the streets should be clean and sweet; it is therefore ordered by the Mayor, Aldermen, Mr. Sheriff, and the rest of the Common Council, that every inhabitant shall make the front of his house and shop clean presently, and so from time to time keep the same; and if any shall be negligent herein, he or she forfeit for every such default 6s. 8d., to be levied by distress of the offender's goods, rendering to the parties the overplus, if any be."

While his Majesty was in Newcastle, "magnificently entertained," he conferred the honour of knighthood upon the Mayor and Town Clerk. After his departure, there was copious letter-writing from Sir Alexander to the Privy Council about Puritans and Covenanters, their coming and going, their meetings and sayings—all tending to show that he was a most energetic and devoted Royalist, and a bitter enemy of the Scots and of local sympathisers with their proceedings.

1640. Battle of Newburn, and peaceful entry of the Covenanters into Newcastle. Puritan John Fenwick, in that rambling tract of his, entitled "Christ Ruling in the Midst of His Enemies," insinuates that when the Scots entered the town Sir Alexander Davison, Sir John Marley, and others took to their heels:—"Then there was flying indeed to purpose; the swiftest flight was the greatest honour to the Newcastilian new dubd knights; a good Boat, a paire of Oares, a good horse (especially that would carry two men) was more worth than the valour or honour of new knighthood. . . . His Excellency Generall Lesley, accompanied with the Lords and divers Gentlemen, rode into Newcastle about noon, where they were met upon the bridge by the Mayor and some few Aldermen who were not so nimble at flight as Sir Marloe, Sir Daveson, and Sir Ridles, and others that were conscious of their guilt of their good service against the Scots, for which they got the honour of Knighthood."

1642. Sir Alexander Davison and Sir John Marley ruled with a high hand, and made themselves exceedingly obnoxious to Fenwick and the Puritan party. In a paper of charges preferred this year against them and their Royalist colleagues, it is alleged that they compelled divers inhabitants of the town to enter into bonds for great sums of money to answer at the Council Table for going to hear sermons; cast some into prison for doing the same; threatened to root all the Puritans out of the place; procured the banishment of Dr. Jenison, "being one who had preached constantlie thrice in the weeke for 23 yeares in the towne," and violently forced George Wishart, "a fugitive and an incendiarie," into his place at All Saints, "against the mindes of the parishioners"; caused houses to be searched, "and cubberts and chestes to be broken open, and tooke from them bookes, letters, and manuyscripts"; countenanced and allowed Papists in the town and commended them as good subjects, better to be trusted than Puritans; compelled divers to "worke and muster upon the Soboth daies to fill upp trenches neere the towne, conceaveing that to bee the best waie to discover Puritans"; enjoined the ministers in the towne "to preach against the Scotts of informacion, and to defame their undertaking as rebellious, and disperst themselves by coopels in every church to see it done," etc., etc. These charges had the desired effect. Parliament, on the 20th September, passed resolutions ordering Sir Alexander and four other leading Royalists to be sent for as delinquents.

1644. Siege of Newcastle. In the tedious negotiations that preceded the final assault and storming of the town Sir Alexander Davison took a prominent part. His name is attached to the famous letter in which the Royalists declared that they held Newcastle for the king, and his son Thomas was one of the hostages sent into the Scottish camp as security for the safety of commissioners deputed by Lesley to make what proved to be fruitless efforts for a peaceful surrender. In the final struggle on the 19th October, he and another of his sons, Captain Joseph Davison, were mortally wounded. The captain was buried in St. Nicholas' Church on the 25th October; the brave old knight his father was laid beside him four days later.

Apparently ignorant of his death, the House of Commons, on the 19th November following, included the name of Sir Alexander in a list of twenty-seven leading men of Newcastle who were ordered to be sent up to London in safe custody; and later, his three surviving

sons, like other Royalist gentry, were obliged to compound for the estates bequeathed to them. The eldest, Sir Thomas, who had married a daughter of Sir William Lambton, inherited Blakiston; Ralph, united to Timothea Belasise, received the Thornley property; while Samuel, who married, as third husband, a daughter of Bishop Cosin, obtained the manor of Wingate Grange. For many generations, Sir Alexander's descendants, the Davisons of Blakiston, ranked among the leading gentry of the County Palatine; in the fine old parish church of Norton, their beginnings and endings, and the good deeds they did, are commemorated upon monumental stone, and in enduring brass.

## Richard Dawes,

### THE LEARNED GRECIAN.

"Great wits are sure to madness near allied,
And thin partitions do their bounds divide."
—DRYDEN.

A PAPER entitled "An Account of the Life and Writings of Richard Dawes, A.M., late Master of the Royal Grammar School, and of the Hospital of St. Mary in the Westgate, in Newcastle-upon-Tyne," from the pen of the learned historian of Northumberland, the Rev. John Hodgson, appears in the second volume of the old series of the "Archæologia Æliana." It is a loving memoir of a brilliant scholar, in whom vast erudition and marvellous critical ability were united to an acerbity of temper and an impatience of criticism which marred his genius and spoiled his life. That which follows is more or less a summary of Mr. Hodgson's interesting narrative.

Richard Dawes was born in 1708, at Market-Bosworth, or somewhere in that neighbourhood, and was therefore of Leicestershire origin, though Mr. Hodgson thinks the family belonged at an earlier period to Westmorland. He was educated at Market-Bosworth School, and at the age of seventeen was admitted a sizar of Emmanuel College, Cambridge. Two years after his matriculation he published a Greek pastoral of eighty-nine lines, with the long-drawn title of "The Lamentation of the University of Cambridge for the Death of George the First, the beneficent King of Great Britain; and her rejoycings on the peaceful and auspicious succession of the most

potent Prince George the Second, the heir of his father's virtues and throne." The pastoral, or "therno-thriambic idyl" as he called it, revealed considerable talent for Greek versification, and gave promise of better things to come. The marriage of the Prince of Wales in 1736 afforded him another opportunity of publishing Greek verse, and (having in the meantime obtained a fellowship of his college and the degree of M.A.) he issued an epithalamium of fifty hexameter lines, entitled "The congratulation of the University of Cambridge on the very auspicious marriage of Frederick, Prince of Wales, and Augusta, Princess of Saxe-Gotha." In the same year he sent out proposals for printing the first book of Milton's "Paradise Lost" in Greek, and, having accomplished the task of translation, went no further with the project.

By the resignation in 1738 of the Rev. Edmund Lodge, the head-mastership of the Royal Free Grammar School of Newcastle became vacant. It had been filled before Lodge's time by two eminent scholars—Thomas Rudd, antiquary and grammarian, sometime librarian of the College of Durham, and James Jurin, who afterwards took a doctor's degree in physic, and became President of the Royal College of Physicians and Secretary of the Royal Society. The Corporation, desirous that the post should again be occupied by a great scholar, selected Mr. Dawes. On the 10th of July, 1738, he was installed in his office, and on the 9th of October following received the concurrent appointment of Master of the Hospital of St. Mary the Virgin, in the old buildings belonging to which hospital the school was held.

For some time after he settled in Newcastle no mention of him occurs. He was busy with a great literary enterprise, preparing to appear "in the eyes of every genuine scholar in a new and splendid character, touching, with talismanic hand, the obscurities and inaccuracies which perplexed the poetry of antient Greece and Rome, and converting them into their primitive forms and beauty." In 1745 the result of his labour appeared. It was a book of emendatory criticism, entitled "Miscellanea Critica," and divided into five sections:—(1) Select Emendations of Terentianus Maurus; (2) Examples of the want of accuracy in the Oxford edition of Pindar; (3) On the true enunciation of the Greek Language, etc.; (4) An Essay both on the prosodical and analogical power of the consonant or aspiration "vau," as it is retained in the text of Homer; (5) The Design of Ictus, or Accents observed by the Attic Greeks—Select

emendations to each of the Plays of Aristophanes—Miscellaneous Observations on Euripides, Sophocles, and Æschylus.

The publication of this elaborate work stamped the author as one of the most learned men of his time. Critics at home and abroad lavished encomiums upon it; between 1745 and 1827 no fewer than five editions of the book were published, Burgess, Bishop of Salisbury, and Thomas Kidd being the successive editors and annotators. The fourth edition is a portly volume of over seven hundred pages, and the fifth is enriched by enlarged prefaces, and new reasonings and illustrations. Mr. Hodgson expresses regret that the work has never been rendered into English, and asks if there is no one to be found with leisure and ability to translate it, "and thereby give to minds that travel slowly through the literature of Greece and Rome, accompanied as they go with grammarians and lexicographers for their guides, some opportunity of beholding and enjoying the beauties of that rich and ever-varying scenery which charm the fleet and wing-footed sons of Hermes in their aerial excursions over the gardens of antient Hellenic and Roman poetry?"

While this elaborate book was preparing for the press, Mr. Dawes displayed an infirmity of temper which soon placed him in a position of antagonism to his patrons, the Corporation of Newcastle. He probably neglected his school; the patrons found fault with him, and he treated them with contempt and ridicule. One of his methods of displaying his resentment was amusing. He taught his scholars to translate the Greek word for "Ass" into "Alderman"—"a practice which habit rendered so inveterate that some of his pupils inadvertently used the same expression with very ludicrous effect in their public college exercises." As the quarrel deepened, Mr. Dawes became more bitterly satirical. From April 5th to May 31st, 1746, the *Newcastle Courant* contained an announcement of the intended publication of "Extracts from a MS. pamphlet intituled 'The Tittle-Tattle Mongers, No. I.,'" and in the following year the "Extracts" issued from the press of John White. This publication was a scathing satire upon the leading men of the town, from whom Mr. Dawes had received real or fancied slights. Newcastle is nicknamed "Logopoiion," the town of tittle-tattle—"a Logopoiion, a log o' wood, a sow, and an ass" being, as the author explains, "tantamount contemptuous expressions" imposed upon the genii of the town and country "by one Philhomerus, purely in contempt and abuse of them." Dr. Adam Askew, the eminent physician, is lashed under

the names of "Polypragmon" and "Fungus," while Akenside, the poet, who had been one of Mr. Dawes's pupils, is held up to derision for his "blushing diffidence" in "such a cobweb as 'The Pleasures of Imagination!'" The pamphlet contained an advertisement of an intended No. II., in which would appear "Professor Fungus's Lecture on Prudence, *alias* Scoundrelism," and, soon after that, of No. III., "consisting of characters of some of the *Gentlemen* of the Corporation of Logopoiion, *alias the Vengeful Brotherhood, or Fungus Clan.*" To Dawes is attributed also an anonymous poem entitled "The Origin of the Newcastle Burr," in which the writer makes it appear that Newcastle had been conquered of old by Beelzebub who

> "took most special care
> (As Grand Confessor to the Fair)
> To mend their Breed, and fill the Place
> With sucking Fiends of his own Race;
> While all the Sins that he could muster,
> A pretty decent hellish cluster;
> (Gaming and Drinking led the Van,
> Those two grand Enemies to Man);
> Made 'em just what Old Nick could wish,
> Fit Gudgeons for his Worship's Dish.
>
> But Heav'n in Vengeance for their Crimes
> Decreed,—That, in all future Times
> They should be branded by a Mark
> By which you know 'em in the Dark;
> For in their Throat a *Burr* is plac'd
> By which this blessed Crew is trac'd;
> And which, when they *would* speak, betrays
> A gutt'ral Noise, like Crows and Jays;
> Or somewhat like a croaking Frog,
> Or Punch in Puppet-Show, or Hog;
> A rattling, Ear-tormenting Yell,
> Much us'd 'mong low-liv'd Fiends in Hell."

There is much more of the same sort, coarse and vituperative to the last degree. Newcastle people were at a loss to understand the reason for such bitter and persistent invective. At length they attributed the author's outrageous diatribes to some morbid delusion, and, regarding him with a sort of contemptuous pity, received his effusions in silence. In the meantime, the Grammar School suffered, and his position with the Corporation became intolerable. On the 22nd of September, 1746, he made a proposal to resign, which the Corporation willingly accepted, offering him an annuity of £80

a year for life upon condition that he would give up also the mastership of the hospital. To that course he would not consent, and the negotiations for his retirement dragged on till January, 1749, when he agreed to take the annuity, supplemented by a fine on all renewals of hospital property. In September following an agreement was formally signed and sealed, and he resigned both his offices. These were soon afterwards conferred upon the Rev. Hugh Moises, who, as is well known, raised the Grammar School to its highest point of fame and prosperity.

Mr. Dawes retired to a house on the banks of the Tyne, at Heworth Shore, where he passed the remainder of his days. He amused himself with rowing, made friends with a local blacksmith and weaver, and gave his eccentricities full play. Mr. Hodgson, who was incumbent of Heworth for some years, heard much of his doings from old parishioners. He describes him as of a strong bodily frame, tall and corpulent; his hair thick, flowing, and snowy white. The children of the neighbourhood used to run after him, calling out, "White head! White head!" or, when they passed him, crossed their noses with finger and thumb—a dirty trick which he abhorred—but, after he had expressed his anger by shaking his stick at them, he would throw coppers among them and enjoy the scramble. So passed away sixteen years. On the 21st March, 1766, he expired, and was buried in Heworth Churchyard. A country mason who respected him erected a headstone to his memory, upon which, beneath figures of a trumpet, a sword, and a scythe, he cut this illiterate inscription—"In memory of Richard Dawes, late headmaster of the grammar school of Newcastle, who died the 21st of March, 1766, aged 57." Mr. Hodgson added a solid block of basalt placed lengthwise on the grave; and, later, he set on foot a subscription which enabled him to erect within the church a marble monument.

"He was one," adds Mr. Hodgson, "who in the imaginary maze of lines which the force of ambition and self-interest press in concentric circles towards the throne, like planets of the largest size and dimmest light, moved in the widest of these circles, and was, therefore, little noticed. In the earlier years of his life he appeared, indeed, for a short time on the stage of human life, among the champions of literature, wielding his weapons with the mightiest and receiving the praises of the wisest; but a cloud of apprehensions came over his mind that he was assailed on every side

with the arrows of ingratitude and persecution, and he threw aside his armour and walked gloomily away from the contentions for honour, and the post of usefulness, to hold conversations in the obscurity of rural life with unlearned men and his own imagination." "Had he carefully weighed all his powers with reference to his own happiness and usefulness in the world, he ought never to have quitted his college, but to have endeavoured to increase his reputation and his means of supporting himself by his critical labours. Employed in this manner, he would have been less liable to be harassed with the crosses and indignities of vulgar opinion than he was as a schoolmaster, and his labours would have been both useful and lasting."

## Henry Dawson,

THE FIRST M.P. FOR THE COUNTY OF DURHAM.

AMONG those who adhered to the side of the Parliament, and directed Puritan movements during the Civil War, three members of the local family of Dawson—Henry, William, and George—were conspicuous. Along with John Blakiston, Robert Bewicke, Leonard Carr, and others, they helped to win over large numbers of their fellow-citizens to their side, and when the hour of victory came they shared the honours which the victors had to bestow. Each of the three was in turn elected Mayor of Newcastle; one of them obtained the higher honour of being sent to Parliament.

Henry and George Dawson were brothers; the relationship of William Dawson to them and to others of the name in Newcastle has not been traced. They were both merchants, and before the troubles began were carrying on business in Newcastle of the usual diversified character. Their names appear in the Household Book of Lord William Howard as supplying articles of domestic use to the family at Naworth:—"For grosserie and sope bought of Hen. Dawson by bill Jan. 10 [1634] xx*li.* xiiij*s.* vij*d.* More for 2 poundes of biskett for my Ladie, iiij*s.* iij*d.*—More bought of Hen. Dawson March 7th per bill iij*li.*"; later—"For grosseries and provision bought of Mr. George Dawson of Newcastell, as appereth by bill lj*li.* iiij*s.* x*d.*—More for 14 poundes of sugar for my Ladie Francis, xxj*s.*" So also in the Municipal Accounts of Newcastle:—June,

1646—"Paid George Dawson for wine and tobacco, which was spent by Mr. deputie Maior and the aldermen from the 27th February, to and with the 5th June, 15s. 8d." August, 1645—"Paid Mr. George Dawson for a . . . of cannarie sack, £22; half a ton of French, £10; for carriage 8s.; for 4 gallons of Rennish wine, 32s., which was sent as a present to the Right hon'ble the earell of Pembroke and the other commissioners who are sent by the parlement with the propositions to the kinges Majestie, £34." August, 1650—"Paid Wm. Colston for a banquett which was had to entertain General Cromwell, £25 2s. 7d. Paid Mr. Henry Dawson for wine had then, £8 4s. 3d."

Another trace of the family life of the Dawsons is to be found in the report of the proceedings which followed that unseemly wrangle between John Blakiston and Vicar Alvey at the wedding dinner of Barbara Carr. Blakiston, as already described, was summoned by Alvey before the High Commission Court at Durham, to answer for his heretical opinions and irreverent behaviour, and among the witnesses in his favour was "Elizabeth, wife of Henry Dawson, merchant." The lady deposed that she was born in Newcastle, had lived there all her life, was thirty-five years of age, knew Blakiston to be "a very religious man," believed him to be "conformable to law," etc., etc. This was in May, 1638, at an early stage of the agitation in Scotland with which the Dawsons and their friends upon Tyneside were already in active sympathy. Very shortly afterwards Henry Dawson was reported to the Secretary of State by Alexander Davison, John Marley, and Sir William Bellasis, as a participator in the plots and confederacies of the "ill-affected" party in Newcastle. In a letter, dated February 2nd, 1638-39, written by Secretary Windebank to the informers, occurs this passage:—"You are likewise to take some speedie course for the preventing of these clandistine meetings at undue houres, at Henrie Dawson's house, under pretext of devotion, and if Master Mourton, the preacher there [afterwards with the Parliamentary army], be ill affected to the Church government, you must make diligent inquiry from whence he hath his maintenance, and if you find hee lives by contribution of refractorie persons, you must either prevent his preaching in private, and those supplies which he receives from them, or else not suffer him to remaine in your towne."

Passing over the invasion by the Scots and the subsequent siege of Newcastle, we find that soon after the storming of the town in

1644, when the dominant party rewarded their adherents by appointments of honour and confidence, Henry Dawson was elected an alderman. His friend John Blakiston received still greater honours; he was appointed a representative of Newcastle in Parliament. So popular was he, indeed, that at Michaelmas, 1645, the burgesses determined to make him Mayor as well as M.P. But, as Parliament sat from day to day all through the autumn and winter with no prospect of adjournment, and John Blakiston was one of its trusted members, the arrangement was soon found to be inconvenient; by the end of the year it was seen to be impracticable. Thereupon the House of Commons passed a resolution appointing Henry Dawson to be Blakiston's deputy in the Mayoralty, and the House of Lords, being consulted, sanctioned the appointment. In the Commons' Journals, under date March 31st, 1646, we read:—"Resolved, etc. That this House doth approve of Mr. Henry Dawson, Alderman of the Town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, to be Deputy Mayor of the said Town, during the absence of Mr. Blakiston, a Member of this House, and now Mayor there: And that the said Mr. Dawson, as Deputy Mayor, shall have Power, and is enabled to do, execute, and perform all and all manner of lawful Acts, Matters, and Things belonging or appertaining to the Office of the Mayor of the said Town, as amply and as fully as the said Mr. Blakiston might or ought to do, if he were there personally present."

This arrangement continued till the end of the municipal year, when Blakiston and his deputy, Henry Dawson, were relieved from the trammels of office. They were followed by a mayor of the same political colour, Thomas Ledgard, under whose auspices a petition, to which two of the Dawsons were signatories, was sent to Parliament, supporting the army, and asking that "full and exemplary justice be done upon the great incendiaries of the kingdom," meaning of course the king and his adherents. Another influential Puritan, Alderman Thomas Bonner, succeeded, and then came the turn of the Dawsons. William Dawson was made Mayor at Michaelmas, 1649; when he went out of office, George Dawson was elected, and after an intervening year, with Bonner again in the chair, Henry Dawson took the post of honour.

By this time the fortunes of the Dawsons had risen. William and Henry had improved their position by successful trading; George had been made a collector of customs and a free hostman. The Mayoralty of William was honoured by a visit from Oliver Cromwell;

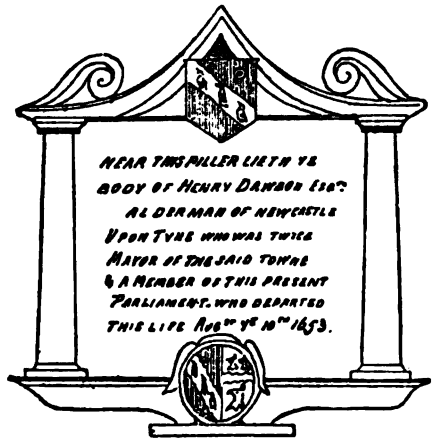
the Mayoralty of Henry was distinguished by a summons to Parliament. On the 20th of April, 1653, Cromwell, exercising the functions of sovereignty, took a file of musqueteers and went down to the House of Commons, ordered the Speaker to leave the chair, bade one of his soldiers take away "that bauble"—the mace, turned all the members out, locked up the doors, and thus broke up the famous Long Parliament "which for twelve years, under a variety of forms, had defended and invaded the liberties of the people." Then, thinking it expedient to at least observe the forms of free government, he issued a mandate, dated the 6th of June, to Praise God Barebones, and about one hundred and fifty others upon whose fidelity he could rely, as follows:—"As on the dissolution of the last Parliament it became necessary that peace and good government should be provided for, I, and my Council of Officers, have nominated persons of fidelity to whom this great charge is to be committed; and having assurance of your love to God and interest in His people, I, as the Commander-in-Chief of the Armies of the Commonwealth, summons you, being one of the persons so nominated, to appear at the Council Chamber, Whitehall, on the 4th of July, and take upon you the said trust as Member for ——."

Henry Dawson was one of the persons to whom this "great charge" was committed, and the county of Durham, which under its spiritual lords had never achieved the privilege of direct representation in the House of Commons, was the place to be favoured by his membership. He left Newcastle in due course to obey the summons, leaving his brother George deputy-mayor during his absence. But to Newcastle he never returned. Within a month of the meeting of the Barebones Parliament at Whitehall he was dead and buried.

For more than two hundred years the identity of the first member for the County Palatine was shrouded in obscurity. In some of the lists his name was printed Dawson, in others Davison; no local historian knew who he was, whence he came, or whither he had gone.

But in 1866 a correspondent of *Notes and Queries* discovered in the church of St. Mary Abbot, at Kensington, a monument which solved the mystery, and showed that the Mayor of Newcastle whose death register could not be found in any of the parish churches, and the M.P. for Durham whose identity could not be traced in the Parliamentary rolls, were one and the same person. Thus reads

the monument, which has been kindly drawn by Lieut.-Colonel W. H. Munton Jackson, late of the 81st Regiment:—


NEAR THIS PILLER LIETH YE
BODY OF HENRY DAWSON ESQR
ALDERMAN OF NEWCASTLE
VPON TYNE WHO WAS TWICE
MAYOR OF THE SAID TOWNE
& A MEMBER OF THIS PRESENT
PARLIAMENT. WHO DEPARTED
THIS LIFE AUGT YE 10TH 1653.

"Near this Piller lieth ye Body of Henry Dawson, Esqre., Alderman of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, who was twice Mayor of the said Towne, & a Member of this present Parliament, who departed this life Augst ye 10th, 1653."

On the eve of his departure to obey Cromwell's summons Henry Dawson made his will. Being childless, he adopted the eldest daughter of his brother George as his own; being an earnest Puritan, he remembered his friends, Ambrose Barnes (the alderman), William Durant and Cuthbert Sydenham (well-known preachers in Newcastle), and Cuthbert Sydenham's father-in-law, Sidrach Simpson, his favourite minister in London. A copy of the will, transcribed for this biographical sketch, adds a useful sheaf to the harvest of local history.

"I, Henry Dawson, of the Towne and County of Newcastle vppon Tyne, Merchant and Alderman, Considering my owne Mortality, and how Convenient it is for mee Now in my health of Body and mind to settle and dispose of my Estate, to avoyd the Discord and Variance that might otherwise [arise] amongst friends and kindred after my Departure this life, doe make and constitute this my last Will and Testament as followeth, vizt. My Will is that my Body bee buried in a decent and comely manner, without any great Solemnity, or calling together many people, only friends and Godly Acquaintance. And my mynd and will is that there bee no expences in Wines or Sweetmeats, etc., as is and hath been the vsuall custome and manner of this place. But, instead thereof,

I will and comand that twenty pounds of good and Lawful money of England bee given and paid to the Godly poore of this place, and elsewhere, to bee disposed of at the discretion of my wife, Mrs. Elizabeth Dawson, where shee shall see most cause of need, and most fitting, and not otherwise. Alsoe I give and bequeath vnto my only Brother, Mr. George Dawson, Merchant and Alderman, and to his wife my sister Mrs. Katherine Dawson, and to Robert Dawson and Mary Dawson, sonne and daughter to my brother, Mr. George Dawson, to each of them Twenty-two shillings peece for a token. Alsoe I give and bequeath vnto my half-brother, Mr. Thomas Crome, junior, Mr. Cuthbert Sydenham, to Mr. William Duerante, Mr. Thomas Errington, Merchant, to each of them, one Twenty-two shillings peece of gold for a Token. Alsoe I give Mr. Sidrah Simpson [father-in-law of Cuthbert Sydenham, and one of the Assembly of Divines in 1643], Pastor of a Church of Christ in London, whereof I am, though unworthy, a member, and vnto Mr. John Stone, of London, my deere friend and brother in Gospell followeth [fellowship ?], and to my deere friend Ambrose Barnes, of Newcastle, to each of them, Twenty-two shillings peece of gold for a Token. Alsoe I give and bequeath vnto Anne Dawson, Daughter to my Brother, Mr. George Dawson, who now lives with mee, and I looke vppon her as my owne, and soe takes care for her future comfort and being, pswading my selfe and desireing her ffather will reckon and account of her as one of his children, and accordingly provide a Portion, shee being his eldest child, and take as much care for her in regard of her weakness and infirmities as hee doth for any the rest of his children, Three hundred pounds of good and lawfull money of England, to bee paid to her when shee comes to the Age of Eighteene years, or at the day of her marriage, whether shall first fall out. In the meane tyme to bee brought vpp, educated, and maintained by my witnesses [*sic*] Elizabeth Dawson, if the said Anne Dawson doe like, or bee pleased therewith, or soe long as shee is willing. [Provision for payment of £20 a year for education elsewhere if Anne so elect; if she die before the age of 18 or marriage, the money to go to her brother and sister or the survivor; if they both die, £200 to testator's widow and £100 to his brother George; if George also die, the whole to widow, who shall give £50 to Thomas Crome, junior.] Alsoe I give and bequeath vnto my cozen, Mr. Ralph Jenison, Marchant, one twenty-two shillings for a Token. Also I give and bequeath vnto Anne

Dawson aforesaid, one paire of Virgenalls with the fframe they stand vppon. [Illegible clauses follow.] The residue of all my Goods, Debts and Chattles, my Debts, wch are very few at present, Legacies and funeral expences (wch once againe I give a charge my mind aforesaid bee observed therein) being paid, I give and bequeath vnto my deerely beloved wife, Mrs. Elizabeth Dawson, whom I make sole Executrix of this my last Will and Testament. And I make and doe desire my Brother, Mr. George Dawson, and my Cozen, Mr. Raphe Jenison, to bee Overseers of this my will. In witness and testimony whereof I have hereto sett my hand and Seale, this Twenty one Day of June, in the yeare Anno Dni, 1653.

"HEN. DAWSON.

"Signed, sealed, and declared to be my last will and Testamt. in the presence of vs, vizt., Henry Bowes, Thomas Milbourne, Richard Walker."

About George Dawson, the brother, much may be read in Ralph Gardiner's "England's Grievance Discovered," and in Longstaffe's Appendix to the "Life of Ambrose Barnes." He survived till long after the Restoration, died, as he had lived, a Puritan, and on the 1st of May, 1674, was buried in St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle.

## Sir Ralph Delaval (1),

FOUNDER OF SEATON SLUICE.

FOR a summary of the early descents of the Delavals, recourse may be had to an interesting paper contributed by the Rev. Edward Hussey Adamson to the twelfth volume of the "Archæologia Æliana." Whatsoever was obscure in the genealogy, or erroneously described in visitations and pedigrees, of the family, has been rectified by Mr. Adamson's investigations; while the eventful career of one conspicuous representative of his race has received fresh elucidation through the patient researches of Mr. John Robinson among forgotten salvage from the family archives.

During the greater part of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, the local representative of this ancient family was Sir Robert Delaval, Knight. By his union with Dorothy, daughter of Sir Ralph Grey, of Chillingham, Sir Robert had a numerous family. His eldest son, Sir Ralph

Delaval, who had married a daughter of Thomas, Baron Hilton of Hilton, and was thrice High Sheriff of Northumberland, succeeded him. Another of his sons became Sir John Delaval, of Dissington, knight, twice High Sheriff, and, in the second Parliament of Charles I., one of the M.P.'s for the county. A third son, Claudius Delaval, received the appointment of Town Clerk of Newcastle; other sons were Edward Delaval, of Bebside, and Robert Delaval, of Cowpen. To Sir Ralph, the heir of Sir Robert, also came numerous offspring, but he outlived his first-born son, Robert (married to Elizabeth, daughter of Sir George Selby, of Newcastle), and when he died, in 1628, the property passed over to his grandson (Robert's son), Ralph Delaval.

Ralph Delaval married, at St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, on the 2nd of April, 1646, the Lady Anne, daughter of General Lesley, Earl of Leven, commander of the Scottish army, by which, two years before, the town had been stormed and taken. Under the will of his grandfather the mansion-house of Seaton Delaval, then known by the name of Delaval Castle, was bequeathed to his grandmother and three of his uncles for twenty-one years, so that he did not come into possession of the whole of the family property till 1649. In that year he was appointed High Sheriff of Northumberland, and a member of the Commission appointed to report upon the number and value of Church livings in the county—a Commission which produced what is known as the Oliverian, or Parliamentary Survey. These duties discharged, he lived, till nearly the close of the Commonwealth, the life of a country gentleman, absorbed in the management of his estates, collieries, and salt-pans. But when the Lord Protector died, and a restoration of the monarchy became imminent, he entered Richard Cromwell's Parliament as a knight of the shire for his native county. As soon as the restoration had been accomplished, he was re-elected, and then the family of Delaval, which for generations had borne the honour of knighthood, were advanced a step in dignity and precedence. On the 29th of June, 1660, Charles II. made Ralph Delaval a baronet.

To the Pensionary Parliament, elected in the spring of the following year, Sir Ralph Delaval did not go. He made way at that election for Henry Cavendish, Viscount Mansfield. The motives of his retirement were creditable to him. He was desirous to see the county represented by a rising statesman, and he had in view an undertaking of great moment to himself, and of considerable value

to the commerce of the district. Upon his manor of Seaton he possessed an ancient landing-place, dry at low water and difficult of access at all times, and he contemplated the construction of a new harbour, which should afford adequate accommodation for increasing traffic in coal, salt, corn, and other produce of his estate. In the face of great difficulties he proceeded to realise his design. The stone pier which he erected to withstand the influx of the sea was washed away more than once; his new entrance silted up and threatened to become as troublesome as the old one. But these difficulties seemed only to stimulate his energies. He rebuilt the pier better and stronger each time, and to prevent silting he erected sluice-gates, which, being shut by the flowing tide, compelled the water in the burn to accumulate till the ebb, when it forced open the gates, scoured the bed of the stream, swept the haven, and rendered navigation safe and easy. Thus was created the little harbour of Seaton Sluice, one of the local wonders of maritime commerce in the last century.

Roger North, in his "Life of Lord Keeper Guilford," gives an interesting account of a visit which his lordship paid to Sir Ralph Delaval and the newly-formed haven while he was on circuit here in August, 1676. It has often been reprinted, but will bear repetition:—

"From Tinmouth his Lordship, by Invitation, went to dine at Seaton Delaval. Sir Ralph Delaval entertained us exceeding well; and not so much eating and drinking, which appertains properly to the Brute, and not to the Man, but with very ingenious Discourse, and showing to us many curiosities, of which he himself was author in that place. The chief remarkable there, was a little Port which that Gentleman, with great contrivance, and after many Disappointments, made for securing Small Craft that carried out his Salt and Coal; and he had been encouraged in it by King Charles the Second, who made him Collector and Surveyor of his own Port, and no Officer to intermeddle there. It stands at the Mouth of a Rill (as it is called) of Water, which, running from the Hills, had excavated a great Hollow, in the Fall, as it run. The Ground, at the Sea, is an hard impenetrable flat Rock; and for Cover of the Vessels, which else, in the Rage, must be dashed to Pieces, Sir Ralph had built, or rather, often rebuilt a Pier of Stone that fended off the Surge to the North-East, and at High Water gave entrance near a little Promontory of the Shoar, turning in by the North; and

at Low Water, the Vessels lay dry upon the Rock. This had been built of square Stone, with and without Cement; but all was heav'd away with the Surge; and, for a great while, nothing could be found strong enough to hold against the lifting and sucking of the Water. At length Sir Ralph, at an immense Cost, bound every Joint of the Stone, not only laterally but upright, with Dovetails of Heart of Oak let into the Stone, and that held effectually: For if the Stones were lifted up they fell in their Places again. This little Harbour was apt to silt up with the Sea Sand; for remedying of which he used the back Water of his Rill, and that kept the Channel always open: And, for that End, he had an easy and sure Device; which was Sluice-gates built cross the Channel of the Rill, which during Tide or Flood were shut, and so the Water gathered to a great Head above, till Low Water; and then the Sluices opened, let the gathered Water come down all at once, which scoured away the Sand, that every Tide lodged upon the Rock, and washed it as clean as a Marble Table. All this we saw, with his Salt-pans at Work about it, and the petit Magazines, of a marine Trade upon the Wharf; and so he reaped the Fruits of his great Cost and Invention; and if, in the whole, the Profit did not answer the Account, the Pleasure of designing and executing, which is the most exquisite of any, did it.

"I must not omit one Passage, which shewed the steddy Constancy of that Gentleman's Mind; which was that, at the beginning of Dinner, a Servant brought him a Letter, wherein was an Account of a Bag of Water which was broke in his greatest Colliery. Upon which, folding up the Letter, said he, 'My Lord, here I have Advice sent me of a Loss in a Colliery which I cannot estimate at less than £7,000, and now you shall see if I alter my Countenance or Behaviour, from what you have seen of me already.' And so fell to discoursing of these Bags of Water, and the Methods to clear them, as if the Case had been another's, and not his own. He said his only Apprehension was that the Water might come from the Sea, 'and then,' said he, 'the whole Colliery is utterly lost: Else, with Charge, it will be recovered.' Whereupon he sent for a Bottle of the Water, and finding it not saline, as from the Sea, was well satisfied. Afterwards we inquired if the Water was conquered, and were told it proved not so bad as he expected. For it seems that although £1,700 was spent upon Engines, and they could not sink it an Inch, yet £600 more emptied it; so that it had no more than the ordinary Springs; and in about six Weeks, he raised Coal again. He said

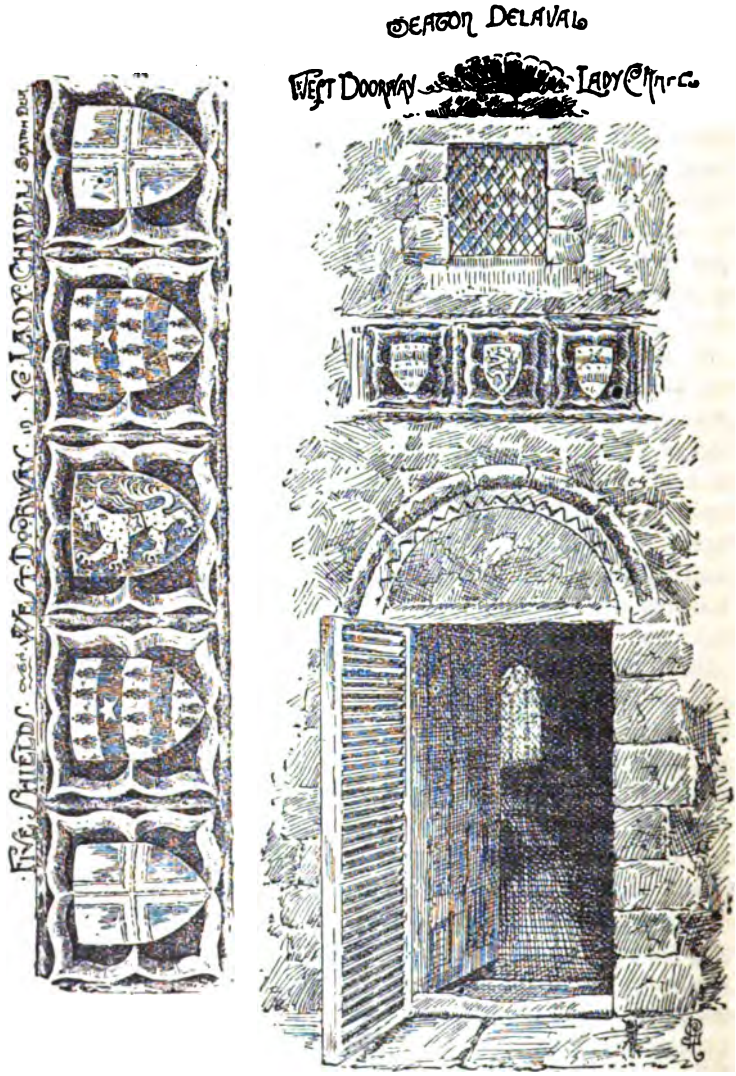
that Chain Pumps were the best Engines, for they draw constant and even; but they can have but two Stories of them, the second being with an Axle-tree of seven or eight Fathom; and the deepest Story is wrought by Buckets, and a Wheel and Ropes, with the Force at the Top."

Upon the elevation of Viscount Mansfield to the peerage in 1676 as Duke of Newcastle, Sir Ralph Delaval resumed the seat which fifteen years earlier he had surrendered. He attached himself to the Court party in the House, and in a dispute between the king and Parliament, which occurred the year after his return, took the side of the monarch. For this he was pilloried by a contemporary satirist, who, having insinuated that some of the Court party were "enlisted by offices, nay, a few by bribes secretly given them," put him into a list of that party, with the sum of £500 attached to his name.

Sir Ralph was an active Justice of the Peace for Northumberland, and as such was appointed one of the Commissioners of Gaol Deliveries in the county. His name occurs in a rent-roll of the first Earl of Derwentwater as a tenant owing half-a-year's fee farm rent for land in Tynemouth due at Pentecost, 1671. With the ducal family of Northumberland, he held the alternate presentation to the church at Tynemouth, and appears to have taken some interest in parochial affairs there, acting as one of the Four-and-Twenty, and attaching his signature to the minutes of the vestry meetings as chairman.

When King Charles II. died, Sir Ralph was over sixty years of age, and being unwilling, or unable, to bear the fatigue which travelling to London and attendance in Parliament involved, he retired, and William Ogle, of Cawsey Park, took his place. Settling down once more, at Delaval Castle, he outlived the revolution and flight of James II., saw the Prince of Orange established on the throne, and died on the 29th of August, 1691. His wife, the Lady Anne, by whom he had seven sons and six daughters, followed in 1696. Within forty years of her decease this large family of thirteen ended in daughters, and practically came to an end. The heir died, as we have seen, before his father, leaving no issue. Sir Ralph, second son, succeeded to the property, and died five years after his father, at the age of forty-six, leaving an only daughter, Diana, who married William, son of the second Sir Edward Blackett. After Sir Ralph came the third son, Sir John, who, being the last male survivor, sold the Seaton estate to come after his decease to his kinsman, Admiral

George Delaval. Thenceforward Sir John lived at "The Lodge," Seaton Sluice, which, he boasted, was the finest thatched house in




the kingdom. He also, like his brother, had an only daughter, and, according to Spearman's MSS., it was to provide her with a dowry of

£10,000 upon her marriage with John Rogers, of Denton, that he sold the reversion of his patrimonial estate.

Admiral George Delaval, who thus acquired the ancestral home of one branch of his family, was a son of George Delaval of North Dissington, and grandson of Sir John Delaval of the same place, which Sir John, as described at the outset, was a younger son of Sir Robert Delaval and Dorothy Grey. He was placed in the navy under the auspices of his relative, Admiral Sir Ralph Delaval, and, rising to a position of trust in the service of his country, was employed in embassies in Portugal and Morocco. He pulled down the old castle, and began to build, from the designs of Sir John Vanbrugh, the sumptuous palace known in after years as Seaton Delaval Hall. No trace of the old feudal castle was left save the Chapel of Our Lady, a venerable and interesting pile of Norman architecture, now converted into a church for the district. Admiral George died before he could complete his design, and left the estate and the unfinished hall to his nephew Francis Blake Delaval, the son of his brother Edward, of South Dissington, by marriage with a daughter of Sir Francis Blake, of Ford Castle. In this way the Delaval property was continued in the family, though the direct line had died out.

In the "Life of the Rev. John Hodgson," the historian of Northumberland, there is a weird story about the admiral, which the rev. gentleman having heard related in London sent to his wife at Heworth:—"Admiral Delaval and his servant, coming late one night past Benton Church, observed a light in it. He desired his man to get off and see what was doing; but the man refused, saying he did not dare to do it. The admiral therefore gave his horse to his servant and went himself. Through a window he observed a man and woman busy about a corpse. He found the door unlocked, and stepping up quickly to these persons he found them cutting off the breast of a female corpse. The man vanished, and was supposed to be the devil; the woman he secured and carried off; but when his servant was requested to take her up behind him he again refused, through fear. The admiral, therefore, had her put and tied on behind himself. On examining her at the proper court she was found to be a witch, and of course hanged."

# Sir Ralph Delaval (2).

## A HERO OF LA HOGUE.

REVERTING now to the main line of descent, we find, on the authority of Le Neve, though the late Mr. Hodgson Hinde was never quite satisfied on the point, that William, sixth son of the first Sir Ralph Delaval and Lady Jane Hilton, married a daughter of Sir Peter Riddell, Alderman and sometime Mayor of Newcastle. From that union came another Ralph Delaval, first cousin of the baronet who founded Seaton Sluice, and equally distinguished, though in quite another sphere of public life.

At an early age this Ralph Delaval entered the navy under the protection of the Duke of York, "who treated him with great kindness, and took care that he should not lose his turn in preferment." At the Revolution, when his patron, who had ascended the throne as James II., fled the kingdom, he was captain of a man-of-war; as soon as King William obtained the throne he was knighted (May 31st, 1690), and promoted to the rank of Rear-Admiral of the Blue. In that station he served under Lord Torrington at the disastrous engagement off Beachy Head, June 30th, 1690, in which the united English and Dutch fleets were beaten by the French; and to him was assigned the presidency of the court-martial by which Lord Torrington was tried and acquitted. Shortly afterwards King William made him a Vice-Admiral of the Blue, and gave him command of a squadron by which, the following year, the enemy were prevented from relieving Limerick.

In the spring of 1692, when it was known that the French were fitting out the greatest fleet they had ever sent to sea, enormous preparations were made to receive them. By the second week in May, ninety sail of the line, manned by from thirty to forty thousand of the finest seamen which England and Holland could muster, assembled at St. Helen's under the command of Admiral Russell, with Sir Ralph Delaval, Sir Cloudesley Shovel, Sir John Ashby, and other picked officers under him. Sir Ralph, in command of a large squadron of English and Dutch vessels, had been cruising for the protection of ships homeward bound from the Mediterranean, and, this service performed, he had taken his place with the main body

on the 13th of May. On the 17th of that month the whole fleet stood over to the French coast, and on the 19th encountered Tourville, the French admiral, in his magnificent vessel, the *Royal Sun*, with forty-three ships of the line supporting him. The battle began at eleven in the forenoon, and lasted till four in the afternoon. Sir Ralph Delaval commanded the rear, and manœuvred his vessels so well that, although several French ships hovered round, they were unable to do him mischief. By sunset the enemy's fleet was scattered. "Three ships which had fled to Cherbourg," writes Macaulay, "were closely chased by an English squadron under the command of Delaval. He found them hauled up into shoal water where no large man-of-war could get at them. He therefore determined to attack them with his fireships and boats. The service was gallantly and successfully performed. In a short time the *Royal Sun* and her two consorts were burned to ashes." Thus ended the battle of La Hogue, in which sixteen French men-of-war —half of them three-deckers—were sunk or burnt, and the English loss was one fireship only.

For some reason or other the advantage gained by this victory was not improved. During the autumn, Jean Bart with his formidable Dunkirkers prowled along the coasts, while other privateers roamed about the North Sea, capturing Newcastle colliers, and making prizes of London and Bristol merchantmen. All this time the victorious fleet lay idle at St. Helen's; no one seemed to know why. A general feeling of insecurity seized the mercantile community; ships dared not put to sea without a strong convoy; the coal trade was paralysed; trade was brought to almost a standstill. When Parliament assembled, the administration of the navy formed the subject of angry debate, while throughout the country its administrators were the objects of vigorous denunciation. In February following, the king removed Admiral Russell to a lucrative place in the household, and to satisfy the contending factions he entrusted the command of the fleet to Sir Ralph Delaval and Henry Killegrew, who were reputed Tories, associating with them Sir Cloudesley Shovel, a Whig.

Even this arrangement did not produce general satisfaction. Delaval and Killegrew were suspected of an active sympathy with King James, which Shovel would not be able to neutralise, and it was insinuated that they were unlikely to take such active measures against the nation which sheltered their old master as the popular voice demanded. Those who murmured soon had an opportunity

to declaim. Immediately after their appointment the admirals made preparations for convoying an accumulated fleet of merchantmen from the Thames and the Texel to the Mediterranean and Levant. But the preparations occupied a long time. March passed away, April came and went, May had come to an end, and the convoy was not ready. The merchants blamed Delaval and Killegrew; the admirals blamed the Government. It was June before the flotilla set sail.

Meanwhile Tourville had stolen out to sea, and while Delaval and his coadjutor supposed him to be quietly lying at Brest, he sailed down the Bay of Biscay and awaited the fleet in the Bay of Lagos. The admirals, fearing that in their absence he might cross the Channel and attempt a landing in England, proceeded only a couple of hundred miles beyond Ushant. There they left Vice-Admiral Rooke with twenty armed vessels to proceed to the Mediterranean, and made all haste back to England. Thus the merchantmen, nearly four hundred in number, with cargoes valued at several millions sterling, were left to the protection of twenty men-of-war. Tourville fell upon them in Lagos Bay and scattered them in all directions. Some escaped, some were captured, more were destroyed. The loss was terrible; the whole nation was thrown into a state of gloom and dejection. A deputation of merchants waited upon the Queen in Council (the King being abroad) with a statement of their grievances. Delaval and Killegrew were lampooned, satirised, derided, and denounced. Immense crowds flocked to see a show at Bartholomew Fair in which they were represented as flying with their whole fleet before a few French privateers, and taking shelter under the guns of the Tower. A Dutch picture was issued wherein the victory of the French was represented at a distance, with Sir Cloudesley Shovel on board his own ship, his hands tied behind him, one end of the cord being held by Sir Ralph Delaval and the other by Killegrew, to insinuate that he would have prevented the misfortune if his colleagues had not hindered him.

When Parliament met, a public inquiry into the disaster was demanded and granted, and a resolution was carried in the Commons by 140 votes to 103 that the miscarriage in Lagos Bay was due to "notorious and treacherous mismanagement." But when it came to a question of identifying the traitors opinions were widely divided. "The Whigs tried to throw the blame on Killegrew and

Delaval, who were Tories; the Tories did their best to make out that the fault lay with the Victualling Department, which was under the direction of the Whigs." In the end both parties won. After an angry discussion, the victualling office was cleared from blame by a majority of thirty-six. Sir Ralph Delaval and his brother-admirals were twice called before the House and examined, and on the last occasion, December 6th, 1693, a resolution affirming that by not gaining such intelligence as they might have done of the Brest fleet, before they left the squadron, they were guilty of a high breach of the trust that was put in them, to the great loss and dishonour of the nation, was lost by a majority of ten.

Dr. Carpenter, in his "Lives of the British Admirals," states that the business ended in laying Mr. Killegrew and Sir Ralph aside, a result which he believes to have been as much the effect of party spirit as the laying aside Admiral Russell was the year before. As for Sir Cloudesley Shovel, he happened to be in favour with the party that disliked the other two admirals, and so he escaped, though he had concurred with them in everything. "It is a misfortune," the doctor continues, "which we must be content to deplore without hope of redress, since it is a misfortune flowing from liberty, that in all free countries the greatest men are liable to be sacrificed to clamour; and innocence is not always a security against the shafts of envy." This was the case of Sir Ralph Delaval, "who in the short space of one single summer was in the highest credit, lost it, and was actually laid aside; so fluctuating a thing is human happiness; so fickle a possession is popularity; so little to be depended upon a prince's favour."

After his retirement from the navy, Sir Ralph endeavoured to be of use to his country in Parliament. At the general election in October, 1695, the electors of the little Wiltshire borough of Great Bedwin sent him to the Commons as one of their members. In that capacity he joined the association which, in February, 1696, upon the discovery of the "Assassination Plot," was organised for the defence of the Sovereign and the country. In that capacity also he sat in judgment upon Sir John Fenwick, who, by a majority of the House, was, the same year, attainted of high treason. It is not known upon which side he voted, though, as his name had been mentioned by Sir John in an exculpatory paper presented to the king, and he could obtain no satisfactory answer respecting it from the prisoner at the bar of the House, it may be supposed that he

voted with the majority. To the next Parliament, which met in 1698, Sir Ralph did not return. He lived in retirement for the rest of his days. These came to an end in January, 1707, and on the 23rd of that month he was buried in Westminster Abbey. "The violence of party prejudice being then abated," writes Dr. Carpenter, "he went to the grave with the reputation of a great and gallant officer, and of a generous, hospitable man; which, according to the best accounts I have been able to procure, he certainly deserved; though he was so unfortunate as to pass nine years of his life in obscure retirement, and that, too, in a season when his services might have been most useful to his country."

## Francis Blake Delaval,

OF FORD CASTLE.

FRANCIS BLAKE DELAVAL (1), son of Edward Delaval, of South Dissington, by his marriage with Mary, daughter of Sir Francis Blake, was the heir to the property of his uncle, Admiral George. Under his uncle's patronage he entered the navy, and became a captain. While he was yet a young man, the expulsion of General Forster from the Commons, for participation in the rebellion of 1715, created a vacancy in the representation of Northumberland, and he was put forward to contest the seat. His opponent was John Douglas, an attorney, who, having made a fortune in Newcastle, had purchased Matfen from the Fenwicks, and was ambitious of a seat in Parliament. In the Spearman MSS. it is stated that Douglas was candidate on the Tory side, that it was a hard contest, that the writer's grandfather, Philip Spearman, "carried it for Delaval, with sixteen votes from Preston," and that when Douglas petitioned against Delaval's return, alleging want of fortune, "the mansion, etc., at South Dissington were valued to make up £600 a year," and enable him to retain his seat. The meaning of which is that there was a doubt as to Captain Delaval's qualification, for, although heir to his uncle, that eminent diplomatist was still living, and he had probably only his captain's pay to depend upon. The time came when he was among the best endowed of the Delaval race. On the death of his maternal grandfather, Sir Francis Blake, he obtained Ford Castle; at the decease of Sir John Delaval he entered into

possession of the Seaton property, including the unfinished hall of Admiral George; upon the death of his father he became owner of South Dissington. Moreover, he had in right of his wife (Rhoda Apreece, granddaughter of Sir Thomas Hussey) the fertile lands of Doddington, in Lincolnshire.

Parliamentary work not being much to his taste, Mr. Delaval retired at the dissolution in 1722, devoted himself to the completion of Delaval Hall, and the supervision of his wide-spreading properties, and, with the exception of filling the office of High Sheriff in 1730, took no further part in the public life of the county. One day in December, 1752, he had the misfortune to fall from his horse at Seaton Delaval and break his leg, from the effects of which he died. Among the sons and daughters who survived him were Francis Blake Delaval, his heir; Rhoda, who married Edward (afterwards Sir Edward) Astley, of Melton Constable; Edward Hussey, M.A. and F.R.S.; Sarah, who became Countess of Mexborough; Thomas, engineer and merchant; Anne, married to the Hon. Sir William Stanhope, Knight of the Bath; and John Hussey, Lord Delaval.

## Sir Francis Blake Delaval,

### THE GAY LOTHARIO.

FRANCIS BLAKE DELAVAL (2), eldest son of the marriage of Francis Blake Delaval (1) and Rhoda Apreece, was educated at Christ Church, Oxford. According to the *Alumni Oxonienses* he matriculated on the 23rd of March, 1746-47, "aged 20," from which it would appear that he was born in 1726. At Christ Church he mixed with the fastest of fast sets, and among the golden youth assembled there was dux in everything that did not relate to study and scholarship. When he left college he was ambitious to enter upon a parliamentary career, but there had been a general election in July, 1747, and under the Septennial Act another was not due till 1754. Fortunately for him, in 1751, Valens Comyn, one of the members for the little Wiltshire borough of Hindon, died, and although he knew nothing of the place or the people, he went down there with a well-lined purse, and used such potent arguments as convinced the "free and independent" electors

that he was the most fit and proper person to represent them in Parliament. And they sent him thither, accordingly.

Before the general election of 1754 became due, the young M.P. had offended his constituents by various freaks and vagaries, and it became necessary that he should look out for another seat. No owner of a pocket borough was willing to give him a place, for his votes could not be trusted. Hearing that the Hampshire town of Andover was likely to be captured by wealth and audacity he went there and boldly announced his intended candidature. He was a perfect stranger, as at Hindon, but the electors were delighted with his lavish hospitality, and charmed by his persuasive tongue, and when upon the nomination day he discharged five hundred guineas from a culverin above the heads of the townspeople, so that it actually rained gold, success was assured. Francis Blake Delaval became M.P. for Andover, with John Griffin Griffin for his colleague.

A story is told about this election which, if not true, is not improbable. One of the Andover worthies could not be induced to promise his vote to any of the candidates, whereupon Delaval paid him a visit, and endeavoured to discover some means of cajoling him. He knew that the man was unassailable by plain bribery, he therefore tried to tempt his ambition, his love of pleasure, his curiosity. He found that the favourite relaxation of the voter was a visit to London to view the public spectacles, and that he had seen most of them. He had, however, never been favoured by the sight of a fire-eater, and would not believe that any man could vomit smoke and flame out of his mouth like a volcano. Delaval despatched a message to Angelo, a famous fire-eater, then at the height of his fame, begging him to come to his assistance. Angelo obeyed the summons, and when the obdurate burgess saw him enter Andover in a chaise and four express he began to yield. But when Angelo filled his mouth with flame that poured from his lips and nostrils, and seemed even to issue from his eyes, and when the flames changed to various colours and seemed to increase in violence and intensity he gave way entirely. He implored Angelo to run no further hazard, confessing that "he did not think the devil himself could cast out such torrents of fire and flame, and that he believed the candidate had his Satanic Majesty for his friend, otherwise he never could have prevailed upon him to break the vow which he had made not to vote for him."

In 1758 the member for Andover entered as a volunteer on board a fleet under Commander Howe, which was destined to make a descent upon Cherbourg. After a tedious passage a landing was effected, Cherbourg was occupied, and all the forts in the neighbourhood were destroyed. Another descent was then made on the coast of Brittany, a few miles west of St. Malo, and here a sanguinary engagement took place in which the British were routed and driven on board their ships, with the loss of a thousand men. In this battle it is said that Delaval displayed great bravery. He came out of it unhurt, and for his services was created a Knight of the Bath—Sir Francis Blake Delaval, K.B.

At the election in 1761 Sir Francis was again returned for Andover, with Griffin his colleague. There appeared to be no opposition, but, according to another well-told story, the election was won by a trick. When Sir Francis commenced his canvass he went to the house of the Mayor, who had been his friend at the former election, and whose wife was also one of his old supporters. He now perceived by the averted glances of the lady that he had lost her favour. As he paid her some compliments while she made tea, she scornfully replied that his compliments were no more genuine than his tea canisters. It appears that on the former occasion he had promised her a handsome tea chest, with silver canisters, in place of which she had received only plated ones. Sir Francis protested that a trick had been played upon him as well as upon her, offered to produce his order to his agent, pleaded his own character as a gentleman, and his known habits, not only of generosity but of profusion. All would not do; the enraged Mayoress treated his apologies with disdain. What was to be done? Through the loss of the Mayor's vote he would lose others, and indeed the Corporation openly declared that, unless some person of wealth and consequence appeared from London as a candidate, they would elect a gentleman in the neighbourhood who had never canvassed the borough. Next morning an express arrived in Andover early, with a letter from "Sir Robert Ladbroke, knight, alderman of Bridge Ward Without, and Father of the City of London," declaring his intention to stand for the free and independent borough of Andover, intimating that his gouty state of health required care, and begging the Mayor, with whom he had some acquaintance, to secure for him a well-aired lodging. Mrs. Mayoress, in high exultation, had a bed prepared for the infirm Sir Robert in her best bed-chamber; supper was ready at

an early hour, but no Sir Robert appeared. At length a courier arrived with a letter excusing his presence that night, but promising that Sir Robert would breakfast next morning with the Mayor. The morning came, the breakfast passed, and the hour of election approached. An express was sent to hurry Sir Robert. The express was detained on the road. In default of the expected millionaire from the City, who for the best of reasons never made his appearance, Sir Francis Blake Delaval and Sir John Griffin Griffin were duly elected.

With this trick the electioneering experience of Sir Francis ended. His attorney's bill for services during the canvass was enormous. One item stood thus:—"To being thrown out of the window of the George Inn, Andover, to my leg being thereby broken, to surgeon's bill, and loss of time and business, all in the service of Sir Francis Delaval, £500." It appeared, when this item came to be explained, that the attorney, imitating the pranks of his patron, had sent invitations, in the name of the Mayor and Corporation, to the officers of a regiment in the town to dine and drink the king's health on his birthday, and had issued similar invitations from the officers to the municipal magnates. The two parties met, dined and drank, and towards the end each began to thank the other for the hospitable entertainment. Then the trick came out, and the attorney, who had the folly to be present, was seized, hoisted through the window, and his leg, as stated, broken by the fall into the street.

Thus far Sir Francis's parliamentary career; there remains much to be told of his social life—the life which gained for him the sobriquet of "the Gay Lothario." To Foote the actor, and Richard Lovell Edgeworth the philosopher, local history is indebted for most of that which has been published respecting Sir Francis, and the courtly splendour, the profuse living, and the mad pranks of himself, his brother, and his nieces at Seaton Delaval. Foote was Sir Francis's boon companion, both among the theatres and taverns of London, and in Northumberland. One day, in the midst of their gay, frolicsome existence, Foote suggested that as Sir Francis was fond of the stage and a good performer it would be turning his talents to account to get up some creditable play in which himself and friends might fill up the characters. The hint was taken, and Garrick being asked for the loan of Drury Lane Theatre, readily consented. The play fixed upon was "Othello"; the scenery was some months in preparation, the dresses were magnificent, and only people of the

first condition received tickets of admission. Ten guineas were offered and refused for a seat. Sir Francis played "Othello"; his brother John (afterwards Lord) Delaval was "Iago," Edward Delaval appeared as "Cassio," and "Desdemona" was personated by their sister Sarah, afterwards Lady Mexborough. The Prince of Wales and other members of the Royal family occupied the stage box, and the House of Commons adjourned at three o'clock to enable leading members to be present. Some time afterwards another performance was arranged, the play being "The Fair Penitent," and on this occasion one of the performers was his Royal Highness Edward Augustus, afterwards Duke of York and Albany, who was in love with Anne Delaval, sister of Sir Francis, and subsequently wife of Sir William Stanhope. Sir Francis played "Horatio," his brother John, "Sciolto," Prince Edward, "Lothair," Sarah Delaval, "Lavinia," and Anne, "Calista."

The festivities at Seaton Delaval, also, were frequently conducted under Foote's direction, especially the whimsical entertainments which Sir Francis gave to the farmers and peasantry of the district. These were generally composed of an ass race, a puppet show, a grinning match, a shift race by women, and perhaps a sack race, in which the first who, tied round the neck in a sack, jumped a certain distance, became the winner.

All these gay follies dipped deep into the pocket of Sir Francis, and it became necessary for him to find a rich wife. Foote knew a foolish old lady, daughter of the Earl of Thanet, and widow of Lord Nassau Paulett, with a fortune variously estimated at from £90,000 to £150,000. To obtain this lady's hand, and her money, for Sir Francis, they started a mysterious fortune-telling establishment. Edgeworth relates that Sir Francis secured for this purpose a large dark room up an obscure court, the entrance to which was a long, narrow, winding passage. He seated himself, as the conjurer, on a kind of ottoman in the middle of the room, with a huge drum before him, which contained his familiar spirit. He was dressed Eastern fashion, with an enormous turban and a long white beard. An assistant struck the drum from time to time, from which issued a deep and melancholy sound. The conjurer maintained complete silence, answering the questions of visitors by signs, which the interpreter translated into words. Sir Francis Delaval's habits and acquaintances furnished him with innumerable anecdotes of secret intrigues among men of gallantry and their paramours; Foote had

acquired a considerable knowledge of city life; and between them they managed to make disclosures which gave them swift celebrity. The conjurer was credited with having revealed secrets that had been buried for years. His method of obtaining influence over the incredulous was by telling them some small detached circumstance happening to them, which they supposed could hardly be known to anybody but themselves. This he effected by means of his door porter, who, obtaining from servants of his master's visitors various items respecting the families they served, communicated the information through a pipe to the drum of the conjurer. It is said that having carried on this delusion for a whole season they brought on, or broke off, more matches in fashionable life than all the dowagers in town could accomplish. Among them was the union between Sir Francis and Lady Paulett, and that having been completed, the magician suddenly disappeared.

Lady Paulett's fortune passed into the hands of her new husband, who very soon spent the greater part of it in paying off pressing scores and indulging in wilder dissipation than before. It speedily came to an end, and he was glad to enter into an arrangement with his brother John, the next heir, to allow him £4000 a year. He did not, however, live long upon his brother's generosity. On the 6th of August, 1771, at his residence in London, he was found dead in his bed.

Cook, the author of Foote's "Memoirs," describes Sir Francis as born with superior advantages of person and fortune. "The former he availed himself of in the prosecution of his pleasures; the latter he employed alternately as a means of dissipation and of generosity. In modern honour and modern gallantry he vied with the first fashionables in Europe. He had not a grain of Nero's cruelty, but had he been born in his Court would have rode with him as a charioteer, fiddled with him as a musician, fenced with him as a gladiator, and spouted with him as a player. Though indolent in his business he was active in his pleasures; and so strongly did he possess the spirit of emulation, that he would be the leading showman of his day, whatever species of frivolity was the fashion. Yet, with all these drawbacks on his character, he was not deficient in either wit or learning, or in the ready application of both. He excelled sometimes in repartee, and once replied to Lord Chatham in the House of Commons with a point and promptitude which for a time abashed even that celebrated statesman."

# John, Lord Delaval,

POLITICIAN.

JOHN HUSSEY DELAVAL, second son of Captain Delaval, came into possession of the maternal estate of Doddington at his father's death, and, having married his cousin, Susanna, widow of John Potter, arranged terms with his elder brother, Sir Francis, for the acquisition of Ford Castle. Possessing the sanguine temperament and impetuous ardour of his race, and desirous of achieving distinction in Parliament, he began at an early age to woo the adjoining constituency of Berwick. When, therefore, in 1754, a dissolution occurred, he offered himself as a candidate for that borough, and the electors, reviving recollections of his grandfather's representation of the town, accepted him. There had been no contest for some time in Berwick, and it was expected that the old member, Thomas Watson, and Mr. Delaval would have a walk over. But to the surprise of the electors, a Londoner named John Wilkes, a young man of twenty-seven, of whom nobody had heard (though the whole kingdom knew him soon after), was coming down to contest the seat, and that he was sending round by sea a number of Berwick electors, resident in London, to vote for him. Wilkes came, but his voyaging voters came not. Contrary winds detained them (giving rise to the oft-told legend, that Wilkes shipped a batch of his opponents to Norway), and when they arrived, Delaval and Watson had been elected.

At the dissolution, in 1761, the occupant of Ford Castle did not seek re-election. The young king, George III., recognising his abilities and public spirit, created him a baronet, and with his honours fresh upon him he entered into the projects which had occasioned his retirement. These were the rebuilding of Ford Castle, then rapidly becoming uninhabitable, and the improvement of Seaton Sluice, which the improvidence of his elder brother had placed under his control. Both undertakings were completed about the same time. It fell to the lot of the first editor of the *Newcastle Chronicle* to record in his first issue (Saturday, March 24th, 1764) the successful achievement of the last-named enterprise—"The same day [Monday, March 19th] the new harbour at Hartley Pans

was opened for the reception of ships; on which account a grand entertainment was given by Sir John Hussey Delaval to a great number of gentlemen, masters, etc. Three oxen and several sheep, with a large quantity of strong beer, were given to the workmen, etc., on the same occasion."

What the improvements at Seaton were we learn from another source. They comprised a new entrance into the little harbour, which was obtained by cutting through solid rock a channel direct to the sea 900 feet long, 30 feet broad, and 52 feet deep; the extension of berthage within by which the port was rendered capable of accommodating "twelve or fourteen sail of vessels, each of two or three hundred tons burthen;" a foot bridge over the cut for the convenience of passengers, and new machinery for the more expeditious loading and discharging of cargoes. On the day it was finished two ships entered the new canal "in full sail," and forty-eight hours afterwards, one of them, the "*Warkworth*, Captain Curry," left it fully laden with "thirteen keels" of Delaval coal.

These important undertakings accomplished, Sir John resumed his political career. His successor in the representation of Berwick died within a year of the re-opening of Seaton Sluice, and he was restored to his old seat for that borough. He was equally successful in retaining the confidence of the burgesses at the election of 1768, but at that of 1774, deserting Berwick to stand for the county, under the patronage of the Duke of Northumberland, he was defeated. The conduct of the Duke in attempting to run Sir John in conjunction with his son, Lord Algernon Percy, and thus monopolise the representation, was strongly resented by some of the freeholders, among whom the redoubtable George Grieve, of Alnwick, made himself conspicuous, and although the two candidates worked together, Sir John polled only 1,083 to his lordship's 1,235, and Sir William Middleton beat him for second place by sixteen votes. At the next election, in 1780, his old constituents at Berwick, condoning his temporary desertion, accepted him without a contest. He was re-elected for the borough in 1784, as Baron Delaval, of the kingdom of Ireland, having been, the year before, created an Irish peer; and two years later his career in the Commons ended by his elevation to the English peerage. During his later occupancy of a seat in the Lower House, wavering, like other members, upon the great question of the India Bill, he came under the lash of the writers in the Rolliad, chief among them being Joseph Richardson, M.P. for Newport,

a native of Hexham, and the friend of Burke, Fox, and Sheridan. In that remarkable series of political eclogues, which ran through twenty editions in a few years, he appears as—

> " The Noble Convert, Berwick's honour'd choice,
> That faithful echo of the people's voice,
> One day to gain an Irish title glad,
> For Fox he voted—so the people bade;
> 'Mongst English Lords ambitious grown to sit,
> Next day the people bade him vote for Pitt;
> To join the stream, our Patriot, nothing loth,
> By turns discreetly gave his voice for both."

In another part of the work, a whole poem, from the pen of Mr. Richardson, is devoted to him, under the title of "The Delavaliad." Every other line, and there are dozens of them, ends with his name. Thus:—

> " Ye patriots all, both great and small,
> Resign the palm to Delaval;
> The virtues would'st thou practise all,
> So in a month did Delaval.
> A patriot first both stout and tall,
> Firm for the day was Delaval;
> The friend to Court, where frowns appal,
> The next became good Delaval.
> Wilt thou against oppression bawl?
> Just so did valiant Delaval!
> Yet, in a month, thyself enthral,
> So did the yielding Delaval;
> Yet give to both a dangerous fall,
> So did reflecting Delaval.
>
> . . . . . .
>
> What friend to freedom's fair-built Hall
> Was louder heard than Delaval?
> Yet who the Commons' rights to maul
> More stout was found than Delaval?
> 'Gainst Lords and Lordlings would'st thou brawl?
> Just so did he—Sir Delaval:
> Yet, on thy knees, to honours crawl,
> Oh! so did he—Lord Delaval.
>
> . . . . . .
>
> Borne on all fours, the fame shall sprawl
> To latest time, of Delaval.
> Then come ye Nine in one great squall,
> Proclaim the worths of Delaval."

For two-and-twenty years after his elevation, Lord Delaval enjoyed the honours pertaining to his rank and the diversions procurable by his wealth, at his magnificent home of Seaton Delaval, and the scarcely less palatial residence of Ford Castle. Of the life which he and his family lived, much may be read in the annals of the period. All the members of the family gave themselves up to luxurious enjoyment, love, and gallantry. They were the gayest of the gay, the wildest of the wild. The fêtes and masquerades that were given at Seaton Delaval converted the house and gardens into a perfect fairy-land, with throngs of gay and lively creatures frolicking and flirting about, as in the fabled isle of Calypso. The most extraordinary pranks used also to be played, to the amusement of all but the actual sufferers. The house was fitted up with strange contrivances for performing practical jokes. Beds were suspended by pulleys over trap-doors, so that when guests had retired after a carouse and were just dropping asleep they were rapidly let down into a cold bath. Another contrivance was the partitioning of bedrooms in such fashion that at night, when ladies and gentlemen were in various stages of undress, the partitions disappeared suddenly, disclosing a miscellaneous assemblage of both sexes in the most embarrassing plight imaginable.

An illustration of their profuse hospitality is afforded by the following account of a tenantry dinner at Ford, taken from the *Berwick Museum*, under date October 26th, 1787:—"Upwards of five hundred tenants and servants belonging to the right hon. Lord Delaval assembled at his lordship's seat at Ford Castle, where they were entertained with the utmost liberality; fifty of the most seasonable dishes were placed on each table; a large fat ox was prepared; and the liquor, which was plentifully supplied, was of the very best quality. One hundred and fifty gallons of rum, eighty gallons of brandy, one hundred and eighty bottles of wine, and several barrels of strong beer were drunk; one bowl of punch contained eighteen gallons of spirits, six stones of sugar, and forty lemons. Many toasts expressive of the highest regard for the noble donor and his family were drank, and the whole was conducted with the greatest harmony and joviality. The remaining victuals, which weighed upwards of eighty stones, were distributed to the poor inhabitants of the neighbourhood."

Throughout his career Lord Delaval was a man of business, holding enlightened views of commerce, and giving practical effect

to advanced ideas in agriculture. Under the direction of his brother Thomas he carried out the improvements at Seaton Sluice, extended his colliery operations at Seaton Delaval, and established at Hartley manufactories of glass and copperas. Writing a few years after his death of the changes which his lordship effected upon his property at Ford, Mackenzie tells us that "The memory of Sir John Hussey Delaval is highly honoured in Northumberland. He employed his ample wealth in cultivating and improving his estates, and in dispensing felicity to innumerable families. The country around Ford, which was one continued sheep-walk, he divided and enclosed with excellent hedges, and clothed the bare hills with fine plantations. He also attempted to increase the riches and population of the country by the establishment of a plating forge, which he erected in 1769, about a mile further down the river, where a large quantity of shovels, spades, etc., were made as well for home consumption as for exportation. Had the scheme succeeded according to the benevolent views of the proprietor, it would have been productive of many beneficial consequences to the district."

By his wife, Lady Susanna, who died shortly after his elevation to the peerage, Lord Delaval had an only son and six daughters. The son, his father's hope, and two of the daughters, died young. The survivors grew up into beautiful and accomplished women, whose high spirit and frolicsome adventures gave to Seaton Delaval a fame that lingers around it even yet. Sarah, her father's favourite, and the liveliest of the four, married the Earl of Tyrconnel, and left an only daughter, who became the wife of the second Marquis of Waterford. Elizabeth was united to the twenty-first Baron Audley; Sophia Anne and Frances married commoners. In his old age, Lord Delaval took a second wife, and when he died, May 17th, 1808, at the lordly age of fourscore, he bequeathed to this lady a life-interest in Ford Castle, with remainder to his granddaughter, the Marchioness of Waterford. The entailed estates passed to his brother, Edward Hussey Delaval, and from him to his nephew, Sir Jacob Henry Astley, whose son, Sir Jacob, proved his title, in 1841, to the abeyant barony of Hastings. In this family the estates remain, the present owner of Seaton Delaval being Sir George Manners Astley, twenty-sixth Baron Hastings, married, 17th April, 1880, to the Honourable Elizabeth E. Harbord, daughter of Charles, fifth Baron Suffield.

# Thomas Delaval,

MERCHANT, ENGINEER, AND POLITICIAN.

WHILE Sir Francis Blake Delaval was spending the fortune which his ancestors had left him, and Sir John Hussey Delaval was making his way to a baronetcy and the peerage, two younger brothers—Edward and Thomas—were gaining honourable positions in wholly different directions. Edward became engrossed in science and philosophy; Thomas cultivated a passion for industrial and mechanical pursuits; both of them achieved distinction in their respective branches of study.

Thomas Delaval, who married a lady of fortune—Cecilia Watson, of London—began life as a merchant in Hamburg. In that famous town he was able to combine commercial speculation with the pursuits of his youth, and to interest himself in the progress of mechanics, navigation, and manufactures. When Sir John Hussey Delaval acquired from his elder brother Francis the control of the family property, Thomas returned from Germany to develop the natural resources of the Seaton estate. It was he who planned the new entrance to the harbour of Seaton Sluice, and superintended the difficult operation of cutting a channel through the solid rock, thus making the little port "accessible with every wind," and providing berthage "secure against every storm." To consume the small coals produced in the Delaval pits, he introduced the manufacture of glass; to render commercially valuable the pyrites with which the coal seams abounded he constructed floors and crystallising cisterns for the extraction of copperas. In no long time after his return visitors who participated in festivities at Seaton Delaval saw the little harbour at Seaton Sluice filled with ships, the fishing village of Hartley thronged by glass-workers and copperas-boilers, the Delaval pits working at full stretch, the whole estate surrounded by a thriving industrial community.

In the midst of all these commercial activities, Thomas Delaval had the misfortune to be drawn into politics. Under what inducements he entered that arena of rancour and bitterness Mr. Clephan has told us in an article which links Marat's "Chains of Slavery" to the political history of Tyneside. Let it suffice here to state that the

Hon. Constantine John Phipps and he were the candidates chosen by the "Independent" burgesses to contest the representation of Newcastle against Sir Walter Blackett and Sir Matthew White Ridley. It was a hopeless struggle from the first. Mr. Phipps was a stranger; Mr. Delaval was untried, and, politically, unknown. The only man of influence on the "independent" side was the Rev. James Murray. His trenchant pen was employed for them in a monthly publication, called *The Freemen's Magazine*, which he issued from May to October, when the poll was taken, and on the eve of the election he came out with a slashing pamphlet of forty pages, entitled "The Contest," bearing as its motto the proverb "Give the devil his due." But theirs was a party which, as was bitterly remarked by one of themselves in a later publication, "had not in it one lord, one baronet, one knight, one magistrate, one councillor, one placeman, and, the reader may be sure then, not one bishop, dean, priest, or deacon." When the poll was taken, Sir Walter Blackett stood at the top, with 1,432 votes, and Mr. Delaval at the bottom with 677.

Once again Mr. Delaval, who is described as of Clapham, near London, was induced to try his fortune at a parliamentary contest in Newcastle. He allowed the by-election of 1777 (occasioned by the death of Sir Walter Blackett) to be fought out between Sir Walter's nephew, Sir John Trevelyan, the successful candidate, and the adventurer, Stoney Bowes. But at the general election in 1780 he suffered himself to be nominated against Bowes and Sir Matthew White Ridley, and although he polled 1,085 votes on that occasion, Bowes beat him by 50, and Sir Matthew by 323 votes. No more is heard of him in local affairs. It is supposed that he retired to his home at Clapham, where he would be able to share, for the rest of his life, the congenial society of his brother Edward, who had long been resident at Westminster. He died in 1787, aged 56 years.

## Edward Hussey Delaval,

THE LAST OF THE DELAVAL RACE.

SIR FRANCIS BLAKE DELAVAL died in 1771; Thomas Delaval, as we have just seen, passed away in 1787; after the death of the latter there remained but two of the four celebrated brothers Delaval—John Hussey the peer, and Edward Hussey the philosopher.

Edward Hussey Delaval was born in 1729, and from early youth devoted himself to a life of study and scientific experiment. He matriculated at Cambridge, where he took the degree of M.A., and became a fellow of Pembroke Hall. Distinguishing himself in chemistry and experimental philosophy, he was elected in 1759 a member of the Royal Society, to the transactions of which learned body he contributed, from time to time, the results of his researches and investigations. His first paper, read to the Society in 1764, described the effects of lightning upon St. Bride's Church, Fleet Street, London; his next, contributed the following year, and rewarded with the Society's gold medal, detailed the result of elaborate experiments which he had undertaken with the object of proving the applicability of Newton's optical theories to permanently coloured bodies, and demonstrating the agreement between specific gravities of metals and their colours when united to glass.

About this time he was associated with Benjamin Franklin in the study of electrical phenomena. Franklin had established, a few years earlier, the identity of lightning and electricity, and had published a plan for defending houses from electrical discharges by the use of pointed conductors. He was residing in England for the second time as provincial agent of the American Government when Mr. Delaval's experiments were beginning to attract notice, and the meetings of the Royal Society, where electrical inquiries were just then receiving great encouragement, brought the old experimenter and the younger investigator together. They were members of a committee appointed by the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's to report upon the best means of preserving the Cathedral from lightning. Shortly after their report was made St. Paul's was struck by the electric fluid, and Mr. Delaval availed himself of the opportunity to reiterate his views on the subject of these discharges. Out of his observations arose a controversy upon the respective merits of pointed and blunt conductors, in which he took the "blunt" side of the discussion, contending that in buildings of moderate size that form of conductor was the most useful.

In 1775, in conjunction with Benjamin Wilson, painter and electrician, Mr. Delaval conducted a series of experiments upon phosphorus, and the colours produced by it in the dark. Developing still further his theories regarding colour, he issued in 1774 a few copies of a paper (entered at Stationers' Hall, but without printer's name), entitled—

"An Experimental Inquiry into the Cause of the Changes of Colours in Opake and Coloured Bodies." By Edward Hussey Delaval, M.A., F.R.S., and Fellow of Pembroke Hall, Cambridge.

Behind the title-page was this curious note:—"The Author begs the Favour of . . . not to part with this Paper out of his Hands, as it is not intended to be Published. Five Copies only have been presented to his Friends, which were printed to avoid the Difficulty and Inaccuracy of Transcribing." Three years later the author was induced to publish the paper (which ran into a second edition), accompanied by an historical preface describing the philosophical principles involved in the investigation, and the several arts and manufactures dependent upon them. Later on he wrote a treatise upon another branch of the inquiry—the cause of permanent colours in opaque objects, which, being read to the Manchester Literary and Philosophical Society, procured for him the honour of that society's gold medal. Among his lesser undertakings were the construction of a set of musical glasses, till then unknown in England, the extraction of fluor from glass, the making of artificial gems, and the manufacture of artificial stone. In the *Philosophical Magazine and Journal*, vol. xlv., these minor achievements are noted in the following terms of approval:—"The various brilliant artificial gems made by Mr. Delaval, the curious samples of his mode of abstracting the fluor from glass, and the neat Gothic house in Parliament Place, in which he resided till his death, the interior of which is elegantly formed of artificial stone under his immediate direction, in order to be perfectly secure from fire, will long remain durable testimonies of his knowledge as a chemist, and of his taste as a gentleman."

Mr. Delaval did not participate to any great extent in the gaieties of his brothers at Seaton Delaval. He made the Metropolis his home, and his friendships and connections were among men of a different order. His "neat Gothic house in Parliament Place" was a resort of the leading scientists of the day; the poets Mason and Gray were his familiar friends. Nor were other literary companions wanting, for he was a sound classical scholar, conversant with several modern tongues, and an accurate judge of music and art. Abroad his experiments and discoveries were highly appreciated. Several of his productions were translated into French and Italian; he corresponded with some of the chief investigators and students of philosophy on the Continent; he received the unsolicited honour of

election as a member of the Royal Societies of Göttingen and Upsala, and the Institute of Bologna.

Upon the death of his brother, the peer, the entailed estates of the family came into Mr. Delaval's possession. Being then seventy-nine years of age, and having passed his life among totally different surroundings, he was unwilling to exchange his home and its treasures for the magnificent abode of his predecessors. He maintained the reputation of the family for charity to the poor and benevolence to local institutions, subscribed forty pounds to the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, and accepted the position of an honorary member, but, although his tenure of the property lasted six years, to Northumberland he never came. He was the last of his race, and when he died, on the 14th of August, 1814, aged 85, the great local family whose name he bore practically ceased to exist. In a few years after his death, little remained but the record of their lives and characters to attest their former magnificence. Their estates passed into the hands of others—relatives, but strangers; the harbour of Seaton Sluice went to decay; the industries of Hartley died out; and a devastating fire brought ruin to

"The hall
Of lofty Seaton Delaval."

# James, Earl of Derwentwater.

THE REBELLION OF 1715.

THE family of Derwentwater date back to a remote period of British history. They were settled in the Cumberland valley from which their name is derived before the Conquest, and, in all probability, from the rugged nature of the country, and the difficulty of dispossessing them, were allowed by the Norman invaders to retain their extensive domains in peace. In 1417, Elizabeth, sole heiress of Sir John de Derwentwater, married Thomas Radcliffe of Wymersley, a descendant of the Radcliffes of Radcliffe Towers, Lancashire, and carried the estates of her ancestors into the Radcliffe family. A grandson, Sir Edward Radcliffe, knight, espoused Anne, daughter and heiress of John Cartington, owner of Cartington, Dilston, Whittonstall, etc., and thus acquired considerable estates in the county of Northumberland. From this marriage came—

Sir Cuthbert Radcliffe, knight, of Dilston, married, 1514, Margaret, daughter of Henry, Lord Clifford, Westmorland and Vesey. High Sheriff of Northumberland in 1501. Died July 20th, 1545.

Sir George Radcliffe, knight, eldest son of Sir Cuthbert, married Katherine, daughter of Sir William Mallory, of Studley. High Sheriff of Northumberland, 1558; Lord Warden of the East Marches. Died May 31st, 1588.

Sir Francis Radcliffe (1), only son of Sir George, married Isabel, daughter of Sir Ralph Grey, of Chillingham. Created a baronet January 31st, 1619-20. Died December 23rd, 1622, and was buried at Corbridge.

Sir Edward Radcliffe, Bart., second surviving son of Sir Francis. Born 1st June, 1589; married, in 1623, Elizabeth, daughter and sole heiress of Thomas Barton, of Whenby, Yorkshire. Temporarily deprived of his estates for loyalty during the Civil War. Died in December, 1663; buried at Dilston.

Sir Francis Radcliffe (2), eldest son of Sir Edward. Born in 1624, married Katherine, daughter of Sir William Fenwick of Meldon, and widow of Henry Lawson, of Brough Hall. Created first Earl of Derwentwater in 1688, on the marriage of his son Edward to Lady Mary Tudor, a child of thirteen years, natural daughter of Charles II. Died in 1697; buried at Dilston.

Edward Radcliffe, second Earl of Derwentwater, born in 1645, married in 1688, as above stated, Lady Mary Tudor; separated from her in 1700. Died April 20th, 1705; buried at Dilston.

James, third Earl of Derwentwater, eldest son of the ill-assorted marriage between his father and the illegitimate daughter of King Charles II., was born in Arlington Street, London, on the 28th of June, 1689. Being united by ties of consanguinity to the family of King James II., who, at the Revolution in the preceding autumn, had fled to France, he was taken to St. Germains, and brought up with the infant son of the absconding monarch, known in after years as "The Pretender." Thus a friendship was formed which, strengthened in riper age, terminated with the Earl's life, sacrificed in a vain attempt to seat the companion of his childhood on the forfeited throne of his ancestors.

On the death of his father in 1705, James Radcliffe succeeded to the title and estates of his family, and in 1710, then in his twenty-first year, came to live at Dilston, where he exercised almost princely hospitality. On the 10th of July, 1712, he was married to Anna

Maria, daughter of Sir John Webb, of Canford, in Dorsetshire.

Shortly after the accession of George I., in 1714, a very extensive design existed for restoring the family of Stuart to the throne. Those who favoured this unhappy cause—usually termed Jacobites, from James II.—were principally old families of rank in the North and West of England and in Scotland. The Government becoming alarmed, seized horses, arms, and ammunition which had been gathered together by the Jacobite leaders, and hastened to take

various persons into custody. Among the noblemen and gentlemen who were ordered to be taken into custody were the Earl of Derwentwater and Mr. Thomas Forster, of Adderstone, one of the members for Northumberland. Lord Derwentwater, in consequence, fled from Dilston, and found refuge in the cottage of one Richard Lambert, a humble but faithful retainer of his family.

For some time preparations had been making by the Catholic gentry of Northumberland to appear in arms on the first warning. As it was considered unsafe to employ the usual mode of carrying on so important a correspondence, gentlemen were engaged to travel on

horseback from place to place in the country (ostensibly on business) to deposit letters in secure situations, and to take others up and deliver elsewhere. A holly hedge still existing on the roadside between Dilston and the Linnels, locally known as the "Hollin Bush," is said to have been used for this purpose.

Lord Derwentwater remained for some time in concealment; but, being at length desirous of an interview with his family, he repaired secretly to his own house. On his lordship presenting himself before his wife, it is said that she reproached him with some asperity, declaring it was not fitting that the Earl of Derwentwater should hide his head in hovels from the light of day when the gentry were up in arms for their lawful sovereign. It is also said that she at the same time threw down her fan, indignantly exclaiming, "Take that, and give your sword to me." Be this as it may, the Earl resolved to join the insurgents.

It was on the 6th October, 1715, that the Earl of Derwentwater went into open rebellion. Attended by only a small body of retainers, he met Mr. Forster with a few followers at a place called Green Rig, on the top of a hill in the parish of Birtley, North Tyne. The whole force amounted to sixty persons on horseback. What was wanting in numbers could not well be said to be compensated by military skill or heroism. The smallness of Derwentwater's party showed that the authority which he possessed over extensive estates had either been exerted very feebly or had been counteracted by some opposite influence. He was himself, though an amiable man, possessed of no special talents for such an enterprise.

The insurgents marched first to a place called Plainfield, on the river Coquet, where they were joined by a number of friends, and then to Rothbury, where they quartered for the night. Next morning they proceeded to Warkworth, where they were joined by Lord Widdrington, great-grandson of the famous Lord Widdrington, "one of the most goodly persons of that age," who had been killed fighting for Charles II. in 1651. Forster was now chosen commander-in-chief, not from any supposed abilities or military knowledge, but merely because he was a Protestant, it being judged unwise to excite popular prejudice against the insurgent cause by placing a Catholic at its head.

From Warkworth they marched to Alnwick, where, as they had done at Warkworth, they proclaimed James III. Proceeding next to Morpeth, they were met at Felton Bridge by seventy horse

from the Scottish Border, so that they now amounted to 300. They had many friends in Newcastle, and Sir William Blackett (one of the representatives in Parliament, and a great coal proprietor, and, therefore, possessed of extensive influence among the keelmen) being, as was understood, inclined towards their cause, they expected an easy capture of the town, intending to make it a grand stronghold for their party. But the great body of the inhabitants, like those of all the thriving towns in the country, sided with the reigning family. Newcastle, though not regularly fortified, had strong walls and gates, which were well secured and defended by seven hundred volunteers, while as many more could very soon have been raised among the keelmen and bargemen employed on the Tyne. The Earl of Scarborough, Lord Lieutenant of Northumberland, and a number of the neighbouring gentry, supported the loyal portion of the citizens in their resolution, and the arrival of a body of regular troops put this important post out of danger. Frustrated in their designs on Newcastle, the Jacobites turned aside to Hexham, from which they were led, few of them knowing whither, to a large heath or moor near Dilston, and there they halted, waiting for an opportunity to surprise Newcastle. But hearing of the arrival of General Carpenter with part of those forces with which he afterwards attacked the insurgents, they again retired to Hexham, where they proclaimed King James.

In the meantime the Jacobites in the South-West of Scotland had also risen in insurrection, placing Viscount Kenmure, a Protestant nobleman of high character, at their head. Kenmure, finding that he could not with a handful of cavalry obtain possession of Dumfries, resolved to unite his forces with the Northumberland gentlemen; and with that object he proceeded through Hawick and Jedburgh over the Border to Rothbury, where the junction was effected.

The combined forces of Kenmure and Forster, having been apprised that a detachment of Mar's army had been sent across the Firth of Forth to join them, crossed the Tweed, and directed their march towards Kelso, which had been appointed as the place of junction. The Earl of Mar, commander-in-chief of the rebels in Scotland, sent upon this mission towards the Borders a body of picked men, which, on the 22nd of October, 1715, joined the forces of Lord Kenmure and Mr. Forster. The combined forces of the insurgents, when mustered in Kelso, were found to amount to 600 horse and 1,400 foot.

The insurgents remained in Kelso from the 22nd to the 27th of October. One plan of operations was advocated by the Scots, another by the English. The Highlanders positively refused to enter England, and the English were determined to advance no further into Scotland. In the end they moved westward along the Border. On Sunday, October 30th, the rebels entered Langholm and the dispute was renewed, the Scots insisting on forming a junction with the Earl of Mar, while Mr. Forster and his friends obstinately adhered to their proposal of entering England, affirming that upon appearing there they would be joined by 20,000 men. After a long altercation, they finally resolved upon the invasion of Lancashire, but a detachment of about 500 Highlanders broke away entirely from their companions, with the purpose of returning home through the western districts and by the heads of the Forth. The main body of the insurgents, weakened by the desertion of the 500 Highlanders, entered England on the 1st of November, and took up their quarters for that night at Brampton, where they seized the money collected for the excise on malt and ale. Here Mr. Forster opened his commission from the Earl of Mar to act as General in England. The next day they marched to Penrith, the principal inhabitants of which treated them with all manner of civility, and from thence they went to Appleby. From Appleby they proceeded to Kendal, and from Kendal to Kirkby-Lonsdale, everywhere proclaiming King James. Their next remove was to Lancaster, and during the march they learned from Charles Widdrington, brother to Lord Widdrington, who had been sent forward to warn their friends in Lancashire of their approach, that King James had been proclaimed at Manchester. This cheering intelligence raised the spirits of the Highlanders, so, with the confident expectation of success, they continued their march to Lancaster. They remained at Lancaster two days, and pushed forward to Preston, from which Stanhope's regiment of dragoons and a body of militia thought it prudent to retire.

On arriving at Preston, on the 10th November, the insurgents were joined by nearly all the Catholics in the district, the augmentation of their numbers amounting to 1,200. But just as they had taken possession of Preston, General Willis, commanding the loyal forces of Lancashire, left Manchester with four regiments of cavalry and one of foot, commanded by experienced officers. At Wigan he was joined by Pitt's regiment of dragoons, and also by Stanhope's,

which had retired on the approach of the insurgents. Having learned that General Carpenter was advancing from the opposite quarter, Willis determined to march straight upon Preston.

Early on the morning of November 12, General Carpenter arrived with a part of his cavalry, accompanied by the Earl of Carlisle, Lord Lumley, and a considerable number of the gentry of the country.

The situation of the insurgents had now become desperate; cut off from all assistance, their fate was inevitable. Every avenue of flight was closely guarded; and of those who made a desperate attempt to sally, the greater part were cut in pieces, and only a very few escaped by hewing their way through the enemy. Forster was completely disheartened; and at the instigation of Lord Widdrington and a few others, Colonel Oxburgh, who had been Forster's principal adviser in military matters, went out to ask terms of surrender. Willis would go no further than to say that if the rebels would lay down their arms, and surrender at discretion, he would protect them from being cut to pieces by the soldiers, until further orders from Government. When Oxburgh returned and reported the result of his mission, Captain Dalzeil went out in the name of the Scots to ascertain what terms would be granted to them; but Willis refused to offer any other terms. Dalzeil then requested time, which was granted, on condition that the insurgents should give hostages against throwing up new entrenchments or making any attempt to escape. The hostages selected were the Earl of Derwentwater and Brigadier Mackintosh.

Next morning, November 14, Forster sent a message to Willis, informing him that the insurgents were willing to surrender on the terms proposed. The Royal troops then entered Preston in two detachments, and, meeting in the Market Place, where the whole of the insurgents were drawn up, they disarmed and formally made them prisoners. By this final blow the rebellion in England was effectually terminated.

Among the captives taken at Preston were Lords Derwentwater, Widdrington, and Charles Murray, as well as members of the ancient Northern families of Collingwood, Thornton, Shafto, Charlton, Riddell, Clavering, and Swinburne. The Earl of Derwentwater, with upwards of two hundred other prisoners, was escorted to London, and arrived there on the 9th of December. On the way, it is reported that he inquired how he and his brother-prisoners were likely to be disposed of. On being told, he rejoined that

there was one house which would hold them all, and they had the best title to it of any people in Europe—that was the Bedlam Hospital! Upon entering town, the arms of each prisoner were pinioned, and his horse was led by a foot-soldier with fixed bayonet. The captive lords and gentlemen rode two abreast, in four divisions, each of which was preceded by a party of horse with drawn swords, and the drums of the escort beat a triumphal march. At the head of the fourth division rode the Earl of Derwentwater and the other English noblemen, accompanied by Mr. Forster. Lord Derwentwater was conducted to the Tower; Charles Radcliffe, Forster, and about seventy other prisoners were conveyed to Newgate; the rest were located in the Marshalsea and the Fleet.

When Parliament opened on January 9th, 1716, it was moved to impeach Lords Derwentwater, Widdrington, etc., of high treason. No opposition was offered, and the impeachment was carried up to the Lords on the same day. On February 9th, the noble prisoners were arraigned at Westminster. Lord Derwentwater pleaded guilty, acknowledged his crime, and threw himself upon the king's mercy. He pleaded his youth and inexperience and various other palliating circumstances with which his case was attended—affirmed that his temper and inclination disposed him to live peaceably under his Majesty's Government, that he had never had any previous connection with any designs to subvert the reigning family, and that he took the first opportunity of submitting to the king's mercy; and concluded with a hope that their lordships would use their mediation for mercy on his behalf, which would lay him under the highest obligations of duty and affection to his Majesty, and perpetual gratitude to both Houses of Parliament. In spite of this appeal, however, he was condemned to suffer death as a traitor, according to its ancient barbarous form. The sentence was:—"You must be hanged by the neck, but not till you are dead, for you must be cut down alive; then your bowels must be taken out and burned before your face; then your head must be severed from your body, and your body divided into four quarters, and these must be at the king's disposal." Orders, however, were afterwards issued that he should be merely beheaded, and his body given up to his friends.

Great interest was exerted with the Court and both Houses of Parliament in behalf of the earl. Lady Derwentwater, accompanied by the Duchesses of Cleveland and Bolton and other ladies of the first rank, was introduced into the king's bedchamber, where she

humbly implored his clemency for her unfortunate husband. Appeals were made to the cupidity, as well as to the compassion, of his Majesty's ministers; and Sir Robert Walpole declared in the House of Commons that £60,000 had been offered to him if he would obtain the pardon of the earl.

In the Upper House, a still more effectual stand was made on the side of mercy. The Duke of Richmond, a near relative of Lord Derwentwater's, consented to present a petition in his favour, though he voted against it. But the Earl of Nottingham, President of the Council, suddenly gave his support to the petition. This unexpected defection from the Ministerial ranks made the resistance of the Government unavailing, and an address to the king for a reprieve for such of the condemned lords as should deserve his mercy was carried by a majority of five. The result astonished and alarmed the Ministers, who met in Council the same evening, and drew up the king's answer to the address, merely stating "that on this and all other occasions he would do what he thought most consistent with the dignity of his crown and the safety of his people." It was determined to comply with the feeling of the House of Lords so far as to respite the Earl of Carnwath and Lord Widdrington; but, to prevent any other interference, the three remaining peers were ordered for execution next morning. The same evening, however, Lord Nithsdale escaped.

On the morning of the 24th February the victims were brought to the scaffold on Tower Hill. Lord Derwentwater was first conducted to the fatal spot. He was observed to turn very pale as he ascended the steps; but his voice was firm, and his demeanour steady and composed. Having passed some time in prayer, he requested permission to read a paper which he had drawn up. This request being readily granted, he went to the rails of the scaffold, and read the following statement:—

"Being in a few minutes to appear before the tribunal of God, where, though most unworthy, I hope to find mercy, which I have not found from men now in power, I have endeavoured to make my peace with his Divine Majesty, by most humbly begging pardon for all the sins of my life; and I doubt not of a merciful forgiveness through the merits of the passion and death of my Saviour, Jesus Christ, for which end I earnestly desire the prayers of all good Christians. After this, I am to ask pardon of those whom I might have scandalised by pleading guilty at my trial. Such as were per-

mitted to come to me told me that, having been undeniably in arms, pleading guilty was but the consequence of having submitted to mercy; and many arguments were used to prove there was nothing of moment in so doing. . . . But I am sensible that in this I have made bold with my loyalty, having never any other but King James the Third for my rightful and lawful sovereign. Him I had an inclination to serve from my infancy, and was moved thereto by a natural love I had to his person, knowing him to be capable of making his people happy. And though he had been of a different religion from mine, I should have done for him all that lay in my power, as my ancestors have done for his predecessors, being thereunto bound by the laws of God and man. Wherefore, if in this affair I have acted rashly, it ought not to affect the innocent. I intended to wrong nobody, but to serve my King and country, and that without self-interest, hoping by the example I gave, to have induced others to do their duty; and God, who sees the secrets of my heart, knows I speak truth. Some means have been proposed to me for saving my life, which I looked upon as inconsistent with honour and conscience, and therefore I rejected them; for with God's assistance I shall prefer any death to the doing a base unworthy action. I only wish now that the laying down my life might contribute to the service of my King and country, and the re-establishment of the ancient and fundamental constitution of these kingdoms, without which no lasting peace or true happiness can attend them. Then I should indeed part with life even with pleasure. As it is, I can only pray that these blessings may be bestowed upon my dear country; and since I can do no more, I beseech God to accept of my life as a small sacrifice towards it. I die a Roman Catholic. I am in perfect charity with all the world—I thank God for it—even with those of the present Government who are most instrumental in my death. I freely forgive such as ungenerously reported false things of me; and I hope to be forgiven the trespasses of my youth by the Father of infinite mercy, into whose hand I commend my soul. "JAMES DERWENTWATER.

"P.S.—If that Prince who now governs had given me my life, I should have thought myself obliged never more to have taken up arms against him."

After reading this paper, he turned to the block and viewed it closely. Finding in it a rough place that might hurt his neck, he desired the executioner to chip it off. This being done, he prepared

himself for the blow by taking off his coat and waistcoat; and, fitting his head to the block, he told the executioner that, upon his repeating for the third time the sentence, "Dear Jesus, be merciful to me!" he was to perform his office. At these words, accordingly, the executioner raised his axe and severed the head from the body at one blow.

His head was taken up by one of his servants, and put into a clean handkerchief, while the body was wrapped in black cloth, both being conveyed to the Tower. The name of this servant was Francis Wilson, who shortly afterwards went to reside at Nafferton, about five miles eastward from Dilston, on the opposite side of the Tyne, where he lived until about 1773. Wilson treasured with great care the handkerchief in which he wrapped the head of the earl and a pair of silver buckles which he wore. The remains were said to have been subsequently buried in St. Giles's-in-the-Fields. It is not known whether a mock-funeral only took place, or the body was afterwards disinterred, but it is certain that it was brought into Northumberland, and deposited in the family vault at Dilston, where it was seen, in 1805, by a deputation from the Greenwich Hospital Commissioners.

The fate of the young nobleman excited very general commiseration, especially in the North of England, where he had been deservedly beloved for his amiable qualities. "The apparent cruelty of his execution led to his being esteemed in the light of a martyr; handkerchiefs steeped in his blood were preserved as sacred relics; and when the mansion-house was demolished, amid the regrets of the neighbourhood, there was great difficulty in obtaining hands to assist in a work of destruction which was considered almost sacrilegious. The ignorant peasantry, too, were not slow to receive the superstitious stories that were propagated; and often has the wandering rustic, beside the winter's hearth, listened to the fearful tale of how the spouts of Dilston Hall ran blood, and the very corn which was in the act of being ground came from the mill tinged with a sanguine hue on the day the earl was beheaded. The aurora borealis was observed to flash with unwonted brilliancy on that fatal night—an omen, it was said, of heaven's wrath; and to this day many of the country people know that phenomenon only by the name of 'Lord Derwentwater's Lights.'"

The body, as above stated, was interred in the vault at Dilston, after having been embalmed. The embalming process rendered it necessary to remove the heart, which was placed in a casket and

conveyed to Angers, in France. Here it was in the care of a body of English nuns. It afterwards was removed to the chapel of the Augustine nuns at Paris, where it remained until, during the turmoil of the French Revolution, it was taken from the niche in the wall in which it rested, and was buried in a neighbouring cemetery.

Lord Derwentwater left two children—a son and daughter. The latter, born in 1716, after her father's death, married in 1732, Lord Petre. The son died in France at the age of nineteen, in consequence, it is said, of a fall from his horse. Lady Derwentwater died at the age of thirty, and was buried at Louvain.

Some time after the execution of Lords Derwentwater and Kenmure, several of the less distinguished leaders of the rebellion perished at Tyburn; amongst these, however, were not numbered Forster, Mackintosh, and Charles Radcliffe, who, as well as some other persons, effected their escape from Newgate. Charles Radcliffe, however, escaped only for a time the death to which he was condemned (May 8th, 1716). He found an asylum in France, where he lived in a state of indigence, and where, in 1724, he married Lady Charlotte Mary Livingstone, Countess of Newbrough in her own right. In 1733, and again in 1735, he paid a visit to England, and made an unsuccessful attempt to obtain a pardon. At last, in 1745, his ardent spirit was roused to action by the attempt of Prince Charles Stuart to regain the throne of his ancestors. Accompanied by his son and several Scotch and Irish officers, he embarked on board a French ship-of-war, bound for the coast of Scotland, and fell into the hands of the Hanoverians. After lying a year in confinement, he was brought to the bar of the King's Bench, when the sentence which had been passed upon him thirty years before was again read to him. Radcliffe pleaded that he was a subject of France, and that he held a commission from the French king; but the court overruled the plea, and he was condemned to die. He perished on a scaffold on Tower Hill, on the 8th of December, 1746, in the fifty-fourth year of his age.

The estates of the Radcliffes were confiscated by the Government, and handed over to the authorities of Greenwich Hospital. Most of them have since been sold to private owners. Langley Castle and the land around it were purchased by Mr. Cadwallader J. Bates, who erected near the castle a few years ago the memorial cross depicted on the previous page.

## William Dickson,

ANTIQUARY.

An accomplished antiquary, a man of many avocations, occupying a high position in the public life of the county of Northumberland for forty years, was William Dickson, who died at Alnwick on the 14th of May, 1875, in the 76th year of his age.

Mr. Dickson was born at Berwick-on-Tweed, on the 6th of April,

1799, the eldest son of Patrick Dickson, of Whitecross and Spittal Hall, and grandson of Patrick Dickson, of Howlawrig, secretary to the Earl of Marchmont. Being intended for the profession of the law, he was articled to a local solicitor, and on the 7th of June, 1825, he married Sarah, daughter of Robert Thorpe, of Alnwick, Clerk of the Peace for the county of Northumberland, and a member of the clerical family of Thorpe, rectors of Ryton, and archdeacons of Northumberland and of Durham. In 1831 he received his first public appointment, that of clerk to the magistrates of the Eastern and Northern Division of Coquetdale Ward, and in 1843 he succeeded

Mr. William Dickson,
Clerk of the Peace.

his father-in-law (whose partner he had become) as Clerk of the Peace for Northumberland. In the course of his long and useful career he filled many public offices. He was, for example, clerk to the County Rate Basis Committee and Pauper Lunatic Asylum Committee; clerk to the Alnwick Improvement Commission till the formation of a Local Board of Health in that town, when he became chairman of the Board, chairman of the Alnwick Board of Guardians, and Gas Company, and a Justice of the Peace for Berwickshire. When the Northumberland and Durham District Bank closed its doors, he founded the Alnwick and County Bank, a speculation that proved successful

to himself and his partners and became a great convenience to the neighbourhood.

Mr. Dickson's literary and antiquarian tastes found expression as early as 1833, when he published, under the authority of the Northumberland magistrates, a quarto volume of 104 pages, entitled, "The Wards, Divisions, Parishes, and Townships of Northumberland, according to the Ancient and Modern Divisions, Shewing the Annual Value and Population of each Parish and Township maintaining its own Poor, from the Returns of 1831; also the Places for which Surveyors of Highways and Constables are appointed respectively, and by whom appointed; Compiled from the Records and other authentic sources. Alnwick: Mark Smith." This elaborate work superseded the old index of the county published by Graham, of Alnwick, in 1817, and formed a useful companion to Fryer's Map Index of 1822, in cases where the customary spelling and exact locality of Northumbrian villages, townships, and hamlets were in question.

Three years later Mr. Dickson contributed to the old series of the "Archæologia Æliana" a series of "Bills of Cravings of the Sheriff of Northumberland for 1715, of expenses incurred by him relative to the Rebellion of that year;" a translation of "Chronicles of the Monastery of Alnewicke, out of a certain Book of Chronicles in the Library of King's College, Cambridge, of the Gift of King Henry the 6th, the Founder;" a table of "Contents of the Chartulary of Hulne Abbey;" and a "Notice relative to the Hospital of St. Leonard in the Parish of Alnwick." In 1846 he wrote for Davison, the Alnwick publisher, an illustrated "Description of Alnwick Castle, for the Use of Visitors." This little book, with its vignette by Bewick, and a beautiful cut of the Percy Arms from the same graver, was published anonymously, and its authorship would probably not have been known but for the fact that in the author's own copy of it, now possessed by the present writer, appears his well-known autograph "William Dickson, Alnwick, June, 1846," and below it, in the same handwriting, the words "Prepared by W. D. for William Davison."

When her Majesty passed through Northumberland, in August, 1850, to open the Royal Border Bridge at Berwick, and the train was stopped at Bilton to enable the inhabitants of Alnwick to present a loyal address, Mr. Dickson published an interesting record of the proceedings. His next literary effort was "Four Chapters from the

History of Alnmouth," a paper prepared for the meeting of the Archæological Institute of Great Britain at Newcastle in 1852, and supplemented some years afterwards by a fifth chapter, which is already very scarce, relating to the past and present state of Alnmouth Old Church.

The work by which Mr. Dickson is best known to the antiquary and the scholar is his edition of the Pipe Rolls of Edward the First. Mr. Hodgson had printed in his "History of Northumberland" the Great Roll of the Exchequer from 1130 to 1272—the end of the reign of Henry III.—and Mr. Dickson, taking up the record at that point, carried it down to the twelfth year of the first Edward, in the hope that the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries might continue the work. The first part of the series appears in the fourth volume of the "Archæologia Æliana," and is accompanied by a translation; the subsequent portions were lithographed without translations, but accompanied by occasional appendices; the whole, with an index, extends to 170 pages quarto.

Other writings of Mr. Dickson appear in the "Proceedings" of the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club. Among them may be cited his address as President of the Club, when holding its annual meeting at Alnmouth in 1857, and the following papers:—

"Notices of a Chantry in the Parochial Chapelry of Alnwick, dedicated to the Virgin Mary." Published separately. London: 1852.

"Notes on the Marsh Samphire."

"On Rothbury and its Saxon Cross."

"On a Roman Altar found at Gloster Hill, in the Parish of Warkworth."

"Notes on Etal."

"Notes to Correct Errors as to the Manors of Bamburgh and Blanchland."

In the new series of the "Archæologia Æliana," vol. i., is a further contribution from his pen relative to the Hospital of St. Leonard at Alnwick; and scattered through local newspapers are many historical notes and observations of his, written as occasion served, or circumstances demanded. At the time of his death he was a Fellow of the London Society of Antiquaries, member of the Newcastle Society of the same name, the Surtees Society, the Natural History Society of Northumberland, Durham, and Newcastle-upon-Tyne, the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club, the Grampian Club, and the Glasgow Society of Field Naturalists.

# John Dixon,

CIVIL ENGINEER.

JOHN DIXON, civil engineer, was born in Newcastle in 1835. He was a son of Jeremiah Dixon, of the well-known family of Dixon of Cockfield, one of whose members, after whom he was named, Jeremiah, was the remarkable mathematician who fixed the boundaries of the provinces of Maryland and Pennsylvania in 1763-67, whence originated the terms "Mason and Dixon's line" and "Dixie's land." John Dixon was educated at Bruce's school in Percy Street, and having served his apprenticeship with Messrs. Robert Stephenson & Co., obtained an appointment as engineer under the Derwent Iron Company at Consett, which afterwards developed into the Consett Iron Company. Upon the reconstruction of the firm he went into business in partnership with Mr. Mounsey at Bedlington, attempting to revive the prestige of the iron works of that village, which at one time had been among the largest in the North of England. The attempt was a failure, and in 1867 he removed to London.

In the metropolis Mr. Dixon began life afresh, as a civil engineer and contractor, and soon had his hands full of business. Among his early undertakings were the landing-stages on the Thames Embankment, piers at Douglas in the Isle of Man, iron piers and wharves for the Rio Tinto Company at Huelva, a bridge over the Nile at Cairo, piers in Mexico, and extensive sanitary works at Rio de Janeiro. In 1874 he constructed the first railway in China, from Shanghai to Woosung, and was afterwards employed by the Portuguese to construct the Custom-house piers at Lisbon, and a sixty mile line of railway. His knowledge of geology enabled him to discover an unexpected supply of water on the rock of Gibraltar, for which he was rewarded by the War Office. The rebuilding of Hammersmith Suspension Bridge across the Thames was his next undertaking. But the work which, of all others, brought him into repute was the transport from Alexandria to London of Cleopatra's Needle. In this enterprise he was supported to the extent of £10,000 by Sir Erasmus Wilson, but owing to salvage claims he was financially a loser to nearly the same amount.

Mr. Dixon was an artist as well as an engineer, and frequently exhibited his skill in water-colours upon the walls of London exhibitions. The University of Durham, recognising his abilities and public work, conferred upon him the honorary degree of M.A.

Failing health in 1887 sent him to South Africa, where he was consulted respecting the construction of important harbour works. Upon his return to England his health became worse, and on the 28th of January, 1891, at East Croydon, he died.

# John Dobson,

ARCHITECT.

FEW provincial architects have attained a higher reputation in their profession than John Dobson. The Central Station at Newcastle would of itself have been no unfitting monument of his genius, but when, in addition to it, such structures as St. Thomas's Church, Barras Bridge; St. Peter's Church, Oxford Street; the Clayton Memorial Church, Jesmond; the Churches of the Trinity and the Divine Unity, New Bridge Street; the Royal Arcade; the Prisons; the entrance to Jesmond Cemetery; and the magnificent Butcher and Vegetable Markets, are enumerated, it will be seen that the city of Newcastle owes much of its architectural beauty to his taste and ability.

From a Memoir published in 1885 by one of his daughters, Miss Margaret Jane Dobson, it appears that John Dobson was born at Chirton, North Shields, in the year 1787. At a very early age he showed a remarkable talent for drawing; and amusing stories are told of the wrath of the villagers, which was often roused on finding their gates and shutters decorated with sketches in chalk by his furtive hand. Mr. Lawson, the village schoolmaster, perceiving his bent, gave him a set of drawing materials, whereupon he ceased his *al fresco* efforts. He must have advanced quickly in skill, as he was, while still a child, appointed to the office of "honorary draughtsman" to Mr. M'Clashan, a celebrated damask weaver in the neighbourhood, and actually, at the age of eleven and twelve, executed designs which were of valuable assistance to Mr. M'Clashan in his trade. His father, who appears to have been a man of considerable ability and judgment, wisely determined to give his son the advantage

of a thoroughly good English education, and granted him every facility for continuing his studies after leaving the hands of Mr. Lawson. At the age of fifteen the boy was placed by his father as a pupil with Mr. David Stephenson, who was at that time the leading builder and architect in Newcastle. In this office he made rapid progress, and gained a thorough knowledge of architecture. He not only learned to draw a plan, but to see it executed; and he even acquired an unusual acquaintance with carpentry and masonry. During this time he also studied surveying with Mr. Hall, of Stamfordham.

While Mr. Dobson was in Mr. Stephenson's office, he became a pupil of Mr. Boniface Moss, an Italian refugee (brother of the celebrated enamel painter), by whom he was instructed in fencing, perspective, and enamel painting. Here his fellow-pupils were John Martin, the famous historical painter, and his brother, the Life Guardsman. The long-drawn colonnades of Martin's "Belshazzar's Feast," as well as the rapid carte and tierce of his brother, the bold soldier, came no less than the architect's skill in perspective from the studio in the attic storey of Mr. Moss's lodgings in Newgate Street, Newcastle.

Like a true artist, he never allowed himself to be idle for want of work. In the intervals of employment he travelled in England and France, assiduously studying and sketching castellated and church architecture, a habit which he continued to the end of his life. Like Stanfield and Roberts, he sometimes amused his leisure hours by designing for the stage, and on one occasion composed and drew in perspective a celebrated drop-scene for the old theatre of Newcastle. Mr. William Dixon, a well-known painter, aided Mr. Dobson in this amusing work, the fame of which reached the Metropolis; and the managers of Drury Lane Theatre requested from the young artists a copy, which long adorned their celebrated stage. He also drew the proscenium of the Newcastle Theatre, in which the Royal Arms were so perfect in perspective that even competent draughtsmen often took them to be in relievo.

Possessing a strong and robust frame, and gifted with untiring industry, Mr. Dobson was able to accomplish an enormous amount of work. His habit of early rising, which he retained through life, was the wonder of a Frenchman, whose rooms were opposite to his office, who would often exclaim, "On parle de l'homme sans ombre, mais voici un qui ne dort jamais." His hours of rising were four or

five in the morning, and his remarkable power of doing without sleep enabled him constantly to work till twelve at night.

It may be safely said that whatever Mr. Dobson took in hand he overcame with mechanical skill, never, however, losing the artist in the engineer. In no happier instance does his engineering ability show itself than his design of the Newcastle Central Station. After studying the various obstacles, Mr. Dobson came to the conclusion that a curve not only met and overcame the difficulties of site, but that it was also the most artistic way of treatment. Having determined the general idea, he caused everything to fall into harmony with it, carrying out the curve not only in the roof but in all the minor details of the work.

To Mr. Dobson's fine perception of the true and the beautiful Newcastle owes the fine lines of streets which were erected by Richard Grainger. Mr. Grainger was a builder, not an architect, and he showed good sense and judgment in employing men of talent to furnish the general designs for his great undertaking. All Grainger's new streets were planned and levelled by Mr. Dobson. In Grey Street may be observed the skilful manner in which, by throwing up the elevated parts of the sky-line, the descent of the ground has been concealed, so that the eye, satisfied by the artistic grouping of the various masses of buildings, scarcely recognises the differences of level between the top and the bottom of the street.

Two of Mr. Dobson's architectural feats showed remarkable energy and resource. The tower of St. Nicholas' Church was in imminent danger of falling, through the cutting away, for purposes of interment, of portions of the piers which supported the structure. Mr. Dobson took in hand to stay the ruin. He underset the foundation of the tower, 194 feet high, supported the walls by buttresses which he metamorphosed into a convenient Gothic porch, and took down and restored the pinnacles and other parts of the superstructure. At Lambton Castle the coal-workings under the building had been filled with water at the time when some extensive additions were made; and this water having been drawn off in subsequent mining operations, a subsidence of eighteen inches dislocated the walls from top to bottom. Many parts of the structure would not have been worth preserving, being neither useful nor ornamental when entire. These Mr. Dobson condemned to destruction; but the parts worthy of being preserved he restored by going down into the mines, building

up, from the bottom where he found a firm foundation, in three distinct and completely excavated seams of coal, a platform of solid brickwork, and then wedging up the rent walls to the perpendicular and making them secure.

Mr. Dobson was a Fellow of the Royal Institution of British Architects, and President of the Northern Architects' Society. He married the eldest daughter of Alexander Rutherford, of Warburton House, Gateshead, and had issue three sons and five daughters. The youngest son, Alexander Ralph, was killed in the great fire and explosion at Gateshead, October 6th, 1854; the eldest son, Captain John Dobson, died some years ago; the eldest daughter married Sydney Smirke, R.A.; and the other daughter became her father's biographer. The rest died in childhood.

## Thomas Dobson,

MATHEMATICIAN.

AN exception to the rule that "a prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house," is afforded by the career of Thomas Dobson, who, being a native of Hexham, and educated at Queen Elizabeth's Grammar School there, received in after-life the highest honour which his fellow-townsmen could bestow—the head-mastership of the institution wherein he had been a pupil.

Thomas Dobson was born on the 13th October, 1814, and being a precocious child, learning Latin when most other children are still in the nursery, he was sent to the Grammar School at an unusually early age. The head-master at that time was the Rev. Thomas Scurr, a mathematician of repute, afterwards perpetual curate of Allendale. Under his tuition and that of the succeeding master, the Rev. James Urwin, the boy acquired mathematical and classical knowledge with an ease and freedom that clearly pointed to the vocation of a teacher as his natural and proper calling. Adopting this view, when he had received all that Hexham could teach him, and desiring to increase his qualifications by a closer acquaintance with the French language, he engaged himself as English master at an educational establishment near Calais. That object gained, he returned to England, and accepted an appointment as mathematical

tutor in Mr. Thorogood's academy at Totteridge, near London. From thence he proceeded, in 1847, to St. John's College, Cambridge, where he won several scholarships, was seventeenth wrangler in 1849, and afterwards took his degree of M.A. There he would probably have remained, but the failure of a bank in which he had placed his modest fortune interrupted his studies, and compelled him to seek remunerative employment.

A vacancy occurred about this time in the High School of Hobart Town, Tasmania. A mathematical master was required there; Mr.

Dobson obtained the appointment, and in 1850 set sail for the antipodes. Soon after his arrival the head-master died, and the entire management of the establishment fell into his hands. It was a congenial occupation, and the outlook most promising till the discovery of gold in Australia depopulated the colony. Pupils were withdrawn from their studies to tend the flocks which gold-seeking shepherds had deserted, and school-keeping became a thankless and a profitless business. Mr. Dobson struggled for some time against adverse circumstances, and finally, towards the end of 1853, resigned his post. Having taken a twelvemonths' holiday, travelling through

New Zealand, he went to New South Wales, and in the beginning of 1855 shipped at Sydney for England.

The acquirements of the Hexham emigrant were not unknown at the great Naval School of Greenwich Hospital. Edward Riddle, the famous Northumbrian master of that institution, had but recently resigned his command into the hands of his son John Riddle when Mr. Dobson returned from Australia, and both father and son were keeping themselves in touch with all the best mathematical talent of their time. To that celebrated resort of North-Countrymen Mr. Dobson naturally directed his steps, and entering into a public competition won an assistant mastership in the school, upon the duties of which he shortly afterwards entered. There he remained till he was appointed head-master of the school frigate *Conway*, stationed in the Mersey. In the *Conway*, as at Greenwich, his career was marked by considerable success; several of his pupils afterwards distinguished themselves in their calling, among them being young Webb, the noted swimmer. While discharging his duties in the Mersey, the event occurred which is recorded in the opening lines of this biography. The chief post in the Grammar School of his boyhood became vacant, and the governors elected him to fill it. He returned to his native town in 1862, found the venerable institution in which he had been trained weak and tottering, and set to work to build it up anew. Success attended his efforts. In no long time he had the satisfaction of seeing the old school emerge from its difficulties, and become a flourishing and popular institution. For thirteen years he presided over the destinies of Hexham Grammar School, and assisted in many ways beside to promote the intellectual activities of his birthplace. In 1876 he received the appointment of head-master of the Marine School at South Shields, founded by the benevolent Dr. Winterbottom, and in that capacity laboured till his sudden death from a paralytic seizure on the 8th of October, 1885.

In this rapid enumeration of Mr. Dobson's appointments little note has been taken of his scientific capacity or of his literary attainments, both of which were of a high order. He was a contributor to the "Ladies' Diary" from his youth until the publication ceased, and was on terms of intimacy with the leading mathematicians of his time—Sir George Airy, Woolhouse, Fenwick, Todhunter, and others. His researches into meteorology were thorough, and he was a pioneer in cyclonology, a subject which was but ill understood when he commenced to investigate it. One of

the first books that he published was issued in Tasmania, and the cyclonology of Australasia was its theme. He made extensive researches into the connection between cyclones and explosions in coal-mines, but complained of his inability to trace their interdependence so thoroughly as he desired from the reluctance of coal-mine inspectors to provide him with necessary data. While at Hexham he gained a prize of £20, given by the Marquis of Tweeddale, President of the Scottish Meteorological Society, for an essay on "Weather Prognostics" and their explanation; and at various meetings of the British Association and other learned bodies he read useful papers on these special subjects. At Shields, he delivered every winter a series of lectures on Astronomy, Pneumatics, the Law of Storms, etc., and was on several occasions selected to conduct mathematical classes, and deliver mathematical lectures in connection with the educational courses of the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle. The question of Magnetism in Iron Ships was also one to which he devoted much time and thought, and he invented a machine to illustrate the deviation of the compass in such vessels. His teaching gifts were special, and his success in using them remarkable. Both at Hexham and at Shields he prepared youths for the universities, some of whom took high degrees, and many of the lads who passed through his hands as pupils in his various schools are now filling important positions on land and at sea.

Outside of his scholastic work, Mr. Dobson was an active and intelligent worker. Possessing a clear and energetic mind, with a rare capacity for patient labour, he was able to supplement the graver duties of his profession with some of those lighter accomplishments that give to the study of science needful change and recreation. One of these accomplishments was the collection and compilation of local history. Being a genuine Tynesider, he contributed to the local press interesting articles upon historical events in his native valley, some of which, gathered together in 1870, were published for the benefit of the Royal National Lifeboat Institution. Another of his recreations was angling, with which contemplative occupation he combined sketching and botanising. Whenever he went on a fishing excursion, whether among the streamlets of his native dales, or among the burns and gills of adjoining counties, a sketch-book and collecting-box were the usual companions of his rod and creel, and their contents served to adorn his home,

furnish a lesson to his pupils, or form welcome presents to his friends.

The following is a list of the more important contributions which Mr. Dobson made to scientific literature:—

"On the Theory of Co-ordinates." 1845.

"On the Law of Storms," etc. Royal Society, Tasmania, 1853.

"Australasian Cyclonology." 1 vol., 8vo, Hobart Town, 1853.

"On the Relation between Coal-Mine Explosions and Cyclones." Brit. Assoc. Reports, 1855.

"On the Phenomena and Theory of Revolving Storms." (Four Lectures.) Newcastle Lit. and Phil. Society, 1855-56.

"On the Causes of Great Inundations; The Balaclava Tempest," etc. Brit. Assoc. Reports, 1856.

"On the Changes in the Direction and Length of the Line of Cusps during a Solar Eclipse." Royal Astron. Soc. Trans., 1857.

"On the Hurricanes of the South Pacific Ocean." (Three Parts.) *Nautical Magazine*, 1859-60.

"On the Relation between Atmospheric Perturbations and Explosions of Fire-damp in Coal-Mines." Liverpool Lit. and Phil. Society, 1860.

"On some Results of the 'Royal Charter' Storm." Liverpool Lit. and Phil. Society, 1860.

Contributions to Nautical Science. Liverpool Lit. and Phil. Society, 1861.

"On Explosions in British Coal-Mines during 1859." Brit. Assoc. Reports, 1861.

"On a New Method of Investigating the Symmetrical Properties of Plane Triangles." Brit. Assoc. Reports, 1861.

Contributions to Local History (Early History of Hexham; Lives of John Martin, William Hewson, William Tynedale, and the Midfords; Treasure Trove; Hexham Riot; Hexham Monastery, etc.). *Herald* Office, Hexham, 1870.

"On the Mechanics of Engineering." (Twelve Lectures.) Newcastle Lit. and Phil. Society, 1870-71.

"Description of Apparatus (Deviascope) for Illustrating the Deviation of the Compass in Iron Ships." *Nautical Magazine*, 1880.

"Description of a Machine to show the Heeling Error of the Compass." *Nautical Magazine*, 1883.

"Note on the Correction of Soundings." *Nautical Magazine*, 1883.

# Stephen Dockwray,

## A CROMWELLIAN CLERIC.

STEPHEN DOCKWRAY, or Dockray, was the first of a long list of clergymen bearing his family name who occupied pulpits on Tyne-

side. Shortly after the storming of Newcastle, he had been taken upon trial by the Corporation with a view to his becoming the settled minister of the venerable and sadly battered fabric of St. Andrew's, in place of the "deprived" curate, John Clark, A.M. Being "of the Presbyterian judgment," and a man of considerable ability, Mr. Dockwray was able to satisfy the municipal patrons of the living, and on the 5th of April, 1647, two months after they had received from the Speaker of the House of Commons a mandate establishing "Presbyteriall" government in the town, the Corporation formally elected him to the cure. By the end of the summer all the churches in Newcastle were provided with ministers of the correct pattern. At St. Nicholas' were Dr. Jenison, William Durant, and Cuthbert Sydenham; at All Saints', Richard Prideaux, with Durant as helper; at St. John's, Thomas Wolfal; at St. Andrew's, Stephen Dockwray—Puritans all, strong in their faith, earnest in their works, and devoted adherents of the dominant power in the State.

Mr. Dockwray was a man of scholarly acquirements and gentle manners. He wrote no fiery letters, published no stirring discourses. He was the good pastor, the faithful teacher, the gentle guide. While others thundered and declaimed, he shepherded his flock, led them into green pastures and beside still waters, showed them the way of truth as he understood it, and walked in it himself. In the current controversies of the time he took no leading part, but, fulfilling the apostolic injunction, submitted himself to every ordinance which the wisdom of the Parliamentary majority imposed. For example, the Little (Barebones) Parliament withdrew from the clergy the exclusive privilege of solemnising matrimony, and extended it to Justices of the Peace. After the 29th of September, 1653, banns of marriage were to be published either on three Sundays at church or in the market-place on three successive weekly market days, and, publication being certified by a registrar, the contracting parties might appear before a Justice of the Peace with the certificate (and if they were under age, with proof of parental consent), and, joining hands, pronounce these words:—"I, A. B., do, here in the presence of God, the searcher of all hearts, take thee, C. D., for my wedded wife; and do also, in the presence of God, and before these witnesses, promise to be to thee a loving and faithful husband;" the woman repeating them with the necessary alteration and addition of the word "obedient" after the word "faithful." Mr. Dockwray accepted this ordinance, and went so far in his acquiescence as to

become a witness to a marriage solemnised by a magistrate in his own church! In St. Andrew's Register may still be read this entry:—"1654. July 12th, Thomas Spraggon and Mari Bell, by Mr. Peter Sanderson, J.P.; witness, Mr. Dockre, minister."

Outside of his parish, and his ministerial work there, Mr. Dockwray's name seldom appears. Once only it occurs at the foot of one of those somewhat fulsome addresses with which the Puritan clergy every now and then favoured Oliver Cromwell. Meeting at Newcastle upon church affairs in the summer of 1657, shortly after Cromwell had refused the title of King, and had been for the second time proclaimed Lord Protector, the "Ministers of the Gospel" in Newcastle, and in the counties of Durham and Northumberland, addressed his Highness in the usual terms of pious flattery, and to this address Mr. Dockwray was a signatory. "We durst not let slip the occasion and opportunity," they wrote, "to congratulate your Highness, not only upon the real satisfaction of our own spirits, but also the assurance we have of the same in the spirits of the whole body of our association. We do, therefore, cordially wish you all prosperity, peace, satisfaction, and contentment in that place to which God hath declared his designation of you of the now superadded free and concurrent vote and resolve of Parliament," hoping and being persuaded that "the Lord will more and more make use of your Highness for the advancement of the interest of His dear Son, which we may take the boldness to entreat your Highness to make your principal design. . . . And so, commending your Highness to the great God, and begging the blessing of your Highness upon your spirit, government, and all your precious interests and concernments, we make bold to subscribe ourselves, your Highness's most obedient, affectionate, and observant subjects and servants." Signed by "Stephen Dockrey, pastor of Christ at St. Andrew's, in Newcastle; Thos. Dockry, pastor of Christ at Newburke; Richard Prideaux, pastor of Christ at All Hallows', in Newcastle; John Knightbridge, pastor of Christ at Nicholas', in Newcastle," and several others.

The Restoration found Mr. Dockwray entering upon the fourteenth year of his ministry at St. Andrew's. Parliament and the municipality of Newcastle were expecting to continue in the old paths of the Commonwealth, and to perpetuate the Presbyterian form of church government and public worship under the restored monarchy. They, therefore, on the 20th June, 1660, confirmed Mr. Dockwray in his living, appointing him to preach forenoon and after-

noon, at a salary of £80 per annum. Before all this was changed, and the use of the liturgy resumed, Mr. Dockwray was summoned to a higher tribunal. A few weeks after the Corporation had re-established him at St. Andrew's, he departed this life, and, on the 11th August, his remains were buried within the precincts that had so often borne witness to his ministrations.

The name of Dockwray continued to appear in the lists of the local clergy for several generations after the death of the curate of St. Andrew's. In one of those useful leaves for the local historian with which the Town Clerk of Tynemouth occasionally favours us, Dr. Thomas Dockwray appears as the first vicar of Christ Church, North Shields. He was chaplain to the Earl of Sandwich, and, being slain with that nobleman at a naval engagement between the English and the Dutch in May, 1672, was succeeded at Christ Church by his son, the Rev. Stephen Dockwray, M.A., who in turn was followed by his son, the Rev. Thomas Dockwray. The latter died in 1724, leaving a son named after him, Thomas, who for twenty-eight years officiated as lecturer of St. Nicholas', Newcastle. This Thomas Dockwray's brother, Josias, married Elizabeth, sister and devisee under the will of Thomas Toll, a descendant of Edward Toll, of North Shields, gentleman, and from him came the land upon which Dockwray Square and Toll Square in that town were erected. Their son, Thomas Dockwray, D.D., vicar of Stamfordham, and lecturer of St. Nicholas', Newcastle, married, in 1757, Hannah, daughter of Robert Ellison, of Otterburn, second son of the Rev. Nathaniel Ellison, vicar of Newcastle, and he, dying without issue in 1783, closed the long roll of clerical Dockwrays upon Tyneside.

## William Dodd,

### AN ENERGETIC CLERGYMAN.

WILLIAM DODD was the third son of the Rev. John Dodd, at one time Vicar of Wigton, and subsequently—from 1826 to 1840—Vicar of Newcastle. Born in Aspatria in 1804, he was educated at St. Bees School, and in due course entered Christ Church College, Cambridge, where he distinguished himself by diligent and faithful study. In the Mathematical Tripos he attained the position of twenty-fifth wrangler, and studied Hebrew and cognate languages

with such success that he gained a first-class university scholarship, and won the Hebrew prize for an essay open to the competition of all who had taken the ordinary B.A. degree. Ordained priest by the Bishop of Durham on the 4th of October, 1829, he became curate of Whickham, under the Rev. H. G. Liddell, M.A., where he remained until, in May, 1834, he was presented by his father, the vicar, to the living of St. Andrew's, vacant by the death of the Rev. Henry Deer Griffith.

When Mr. Griffith died, an earnest effort was made by the leading parishioners of St. Andrew's to secure the living for his curate, the Rev. James Manisty. A memorial to the Vicar in Mr. Manisty's favour contained such well-known names as those of John Trotter Brockett, C. Allhusen, P. G. Ellison, Armorer Donkin, R. P. Philipson, Dr. Tulloch, John Fife, John Brandling, James Sillick, Anthony Nichol, Aubone Surtees, Dr. White, William Nesham, the Mayor, the Recorder, and the Town Clerk. Vicar Dodd's refusal to comply with this request, and his appointment of his own son to the living, gave great offence—so great indeed that when the new minister entered the pulpit for the first time, the majority of the congregation rose and left the Church. In a short time, however, Mr. Dodd's tact and evident sincerity disarmed opposition. The congregation discovered that their clergyman was a man of no ordinary ability, and gradually he gained their confidence. He became the recognised leader in the town of the Oxford movement—better known, perhaps, as Puseyism, or Tractarianism. Among the objects which the Puseyites set themselves to accomplish were the introduction of frequent, short, and hearty services, regular and systematic visitation of parishioners, the building of new churches in overgrown parishes, and the institution of mission rooms in outlying districts. Animated by these impulses, Mr. Dodd opened St. Andrew's for evening service, started a mission in Brandling Village, and projected the erection of a new church in his wide-spreading parish. It was uphill work, for few persons in Newcastle sympathised with his ecclesiastical proclivities; but at length, in 1843, he had the satisfaction of seeing the Church of St. Peter in Oxford Street rise from its foundations, and become, under the care of his curate, the Rev. C. A. Raines, the resort of increasing congregations.

In "Newcastle Fifty Years Ago" appears the following appreciative note of Mr. Dodd's labours during the early part of his incumbency:—"He aroused life and energy in the Sunday-schools,

gathered around him a numerous staff of teachers, whom he took every pains to instruct in their duties, and succeeded in producing a spirit of emulation, and earnest devotion in their work to an extent previously unknown in Newcastle. Many young men enlisted under his banner, and, prepared under his tuition, devoted themselves to church work, and followed a religious life. One in whom he took great interest was the late Archdeacon Waters, who received the first bias towards a religious life under the tutorship of Mr. Dodd. . . . He was a determined opponent of the pew system, and one of his first acts after entering upon his incumbency was, with his own hand, to take a hammer and knock off every lock on the pew-doors in the church, and remove all footstools, cushions, etc. One day, soon after this clean sweep, a lady called upon him to ask permission to furnish her pew with similar luxuries. 'By all means,' replied Mr. Dodd; 'I shall be very glad if you will do so, only I must enforce one condition—that is, that all pews in the church must be exactly alike; no distinction in church, you know; the poor and the rich are all equal there.'"

During Mr. Dodd's incumbency the old grievance of church-rates came into prominence, and gave rise to much angry disputation. The venerable tower of St. Andrew's, battered two hundred years before by the Scots, and weakened year by year under the influence of storm and tempest, demanded immediate attention. The liability to repair it was upon the parishioners at large, and the clergy and churchwardens attempted the difficult task of inducing the parishioners to discharge their obligation. The sum required from each ratepayer was not great, but the claim was resisted, and one of those exciting contests that have now happily become matters of history ensued. In the end the rate was refused, and the work was done by voluntary contribution.

When this turmoil was over, in 1849, Mr. Dodd, whose health had been severely strained by his labours, accepted the quiet country living of Chillingham, where he enjoyed a period of comparative repose in the pure air of the Cheviots, away from the clamour and worry of Tyneside. He did not, however, thoroughly regain the health he had sacrificed in Newcastle. On the 8th of May, 1866, while on a visit to Nice, he ceased from his labours, and in the beautiful cemetery upon the hill overlooking that town he was buried.

Mr. Dodd published several sermons, and an interesting book on

the schools and education given in Majorca and Minorca—islands that he visited in search of health. He was the recipient of two handsome testimonials from his friends in Newcastle—a salver, in March, 1840, and a candelabrum in September, 1849. At Chillingham, on the high ground opposite the village, facing the road from Chatton to Alnwick, a public drinking fountain of pretty architectural design, topped by a brass cross, has been erected to his memory, upon which the traveller reads the following inscription:—

"In remembrance of the Rev. William Dodd, M.A., and for the fulfilment of a wish expressed by him, has this Fountain been erected, as a slight token of love and affection. He was formerly, and for many years, vicar of this parish, having been previously well known in Newcastle-upon-Tyne and its neighbourhood, for the discharge of his duties in Church and School. His breadth of mind, his acquaintance with Oriental, as well as Modern Literature, his generous disposition, and warmth of heart, endeared him to many friends, to whose deep sorrow, he, for health's sake, seeking the more genial climate of the South of France, died May viii., MDCCCLXVI., aged lxii. At Nice his body rests in the hope of a blessed resurrection."

At St. Andrew's, Newcastle, the great east window, filled with stained glass by Mr. Dodd's friends and admirers, through whose varied tints the morning sun diffuses mellow light over the sanctuary at which for fifteen years he officiated, forms an appropriate souvenir of his name and his labours, his faith and his works.

# Ralph Dodds,

## A MUNICIPAL CELEBRITY.

"The rough, unpolished diamond, if real, is infinitely preferable to the most brilliant imitation."—NEWCASTLE CRITIC.

AMONG the notable men who from humble beginnings have carved their way to competence and influence in Newcastle, Alderman Ralph Dodds must have a conspicuous place. A genuine son of the soil, uneducated, rough and rugged as his native crags, he raised himself, by sheer force of character, to high positions in the metropolis of the Northern Counties; from the lowest rung of the social ladder, that of the labouring poor, he ascended to the highest which civic life usually affords—a Mayoralty and the Commission of the Peace.

Born at Alnwick, in 1792, of parents who were too indigent to

send him to school, Ralph Dodds was taught the little of reading and writing that he knew, in return for menial service rendered to the parish dominie. His first youthful occupation was driving a donkey laden with sacks of coal from the collieries into Alnwick; his first rise in life was employment as attendant on a plasterer. To the plasterer's craft he took a liking, and his master, being well disposed towards him, taught him the business in return for his services. In due time he found his way to Newcastle, and obtained a place in the workshop of Thomas Nicholson, plasterer, Northumberland Street. Mr. Nicholson was employed in the reconstruction of Ravensworth

RALPH DODDS.

Castle at that time, and young Dodds being sent thither as a journeyman, fell in love with a niece of Lord Ravensworth's steward. They were married, and with the money which she brought him he started business on his own account in Prudhoe Street, Newcastle.

Many men owe their rise in life to a fortunate marriage. It was so in this case. Lord Ravensworth's steward knew other stewards, and it was but natural that he should recommend to them the husband of his niece. Thus it came about that Ralph Dodds was employed by Sir Matthew White Ridley at Blagdon, Mr. Brandling at Gosforth, Mr. Cookson at Meldon, Mr. Cadogan at Brinkburn, Mr. Collingwood at Lilburn Tower, and by others among the county

gentry and local aristocracy. In a few years he was at the head of a large and prosperous establishment.

Mr. Dodd's initiation into public life occurred in November, 1840, when he was returned to Newcastle Town Council without opposition by his fellow-burgesses in North St. Andrew's Ward. Ten years later he filled the office of Sheriff, and at Michaelmas, 1853, having the year before become an alderman, he was elected Mayor.

When he entered upon the Mayoralty, the town was just recovering from an epidemic of cholera, which for months had committed havoc amongst the inhabitants. Three commissioners were appointed by the Crown to inquire into the causes of the visitation, and it fell to the Mayor, assisted by the Town Clerk, to represent the town at the inquiry. Towards the close of the municipal year occurred the terrible fire and explosion at Gateshead, which proved so disastrous to both boroughs, and the Mayor won golden opinions by countermanding invitations to a ball, and appropriating the money to the relief of the sufferers. In "Random Recollections of the Newcastle Town Council," published the year after his Mayoralty, Alderman Dodds is described as "A piece of unalloyed Saxon manhood, rough as a bear, kind as a woman, independent as a 'navvy,' acute as a Yankee, and sensible and beefish as John Bull—among the sons of Coaly Tyne none is so full of prejudices, none is more ready to do a kindly act, and none is so eccentric in the manner of its performance—passed the Civic Chair and filled it with rare usefulness and energy—he seldom forgot the dignity of his office, but the forgetfulness was of the head, not of the heart, and was forgiven as soon as it was past—on the Bench he displayed a shrewdness that distributed justice with the strictest impartiality—knowing nothing of law but its equality he made a clean sweep of its sophistries, weighed the moral testimony where the legal evidence was deficient, and gave his judgment more fairly than when fettered by legal precedents, and, as he would call them, humbugging examples. . . . His speeches are a mixture of disjointed interrogations, Newcastle proverbs, philosophical reflections, and personal experiences, all mixed up and delivered in the purest Northumbrian."

Alderman Dodds was elected Mayor of Newcastle for the second time in 1865. He was for eighteen years Chairman of the Town Improvement Committee, and for a long time a member of the River Tyne Commission. Shortly after his first Mayoralty he was

appointed a Justice of the Peace. On the magisterial bench he was accustomed to indulge in somewhat rough humour, but in the majority of cases the joke expressed a kind intention. For example, to one trembling penitent in the dock he addressed the question, "Where de ye come frae?" "Waakor, sor," was the reply. "Then waak back ageyn te Waakor!" A rather affected magistrate was on the Bench with Mr. Dodds one morning, when an impudent little juvenile was charged with petty theft. "You must," said the magistrate, "go to gaol for three days, and receive six strokes with the birch rod." "Whaat's that, sor?" said the little culprit, pretending not to hear. "Ha! I said you must go——" repeating it all over again. "Aa divvent knaa what ye say, sor," responded the urchin. Here Mr. Dodds got impatient. "Policeman," said he, "take him outside, crack his lug, and set him off." Some young swells on one occasion were charged with drunkenness and disorderly conduct. Alderman Dodds put the usual question—"Well, what hev ye te say for yorsels?" "Only a lark, Mr. Dodds," pleaded the offenders. "Oh ay, ay," was the response, "but we hev cages for larks here."

Mr. Dodds died at his residence in Bentinck Terrace, Newcastle, on the 20th October, 1874, aged eighty-two years, and was buried in Elswick Cemetery. He was twice married, but left no issue.

# Armorer Donkin,

LAWYER AND POLITICAL REFORMER.

"He is the most prudent man who takes the world as he finds it; who relishes its comforts, reconciles its crosses, and expects happiness only in superior regions."
—DR. COTTON.

FORTY years ago the profession of the law in Newcastle numbered among its members several men who were at the head of nearly every movement which had for its object the study of local antiquities, the advancement of useful knowledge, and the extension of political freedom. Not to mention lesser men, there were John Adamson, numismatist, conchologist, and Portuguese scholar; John Trotter Brockett, collector, book-hunter, and glossographer; John Fenwick, local biographer, genealogist, and Sunday-school teacher;

John Clayton, classical scholar, antiquary, and explorer of Roman remains; Ralph Park Philipson, Whig politician and municipal administrator; Armorer Donkin, the friend of Brougham and the Hunts, and an earnest political reformer. The achievement of honourable fame in various departments of research and investigation outside of their profession seems to have been characteristic of Newcastle lawyers in the last generation—a feature peculiar to themselves, for it assuredly has not occurred in any other calling amongst us; and peculiar to their time, for one fails to observe it existing in the same proportion among their successors.

Armorer Donkin was the son of a timber merchant; a freeman of Newcastle, carrying on business, and living, at North Shields. The paternal residence was situated at the Low Lights, a locality which, abutting upon the highway to the sea, and in full view of the harbour mouth, would be a pleasant and agreeable place of abode at a time when manufactories had not yet begun to "taint the ambient air." From the tombstone of the family in the Priory churchyard, and the parish registers (kindly inspected by Mr. Horatio A. Adamson, town-clerk of Tynemouth, to whom, for this and many favours, the writer expresses his indebtedness), it appears that Armorer Donkin, senior, was twice married. His first wife, Elizabeth, died in 1772, and Armorer, junior, was the fruit of the second union. He was baptised at the parish church of Tynemouth on the 27th January, 1779, "son of Mr. Armorer and Mrs. Rachael Donkin of the Low Lights, Raff-Merchant." When he arrived at the proper age, he was articled to Mr. William Harrison, of Dockwray Square, North Shields, attorney-at-law and vestry-clerk, and having served his time, he proceeded to London, where he became a clerk with Mr. Meggison, an eminent attorney in Hatton Garden. His abilities being of a superior order, Mr. Meggison, it is said, was desirous of retaining his services, but he had determined within himself that as soon as he had acquired sufficient experience in the metropolis he would return to his native county. His father died in 1798, aged 76, and his mother in 1801, aged 56, and shortly after his mother's decease he came back to the North, and commenced professional life on his own account in Newcastle. Business at first was not too plentiful, and having abundant leisure he entered upon a course of self-improvement in literature and science, which in after years proved of great value to him. As one means to that end he joined the Literary and Philosophical Society, where the Rev. William Turner was preparing to start upon

that long course of lecturing which lasted without a break for thirty years. Into the educational work of that institution he entered with ardour, and was elected, in 1809, one of the junior secretaries—an office which he held till increasing business in his profession obliged him, five years later, to resign. At the Lit. and Phil. he formed numerous friendships and made acquaintance with members of the principal families in the town. Among the more intimate of the friends thus acquired was Mr. William Armstrong, corn merchant, a warm supporter of the institution, and a man of scholarly acquirements. Mr. Armstrong had come to Newcastle a comparative stranger from Cumberland, and was making his way to fortune; Mr. Donkin, with the aid of a partner, Mr. G. W. Stable, was working in the same direction. Their tastes were similar; their political views harmonised; their aims were practically identical, and they became as brothers. When Mr. Armstrong's son, William George, arrived at the proper age to be trained for the battle of life, he was articled to Messrs. Donkin and Stable to learn the profession of an attorney. How this young man served out his time, became a partner in the firm, and left it to become an engineer; how he rose to be a great inventor, a benefactor to his native town, and, finally, to be ennobled by the title of Lord Armstrong, are matters of common knowledge.

Although when he started upon his professional career in the town Mr. Donkin was so much a stranger that, to use his own expression, he "hardly knew one person to speak to on Newcastle streets," his talents for business and unwearied application to their development, soon won public confidence. In no long time he had built up a large and lucrative practice, and had been appointed to various positions in what may be called the by-paths of public life. He is seen, in 1824, acting with his friend Mr. Armstrong as a member of a committee appointed to inquire whether a railway or a canal was the most desirable means of effecting communication between Newcastle and Carlisle; in 1826 assisting to found the Newcastle and Gateshead Law Society, of which four years afterwards he became the President; in 1829 accepting the post of director of the Newcastle New Gas Company; and, later on, drawing up the prospectus of the Brandling Junction Railway. Among his clients were some of the leading families in the town, and not a few of the principal firms and heads of houses in the Northern Counties. Among his pupils were John Theodore Hoyle, John Dunn, son of the deputy clerk of the peace for Durham, Thomas Wright Redhead, Robert, son of John

Gully, the ex-prize fighter and M.P., and John Fenwick, of North Shields.

Upon his return to the North, Mr. Donkin had taken up his freedom of the town, and of the Hostmen's Company, and about the time that Municipal Reform became imminent in 1834 or 1835, he was elected a member of the Common Council. Entering the Corporation as a supporter of the Reform movement, he was one of the twelve old members who were returned by the extended electorate, in 1836, to the new Town Council. At the first meeting of the reformed body he had the honour of being appointed an alderman.

Observant John Selkirk, reporter of the Council proceedings, describes him at this period as follows:—"He carefully considers his subject before he speaks; the facts and arguments he brings in illustration of it are plain and forcible; he rarely says more than is necessary, with the single exception of sometimes repeating the good things he has said. He feels warmly for the cause he espouses, and his remarks, in general, have considerable weight with the Council. He intuitively places a question in its broadest light, and expresses his views upon it with much distinctness. He has not a particle of grace in his mode of delivery, and he is wise enough never to affect it. He is earnest, acute, and able—and these are qualities which

impress other men's minds, without their possessor displaying mere extraneous ornament."

As in municipal affairs, so in politics, Mr. Donkin was one of the party of progress. The *Newcastle Chronicle*, recording his decease, remarked that "in times when to be a reformer was almost attended with danger, and, at the least, fraught with ill omen to success in life, he was always found ranged on the side of improvement and reform, and the heartiness and zeal which he displayed must have done much to advance in this district the principles which he professed." It is not to be inferred from this eulogium that the subject of it was an advanced reformer like Doubleday, Fife, or Attwood. His votes at Parliamentary elections show that he did not support men with Radical tendencies, for he voted against both Attwood and Aytoun, when they contested Newcastle. He was, in fact, like his friend Mr. Armstrong, a Liberal of the Whig school, with sympathies that undoubtedly broadened as time went on, but were never extended far in advance of his party. Upon the first occasion of his exercising the political franchise in Newcastle—at the election of 1820—he supported the sitting members, Sir Matthew White Ridley and Cuthbert Ellison, against William Scott, son of Lord Stowell. In the great county contest of 1826, he voted for Liddell and Beaumont; in 1832, gave "wor Sor Mattha" a plumper for the town, and divided between Beaumont and Ord for South Northumberland; in 1837, supported Ord and Bigge for Newcastle; and in 1847, plumped for Sir George Grey in the northern division of the county.

Shortly before the elections of 1826 Mr. Donkin acquired a small property at Jesmond, by right of which, between the by-election in February and the great struggle of July, he obtained a county vote. Upon that property, which, as opportunity occurred, was extended into a spacious domain, he erected the mansion known to the present generation as Jesmond Park. In this suburban retreat he spent much of his time, occupying himself in the intervals of business with literary recreations, the formation of a library, and the reception of his friends. Being a bachelor, he was able to exercise a generous hospitality without derangement of his domestic affairs, and the entertainments which he gave to members of his social circle every Saturday were appreciated far and wide. Few strangers of eminence came to Newcastle without partaking of the hospitalities of Jesmond Park. Among them was that burly politician, William Cobbett, who

in his "Tour in Scotland and the Four Northern Counties of England in the Autumn of the Year 1832," penned a characteristic note of what he saw:—"This morning [October 4th, 1832] I left North Shields in a post-chaise in order to come hither through Newcastle and Gateshead, this affording me the only opportunity that I was likely to have of seeing a plantation of Armorer Donkin, close in the neighbourhood of Newcastle; which plantation had been made according to the method prescribed in my book called the 'Woodlands,' and to see which plantation I previously communicated a wish to Mr. Donkin. The plantation is most advantageously circumstanced to furnish proof of the excellence of my instructions as to planting. The predecessor of Mr. Donkin also made plantations upon the same spot; and consisting precisely of the same sort of trees. Those of the predecessor have been made six-and-twenty years; those of Mr. Donkin six years; and incredible as it may appear, the trees in the latter are full as lofty as those in the former, and besides the equal loftiness, are vastly superior in point of shape, and, which is very curious, retain all their freshness at this season of the year, while the old plantations are brownish, and have many of the leaves falling off the trees, though the sort of trees is precisely the same."

Mr. Donkin numbered among his chosen friends Baily the sculptor, Ramsay the painter, and that delightful essayist, Leigh Hunt. It is said that he contributed occasionally to Hunt's "London Journal"; it is certain that he contributed liberally to the editor's somewhat slender resources. In one of his "Journal" articles Hunt refers to invitations that it was not possible for him to accept, instancing a pressing call from Mr. Donkin (whose identity he veils under the initials "A. D."), and describing him as "one of the men we love best in the world." In another essay, entitled "Pleasure, Pain, and Knowledge," based upon letters which he had received descriptive of a serious accident which a friend had sustained, he points the moral of such misadventures, and exalts the manly fortitude with which they are endured, "above all Greek, above all Roman fame." The friend extolled in such glowing terms as affording an example more soul-stirring than that of heroes was Mr. Donkin. To him the versatile journalist dedicated a play, the "Legend of Florence" (published in 1840, and acted with some success at Covent Garden), stating that to his practical wisdom and generosity he was indebted for health and leisure to indulge in its composition. In the "Correspondence of Leigh Hunt," edited

by his son, Thornton Hunt, the owner of Jesmond Park is noted as one of the friends who were "most generous in the manner, as well as the amount of their sacrifices"; and a letter of his to the departed author is quoted, in which appears "a formal debtor and creditor account, setting off against a sum of money advanced at a pinch, the same sum—By value received in full, per pleasure in reading Leigh Hunt's 'London Journal.'" All this, and much more, we read in "Characteristics of Leigh Hunt," by "Lancelot Cross," the *nom de plume* of Frank Carr.

Alderman Donkin retired from the active pursuit of his profession in 1847, and died on the 14th of October, 1851. The writer in the *Chronicle* before quoted pays the following tribute to his memory:—"For thirty years he stood at the very head of his profession, conducting a large and varied practice; and his clients were not confined to this town and neighbourhood alone, but many of the principal families in the neighbouring counties confided their properties and their interests to his skill and protection. If there was one trait which distinguished him more than another it was the extreme cordiality and sincerity of his attachment to his friends. Few such backers of a friend ever lived. If all the world were against his friend so was not he; and the feeling that such was his invariable character, produced a reciprocal attachment on the part of his associates. In personal appearance he was stout, and in his latter years somewhat corpulent. His head and face, though not handsome, were cast in a noble and massive mould; and a look of peculiar intelligence, mingled with good humour, and great self-possession, generally lighted up his countenance. A hearty joyousness, and desire to communicate the pleasure he felt, were the prevailing features of his address. The beautifully chiselled bust of him by Baily, the Royal Academician, and the admirable portrait, painted by his old friend Ramsay, will long preserve amongst those who knew him the remembrance of what he once was; but neither marble nor canvas can delineate that kindness of heart and inimitable suavity of manner for which he was remarkable."

In the shaded enclosure known as the "East Mound" of Jesmond Cemetery, side by side, and identical in form, rise two granite monuments. Beneath one of them repose the remains of Alderman Donkin; beneath the other, placed there barely six years later, lie those of his friend and associate, Alderman Armstrong, father of Lord Armstrong.

# Samuel Donkin,

"THE ROBINS OF THE NORTH."

SAMUEL DONKIN, agriculturist and auctioneer, "the Robins of the North," as he was called, was born at the farm of Ryehill, at the foot of Simonside, in the parish of Rothbury, on the 22nd of November, 1801. His father, grandfather, and great-grandfather were clever, energetic, self-reliant, hard-headed Northumbrians, who worked hard and lived long in the land, and transmitted their qualities to their descendants. The great-grandfather, Samuel Donkin (1), born in 1689, married, August 22nd, 1721, Ann Wilson, of Great Tosson, held the farm of Whitton Dene, Rothbury, and died, a centenarian, in May, 1791. The grandfather, Samuel Donkin (2), baptised at Rothbury Church, September 19th, 1728, married Barbara Storey, farmed at Hepple, dealt in live stock, kept foxhounds, and died in Newcastle after a severe surgical operation in April, 1792. The father, Robert Donkin, born July 9th, 1775, married his half-cousin, Susanna, daughter of William Donkin, of Lorbottle, occupied for a time the farm of Ryehill, and afterwards the farms of Spylaw and Ingram, and died April 3rd, 1871, aged 95. Thus three generations of Donkins covered a period of nearly two hundred years.

Samuel Donkin (3), the subject of this biography, obtained his elementary education from a schoolmaster in his father's house, and after a brief spell at Brenton school, near Ingram, finished his educational course at Alnwick. At the age of eighteen he received his first charge in the paternal homestead—the care of a flock of sheep upon the Ingram hills. Thereafter he went through the routine desired by the lad in the song—learning "to plow and sow, to reap and mow, and be a farmer's boy." At the age of twenty-four he married Sarah Scott, of Felton, and the following year, on the death of his wife's brother, he entered upon the occupancy of the farm of Bywell, near Felton, and remained there till nearly the close of his life.

Early in his career Mr. Donkin began to take an interest in politics, and in the public life of his district. Like many other young Northumbrians of his day, he was an ardent follower of Earl Grey and the Parliamentary Reformers. He joined the Northern

Political Union at its formation, and was a speaker at the great meeting in the Spital, Newcastle, in May, 1832, when Charles Larkin uttered his impassioned warning to Queen Adelaide.

The Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834, found in Mr. Donkin a warm supporter. He ridiculed local opposition to the measure as "the rabid attacks of a coterie of pseudo-philanthropists led by the sarcastic pen of Robert Blakey, whose feigned solicitude for the poor told them of relief which never was designed to reach them," but, "losing its way, unfortunately steers to fat churchwardens and fat overseers." In 1837 he published a defence of the Act in a booklet of fifty pages, entitled—

"Observations upon the Nature of Parochial Relief, and the Principles upon which the Poor Law Amendment Act is founded." Newcastle: T. & J. Hodgson.

Soon after the passing of the Municipal Reform Act in 1835 he became a leading spirit in an agitation for reform in the administration of affairs by the magistrates of the county of Northumberland. His zeal in this movement brought him into conflict with the County Surveyor, who sued him for libel, and recovered a barren verdict of one shilling. His admirers and friends, gathering around him on that occasion, presented him with a silver tea and coffee service, testifying thereby, as the inscription expressed it, their approval of his conduct, as "the able and intrepid advocate of County Reform."

Another agitation into which Mr. Donkin threw himself, with all the energy of an impulsive and generous mind, was that of Messrs. Cobden and Bright in favour of Free Trade and the abolition of the Corn Laws. There is a sketch of him as an Anti-Corn Law Leaguer in "Public Men of the North." The writer is describing a meeting at Alnwick to hear John Bright and Archibald Prentice from Manchester:—"A gentleman farmer is in the chair, and after the League orators have delivered their speeches, there is a loud demand for 'Sam.' In obedience to the call a little man starts up, and, for three-quarters of an hour, descants to the admiring throng on the advantages of cheap bread, and the glories of Free Trade. The speaker is a Northumbrian. His dialect is redolent of the county, and he is evidently skilled in the management of the audience that he is addressing. Loud approbation is accorded to the sonorous periods and he resumes his seat in the midst of prolonged applause. Here we have Mr. Samuel Donkin. On the corn question, as well

as on most others, Mr. Donkin has written and spoken well. Before the Reform Bill became law, and before the repeal of the corn laws was carried, it required no ordinary man to discharge the services which Mr. Donkin rendered to the State. He stood almost alone, the bold and unflinching advocate of liberty and progress. His sympathies were always with the people in whatever direction his interest might run, and we know few men who have sacrificed more at the shrine of public opinion than Mr. Donkin. He is an eccentric, but he is, at the same time, an honest and independent man. Often have we listened to him, and thought, as we think now, that 'Sam was a clever fellow.' His brother farmers regarded him with that kind of reverential awe described in 'The Deserted Village' as being shown by the villagers to the schoolmaster. He always possessed the gift of speaking well off-hand, and his strong good sense made his remarks instructive as well as agreeable."

Mr. Donkin's sympathy with the tenant farmer, and his promotion of the interests of agriculture, were, like his own style of cultivation, entirely practical. He was one of the founders of the Northumberland Agricultural Society in 1836, and in later years helped to establish a district society of the same character which bears the name of "The Coquetdale." On the platform, in the newspapers, and wheresoever else he found opportunity, he urged the claims of agriculture to generous treatment, and the wants of the tenantry to the liberal consideration of the owners of the soil. Before the Newcastle Farmers' Club he read a couple of papers abounding in sound experience and common-sense—one, in 1869, "On the Social and Physical condition of the Agricultural Labourers of Northumberland, and the Rise and Progress of their Civilisation"; the other, in 1881, "On the Present Position of Landlord and Tenant." To the Staindrop Farmers' Club, in 1882, he read a paper entitled "Observations upon the Past and Present State of Agriculture, and the futility of Legislative Interference with the Economy of the Farmer."

In the rostrum of the auctioneer it was that Mr. Donkin achieved his greatest reputation. He commenced the business in 1845, and in a few years had his hands full of stock sales, farm sales, and estate sales all over Northumberland. George Robins, the prince of metropolitan auctioneers, whose marvellous advertisements were the theme of endless witticism in metropolitan club-land and press-land, retired from business, and Mr. Donkin assumed his mantle. Wonderful were the compositions to which he put his name when

advertising some specially attractive sale of stock or property. As for example—

"NORTHUMBERLAND.

"SWARLAND ESTATE, containing about 2,585 Acres of Arable, Pasture, and Wood Lands, with Mansion, Offices, Gardens, Lodge, and extensive Park, eminently adapted to the residence of a 'county family.' . . . For Public Sale, in one or several Lots, by

Messrs. DONKIN AND SON,

at the Central Station Hotel, Newcastle-on-Tyne, on Saturday, the 10th October [1874], at 2.0 P.M. punctually.

This ancestral estate is a conspicuous track of the lower vale of the Coquet, as forming an elevated nucleus of the richest of rural scenery; compact in form, as picturesque in position, Swarland forms the *chef d'œuvre* of a landscape to a Teniers or a Gainsborough. The mansion, seated upon an Arcadian daïs, gorgeously robed in sylvan drapery, with the

CENOTAPH OF NELSON,

an apotheosis to the invincible sea-captain, hallowing the ground—its woods, rivulets, and romantic denes, its visual command of a wide extent of sea-coast and of intervening objects of interest.

WARKWORTH CASTLE,

Memento of baronial power, uttering in broken accents the immortal name of Hotspur, and the fame of the Percies.

ACTON

perusing the page of history upon the turbulence of her Border chiefs.

FELTON PARK,

The Conservatory of the Coquet.

NEWTON HALL

closely approximating with dignified simplicity and elevation of taste.

Opinions may differ upon the nature of the agricultural features of the

SWARLAND ESTATE,

but none conversant with its turnip, barley, and bean soils, its wide extent of pasturage, will deny the possession of highly recuperative properties. These may be lying in abeyance, waiting the renovating hand of the enterprising agriculturist calling into action the supineness of indifference to meet the increasing demands of the productions of the farm. This demesne, therefore, repeats an invitation to the capitalist who can appreciate those inducements it offers, no less to an investment than to an *entrée* to the category of the

COUNTY FAMILIES OF NORTHUMBERLAND,

and for the exercise of those social ameliorations and physical improvements of which our rural economy yet stands in need.

Swarland is an elysium of the sportsman—its extensive coverts abounding with game, while packs of foxhounds, kept in regal state, hunt the country."

"NORTHUMBERLAND.—PRELUDE TO MURTON SALE.

"The *Olympia* of the agricultural hammer, within the vale of the Tweed, and in place of the *Isthmian* Games, the amenities of the stock auction ring—an epilogue of the drama of the farm—a period in the punctuation of its history—an interpretation of the laws of its economics—a memento of departed worth of he whose monogram is stamped upon the contents of the catalogue of the stock, the property of the representatives of the late Mr. James Robert Nicholson, upon the farm of

MURTON,

six miles from Berwick-upon-Tweed, for unreserved sale, on Thursday, the 3rd May, by

S. DONKIN.

Presenting a gratifying display of a Border-Leicester ewe flock in all the uniformity of type and superiority of quality—shearling rams to form an epoch in the history of their species—fat hoggs, the quintessence of mutton, styled by Mr. Coke, of Holkham, 'the monarch of meat,' a hecatomb of the stalled ox—the *apis* of the butcher, and the idol of the shambles—luscious heifers—queens of the bucolic symponiums of the Tweed, grazing cattle of quality and condition to heighten the poetry of the mead, and excite the envy and emulation of the patricians of the pasture. Draught horses, in the stable of their nativity, with certificate of birth, phenomenal of power and faultless of symmetry. A herd of swine, with the melodies of the stye upon the qualities of ham, and the luxury of roast pig provocative to a breach of the law of Semetic gastronomy. Implements numerous as the list of Homer's ships."

In 1886 Mr. Donkin published a volume of "Reminiscences," dedicating it to his son, Robert Donkin, of Rothbury, for many years his partner, in which appear the leading episodes of his active and eventful life. Among other interesting items is one showing the magnitude of the sales of real estate in Northumberland at which he officiated as auctioneer, including the "baronial castellated demesnes" of "Haggerstone, Blenkinsopp, Haughton, Chipchase, Callaly, Dunstanborough, Norham, Twizell, and Widdrington, realising in the aggregate upwards of a million pounds." Shortly before giving the book publicity the author retired from his double occupation of farmer and auctioneer, and settled down at Warkworth to await the inevitable end. It came on the morning of the great festival of Easter, 1888, when, at the age of eighty-six, he passed away. His remains were buried in the churchyard of Ingram.

By his marriage with Sarah Scott, Mr. Donkin had two sons and a daughter. The eldest son, Arthur Scott Donkin, M.D., Lecturer in Medical Jurisprudence and Toxicology in the University of Durham, author of "The Skim-Milk Treatment of Diabetes and Bright's

Disease," published by Longmans in 1871, died in 1883, leaving issue, John G. Donkin, author of "Trooper and Redskin in the Far North-West" (1889), who died recently, and Samuel, who succeeded his grandfather at Felton. The second son, Robert Donkin, continues the business of an auctioneer at Rothbury; the daughter, Eliza Donkin, became the wife of Dr. Hedley, of Felton.

## Thomas Doubleday,

POET, AUTHOR, AND POLITICAL ECONOMIST.

THOMAS DOUBLEDAY, one of the most gifted of Northumbria's sons, was a descendant of a Quaker family, domiciled in the later years of the seventeenth century at Jarrow. Robert Doubleday of that place had two sons, John and Humphrey. They were plentifully endowed with worldly goods, for when the descendants of Sir Francis Brandling were in difficulties John Doubleday was able to advance money upon mortgage of their ancestral estate of Alnwick Abbey, and ultimately to become its possessor. He died in 1751, at the age of 90, leaving the abbey and its broad acres to his son Michael. Tate, the historian of Alnwick, describes Michael Doubleday as a majestic man, above six feet in height, and massive in proportion. Like his father, he was a Quaker, and adopted the Quaker costume and modes of speech. Eccentric he was, too. Sometimes laying aside his broad brim, he crowned himself with a bright red cap, the top of which hung down behind his head; and as he strode through the streets, grasping by the middle a silver-headed pole as high as himself, he was an object of wonder and admiration to the juvenile population. When visiting the Duke of Northumberland on some business matter, he went into his grace's presence with his hat on his head. The lackey in attendance, horrified at this presumption, took off the broad brim, and put it aside. Business over, Mr. Doubleday retired, and bare-headed left the castle; but, a little while after, the duke discovered the hat, and, becoming aware of the servant's officiousness, hurriedly exclaimed to him, "Run, run with Mr. Doubleday's hat and place it on his head, or it may be the dearest that ever entered the castle." When this strong-minded representative of the family died, he bequeathed to three grand-nephews, whom he had never seen, £10,000 each, in recognition of

a service which had been rendered to him by their father, Middleton Hewitson.

It was from Humphrey, the brother of John, and the uncle of eccentric Michael, that Thomas Doubleday, poet, dramatist, biographer, and Radical politician, came. His father, George Doubleday, was the senior partner in the firm of Doubleday & Easterby, soap-boilers in the Close, tallow chandlers in High Friar Street, Newcastle, and oil of vitriol manufacturers at Bill Quay; his grandfather was a wholesale grocer at the head of the Side, whose shop is reputed to have been the first in Newcastle to be provided

with glazed windows. He was born in February, 1790, and was designed by his father to follow him in the extensive business which he had created. With this object in view, as soon as he left school, he was placed in the counting-house of the firm. His own tastes and predilections had not been consulted in the matter, and although he discharged faithfully the duties assigned to him his fancies ran in an altogether different groove. His uncle, Robert Doubleday, who, as will be seen a few pages further on, was a classical scholar and a mathematician, had inoculated him with literary tastes. At a period of life when he ought to have been one of the most active men in the office, he was reading books, writing essays, and composing sonnets. The first result of his devotion to literary pursuits

appeared in 1818, when he was eight-and-twenty. In that year he published "Sixty-five Sonnets, with other Poems," and the flattering reception which his book obtained at the hands of his critical friends encouraged him, while not wholly neglecting his soap and candles, to persevere in the paths of literature.

About this time he commenced to contribute verses to *Blackwood's Magazine*. No attempt has been made to gather together these effusions of his early manhood, but those who care to wade through the pages of "Maga" between 1818 and 1850 will find over the initials "T. D." poetical pieces of great beauty and merit. Here are a few verses, for example, from a long poem on the Roman Wall, which appeared in *Blackwood* for 1822:—

"Where yonder reaching hill slopes boldly down;
Far stretching eastward, with a long decline,
Stand where the cottages the summit crown,
And mark it cut with many a crossing line
Of lane and hedgerow; on the right the Tyne
Spreads himself, glittering, in the morning ray;
There many a midnight fire is seen to shine,
And many a dusky vessel plough her way,
Where once Rome's burnish'd prows and Denmark's Sea-kings lay.

Here plant thy foot, where many a foot hath trod,
Whose scarce-known home was o'er the southern wave,
And sit thee down; on no ignoble sod,
Green from the ashes of the great and brave:
Here stretch'd that chain which nations could enslave,
The least injurious token of their thrall,
Which, if it help'd to humble, help'd to save;
This shapeless mound thou know'st not what to call
Was a world's wonder once—This is the Roman Wall.

There was the deep trench'd Vallum to the left;
The Agger here; o'er many a hill they went,
O'er many a stream, through many a craggy cleft,
An endless and perpetual battlement,—
And when the spring the frozen nations sent,—
The restless Pict—forth from his thawing snows,
This was the bound-stone—oft with blood besprent—
Here where the daisies settle and the rose
Now thrusts her tender leaves, and the shy violet blows.

Where yon tall grove at distance lifts it head,
Lay many a cohort gay with foreign gold,
Sons of the men whom the first Cæsar led;
And there th' Imperial Eagle would unfold

His pinions to the sun—ere time had told
A trembling world that e'en his eye must cower :—
Ere yet the bloody Heptarch had controll'd,
Or yet Northumbria knew the Saxon's power,
Or Tynemouth's Danish Fort, or Robert's Norman Tower."

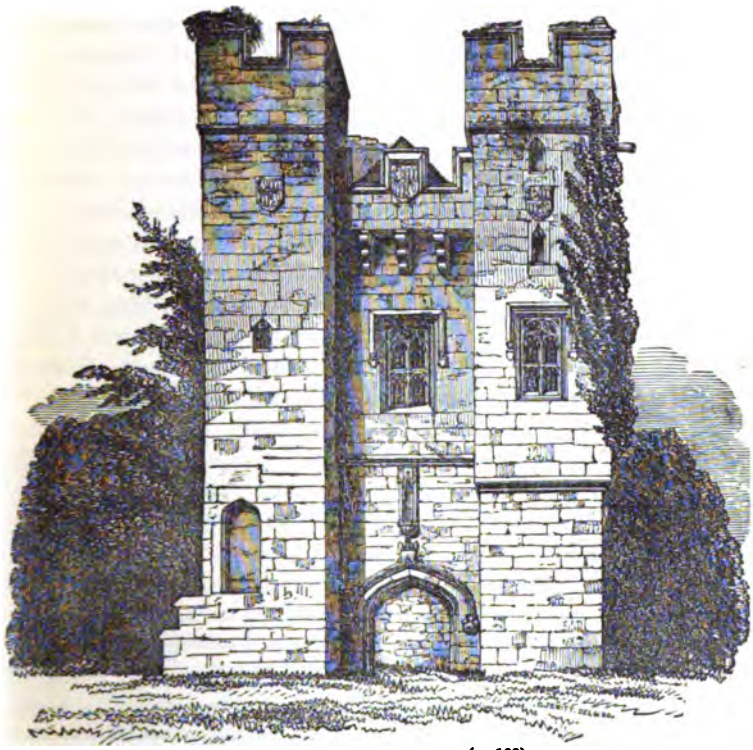
Having flushed his pen as a sonneteer, Mr. Doubleday ventured into the domain of the tragic Muse. In 1823 he published "The Italian Wife," a tragedy in five acts; and its reception was even more favourable than had been that of his poems. It is described by a competent critic as "full of interest, and constructed with considerable skill, although the 'prentice hand, as a matter of course, is visible here and there. The dialogue is more dramatic than the dialogue of young dramatists generally is, more especially in the case of those who, like Doubleday, have a large proportion of the dramatic element in their mental composition. The tragedy abounds with passages of great poetic beauty and dramatic force, and gives the author a respectable rank among the dramatic poets of the time."

A few years subsequently, in one of the magazines, George Gilfillan wrote that in London literary circles "young Doubleday was considered one of the most promising *litterateurs* of the day;" and the authority of the Dundee divine may be accepted as sufficient. Had Mr. Doubleday gone to the metropolis, and rubbed shoulders and measured swords with the dons of the big fashionable booksellers' reunions, he would probably soon have taken high rank amongst them. But preferring to remain in the North, which, notwithstanding its having been the birthplace and home of eminent men, has always been looked upon as a sort of Galilee of the Gentiles, from whose soot-begrimed Nazarethine capital no good thing could ever come, except coals and grindstones, he can scarcely be said to have risen into general fame. Nor is this to be wondered at, when we recollect that even Thomas Bewick, the prince of British wood-engravers, achieved little more for a long time than to be deemed a clever cutter-out of quaint, ridiculous tail-pieces, and figures of four-footed animals, birds, and fishes, somewhat more like the actual creatures than those previously current in chap-books perhaps, but falling short of correct high art.

"The Italian Wife" was followed by "Babington, a Tragedy" (London and Edinburgh, 1825). Then came "Diocletian, a Dramatic Poem" (1829), and "Caius Marius, an Historical Drama" (1836). Of these plays it is enough to say that they all contain

passages of great power as well as beauty, and that many of the characters are coloured and delineated with consummate skill; but that, on the whole, they are better adapted to the study than the stage.

At the death of his father, Mr. Doubleday became junior partner in the manufacturing firm; but, so far as active interest in its management was concerned, he was, on the whole, "a sleeping partner." Literature was his main business, not soap-boiling. The year before



GATEWAY OF ALNWICK ABBEY (P. 109).

the "Italian Wife" was ushered into existence he had begun the publication, in conjunction with his friend, Mr. Robert Roxby, of a series of lyrical poems, which obtained a large circulation in their original fugitive form, and have since been collected, under the title of "The Coquetdale Fishing Songs." Several of the songs from Doubleday's pen have the true poetic ring in them, though no one was more sensible than himself that they were, at best, pleasing trifles,

valuable to the Izaak Waltons of Northumbria for the associations they called up, and interesting to the angling community at large for the vigour and spirit with which their favourite sport is described and commended.

In a note prefixed to one of the songs—"The Fisher's Invitation to his Friend in Newcastle"—Mr. Doubleday introduces a reference to a new career upon which he had entered—the political:—"This song was, I believe, commenced and written in 1831, after the contested election for Northumberland, in which I threw away both money and time that I could ill spare. It was a sort of commemoration of one of the last very pleasant and successful visits which we [himself and Roxby] paid to our 'Old home of Weldon.' We went over (or at least I did) to get rid of the harass, worry, and empty shoutings, which were foreign to the disposition of both." While he was in the arena of conflict, however, he was as enthusiastic as the noisiest of the shouters. His Muse was vigorously employed in aid of Reform, and some of the most stirring of the songs and sonnets that were printed and distributed during the struggle came from his pen. There is one of his on Earl Grey that grey-headed Radicals can sing even now—"The Pilot that steer'd for Reform"—to the air of "The Pilot that Weather'd the Storm," beginning—

> "If the fiends of corruption are laid in the deep,
> And the witch rides no longer the wings of the storm;
> When our perils are past shall our gratitude sleep?
> No! Here's to the pilot who steer'd for reform,"

and ending with the lines—

> "And oh! if again e'er corruption o'erwhelm,
> Or the demons of tyranny rise in the storm,
> We'll think of the Captain who gave thee the helm,
> And follow the pilot that steer'd for reform."

An able and candid writer in the *Newcastle Daily Chronicle* of December 10th, 1870, summarised Mr. Doubleday's political course in the following article:—"A man of such intellectual activity as Mr. Doubleday could not fail to take a deep interest in the political measures of his time. The struggles of the people for political power, which, as soon as Europe was free from the great disturber of her peace, the First Napoleon, were renewed with such vigour, could not be viewed with indifference by a nature so sympathetic with the weak and the oppressed as was that of Mr. Doubleday. The political doctrines of William Cobbett recommended themselves to the under-

standing and the sympathies of one whose liberal instincts had been sharpened by his intercourse with his uncle, by his historical and classical studies, and by his observation of the social and political phenomena in the midst of which his youth had been spent. His natural hatred of tyranny was strengthened by the unconstitutional efforts he had witnessed on the part of those in power to depose popular liberty. The Peterloo massacre, which covered the Government of the time with infamy, and which placed a stain on the character of our yeomanry regiments, which no services they have rendered the country since then have been able to wipe out, filled him with horror and loathing for an aristocratic Administration which could perpetrate such proceedings, and he devoted himself heart and soul to the cause of the people. His partner in business, Mr. Easterby, was a Whig; Mr. Doubleday was that and something more. He aided the Whig party by voice and pen in carrying forward the Reform agitation, which culminated in the Reform Bill of 1832; but he never trusted them thoroughly. He acquiesced in the propriety of forming an alliance between them and the Radical party. He became secretary to the Northern Political Union, composed of Whigs and Radicals, and played an important part in the agitation which the union, subsequent to its formation, prosecuted in aid of Earl Grey and the reforming party in Parliament. A great public meeting was held in the Forth, Newcastle, in 1832, at which Mr. Charles Attwood, the chairman of the Union, presided, and at which a speech was delivered by Mr. Charles Larkin that created great excitement throughout the country. Mr. Doubleday also took part in the proceedings, and moved one of the resolutions passed on the occasion. Such was the excitement produced by this demonstration, that warrants for the arrest of Mr. Doubleday, Mr. Larkin, and other prominent members of the Northern Political Union, on the charge of sedition, were drawn out, and would have been served but for the fact that the Conservative Government remained in office only a few days, the unissued documents being found in the archives of the Home Office when the Whigs assumed the administration of affairs. The cause of democracy was deserted by many who had been more loud in their professions of zeal in its favour than Mr. Doubleday had been, but he scorned to renounce convictions simply because there was no immediate prospect of their being carried into fact. Faithful among the faithless he clung to the political principles which he had deliberately adopted, and his unbending integrity and un-

varying consistency gained for him the respect of even his political foes."

In 1842 light was poured by Mr. Doubleday upon a subject which Malthus was thought, by the great majority of political economists, to have definitely settled. This was done in a work entitled "The True Law of Population, shown to be connected with the Food of the People." An outline of the author's theory had been given in a letter to Lord Brougham, which appeared in *Blackwood's Magazine* for March, 1837. Briefly stated, it is this:—The general law which regulates the increase or decrease both of vegetable and animal life, is, that wherever a species or genus is endangered, a corresponding effort is invariably made by Nature for its preservation and continuance by an increase of fecundity; that this especially takes place whenever such danger arises from a diminution of proper nourishment or food, so that, consequently, the state of depletion, or the deplethoric state, is favourable to fertility; and that, on the other hand, the plethoric state, or state of repletion, is unfavourable to fertility, in the ratio of the intensity of such rate, and this probably throughout Nature universally, in the vegetable as well as in the animal world. In other words, in the vegetable world fruitfulness is increased when danger arises from insufficient nourishment for the plant, and, on the other hand, is decreased when the peril springs from a surplusage of what is needful. Among animals, likewise, fecundity is totally checked by the plethoric state, and is increased and rendered doubly certain by the existence of the deplethoric or lean state. Expressed broadly, the rule is palpable and invariable that over-feeding checks increase, while, on the other hand, a limited or deficient nutriment stimulates and adds to it. A strictly analogous law is in operation with respect to the human species. Plainness, if not stringency of diet, is favourable to fecundity, while luxury invariably leads to enervation and sterility. Mr. Doubleday supported his main argument by many ingenious considerations and facts drawn from ancient and contemporary history; showing the danger which lurks beneath the very prosperity of a nation. Evil may arise from a superfluity of good, for if the bulk of a people indulge in luxury to an excess, the consequence will be not only an effeminacy of mind and morals, and a decay of the public virtues, which are necessary to the existence of States, but in addition to this an actual physical decay and diminution of numerical strength, probably most rapid at the top of

society, and extending downward as far as the luxury reaches in the ratio of its extent. Such States soon become the prey of other States, whose situation has not included the same tendencies towards national debility, or become the victims of some tyranny within themselves. No wonder that this book, enunciating doctrines diametrically opposed to the theories of the M'Culloch school, then predominant, excited a great deal of attention both at home and abroad, and provoked, as a matter of course, much opposition.

In 1852 he published "An Essay on Mundane Moral Government." The object of the work, which was distinguished by a fine philosophical tone and a Saxon vigour of style, was to show that the Creator, who has subjected the material world to laws invariable in their action, has not left the moral world to the caprice of speculators or the fantasies of philosophers; that there exists an analogy between the moral and material government of the world; and that some great principle, like that of the attraction of gravitation, may be the foundation of the one as that principle is of the other. Mr. Doubleday finds the answer to the question—What is this principle? in the word "Excitement," including under it all the various impulses, preferences, and motives by which the mind is moved. He takes a rapid but masterly and comprehensive view of the facts of the world's history, with the working and tendencies of all institutions, social, political, and domestic, which mark the progress or decline of the human race; and comes at length to the clear and consistent conclusion which he sought to attain. He shows that, while in the material world the law of perpetual change—of decomposition and recomposition—under the influence of man's controlling agency, transforms the universal wilderness into the universal garden, in the moral world it is the same; that "Civilisation and science, morality and religion, act within the limits of a few great laws, the excesses of which they gradually mitigate and extinguish. Power becomes subdued, wrong becomes modified by the influences of right and duty; and law and order, and private and public morality, at last extinguish the fires of passion, the lusts of power, and the fears of possession; and man becomes, at one and the same time, a free agent, moral, religious, and self-reliant, looking alone to those laws which he has helped to frame, and to that moral code which he has helped to establish. In both we equally behold the handiwork of an all-powerful and all-benevolent Creator, whose might we can only conceive to be subjected to one sole limitation, self-impressed—

that of making less perfect than himself the varied beings to whom it is His will to give existence, and the power and sense to appreciate and enjoy it."

"Remarks on the Currency Question, in Reply to Tooke's 'Considerations,'" "The Political Life of Sir Robert Peel," "A Financial, Monetary, and Statistical History of England"; pamphlets such as "Why is Money Scarce?" and "The Crimes of the Whigs;" "The Eve of St. Mark," a romance; "The Touchstone," and a book about Northumberland Small Pipe Music, with a great number of social, political, and literary articles, contributed to *Blackwood's Magazine*, the *Eclectic Review*, and other leading periodicals, as well as to the local weeklies and daily papers, attest the versatility, as well as the vigour of Mr. Doubleday's pen.

In the science of metaphysics, Mr. Doubleday took a warm interest; and a short time before his death he published a volume intituled, "Matter for Materialists: a Series of Letters in vindication and extension of the principles regarding the nature of existence of the Right Rev. Dr. Berkeley, Lord Bishop of Cloyne." An accomplished critic has characterised this work as "a model of clearness, verbal economy, and practical directness." It would be too much to say that its author has bottomed the subject, for that is what mortal man can never do, it being, like a certain pit, bottomless; but he has probably let as long a plummet line down into its dark abyss as any other writer has done. At any rate, in vindication of the illustrious prelate—who, as Byron tells us, said "there was no matter, and proved it too—no matter what he said,"—a great number of cogent arguments, illustrated by recent scientific discovery.

Gifted with the pen of a ready writer, Mr. Doubleday was far from being a fluent speaker; and his diffidence, which never left him to the last, caused him to hesitate where a less able man would have gone freely on, and prevented him from speaking much at public meetings. But he was always listened to with attention when he did speak, because his opinion was known to be valuable.

From a commercial point of view his life was a failure, partly owing to his own mental temperament, and partly through circumstances beyond his own control. Subsequently to his becoming insolvent, and giving up all he had to his creditors, he accepted the office of Registrar of Births, Marriages, and Deaths in St. Andrew's parish, a post which he resigned upon receiving the appointment of Secretary to the Coal Trade. Neither of these

offices was lucrative, but Mr. Doubleday was philosopher enough to be content with small things.

He expired at his residence, at Gosforth, on the 18th of December, 1870, in his eighty-first year, and was buried in Gosforth churchyard. He had been seized with paralysis about a month before, having up to that time, notwithstanding his advanced age, continued in the enjoyment of great physical and mental vigour.

Most of Mr. Doubleday's separately published books and pamphlets are comprised in the following list:—

"Sixty-five Sonnets, with other Poems." 8vo, 1818.

"The Italian Wife, a Tragedy." 8vo, 1823.

"Babington, a Tragedy." 8vo, 1825.

"Remarks on some Points of the Currency Question." 8vo, 1826.

"Diocletian, a Dramatic Poem." 8vo, 1829.

"A Letter to all the Friends of Parliamentary Reform on the Present Crisis of Affairs, and on the Steps now proper to be Taken." 8vo, 1830.

"The Question of the Vote by Ballot Plainly Stated, and Objections fully Examined and Refuted, in a Letter to John Hodgson, Esq., M.P." 8vo, 1831.

"A Letter to the Radical Reformers of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, on the Late Election, and its Attendant Circumstances." 8vo, 1835.

"Caius Marius, the Plebeian Consul, a Historical Tragedy." 8vo, 1836.

"The True Law of Population shown to be connected with the Food of the People." 8vo, 1842. [Several after editions.]

"A Financial, Monetary, and Statistical History of England, from the Revolution of 1688, to the Present Time." 8vo, 1847.

"On Mundane Moral Government, Demonstrating its Analogy with the System of Material Government." 8vo, 1852.

"The Coquetdale Fishing Songs, Now First Collected and Edited by a North-Country Angler." 8vo, 1852.

"The Political Life of Sir Robert Peel: An Analytical Biography." 2 vols., 8vo, 1856.

"Why is Money Scarce? The Question answered in a Letter to Thomas John Taylor, of Earsdon, Northumberland." 8vo, 1857.

"The Eve of St. Mark, a Romance of Venice." 2 vols., 8vo, 1857.

"The French Alliance: Its Origin and Authors." 8vo, 1861.

"The Touchstone, a Series of Letters on Social, Literary, and Political Subjects, originally published in the *Newcastle Daily Chronicle*, under the signature of 'Britannicus.'" 8vo, 1863.

"Crimes of the Whigs, or a Radical's Reasons for Supporting the Tory Party at the Next General Election." 8vo, 1864.

"Matter for Materialists: a Series of Letters in Vindication and Extension of the Principles regarding the Nature of Existence of the Right Reverend Dr. Berkeley, Bishop of Cloyne." 8vo, 1870.

"A Letter to His Grace the Duke of Northumberland, on the Ancient Music of Northumberland, its Collection and Preservation." 8vo.

# Robert Doubleday,

## A PUBLIC-SPIRITED CITIZEN.

ROBERT DOUBLEDAY, uncle of the poet-politician, and eldest son of the wholesale grocer at the head of the Side, Newcastle, was born in 1753. Mackenzie, in one of those useful notes to his "History of Newcastle" which form a happy hunting-ground for local biographers, states that, like his relatives at Jarrow and Alnwick, Robert Doubleday was brought up in the principles of the Society of Friends, to which community his parents belonged. At school he made considerable proficiency in the classics and acquired a taste for poetic composition, and as he grew up the attentive study of morals and metaphysics imparted to him a mental perspicuity and a logical acuteness of intellect which gave him a preponderating influence among his fellow-townsmen. His political and literary views were broad and liberal, yet his unassuming manners, gentle disposition, and cheerful temper caused his friendship to be generally courted. Being a practical philanthropist, he promoted the formation of several valuable local institutions, nor did he shrink from occupying any office in which he could advance their interests. For forty-six years he was secretary to the Newcastle Dispensary, and acted in the same capacity to the Lying-in Hospital and the Fever Hospital. His name appears among the members of the first Committee of Management of the Royal Jubilee School, and at the second annual meeting of the institution, over which he presided, he was elected, with Mr. James Losh, one of its vice-presidents. He was also one of the founders and directors of the Newcastle Savings Bank. But the institution with which his name was most closely identified was the Newcastle Literary and Philosophical Society. At the meeting held in the Groat Market Assembly Rooms on the 24th January, 1793, at which the expediency of forming such a society was affirmed, he was one of a committee of fifteen leading townsmen appointed to formulate rules for the guidance of the members, and as soon as the institution was fairly organised he was appointed to act with the Rev. William Turner, the founder, as joint-secretary. Shortly afterwards he was elected one of the vice-presidents, and in that capacity presided

for twenty-six years as chairman of the monthly meetings of the society.

Mr. Doubleday lived for many years in the Bigg Market, but some time previous to his decease he removed to Gateshead Fell, where he died on the 11th January, 1823, in the seventieth year of his age. In the annual report of the Literary and Philosophical Society for that year appears the following tribute to his character

and accomplishments:—"He was one whose deep and extensive knowledge on all subjects connected with literature and science enabled him to fill the chair to the credit of the institution and the delight of its members. The neat and luminous summaries which he generally gave of the papers which were read at the monthly meetings; the easy and familiar way in which he adverted to the points connected with the subject of them which admitted of further discussion; and the agreeable manner in which he invited those

whom he conceived best qualified to take a part in it will not soon be forgotten. Nor was his usefulness confined to our public meetings; the readiness with which he communicated his varied knowledge, and the particularly amiable manner in which he encouraged the inquiries and promoted the studies of the younger members, by directing their attention to standard works on the several objects of their pursuit, joined to his mild and unassuming manners, greatly endeared him to the whole society, and have caused his death to be lamented by us all. . . . The punctuality with which, so long as health permitted, he attended their meetings, the urbanity with which he presided over them and checked any heat which might be the occasional consequence of difference of opinion; the judgment which he displayed in the selection of books, and the attention which he always showed to the interests of the society and the judicious management of its funds, have mainly contributed to the efficiency of their (the committee's) services, and to the flourishing state of the institution."

The *Newcastle Magazine* for February, 1823, bears similar testimony to Mr. Doubleday's qualities, ending with a statement that "his place in general society as a manager of our public institutions it will be very difficult to fill."

## Matthew Duane,

CONVEYANCER AND ANTIQUARY.

LOCAL annalists are singularly reticent about the life and labours of the eminent lawyer and accomplished antiquary who bore the name of Matthew Duane. Biographical details respecting him are entirely wanting. All that can be gathered concerning his career from the voluminous resources of local history may be briefly summed up in a statement that he was a member of the Honourable Society of Lincoln's Inn, a Fellow of the Royal and Antiquarian Societies, a trustee of the British Museum, and a most successful collector of rare coins and medals; that he married a Newcastle lady—Dorothy, daughter of Thomas Dawson, and granddaughter of Henry Peareth; that he had his chambers in the old home of the Peareths in Pilgrim Street (now the offices of the Newcastle Board of Guardians); and

that he was buried in St. Nicholas' Church. Of his parentage, his birthplace, his education, and his family connections local historians tell us nothing.

From other sources, however, we obtain an insight into the character and pursuits of this celebrated man. We learn that he was a polite scholar, a man of high culture, of acknowledged taste in painting and music, of European reputation as a medallist, and one of the most eminent conveyancers of his time. His collection of coins and medals was unequalled, being especially rich and valuable in specimens from Syria, Macedonia, and Phœnicia. Of these, and

other rare objects, he formed a private museum, which was the resort of connoisseurs, and of persons interested in the special cult to which he devoted himself, not only from all parts of Great Britain, but from the Continent and the far East. To art and artists he was a most liberal patron. A number of his rarest coins he caused to be engraved by Bartolozzi, and he also paid for several engravings of drawings by Giles Hussey, of whose work he was an ardent admirer. One of his friends, Louis Dutens, the eccentric rector of Elsdon, compiled an elaborate catalogue of his treasures, and wrote a quarto volume, which ran into a second edition, about his Phœnician

medals, under the title—"Explication de quelques Médailles Phéniciennes du Cabinet de M. Duane."

In his practice as a conveyancer, Mr. Duane occupied a high position. He supplied the article "Common" for one of the editions of Matthew Bacon's "Abridgment of the Law," and edited "Reports of several cases argued and adjudged in the Court of King's Bench at Westminster, by John Fitzgibbon." Lord Eldon was indebted to him for the opportunity of studying conveyancing free of charge when, poor and unknown, he was preparing for the Bar. Writing to his brother Henry at Newcastle, in December, 1775, he states that his prospects of success had been greatly improved by Mr. Duane's generosity:—"The great conveyancing of your country," he writes, "is done by Mr. Duane; it seemed to be, therefore, a most desirable thing to be connected with him, as his recommendation and instructions might probably operate much in my behalf hereafter. The great fear arose from his never having taken any person in the character of a pupil before, and the apprehension that if he should now break through a general rule it must be on terms with which I could not afford to comply; but he has offered me every assistance in his power, and is so extremely ready to forward my schemes as to declare himself contented with the satisfaction he will enjoy in contributing to the success of a person whom he is so uncommonly kind as even to honour. This conduct of his has taken a great load of uneasiness off my mind, as in fact our profession is so exceedingly expensive that I almost sink under it." Later in life Lord Eldon expressed himself in equally complimentary terms respecting his old friend and tutor:—"I was for six months in the office of Mr. Duane, the conveyancer. He was a Roman Catholic—a most worthy and excellent man. The knowledge I acquired of conveyancing in his office was of infinite service to me during a long life in the Court of Chancery."

Lord Eldon was only one of many persons who owed acknowledgment to Mr. Duane for valuable services rendered during critical periods of their lives. James Macpherson, the historian, states that when he was busy with one of his books—"Original Papers, containing the Secret History of Great Britain from 1688 to 1714"—the great conveyancer discovered and purchased for him ten quarto volumes of papers relating to the House of Brunswick, which were of inestimable value. Thomas Bedingfeld, one of the minor local poets, owed to Mr. Duane an introduction to London practice

as a conveyancer and chamber counsel when his religious principles (he was a Catholic) deprived him of the privileges of the English bar. No trouble was too great, no labour too long when Mr. Duane had the opportunity of serving a friend. Dr. Ducarel, writing on the 19th May, 1767, to M. Grente de Grecourt, at Rouen, in reply to some inquiries respecting judicial procedure in England, names him as the one man in the country capable and willing to impart the desired information:—"Mr. Duane, of Lincoln's Inn, has been known to me for many years. He is my intimate friend, and the one person I should have recommended to you if you had not yourself named him in your letter. He is able, diligent, and of the first order as a lawyer, universally esteemed, a rich and at the same time an honest man. He speaks and writes French very well, having learned it in his youth at Rouen, where he lived several years." To Mr. Duane, also, Samuel Pegge, A.M., publishing in 1766 an essay on the coins of Cunobelin, addressed a special dissertation "On the Seat of the Coritani."

How much of his time Mr. Duane spent at his chambers in Newcastle, and how much of it in London, cannot be ascertained. He does not appear to have taken much interest in the public life of Tyneside, but that may be accounted for by the exacting nature of his profession and the absorbing occupations of his leisure. That he was partial to Newcastle seems probable from the fact that he purchased landed estate in the neighbourhood (262 acres at Wide-open, and 283 acres at Dinnington), and that he desired to be buried in St. Nicholas' Church, among his neighbours and his wife's kindred. To that great place of sepulture he was borne in February, 1785, having died suddenly a few days before in London, from a stroke of paralysis. In the south aisle of the church, on an entablature crowned by a female figure leaning upon a funeral urn, visitors read the following affectionate tribute to his memory:—

"In St. George's Porch are interred the remains of Matthew Duane, of Lincoln's Inn, London, Esq., Fellow of the Royal and Antiquarian Societies, and a trustee of the British Museum. He was of great eminence in the knowledge of the law, and of the strictest integrity and liberality in the practice of it; at the same time the friend and patron of the polite and fine arts: and particularly distinguished by his singular skill, judgment, and taste in choosing and collecting a most complete series of Syrian, Phœnician, Grecian, Roman, and other coins, now deposited in the museum of the late William Hunter, M.D., for the illustration and confirmation of History. The virtues of his heart were equal to the endowments of his mind. Justice, benevolence, and charity dictated his sentiments in

promoting the happiness of mankind. He died the 6th of February, MDCCLXXXV, aged LXXVIII. In testimony of her affection and sincere esteem, his Widow erected this Monument to his Memory."

After his death, Mr. Duane's collections of coins and medals, etc., were sold by auction. He had parted with his cabinet of Syriac coins some time before to Dr. Hunter, who bequeathed them to the University of Glasgow. The fine series of plates, engraved by Bartolozzi, were purchased by Richard Gough, the historian and antiquary, who issued them to the public, in 1804, under the title of "Coins of the Seleucidæ, Kings of Syria; from the Establishment of their Reign under Seleucus Nicator, to the Determination of it under Antiochus Asiaticus: With Historical Memoirs of each Reign. Illustrated with twenty-four Plates of Coins from the Cabinet of the late Matthew Duane, F.R. and A.S., engraved by Bartolozzi." The principal part of his fortune, which was considerable, he settled upon his nephew, Michael Bray, also of Lincoln's Inn, subject to the jointure of his widow, who survived till the 11th of April, 1799.

John Nichols, the publisher, who knew Mr. Duane intimately, writes of him in his "Literary Anecdotes of the Eighteenth Century," in terms of eulogy not inferior to those which appear upon the monument in St. Nicholas'. "He was," Nichols assures us, "a gentleman universally esteemed for his profound knowledge, great abilities, and unsullied reputation in the profession of the law; as well as for his extensive learning, happy taste, and critical discernment in polite literature and the fine arts; nor less distinguished for his many excellent qualities, and the practice of every virtue that adorns the character of an honest man and a good Christian."

## Johannes Duns Scotus,

"THE SUBTLE DOCTOR."

JOHANNES DUNS SCOTUS was a very learned man, who lived about the end of the thirteenth and the beginning of the fourteenth century. English, Scotch, and Irish writers have long disputed as to which of the three kingdoms should be assigned the honour of giving him birth, and the question is not likely ever to be satisfactorily settled, any more than that of the birthplace of Homer or St. Patrick.

According to the English authorities, he was born, about the year 1265, at Dunstan, near Dunstanborough Castle, in the parish of Embleton, Northumberland, six and a half miles north-east of Alnwick. The compilers of the "Biographia Britannica," following Camden, quote in favour of Duns's English birthplace a Latin inscription at the end of a manuscript copy of his works in the library of Merton College, Oxford, of the following tenor:—"Here end the Lectures of the Subtle Doctor in the University of Oxford, upon the Fourth Book of Sentences (Opinions, Thoughts, by Peter Lombard), to wit, of Master John Duns, born in a certain hamlet in the parish of Emylton, called Dunstan, in the County of Northumber-

land, pertaining to the house of the scholars of Merton Hall in Oxford, and formerly fellow of the said house."

But the advocates for Duns's Scottish, or rather Scoto-Northumbrian extraction, are not satisfied with this evidence. The inscription, they say, proves nothing, except that the individual that wrote it, whoever he was, had heard that John Duns was born at Dunstan. They overlook the significant fact that that place was the property of the college where the great man was educated, and that it was therefore exceedingly likely that he should be sent thence to Oxford to study and take his degree, when it was found that he had an extraordinary genius for imbibing

knowledge. At any rate, Buchanan and other Scottish historians, followed by Mareri, the competent forerunner of the indefatigable Bayle, mention that John Duns was born in the year 1274 in the old town of Dunse, in the Merse, the neighbouring county to Northumberland, and for long centuries a part of the Anglo-Danish kingdom of Northumberland. He first saw the light, they allege, under the frowning walls of Dunse Castle, the stronghold of Randolph, Earl of Moray, the nephew and compatriot of Bruce. Hence he was called "John of Dunse the Scot,"—the third joint of his name being a common Gentile appellative, likewise borne by the first recognised Mayor of Newcastle.

The Scotch hypothesis is fortified by the terms of the Latin epitaph upon Duns's tomb, which reads thus in English :—

> "Scotland bore me, England adopted me,
> France taught me, Germany holds me."

The Irish claimants base their title to reckon Duns as a countryman of their own chiefly on the fact that he was surnamed Scotus, a term originally applied to none but natives of the Emerald Isle, and only secondarily, and in comparatively modern times, extended to North Britons. But Scotus, le Scot, Scot, and Scott are found in the records of the town of Newcastle always denoting persons from the land beyond the Tweed, and never, in any case, Irishmen. There was, besides, another Johannes Scotus, who lived several centuries before our Johannes, and who, because he was of Hibernian origin, was distinguished as Erigena, born in Erin.

Dismissing these fruitless controversies, this much is certain, that John Duns, while yet a youth, attached himself to the Minorites, Franciscans, Cordeliers, or Grey Friars, in Newcastle, whose monastery stood close to the walls of the town, near Pilgrim Street Gate. He donned, as a matter of course, the thick, grey cloth cloak appropriate to the order, with the girdle of rope or cord, tied with three knots, symbolic of the Ever Blessed Trinity. But his ambition was not confined to the narrow bounds of a cell, or to the routine duties of the monastic life. And so the promising youth was soon sent to Oxford, where he was admitted to Merton College, of which he became a fellow, and where he greatly distinguished himself by his unusual proficiency in scholastic acquirements. He is said to have become extraordinarily learned in the canon and civil laws, as well as in logic, physics, metaphysics, mathematics, and

astronomy. He read lectures on natural philosophy, which were very popular. Among the apocryphal stories told of him is one that, during the time when he filled the chair of theology on the banks of the Isis, his fame grew so great that thirty thousand scholars came thither to listen to him. But his motto being still onward and upward, he removed from Oxford to Paris, probably in 1301. He was chosen regent of the monks of his order at a meeting at Toulouse, and about the same time he took the presidency of the theological school at Paris, in the renowned college of the Sorbonne. Here his arguments and authority carried the day, against the rival monastic order of the Dominicans, for the Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin. The heads of the University of Paris determined to admit no scholars to degrees but such as were of John Duns's mind. They also appointed a festival—the Feast of the Immaculate Conception—to be held every year on the anniversary of Duns's triumphant demonstration of the new cardinal point of faith. It was on this occasion that the title of Subtle Doctor was first conferred upon him, a title no man ever deserved better. For, in the whole history of scholasticism, we meet with few so well qualified as he was to

> "Weave fine cobwebs for the skull
> That's empty when the moon is full;
> For he a rope of sand could twist
> As tough as any Sorbonnist."

In 1308 he was commanded by Gonsalvo, the general of the Minorites, to go to Cologne, the city of the Three Magian Kings, to dispute against the Beghards, Beguines, bag-women or begging sisters of Flanders, who, without having taken monastic vows, had united for the purpose of devotion and charity, and lived together in houses called beguinages. It is reported that the citizens met him in solemn procession, and conducted him into the city. But he was not permitted to do more than merely enter upon his new crusade against wilful women's presumption; for, very soon after, he was seized with apoplexy, and died on the 8th November, 1308, in the forty-third year of his age.

The account of his death is legendary. According to Garries, he fell down in a fit, and was immediately buried as dead; but afterwards, coming to his senses, he languished in his coffin, beating his head and hands against its sides till he expired.

On the eternally disputed topic of predestination and free-will,

Duns Scotus took one side, and Thomas Aquinas the other. The one was styled, as we have said, the Subtle Doctor; the other, the Angelical Doctor. Duns was a Franciscan, Aquinas a Dominican—hence of rival and to some extent hostile orders. Between them, the two doughty champions new-modelled the school theology, which had been based upon Aristotle fully as much as on St. Augustine, and recognised the authority of the Stagirite as almost if not equal to that of Paul of Tarsus. The learned Christian world was divided, even in those pre-Reformation days, into two camps of irreconcilables —the Thomists and the Scotists. The former held Thomas Aquinas's opinions with regard to predestination and grace; the latter stood up as stoutly for those of John Duns.

It is a common story that the word Dunce is derived from this great schoolman's local name being applied, by way of irony, to stupid scholars, on the same principle as a blockhead is called a Solon, or a bully Hector, and as Moses is the vulgar name of contempt for a Jew. So says Southey in "The Doctor."

The works of Duns Scotus are very voluminous. "One man is hardly able to read them, and no one man is able to understand them." The speculative part of them alone, collected by Luke Wadding, an industrious and learned Irishman, and published at Lyons in 1639, fills twelve folio volumes. The positive part was meant by the editor for a future publication, which never appeared; but the sum and substance of them, as well as more or less luminous and satisfactory epitomes of the whole, have appeared in sundry shapes at divers times. And in Ritter's "History of Philosophy," and other works of the kind, the curious reader is likely to find all he is likely to want regarding this every way wonderful man, "the most ingenious, acute, and subtle of the sons of Adam."

## William Durant,

PURITAN PREACHER.

FOREMOST among the "godly and faithful" ministers of religion who found their way to the banks of the Tyne in the early days of the great Civil War stands William Durant. Whence he came has not been ascertained. He united the culture and refinement of a scholar with the tastes and habits of a gentleman, but how and

where he acquired them are unknown. Dr. Ellison, Vicar of Newcastle at the close of the seventeenth century, claimed to have discovered that he was "of University education, bred up in University College, Oxford," where he took "one or more degrees"; yet Anthony Wood, the industrious biographer of Oxford men, knows him not; and Dr. Cosin, Bishop of Durham at the Restoration, "reduced him to silence," because satisfactory evidence was not forthcoming of his having received either Episcopal or Presbyterial ordination. Among the "Alumni Oxonienses" occurs the name of "Durant, William, of Cornwall, pleb.," who matriculated at Christ Church College on the 8th of November, 1611, aged eighteen. The date and the age fit the Newcastle preacher, but there is no other evidence of identity. He married Jane, sister of James (afterwards Sir James) Clavering, of Axwell, and in the Clavering pedigree he is entered as "William Durand, of county Devon," an assignment of origin which finds colour, if not substance, in the facts that during the ejection of the clergy in 1662, one Nathaniel Durant was turned out of the living of Cheriton Fitzpane, in that county, and that on the 9th of March, 1603-4, Arthur Durant, "of Devon, pleb.," matriculated at Exeter College, Oxford, aged twenty. It is known that John Durant, of Canterbury, who after the ejection became a Dissenting minister at Maidstone, was William's brother, but no other of his relations have been traced. Whencesoever he came, and whatsoever may have been his credentials, he was a Puritan of high repute, who, amid the distractions and persecutions of his time, lived a life of consistency and rectitude; a preacher of eminence who, gathering around him devout and earnest people, is reputed to have founded the first settled Nonconformist congregation in Newcastle.

It was in the year 1645, a few months after the storming and capture of Newcastle, that Mr. Durant made his appearance in a local pulpit. The Corporation selected him in February of that year to officiate at All Saints'; in May they appointed him one of the lecturers at St. Nicholas'; and in July, 1646, they installed him at St. John's. At St. Nicholas' he had for a colleague silver-tongued Cuthbert Sydenham, who, writing in 1653 a controversial treatise on "Infant Baptism and Singing of Psalms," dedicated it to his "dear and honoured brother, Mr. William Durant," his "faithfull fellow-labourer in the Gospel and the Church of Christ, over whom the Holy Ghost hath made us joynt-overseers."

Ministers like-minded filled the other pulpits in the town, differing in opinion as to forms of Church government—some favouring Independency, others leaning towards Presbyterianism—yet pronounced Puritans each and all. Durant himself was of the "Independent judgment"; among his colleagues the Presbyterian order predominated; but against prelacy and heresy—against Episcopalians and Arians, Arminians and Quakers, they were one. A notable instance of their intolerance in matters of doctrine occurred at the beginning of the year 1651. One "Captain Averard" came to the town, and, by beat of drum, summoned the soldiers in the garrison, and the townspeople at large, to hear him preach. His "message" proved to be heretical; whereupon Mr. Durant and his fellow-ministers in Newcastle wrote to Oliver Cromwell denouncing both the preacher and his preachments. Arminianism and Socinianism, they urged, were likely to become, "as Popery heretofore, the plagues of this poor nation," and they therefore entreated his Excellency that, as God had made him "a most happie conqueror of our Enemies and Deliverer of three Nations from Tyranny and Slavery," he would become a "Destroyer of our Errours, a Restorer of Truth, and a Restrainer, not only of this Corrupter, but of all such-like false Teachers crept into the Armie to deceive ye poor Souldiery and poyson the Country." With like asperity Quakers and their practices were condemned. Mr. Durant and his colleagues wrote against them a notable pamphlet of fifty-one pages, small quarto, with the wondrous title of

"The perfect Pharise, under Monkish Holines, Opposing the Fundamental Principles of the Doctrine of the Gospel, and Scripture Practises of Gospel Worship manifesting himself in the Generation of men called Quakers: Or A preservative against the Grosse Blasphemies and horrid delusions of those who, under pretence of perfection, and an immediate Call from God, make it their business to revile and disturb the Ministers of the Gospel. Published for the establishing of the people of God in the Faith once delivered to the Saints, by Thomas VVeld, Rich. Prideaux, Sam. Hammond, VVill. Cole, VVill. Durant, Ministers in Newcastle." London: Printed for Richard Tomlins at the Sun and Bible near Pie-Corner, 1654.

The unity of spirit which prevailed among the Puritan preachers in Newcastle had the merit of continuance. With Dr. Robert Jenison, a member of an old and high-placed local family, at their head, and Mr. Durant, related by marriage to another eminent local house, they worked in unison and good fellowship, "preaching in the same places, and fasting and praying together in heavenly

harmony." If there were any doubt or misgiving amongst them it arose from a fear that the Presbyterian element might gain too much ascendency. That such fear was entertained is evident from a letter which, in 1656, the Corporation of Newcastle addressed to the Lord Protector. Cromwell was suspected of leaning too much towards the Presbyterian form of worship, and the Corporation, echoing the apprehensions of Mr. Durant and his Congregational brethren, considered it proper to express their suspicions in writing, to which Cromwell sent an assuring reply. "Newcastle-on-Tyne, or the Municipal authorities there, as we may perceive," writes Carlyle in "Letters and Speeches of Cromwell," referring to this incident, "are rather of the Independent judgment; and have a little dread of some encouragement his Highness has been giving to certain of the Presbyterian sect in those parts. This letter ought to be sufficient reassurance." Then follows the epistle, in which his Excellency assures the remonstrants that "as nothing may reflect to the prejudice of your outward Good, either Personal, or as you are a Civil Government, shall easily pass with us; so, much less what shall tend to your discouragement, as you are Saints, to your congregations gathered in that way of fellowship, commonly known by the name of Independents. . . . Wherefore I desire you in that matter to rest secure."

There the affair was supposed to have ended, but the following letter from Mr. Durant and other Puritan pastors (copied by the Rev. John Brand from the original MS., and now published from Mr. Brand's transcript) shows that the dissension continued, though it was not of a serious character:—

"NEWCASTLE, *January 12th*, 1656 (57).

"For His Highness the Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of England, and the Dominions thereunto belonging: These Humbly Present.

"May it please your Highness,

"That the Congregational Churches of Christ in these parts have not made any solemn addresses to your Highness, thereby to make knowne the reall sence of the good hand of God upon us in raising you upp in the midst of the divisions of Saints to be instrumentall for the repairing of breaches among us, hath not proceeded from any dissatisfaction in our Spirits to the wonderfull out-goeings of Providence in these latter dayes, in throwing downe one and setting upp

another; but lookeing upon it as our proper duty to submitt to you in the Lord, and pray for you, judging ourselves and our Applications not worthy your Highness' cognizance. Though by your Highness' Letter to the Mayor of Newcastle communicated to us, wee cannot but read your singular affection and most Christian tenderness to us in the Lord Jesus; which exceeding greate act of Love, as little sought for as merited by us, but flowing (as we believe) from that divine principle which God hath endowed you with for the protection of his people, will not be unrequited in that day when Christ will reward any kindness shewed to the least of Saints.

"Sir, your many inculcated Exhortations to love the whole flocke of Christ, though not walking in the same order of the Gospell, wee receive with all gladness, resolving in the strength of Christ as hitherto, soe for the future to endeavour to keepe the Unity of the Spirit in the Bond of peace; a frame of heart which, as wee believe to be acceptable to the Lord Jesus, soe wee desire to be found in, whatever provocations wee may meete with to the interrupting of it.

"When wee consider how many of the pretious Sonnes of Zion have fledd into a roaring Wildernes to enjoy the Tabernacle of God, and were glad of it, and that wee should under our Vines and Figg trees, not onely enjoy the priviledges of the Gospell, but have the protection and encouragement of the supreme powers of the Nation, our hearts are drawne out to bless the Lord, and pray for the church with David: Psalm 20—The Lord heare thee in the day of trouble; the name of the God of Jacob defend thee; send thee helpe from the sanctuary, and strengthen thee out of Sion, etc. Which Blessing that the Lord may poure upon your Highness' head shall be the prayer of Your most obedient servants and Remembrancers with the Lord.

"Signed in the name and with the consent of the Church at Newcastle.—WM. DURANT, Pastor; R. RIGHE, THO: YOUNG, Deacons.

"Signed in the name and with the consent of the Church of Christ at Gateside in the county of Durham.—SAM: HAMMOND, Teacher; GEO: HODGSON, Elder; WILLIAM CUTTER, JOHN COOKE, Deacons.

"Signed in the name of the Church of Christ at Herborne in Northumberland.—RALPH WARDE, pastour; THO: BINDLOWES, Teacher; WILL: REA, Elder.

"Signed in the name and with the consent of the Church at Bothall in Northumberland.—JO: THOMPSON, Pastour.

"Signed in the name and with the consent of the Church of

Christ at Ovingham in Northd.—THO: TROWREN, pastor; WILL: CLARKE, RBT: SWALWELL, Elders; JOHN GREENWELL, Deacon."

At the ejection of 1662 Mr. Durant, who had been silenced the year before by Bishop Cosin, cast in his lot with the retiring clergy. Dr. Richard Gilpin, Dr. John Pringle, Henry Leaver, and William Durant were stigmatised as "the four leaders and abettors" of Nonconformity in Newcastle, and upon them the persecuting spirit of the time fell heavily. On the 22nd July, 1669, Cuthbert Nicholson, cordwainer, town-sergeant, appeared before the Mayor, Ralph Jenison, and laid an information, setting forth that on the previous Sunday there was assembled at the house of William Durant, in Pilgrim Street, a great multitude of people, to the number of about one hundred and fifty, "under the pretence of religious worship and service, for he heard them sing psalms." After singing was done, he saw and heard William Durant pray amongst the people; and Robert Fryzer (or Frezer), one of the sergeants-at-mace, did in the name of Mr. Mayor discharge them their unlawful assembly; and upon that they dispersed themselves.

Again, about a fortnight later, the same active officer, with Parson Shaw, of St. John's, and the churchwardens, constables, and sergeants-at-mace, broke into the house of Dr. Gilpin, in the White Friars, early in the morning, and found forty persons present holding a conventicle. This he reported to the magistrates, handing in at the same time for the information of their worships a list of persons who were in the habit of attending such places, including Mr. Durant, Dr. Gilpin, Dr. Pringle, and Henry Leaver, preachers, five of the past sheriffs, five of the ex-mayors of the town, and many other leading citizens. Dr. Pringle at the same time was reported for holding a conventicle at his lodgings.

When the Indulgence of 1672 came out, William Durant applied for a licence to be an Independent Teacher "in a Roome of the Trinity House called the chappell," Drs. Gilpin and Pringle sought permission to hold Presbyterian services in the Moot Hall, and Henry Leaver asked for leave to officiate among Presbyterians in the chapel at the end of Tyne Bridge. Their applications were refused, but a month later they all obtained permission to preach in private dwelling-houses. Thus were formed four Nonconformist congregations in Newcastle, though neither of them had a special or suitable place of worship. When, and under what circumstances,

they were fused into one, is more than can with confidence be affirmed. The traditions of the church that assembled in Hanover Square from 1727 to 1853 placed William Durant at the head of its roll of ministers, and from those traditions comes the inference that he was the first pastor of a settled Nonconformist church in Newcastle.

Mr. Durant's house in Pilgrim Street was situated near the entrance to the great mansion known in after years as Anderson Place. There the stern and unflinching Puritan lived the greater part of his life in Newcastle, and there, in 1681, he died. A few weeks before his death some trouble had occurred at St. Nicholas' respecting the interment of his son Benezer's wife, for in the Burial Register of that church, under date December 10th, 1680, we find the entry—"Mary, wife of Benezer Durant, mercht. (who dyed excommunicate), was buried contrary to Act of Parliament for burying in woollen, her husband paying the penalty by that Act required." And now, when the old Puritan had departed, the Church would not acknowledge him. His remains were, however, reverently buried in the garden attached to the house, and there a stone, bearing a Latin inscription, was erected by one of his sons to mark his resting-place. By-and-by the garden was annexed to the mansion, and over the spot where his ashes lay a stable was constructed. In this "Dead Man's Hole," as the stablemen called it, the tombstone was preserved. The Rev. William Turner, pastor of the congregation which Mr. Durant founded, obtained the memorial, and removed it to his church in Hanover Square. In that appropriate location it remained till the removal of the congregation in 1854 to the Church of the Divine Unity, New Bridge Street, where, set up in the vestibule, the filial inscription may still be read—

"Parentis venerandi
Gulielmi Durant A.M.
Eccelesiæ Christi
D.V. hac in urbe
Pastoris vigilantissimi
Officii pietatis ergo
Funeri subiacenti
Sepulchrale hocce marmor
Lu. mæ. posuit
Johannes Durant F.
Iosh. cap. ult. ver. 29, 30, 32, 33.
1681."

By his marriage with Jane Clavering, Mr. Durant had a numerous family. Some of them died young; others—John, a physician, Benezer, James, and William, merchants, and a daughter bearing her mother's name, survived him. John died in 1683, and was interred in the Quig's Burial Place in Sidgate—a cemetery for Dissenters, which, as the indefatigable researches of Mr. Maberly Phillips have shown ("Archæologia Æliana," vol. xiii. pp. 234-251), belonged to the family. The Register of St. Nicholas' records the burials of the widow (December 14th, 1686, "Jane Durant, widow") and one of the sons (September 17th, 1688, "James Durant, merchant"); of the rest we have no record. It is possible that they preferred to mingle their dust with that of John Durant in Sidgate.

# Jeffrey Ekins,

DEAN OF CARLISLE AND RECTOR OF MORPETH.

THE family of Ekins held Church preferments in various parts of England during many generations. The living of Barton Seagrave, in Northamptonshire, belonged to them, and in the rectory house of that parish, in 1730, the subject of this sketch was born. His father, Jeffrey Ekins the elder, a clergyman of note, a friend of Sir Isaac Newton and other celebrities of the period, was the executor of Lady Lemington, grand-niece of Newton, and in that capacity came into possession of some original MSS. of the great philosopher, which were afterwards used by Bishop Horsley in his edition of Newton's works. Jeffrey the younger, being destined for the Church, matriculated at King's College, Cambridge, where he distinguished himself in classical literature, and taking his Bachelor's degree in 1755, proceeded to that of Master in 1758. His first preferment came to him in 1764, in which year he obtained the living of Quainton, in Buckinghamshire—a pleasant rural village, overlooking the wide and fertile vale of Aylesbury. The following year he married Anne, daughter of Philip Baker, Deputy Secretary-at-War, and settling down at Quainton Rectory, added to pastoral life and parochial administration the cultivation of the poetic Muse. Six years after his marriage he published in quarto "The Loves of Medea and Jason," a poem in three books, translated from the Greek of Apollonius Rhodius' Argonauts." This work was well received among scholars, and ran into a second edition. Among other patrons of literature and art who were captivated by its soft and melodious cadences was Frederick, fifth Earl of Carlisle, and his lordship's appreciation led to happy results for the author. For in 1775, upon the death of Oliver Naylor, Rector of Morpeth, he received from his noble admirer an offer of that valuable living. The offer was accepted, and Mr. Ekins, exchanging the mild and balmy neighbourhood of the Chilterns for the robuster climate of Northumberland, came to Morpeth to reside.

In the North, Mr. Ekins's poetical genius and polished manners rapidly brought around him appreciative friends. His scholarship commended him to that judicious and far-seeing prelate Bishop

Egerton, who, in 1777, two years after his arrival at Morpeth, made him an offer of the living of Sedgefield. Plurality of livings being common in those days, for nobody ventured to dispute the rights of patrons to dispose of Church preferments as they pleased, and to whom they pleased, Mr. Ekins availed himself of the proffered honour with its substantial emoluments, and, residing at Morpeth, discharged the duties of Sedgefield by deputy. In 1780, his friend and patron, Lord Carlisle, being appointed Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, made him his chaplain, and he accompanied that nobleman to Dublin Castle. Lord Carlisle's occupancy of the Lord-Lieutenancy lasted two years, and towards the close of it Mr. Ekins was selected to fill the episcopal chair of Dromore. But the honour of being an Irish bishop was not to his taste. He declined to wear a mitre, and was allowed to bargain it away for a position more congenial to his habits. Dr. Percy, Dean of Carlisle, the industrious collector of ballad poetry, was willing to take the post, and an arrangement was made by which Dr. Percy became Bishop of Dromore, and Mr. Ekins became Dean of Carlisle, with the degree of Doctor of Divinity.

These changes made but little alteration in Mr. Ekins's connection with the diocese of Durham. He retained both Morpeth and Sedgefield, and when not in residence at Carlisle made the Rectory House on the banks of the Wansbeck his home. There he composed elegant poetic epistles, and wrote about philosophy, literature, and divinity to his friends, Archdeacon Paley, Bishop Law, and other notable clerics of his time. Unfortunately, but few of these charming effusions have been preserved. One of them, mentioned more than once by the Rev. John Hodgson in the "History of Northumberland," is printed by Dr. Raine in his life of that eminent historian. It is an ode of congratulation in hexameter and pentameter verse, addressed to his friend Jeffrey Clarkson, a college companion, upon his appointment to the living of Whelpington in 1786, and is said to be an admirable specimen of chaste and refined Latinity.

Mr. Ekins died while on a visit to London in 1791, and was succeeded at Morpeth by his son Frederick. His "Jason and Medea" was re-issued in 1810, with several of his poetical effusions attached, and distributed as a souvenir among his literary friends. Among these was Richard Cumberland, the dramatist, who, writes Mr. Hodgson, "hallowed his memory in a beautiful and balmy flood

of eloquence." The "beautiful and balmy flood" appears in Cumberland's "Memoirs," and thus it runs:—"I was in the habits of most intimate friendship with two young men of my own age, sons of a worthy clergyman in our neighbourhood, the Rev. Mr. Ekins. Jeffrey the elder, now deceased, was Dean of Carlisle and rector of Morpeth; John, the younger, is yet living and Dean of Salisbury. Few men have been more fortunate in life than these brothers; fewer still have probably so well deserved their good success. With the elder of these my intimacy was the greatest; the same passion for poetry possessed us both, the same attachment to the drama; our respective families indulged us in our propensities, and were mutually amused with our domestic exhibitions. My friend Jeffrey was in my family, as I was in his, an inmate ever welcome. His genius was quick and brilliant; his temper sweet, and his nature mild and gentle in the extreme. I loved him as a brother. We never had the slightest jar; nor can I recollect the moment in our lives that ever gave occasion of offence to either. Our destination separated us in the more advanced period of our time. His duties drew him to a distance from the scenes I was engaged in. His lot was prosperous and placid, and well for him it was; for he was not made to combat with the storms of life."

Frederick Ekins, M.A., who succeeded his father at Morpeth, married Jane Ogle, daughter and co-heir of James Tyler, of Whalton, land-steward to the Duke of Portland, and by her had an only son and three daughters. He died on the 29th of March, 1842, aged 74, having been, at the time of his death, for nearly half a century rector of Morpeth. His son, named after his grandfather, Jeffrey, was a Fellow of New College, Oxford, Dean of Civil Law, and Bursar in 1836-37, and Rector of Little Sampford, Essex, from 1831 till his death in 1872. The eldest daughter, Caroline Isabella, married John Lambton (afterwards Sir John Lambton) Loraine, Bart., and dying in 1847, was buried in Jesmond Cemetery, Newcastle, leaving issue the present holder of the title, Sir Lambton Loraine, Bart.

# Thomas Elliott,

SURGEON AND PHILANTHROPIST.

AT the beginning of the present century everybody in Newcastle knew Dr. Elliott, gratuitous adviser of the indigent sick, benevolent friend of the aged poor, and earnest promoter of a medical charity that, in a quiet and unobtrusive way, has done, and is still doing, useful work amongst us.

Lineally descended from the Elliotts of Stobbs, in Roxburghshire, the philanthropic doctor was born at Haydon Bridge, in the year 1759. Completing his education in the Free Grammar School of his native village, he obtained a lieutenant's commission in the Marines from his uncle, General Elliott, and entered the service of his country. He accompanied his regiment to America, where Lord Cornwallis was vainly trying to reduce the revolted colonists to obedience, and, being severely wounded, was placed upon half-pay, which practically meant retirement from the active pursuit of his profession. Unwilling to lead an inactive life, and having gained a knowledge of surgery while on duty, he determined to become a doctor. With this object in view he entered the University of Edinburgh, walked the hospitals, obtained his diploma, and, in 1792, commenced life anew as a surgeon. He selected Wolsingham, in the county of Durham, as a suitable place for his first experiments in doctoring; but, after a five years' residence there, he was encouraged to remove to Newcastle. His practice in the town at first was naturally small; in a short time it began to grow; by-and-by it became extensive, and assumed a varied character. Rich and poor alike sought his aid; in Saville Row equally with Sandgate his services were put into requisition. The greater part of his work lay by choice among the indigent. Devoting to them the best share of his time and his means, he did not attain to riches; he was content to be rewarded by the grateful sobriquet of "The Poor Man's Doctor."

Among Mr Elliott's professional appointments in Newcastle was one that suited his benevolent temperament—that of surgeon to the Lying-in Hospital. This institution had been started as an experiment, about the close of the year 1760, in an old dwelling-house

situated in Rosemary Lane. It was a poor concern, in an unsavoury neighbourhood, and there seemed to be no prospect of improving its position. For nearly half a century the old house had served its purpose, and the people of Newcastle were in no hurry to contribute the means of providing a substitute. When, however, Mr. Elliott became its professional adviser, the state of the case was altered. A resolute and determined man, he commenced to agitate for a thorough reform of the establishment. He desired to extend the usefulness of the hospital by increasing its accommodation; he wanted to promote its efficiency by transferring it to purer air and more genial surroundings. But nothing could be done for lack of money, and for some time neither money, nor that contagious sympathy which in most philanthropic movements produces money, was forthcoming.

At this conjuncture of affairs the good doctor devised a new departure in charitable enterprise. On New Year's Day, 1819, he addressed a special letter to the trustees of the hospital, pointing out the imperative need of a newer institution, established upon a wider basis, and as proof of his practical sympathy with the movement he enclosed a five-pound note. The plan was successful. "Elliott's Fund" became popular. The clergy preached for it, philosophers lectured for it, musical amateurs sang for it. In course of time a sum of £1,300 was collected, and then the trustees found themselves able to contemplate seriously the construction of a building that should be worthy of the charity and of the town. A piece of ground in New Bridge Street, which had been declined by the Literary and Philosophical Society as a site for their new library became available; the Corporation gave it to the charity; benevolent John Dobson the architect drew plans and specifications gratuitously; and thus the convenient edifice which stands at the north end of Croft Street, facing the Public Library, rose from its foundations.

Unhappily, the liberal-hearted doctor did not live to see the full realisation of his hopes. He died at his house in Pilgrim Street on the 5th of January, 1824, aged sixty-five, before the building was completed. But in the great window which overhangs the main entrance to the hospital, a glowing coat-of-arms preserves the memory of his benevolence, and bears perpetual witness to the success of "Elliott's Fund."

# James Ellis,

A POETICAL ATTORNEY.

JAMES ELLIS was a native of Hexham, in which place his father was town sergeant. He was born in or about the year 1763, and at the proper time was put to the law in the office of William Hunter, a Hexham solicitor. Before his articles had run their course, Mr. Hunter died, and in the beginning of 1783 he was turned over to the Messrs. Davidson, of Newcastle. These gentlemen had received from their father, who was a well-known public official, an admirable legal training, and their business was of an extensive and diversified character. In their office Mr. Ellis had for his fellow-clerks two young men of literary pretensions—Thomas Bedingfeld and George Pickering. With these youths he formed a friendship which, until Mr. Bedingfeld removed to London to study for the Bar, was mutually serviceable. Forsaking the madcap diversions common to the period, the trio occupied their spare hours in reading poetry, in making rhymes, in criticism, in discussion, and in other pursuits tending to mental culture. Towards these mild delights the Messrs. Davidson were themselves inclined, for they, too, had literary aspirations. But theirs generally ran in more prosaic grooves, and found vent, perhaps, through more practical channels than those of their clerks, though it is stated that one of the Davidsons wrote poetical compositions of "great beauty and point." It must have been a phenomenal lawyer's office in which the heads of the firm and the three youths who helped to carry on the business were alike imbued with literary tastes—each of the former able to discuss the latest book or the newest poem; each of the latter ready at any time to imitate the lawyer's clerk "who penned a stanza when he should engross."

Placed on the rolls as an attorney, Mr. Ellis settled at Hexham; but, finding that there was no room for an addition to the list of lawyers in his native town, he returned to Newcastle, and practised for a number of years with considerable success. While so engaged, he purchased, in conjunction with one of his former employers, Mr. John Davidson, a portion of the Otterburn Estate. The mansion-house, called Otterburn Castle, fell to his lot, and he made it his home. When he gave up his practice in Newcastle, he retired to

Otterburn, and there, engaged in various literary and antiquarian pursuits, he spent the remainder of his life.

One of the "Tracts" published by the Newcastle Typographical Society for Mr. John Fenwick consists of letters which passed between Mr. Ellis and Walter (afterwards Sir Walter) Scott. Mr. Ellis had observed two or three errors in the "Battle of Otterbourne" —one of the ballads quoted by Scott in the "Border Minstrelsy," and in February, 1812, he courteously communicated with the author pointing out the mistakes. Scott replied in the same spirit, and a few months later, on his way to visit Mr. Morritt at Rokeby, he brought Mrs. Scott and their two children to Otterburn Castle, and remained with Mr. Ellis all night. Next day Mr. Ellis accompanied him to Risingham, showed him the rudely-sculptured figure of Robin, the Roman antiquities, etc., and had the reward of seeing later on, when the poem of Rokeby appeared, how ingeniously the poet had weaved the morning's occurrences into his narrative:—

> "And near the spot that gave me name,
> The moated mound of Risingham,
> Where Reed upon her margin sees
> Sweet Woodburn's cottages and trees,
> Some ancient sculptor's art has shown
> An outlaw's image on the stone:
> Unmatch'd in strength, a giant he,
> With quiver'd back, and kirtled knee."

In 1815, Mr. Ellis issued a volume of a hundred and eighty-two pages, entitled—

> "Poetry, Fugitive and Original, by the late Thomas Bedingfeld, Esq., and Mr. George Pickering, with notes and some additional pieces. By a Friend. Newcastle: S. Hodgson."

This book, which is dedicated to "Walter Scott, Esquire," to whom it "in a great measure owed its existence," contains ten effusions of Mr. Bedingfeld's, nineteen of Mr. Pickering's, followed by a joint production, and ending with a dozen "Trifles" from the pen of the editor. One of these "Trifles" was considered good enough to appear in the *Gentleman's Magazine;* some of the others are neatly expressed; to the remainder the title given to them by their author is not inappropriate.

Although an early member of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, Mr. Ellis does not appear to have contributed to the society's publications. He corresponded with the Rev. John Hodgson respecting

the "History of Northumberland," and made himself useful in elucidating Border practices; but no publication beyond the collection of rhymes before mentioned is credited to his pen. Mr. Fenwick, in a most meagre memoir prefixed to the correspondence with Scott, states merely that Mr. Ellis maintained "an unblemished respectability of character" as an attorney, and that in retirement he "cultivated his literary and antiquarian taste." Sir Walter Scott describes him as an "ingenious correspondent and a learned antiquary"; further evidence of his character and merits is not forthcoming. Mr. Ellis died at Otterburn Hall on Lady-day (March 25th), 1830, aged sixty-seven years.

## Cuthbert Ellison (1),

THE COMMON ANCESTOR OF THE ELLISON FAMILY.

THE ancestry of the great local family of Ellison has been traced as far as the beginning of the sixteenth century. A little licence, not at all rare in genealogical investigation, would have carried it back to the time of Henry the Third. For in the Pipe Rolls of that monarch's reign the name of "Rob. fil. Elye" frequently appears, and what transition more natural than from Robert, the son of Elye, or Elyas, to Robert Elyason, Elyson, and Ellison? Indeed, two hundred years later, a "Robert Elyson" occurs—Robert Elyson, of Hawkwell, near Stamfordham, whose son, Rowland Elyson, transferred (1494) his share in the town fields of Hawkwell to John Fenwick and others. Hodgson, the historian of Northumberland, who had access to the family archives, and Surtees, the historian of Durham, who was similarly favoured, did not, however, venture to treat either the Hawkwell yeoman, or Robert, son of Elyas, as common progenitors. Both historians commence the pedigree of the Ellisons with Cuthbert Ellison, of Newcastle, who was born about the time that Henry VIII. came to the throne.

It is a noticeable circumstance that the Ellisons make their appearance in Newcastle history all of a sudden as it were. The books of the Company of Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle contain entries of the apprenticeship of John and Cuthbert Ellison, dated respectively 1523 and 1524; the books of the Trinity House show that in the last-named year "Sir" Robert Ellison was chaplain,

and John Ellison an alderman of the fraternity. Six years later, Robert Ellison occurs in the Merchants' books as entering upon his apprenticeship. Thus, in the space of seven years, we have evidence of five Ellisons living in Newcastle, of whom no previous notice occurs—a chaplain, an elder brother of the Trinity House, and three young men just commencing life as merchant adventurers.

From that time down to quite a recent period members of the family have filled conspicuous positions in various spheres of public usefulness. They have been governors of the Merchants' Company of Newcastle, and justices of the peace, clergymen and military officers, sheriffs, mayors, and members of Parliament. Acquiring landed estate, as at Hebburn and Otterburn, Lintz Green and Gateshead, they founded county families, formed alliances with other great county houses—Carr and Jenison, Clavering and Fenwick, Bates and Lambton—and finally married into the peerage. The history of the Ellisons is, in great part, the history of Newcastle.

Cuthbert and Robert have been favourite names in the Ellison family, Cuthbert having the preference. While Robert was the name of the chaplain of the Trinity House in 1524; Cuthbert was the name of the common ancestor who was beginning his servitude in the same year, of the master of St. Thomas's Chapel upon Tyne Bridge in 1556, and of numerous other Ellisons, prominent and obscure, down to our own day.

Cuthbert Ellison, the apprentice of 1524, with whom the family pedigree begins, having served his time and taken up his freedom, commenced business in Newcastle as a merchant adventurer. When a muster of the male population of the town capable of bearing and providing arms was taken, in 1539, he was a substantial householder, and appears in the ward of Alderman Thomas Baxter, with Andrew Bewick, the mayor, George Selby, the sheriff, and representatives of the great local families of Orde, Fenwick, Riddell, Shafto, Carr, and Liddell as "well appoynted, with one seruant, iaks, bowys, and salletts," ready for the king's service.

Introduced to municipal life, he became Sheriff at Michaelmas, 1544, and was in office when the Scots won the battle of Ancrum Moor, and the Earl of Hertford, in revenge, marching through Newcastle, destroyed Dunse and Kelso, Melrose, and Jedburgh, and laid waste nearly two hundred and fifty Scottish villages. In 1547, when Edward VI. came to the throne, and granted a new charter to the Merchants' Company, he was one of twelve members who were

appointed assistant governors of the fraternity. Two years later, he was elected governor of the Company and Mayor of Newcastle, in which capacity he would probably hear John Knox preach at St. Nicholas', and listen to the great Reformer's trial before the Bishop of Durham, the Council, and congregation, for teaching that the mass was idolatrous. He filled the double office again in 1554 (1 and 2 Philip and Mary), when the Merchants' Company issued their famous bye-law about the apparel of apprentices—enacting that no member of the fraternity, other than a mayor, sheriff or alderman, should permit his apprentice "to daunse, dyse, carde, or mum," etc. It was during this mayoralty that the Bishop of Durham, "for the benefit and commodity" of Newcastle, granted "to Cuthbert Ellison, now Mayor, and to the burgesses of the same town of Newcastle and their successors, all that his piece of ground or meadow called Salt Meadows, containing by estimation 34 acres of ground, be it more or less, within the county of Durham," etc., for 450 years—a piece of ground which, enlarged to 82 acres, the Corporation still retain.

The last act in which Cuthbert Ellison figures is the making of his will. That document, dated February 24th, 1556-57, is printed at length in vol. ii. of the Surtees Society's Publications, and exhibits the testator as a man of wealth, owning houses in the Bigg Market (his residence), the Windaes, Middle Street, and Gowler Rawe, Newcastle, with lands at Bamborough, leases of a farmhold and mills at Heworth, half a salt-pan, a quantity of plate, etc. When he died is not known, but, as his name appears no more in local history, it is probable that he did not long survive his will-making. On the floor of St. Nicholas' Church a tombstone, bearing a merchant's mark and the following inscription, indicates his resting-place :—

"Jhu have mercy of the sowlle of Cuthbert Ellison, Marchant Adventurer, some tyme mai. of this towne, and Isabell and Anne his wyves and yr children."

# Cuthbert Ellison (2),

## A CLERICAL RHYMER.

DURING the next hundred and twenty years, two or three Cuthbert Ellisons lived upon Tyneside who took little or no part in the public movements of their time and locality. There were, for example, Cuthbert, son of the founder, who married Elizabeth Metcalf, of Warkworth, inherited most of his father's estate, became an alderman of Newcastle, and was buried in 1581; Cuthbert, his son (married to a daughter of Christopher Ile), a member of the Merchants' Company, who died in 1626; Cuthbert (son of Robert Ellison, M.P. during the Long Parliament), who married Jane, daughter of William Carr, of Newcastle, and sister of Sir Ralph Carr; and Cuthbert, his son, B.D., who was a fellow of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, and died in November, 1719, leaving £500 to his college, and founding prize orations in praise of Charles I. and Archbishop Laud.

Passing over these, we come to Cuthbert Ellison, cousin of the last-named, and a notable cleric and rhymer. His father was Samuel Ellison, Merchant Adventurer, third son of Robert Ellison, M.P.; his mother was Barbara, daughter of Cuthbert Carr; his grandmother was Elizabeth, sister of William Gray, author of the "Chorographia." Baptised on the 27th February, 1683-84, he went as a boy to the Royal Free Grammar School of Newcastle, then under the headmastership of the Rev. John Cotteral. From thence he proceeded to Lincoln College, Oxford, where he took his degrees in arts, and returning to Newcastle obtained from his uncle, Dr. Nathaniel Ellison, vicar of the town, the curacy of All Saints'. At All Saints' he remained till 1722, when he was presented by Talbot, Bishop of Durham, to the Vicarage of Stannington, near Morpeth. At Stannington, in February, 1744, he died, and on the 15th of that month was buried among his ancestors in St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle.

This Cuthbert Ellison was a man of eccentric, not to say unclerical humour. His celebrity is founded upon a very coarse book, published anonymously under the title of

"A Most Pleasant Description of Benwel Village, In the County of Northumberland, Intermix'd with several diverting Incidents both Serious and Comical. Divided into Two Books. By Q.Z., late Commoner of Oxon. Newcastle-on-Tyne: Printed and Sold by John White, 1726. Price 4s."

The volume is a small 12mo of 581 pages, resembling in appearance an old-fashioned hymn-book, and it has for sub-title, "A Merry Description of a Sunday's Trip to Benwel. A Ballad. To the Tune of Chevy-Chase. *O Rus! quando Ego Te aspiciam?*—HOR." As originally published, it was dedicated—the first part to Robert Shaftoe, Esq., of Benwell, the second part to Ralph Jenison, Esq., M.P., of Elswick; but shortly after it was issued the author quarrelled with Mr. Jenison, and tore out the second dedication, so that copies containing it are exceedingly rare. The book in any form is now scarce. At Brand's sale, in 1807, a copy with a MS. note by Brand was bought by a Mr. Sancho for £2 12s. 6d.; at the sale of Mr. John Trotter Brockett's books, in 1823, a copy brought 33s., and a perfect edition is worth perhaps two guineas. Truth to tell, however, the scarcity of the volume is its chief merit. Collectors prize it for its rarity, and that is all. Although it contains 2,290 verses of six lines each, amounting altogether to 13,740 lines, there is not a quotable passage in the whole book. Thus it begins:—

"Speak, Goddess Muse!
As wond'rous News,
In humble Doggrel Rhimes,
Things yet un-sung
By Mortal Tongue
In *North*, or *Southern* Climes.

Let great Renown
Of BENWEL Town;
Employ thy tuneful Lays;
If *British* Wight
Can in just Light
Display her juster Praise."

The final verse, unfortunately, cannot be printed on account of its coarseness.

After his death was published a booklet or pamphlet entitled—

"The Babler, in Two Sermons on Acts 17 and 18, preached in St. Nicholas' Church, before the Corporation of Newcastle, May 15th and Nov. 27th, 1726. Newcastle: 1745. Price 6d."

Brand states that Mr. Ellison was also the author of an anonymous "Pastoral between Corydon and Thyrsis," in which, under the assumed character of a lover of the clergy, his "Sunday's Trip to Benwel" is censured, though, as the Rev. E. Hussey Adamson has pointed out, a sort of apology is attempted in the lines—

"If I may judge, his work should be defined,
A harm unthought, a scandal undesigned."

# Cuthbert Ellison (3),

MEMBER OF PARLIAMENT.

ANOTHER Cuthbert Ellison, son of Robert Ellison, of Hebburn, and great grandson of Robert Ellison, of the Long Parliament, was a military officer, and for a short time one of the M.P.'s for Shaftesbury, in Dorsetshire. He died, unmarried, on the 11th October, 1785, aged 87—the oldest general but one in the British Army.

Of this Cuthbert Ellison little is recorded, and we pass on to the last of his name, Cuthbert Ellison, of our own time, father of the late Lady Northbourne, and grandfather of the present Lord Northbourne. He was the second son of Henry Ellison, Esquire, of Hebburn Hall and Gateshead Park, by Henrietta, daughter of John Isaacson, of Newcastle, and was born on the 12th of July, 1783. His father died at Bath in October, 1795; his elder brother followed three years later; thus at the age of fifteen he became heir to the valuable estates of the family. Educated at Harrow and Cambridge, he marked out for himself a political career, and at the general election of 1807, when he was twenty-four years of age, an opportunity arose through which he was enabled to attempt the gratification of his ambition. A political contest of great bitterness was being fought in the county of Durham, and at the last moment, only a day or two before the nomination, two of the candidates, Sir T. H. Liddell and Rowland Burdon, retired in Mr. Ellison's favour. The fates, or rather the electors, were, however, unpropitious; he did not succeed in realising his wishes. But four years later, having in the meantime (1808) filled the office of High Sheriff for Northumberland, he was fortunate in obtaining a seat as the colleague of Sir Matthew White Ridley in the representation of Newcastle. That was thought to be a thoroughly safe position, and so, for eighteen years, it proved to be. There had been no contest since 1780; there was none upon this occasion; nor at the election which followed four years later; although in the latter instance opposition was threatened by the friends of the rising family of Scott.

When George IV. came to the throne, in 1820, Newcastle was in the enjoyment of an unbroken record of forty years' freedom from political strife. The friends of the Scotts determined to break it, and they induced William Scott, son of the future Lord Stowell, to

contest the seat. Mr. Ellison had given offence by the exercise of his patronage in some petty local appointment; he had been abroad from ill-health for a time and was still absent; the opportunity seemed to be favourable for an effort to replace him. At the nomination the show of hands was in favour of his colleague and Mr. Scott; when the poll closed Mr. Scott was nowhere; Mr. Ellison and Sir Matthew were returned by large majorities. In 1825 he was re-elected with Sir Matthew unopposed, and the following year served the office of High Sheriff of the county of Durham. Upon the accession of William IV. in 1830 Mr. John Hodgson (afterwards Hodgson Hinde) was brought out with the avowed intention of breaking down the influence of the Ridleys. That, however, was too firmly rooted in Newcastle to be disturbed, but the movement so seriously endangered the seat of Mr. Ellison, who was a Liberal-Conservative, that he declined to go to a poll. On the day of election he announced from the hustings his retirement, and received a vote of thanks for his past services worded in the following flattering terms:—"That the thanks of the Free Burgesses of Newcastle-upon-Tyne now assembled, be offered to Cuthbert Ellison, Esq., their late able and faithful Representative in Parliament, for the Services he has rendered to them and to the Town at large during the last eighteen years, and that he be assured that his late Constituents will ever retain a grateful Remembrance of those Services, and of his uniformly friendly and courteous Conduct towards them, which would have secured for him their unanimous Support had he sought again the Station he has so long and honourably filled, and which excite their deep and sincere Regret at his Retirement from it."

Mr. Ellison had married, 21st July, 1804, Isabella Grace, daughter and co-heir of Henry Ibbetson, Esq., of St. Anthony's, near Newcastle, and after his retirement from the representation of the town, he withdrew from public life, and devoting himself to the management of his extensive estates, lived to the good old age of 77 years. He died in London on the 13th June, 1860. His family consisted of seven daughters, two of whom died young; the other five were united to representatives of illustrious houses—Isabella Caroline to the fifth Lord Vernon, Louisa to the fourth Earl of Mansfield, Laura Jane to the third Baron Kensington, Henrietta to W. H. Lambton, Esq., brother of the first Earl of Durham, and Sarah Caroline to Sir Walter C. James, Bart., afterwards the first Lord Northbourne.

# John Ellison,

VICAR OF BEDLINGTON.

THE Rev. John Ellison, eldest son of Dr. Nathaniel Ellison, vicar of Newcastle—who was the sixth son of Robert Ellison, M.P. for Newcastle in the Long Parliament—was not a man of mark in the ordinary meaning of the term. He was a well-to-do clergyman, belonging to a good family, and, it is to be presumed, doing his duty like many other ministers of the Church, faithfully and well. The place which he occupies in local history is due, not so much to his own merits, as to the malign influence of an anonymous versifier who used his name, or rather his office, after he was dead, as a peg upon which to hang a long string of defamatory rhymes, that by virtue of their coarseness attracted attention, and through their pseudonymous character baffled public curiosity.

Mr. Ellison was born in Newcastle in December, 1694, a few weeks after his father had been appointed vicar. He was educated, it is supposed, at the Royal Free Grammar School, under the headmastership of Dr. Robert Thomlinson, and went from thence to University College, Oxford, where he matriculated on the 22nd March, 1710-11, and on the 16th June, 1715, passed his examinations for the degree of B.A. The influence of his father and his family soon obtained for him a valuable preferment. In April, 1719, having taken his M.A. degree, he was inducted to the vicarage of Bedlington, and in September, 1725, he was appointed to the curacy of St. Andrew's, Newcastle.

What the living of Bedlington may have been worth at that time there is no means of ascertaining, but the endowment consisted of the small tithes of the whole parish, the corn tithes of Cambois, and a glebe, upon which was a coal-pit, known as the Vicar's Colliery. At St. Andrew's the duties and emoluments, as described by Bourne, who wrote his "History of Newcastle" while Mr. Ellison enjoyed them, were these:—"The minister of this church is curate and lecturer. As curate, the vicar pays him £3 per annum; and as lecturer, he is paid by the town £100 per annum. The other minister is the assistant, and is paid by the minister of the parish. The Crown pays to the minister, £5 2s. 6d. per annum. The town

allows the present assistant curate of this church £10 per annum for reading prayers to the prisoners in Newgate. The prayers of this church in the worky-days are on Wednesday and Friday, in the morning. The Sacrament is administered here every fourth Sunday in the month." Possibly the arrangement was that the assistant curate became "passing rich" on about forty or fifty pounds a year, and that the Vicar of Bedlington received the remainder. He administered the Sacrament "every fourth Sunday in the month." Such methods of enjoying Church preferment were common enough in his time, and indeed for long after.

Mr. Ellison held the curacy of St. Andrew's for forty-one years, and then retired "in favour of his son," Nathaniel Ellison, afterwards Vicar of Bolam. The vicarage of Bedlington he retained till his death in December, 1773, having then occupied the living for the long period of fifty-four years. He married Mary, daughter of Richard Jedediah Bates, of the Milbourne and Holywell family, and had several children. Most of them survived him, amongst them being Nathaniel, above-named; John, a London merchant; Isabella, second wife of the famous Grammar School master, the Rev. Hugh Moises; and Margaret, who married George Clavering, of Greencroft.

Some years before Mr. Ellison's decease appeared the scurrilous pamphlet referred to in the opening paragraph. It was entitled "Parson Jock's Will," but it is better known in its second edition, dated 1765, the title of which runs:—

"The Will of a certain Northern Vicar, to which is annex'd a Codicil. 'Here's that wou'd sack a city.' London: Printed for the Author, and Sold by W. Bunce, in Russell Street, Covent Garden; the Booksellers at Durham and Newcastle-upon-Tyne; W. Tessyman, at York; J. Leeke, at Bath; Bristol, Tunbridge, etc., etc. MDCCLXV. Price One Shilling and Sixpence."

The frontispiece, a curious picture, is supposed to represent Mr. Ellison dressed in full canonicals, and wearing his wig—which is said to have weighed at least a pound—dictating his will to a lawyer. The lawyer is described as suggesting to the vicar that before he deals with money matters it is customary to dispose of "goods of greater worth, as sermons, essays, and old tracts," and then the fun, such as it is, begins:—

"Then be it so, cries out the Vicar,
First in the list we'll place Wm. Parker;[1]

[1] William Parker, landlord of the Turk's Head, Newcastle, and afterwards Postmaster.

To him (as he's so very callous)
I give my lecture on the gallows.

. . . . .

I leave my essay upon Jaw
Unto my rev'rend son-in-law;[1]
And to his wife[2] (the present load)
My smart remarks on large Wm. Boag.
To brother Bob (upon my life)[3]
I give my essay upon strife;
And to my learned brother Nat[4]
My curious sermon on the Bat.

. . . . .

My Art of Building (by his leave)
I give to Master Dicky Grieve,[5]
And washballs, too, a curious stock,
Wou'd scent the devil and all his flock:
And all my Epicurean Pans
With a Cambrick cloth to wipe his hands:
My beautiful remarks on slavering
I give the wise Sir Thos. Clavering;
And to my jolly friend, Tom Liddell,
My art of playing on the fiddle.
I give my essay upon Bacon
To the facetious Nat. Clayton.[6]

. . . . .

I give my family cheese toaster
Unto the Reverend Mr. Brewster;[7]
And to the Reverend Mr. Darch[8]
My curious essay upon Starch.
As to that Pedant, Mr. Hall,[9]
By Jove—I'll give him nouse at all.
To Askew,[10] too (by way of sport),
I give my essay upon port.

. . . . .

I give to Alderman Jack Blackett[11]

[1] The Rev. Hugh Moises, who married for his third wife, August 16th, 1764, (2) Ann, widow of William Boag.

[3] Robert Ellison, wine merchant, afterwards of Otterburn.

[4] Rev. Nathaniel Ellison, Vicar of Kirkwhelpington, and of Lesbury.

[5] Richard Grieve, of Alnwick, the Political Reformer.

[6] Curate of St. John's, Newcastle, 1736 to 1786.

[7] Assistant curate of St. Andrew's, Newcastle, 1741 to 1750.

[8] Vicar of Longbenton, 1757 to 1767.

[9] Afternoon lecturer of St. Anne's, Newcastle, 1773 to 1781.

[10] Dr. Adam Askew, the famous physician, or, possibly, John Askew, B.A., assistant curate of St. Andrew's, Newcastle, 1756.

[11] John Erasmus Blackett, father of Lady Collingwood.

My favourite essay upon Claret;
And to my good friend, William Ord,[1]
The use (and so forth) of a cord.

. . . . .

To Avison [2] (by way of reading)
I give my essay on good breeding;
Then to his wife, the gentle Kitty,
My doleful essay upon pity;
And to his matchless children three
My quaint remarks on Tyburn tree.
But as to all my stock of wealth,
By G—— I'll keep that to myself.—
Sign'd, seal'd, delivered in Sixty-One,
By me, the Vicar of Bedlington."

The codicil is much longer than the will, more scurrilous, and therefore less quotable. Upon Avison, Matthew Ridley, the Claytons, Sir Thomas Clavering, the Duke of Northumberland, and one or two others the writer discharges copious venom with little regard to decency, and less for either rhyme or sense. Who he was has never been ascertained. Nobody would admit having written such trash. An attempt was made to fasten it upon the Rev. William Cooper, son of William Cooper, M.D., and brother of Sir Grey Cooper, but by advertisement in the *Newcastle Courant* of the 7th December, 1765, he disowned the impeachment. So the author's secret died with him, and the pamphlet itself would probably have died out of remembrance if some local publisher had not in the year 1824 issued an anonymous reprint of it.

Mr. Ellison does not appear to have indulged in the luxury of authorship himself, not even to the extent of publishing "by request" a volume of pulpit discourses. The only printed publication that bears his name is a sermon entitled—

"Our Obligations to do Good, and the Manner of Doing it. A Sermon preached at the Anniversary Meeting of the Sons of the Clergy within the Diocese of Durham, at St. Nicholas' Church, in Newcastle, on Thursday, the 6th of September, 1750, by John Ellison, etc. Newcastle: Printed and sold by J. White, and to be had of M. Bryson, R. Akenhead, Sen., J. Fleming, J. Barber, and H. Reed, Booksellers, in Newcastle."

[1] William Ord, of Fenham, who is said to have had a passion for hanging himself for amusement.

[2] Charles Avison, organist and composer.

# Joseph Ellison,

## A NAVAL CELEBRITY.

In the nineteenth volume of the "Naval Chronicle" is a long memoir of Captain Joseph Ellison, of the Royal Navy, whose services to his country entitle him to be considered a man of mark from, if not in, the northernmost county of England. Joseph Ellison was born at Newcastle-upon-Tyne in 1753, the only son of Joseph Ellison of that town, a representative, probably, of the Lintz Green branch of the family, and connected with the Ellisons of Hebburn—all the Ellisons being in some degrees related, although in parts the consanguinity has become very thin and meagre.

In his ninth year young Ellison went to sea with Admiral Sir Edward Hawke in the *Royal George*, a man-of-war of 108 guns, which, twenty years afterwards, was lost off Spithead, having gone down with six hundred souls on board, while heeled over to repair a pipe. From the *Royal George* he was removed successively into the *Rippon*, the *Arrogant*, the *Glory*, the *Aldborough*, the *Boyne*, the *Ocean*, the *Somerset*, and the *Albion*. In 1776, he again joined the *Somerset*, on its being ordered to Boston, in America. Soon after its arrival there, the American war broke out, and his captain gave him the command of three flat-bottomed boats, for the purpose of preventing the rebels at different parts of the coast from forming a junction.

On his arrival from England, Sir William Howe received information that the enemy had advanced as far as the heights of Charlestown, and were straining every nerve to oppose the British. So Mr. Ellison received orders to convey him from Boston to Charlestown in the *Somerset's* barge, while the troops were ferried across the Charles river in flat-bottomed boats, and the town was set on fire, to prevent its affording shelter to the "rebels." The battle of Bunker's Hill took place next day, and Mr. Ellison conducted General Howe in short-lived triumph back to Boston.

The *Somerset* returned to England in March, 1776, and Mr. Ellison was soon afterwards removed into the *Rippon*, in which he proceeded to the East Indies. While on that station, war broke

out between Great Britain and France. In October, 1778, Mr. Ellison was present at the reduction of Pondicherry, as acting-lieutenant of the *Cormorant.* In this sloop he subsequently went up the Red Sea. At Suez some of the crew deserted, and turned Mohammedans; and Mr. Ellison, having been sent to recover them, was seized by the Turks. On receipt of this intelligence, Captain Owen sent on shore to demand his lieutenant and the men, and to say that, unless they were delivered up, he would warp the sloop alongside the town, and level it with the dust, which threat he was proceeding to put into execution, when all were sent on board.

On his return to England, Lieutenant Ellison was appointed to the *Queen*, in which ship he was when the fleet, under Sir Charles Hardy, was chased by the combined French and Spanish fleets off Plymouth, and was only saved from what seemed imminent defeat by a fortunate change of wind, the French having thirty and the Spaniards thirty-eight ships of the line, whereas the English admiral had only thirty-eight.

On leaving the *Queen*, Lieutenant Ellison married Miss Collis, the only daughter of Thomas Collis, of Gosport, but before the expiration of the honeymoon duty compelled him to make a voyage up the Baltic, on his return from which the ship to which he had been appointed was detached upon a cruise off Cape Ortegal, on the coast of Spain. There a large ship was discovered to be bearing down, which proved to be the French frigate *La Capricieuse*, pierced for 44 guns. An engagement took place, which lasted four hours and a half, and ended in the French frigate striking her colours. Lieutenant Ellison received four wounds in his back, but could not be induced to go below to have them dressed, although they occasioned a great loss of blood. At length an eighteen pound shot, striking his elbow, shattered the bones, and left his arm hanging by the skin only. He was then under the necessity of going down to the surgeon, who ordered him to be laid on his mattress, in the gun-room, where, having staunched the blood, and having many wounded men to attend, he left him till the close of the action. At seven o'clock in the morning, two hours and a half after the close of the engagement, his arm was amputated by the French surgeon. After the lapse of some months, he was sufficiently recovered to go up to London, where he waited upon Lord Sandwich, First Lord of the Admiralty, expecting, as he well deserved, promotion. He was told, however, that it was impossible to promote

him without also promoting other officers of equal rank, which the exigencies of the service did not permit; but that, if he wished to be employed on shore, he should be appointed, on a vacancy, to any situation he liked. His health being in a precarious state—the wounds in his back not yet healed, and his arm, amputated according to the old-fashioned method, having a very large wound yet open —he obtained from Lord Sandwich a rendezvous at Gosport on the impress service. While he was employed in this disagreeable vocation, he captured very cleverly a number of deserters. Admiral Evans made a representation of his service to the Admiralty, in consequence of which Mr. Ellison was promoted to the rank of master and commander. In February, 1785, he obtained the command of the *Druid*, of 32 guns, on board of which, during the peace, he had the satisfaction of bringing up many young men to the service. At the expiry of his three years' commission, he obtained a renewal of his command, and was ordered to the West Indies, from which he returned in September, 1792.

On the commencement of the war, in 1793, Captain Ellison was sent to cruise off the French coast, where he made several captures of privateers and merchant ships, gaining no little prize-money. On the 8th of June, 1794, he bore a distinguished part in a memorable action near Guernsey, wherein his superior officer, Sir James Saumarez, succeeded in baffling a French squadron, more than treble his force. He was appointed, in the following year, to the *Standard*, of 64 guns, and among other services he was called on to render, one was to blockade the French island of Bellisle, and endeavour to effect its surrender, so as to form a basis for the invasion of the mainland by the Royalist refugees. He had two of these officers on board, who were authorised to treat with the governor of the place, whom he formally invited to surrender, acknowledge King Louis, and accept the alliance and protection of Great Britain. They answered that they did not want the protection of the king of England, and so the negotiations came to nothing. Captain Ellison's next special service was to convoy to England from St. Helena a fleet consisting of eleven of the East India Company's ships, together with several extra ships, laden with rice and other commodities. This he did without loss, and in acknowledgment of his service, the directors of the Company presented him with the sum of four hundred guineas for the purchase of a piece of plate.

His last cruise at sea was on board the *Marlborough*. On the passage of the ship to Cadiz, to join Lord St. Vincent, one or two of the men hatched a plot to put Captain Ellison and his officers to death, and to carry the ship into Brest. Fortunately their scheme was frustrated by one of the crew, who, having heard their conversation, got in at the quarter-galley window, at midnight, and awakening the captain, who was in his cot, made the discovery. Captain Ellison went upon the quarter-deck, and saw a number of men assembled on the poop. On asking the officer of the watch the reason of this, the men, perceiving that they were detected, returned, in great confusion, over the quarters and along the muzzles of the guns to the main-deck, and got into their hammocks. Captain Ellison then summoned all the officers upon deck, where, accompanied by them, he continued during the remainder of the night. At eight o'clock in the morning the hands were turned up in order to discover the ring-leaders, but without effect. However, in the course of the day, a seaman came forward and mentioned two who had been the most active in the business; they were put in irons, and on joining Lord St. Vincent's fleet, they were tried by a court-martial, condemned, and executed on board the *Marlborough*. A public letter was subsequently received by Captain Ellison, from the Admiralty, expressing their lordships' approbation of his conduct and that of his officers, on this trying occasion.

Having suffered in health, Captain Ellison left the *Marlborough* off Cadiz, and returned to England in the *Blenheim*, with Vice-Admiral Sir John Orde, a gallant Northumbrian like himself. The owners and underwriters of various ships which he had been the means of saving, under trying circumstances, marked their appreciation of his services by handsome presentations of money, gilt cups, etc.

After his arrival at Plymouth, he was appointed to regulate the impress service at Gravesend, where he remained until the service was broken up, at the conclusion of the war, in 1801. Then, after being a short time on half-pay, he was commissioned as third captain of Greenwich Hospital, in the room of Captain Allwright, deceased; and, in 1805, on the death of Sir Robert Pearson, he became second captain, and a director of the chest of Greenwich. In this agreeable retirement he spent the rest of his life.

# Nathaniel Ellison,

VICAR OF NEWCASTLE.

THE first of the local family of Ellison who bore the name of Nathaniel, was the seventh son of Robert Ellison, M.P., and his wife Elizabeth, sister of William Gray, author of the "Chorographia." He was born in 1657, and would probably, as the Rev. E. Hussey Adamson supposes, become a pupil in the flourishing free grammar school of his native town, to the oversight of which Amor Oxley, sequestrated from the head-mastership in 1645 for devotion to the Crown, had recently been reappointed. Possibly, too, the literary uncle, William Gray, rendered useful assistance, imparting to the lad that passion for books and devotion to local history which characterised his manhood and old age.

Howsoever that may have been, the young man, destined for the Church, matriculated at St. Edmund's Hall, Oxford, on the 29th March, 1672, aged 15, and proceeded B.A. in 1675. He was elected (June 22nd, 1677), on two years' probation, scholar of Corpus Christi College, the authorities there relaxing their rule as to age, and admitting him after he was nineteen, as they had done but once, a hundred years before, in the case of "the judicious" Hooker. On the 22nd February, 1678-79, he was admitted to the degree of M.A.; in 1680, obtained the living of Towcester, in North Hants; and, in 1682, Dr. Wood, Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry, who had married a sister of Sir James Clavering, of Axwell, made him one of his chaplains, and conferred upon him the Archdeaconry of Stafford, with a prebend's stall in Lichfield Cathedral.

Local preferment came in due course, though not in so pleasant and approved a manner as was desirable. The Rev. John March, Royalist vicar of Newcastle, conceived that he had the right of bestowing as he pleased the morning lectureship of All Saints' Church, and on the 2nd of November, 1686, he gave it to Mr. Ellison. Thus ran the certificate of appointment:—"I doe nominate and appoint Mr. Nathaneel Ellison, Master of Arts in the University of Oxford, to be my Preaching Curate in the Chappelry of All-Saints' in the parish of St. Nicholas in the Town and County of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. In testimony whereof I have set to my

name this twenty & 2nd day of November in the year of Or. Lord God 1686. JOHN MARCH, Vicar of Newcastle-upon-Tyne."

Some heat was engendered by the vicar's proceeding, for it had always been considered that the Corporation of Newcastle, who provided the income of the lecturer, had the right to nominate him. In a warm controversy between Vicar March and Dr. James Welwood respecting a sermon, in which the former had affirmed the duty of passive obedience and non-resistance, Mr. Ellison's appointment was one of the barbs which the doctor launched at his irate clerical antagonist. "Instead of two Questions," he wrote, "I'll presume but to propose one—viz., Whether or not he that pays the stipend should, *jure Divino*, present to the Church? This is a question may concern you, and I am positively for the affirmative, till you convince me of the contrary." To which the vicar had a ready reply:—"There is a Rul'd Case in our Law Books, call'd the case of the Vicar of Hallifax, where it's determin'd, That every Vicar has the right of nominating his own Curate, though the Inhabitants of the Parish pay the stipend; and if you dare to say, The Law of the Land is contrary to the Law of God, I shall leave you to be chastised by the Gentleman of the Long Robe."

By this show of authority, no doubt, the Corporation had been silenced. But it may be questioned whether, if the nominee had not been an Ellison, they would not have showed their resentment in a tangible form. However, having no objection to the man appointed, they overlooked the method of his appointment, and while Mr. March lived they took no formal step to visit upon him their displeasure. The very day after he died (December 3rd, 1692), they met and issued an order to stop the stipend of £90 per annum which they contributed to the vicar's income, "and not to pay it to any future Vicar upon any pretence or account whatsoever." Subject to this reduction of income, Leonard Welstead became vicar; but his tenure of office was unusually brief. He died on the 13th November, 1694, and Bishop Smith of Carlisle conferred the living upon Mr. Ellison.

In every sense of the term this was a popular appointment. The patrons had not often chosen a native of Newcastle to be its vicar, and their previous selection of one, in the person of Mr. March, had not been productive of harmony and good feeling. But Mr. Ellison's nomination was universally approved, for he and his family enjoyed the confidence of the municipal authorities, and possessed

the affection and esteem of the citizens. To mark their satisfaction at the election of a townsman to the highest ecclesiastical position amongst them, the Corporation rescinded their sweeping resolution about the stipend, and agreed to renew their contribution of £90 per annum—£80 for general duty and £10 for a Thursday lecture. Further, they undertook to repair the chancel of St. Nicholas' and to "beautify" the altar, or Holy Table, there. "Very sumptuously and yet decently adorned," is Bourne's description of the work; at the top of the altar being "the word Jehovah, and under that in a Glory, a Part of the Name of the Lord, which He Himself proclaimed before Moses."

At the same time Mr. Ellison set the vicarage house in order. That venerable abode of the vicars of Newcastle, situated in Westgate Street, was a building of uncertain age and irregular formation, which had suffered greatly during the siege of Newcastle, fifty years before, and had been patched into a temporary but incommodious domicile. Mr. Ellison, at his own expense, it is to be presumed, effected great improvements in the domestic arrangements of the vicarage, enabling Bourne to describe it in his time as being "more beautiful and convenient than it was wont to be, having been repair'd and enlarged in the year 1694, by the Rev. and Worthy Dr. Ellison, the then Vicar."

Mr. Ellison took the degree of D.D. in 1702, and a couple of years later Bishop Crewe, who had already made him one of his chaplains, presented him to the rectory of Whitburn. To these preferments the bishop added, in 1712, the fifth prebendal stall at Durham, upon which occasion the Corporation again showed their gratification by addressing a letter of thanks to his lordship. They were evidently proud of the honours and preferments conferred upon their vicar. He was a man after their own heart, and they rejoiced at his spiritual promotions; he was one of themselves, and they delighted in his prosperity. Unfortunately, their pleasures were not of long duration. He had been eighteen years vicar when he received the appointment to the stall at Durham, and for only nine years longer was he permitted to minister amongst them. He died on the 4th May, 1721, and on the 7th was buried under the east window of the south aisle of St. Nicholas'.

Dr. Ellison is described by Bourne, who knew him, as "a Man of good Learning and an exemplary Life, and was looked upon to be one of the best of Parish Priests for his Constancy and

Usefulness in Preaching." Alderman Hornby, an antiquary and historical collector, states that he was "generally esteemed a man of learning and piety, and an excellent preacher," who "made large collections of valuable books, and appears not to have done so for the sake of having a great library, but for another purpose, which there is no doubt of, from the manuscript in the blank pages of every one that I have seen, in which there is always some account of the author, and necessary references to other works, which evidently show the great reading and laborious study of the writer." The accuracy of Alderman Hornby's observations is confirmed by a couple of books formerly belonging to Dr. Ellison which are now in the collection of the present writer. In these volumes are copious MS. annotations, some in the doctor's writing and some in that of a law writer, but evidently penned from his dictation, accompanied by his signature in a neat and firm hand.

Some of his books he gave, a few months before his death, to St. Nicholas' Library; the remainder appear to have been dispersed. His own published writings were few and unimportant. He contemplated, like so many others, a history of Newcastle, and collected folios of material for that purpose, from which Brand, who was curate to his grandson, derived valuable information, after Bourne, whose inability to obtain the same privilege was a subject of great disappointment, had died without the sight. Three sermons constitute the whole of his contributions to local literature:—

"The Magistrates' Obligation to Punish Vice. A Sermon Preach'd before the Right Worshipful the Mayor, Aldermen, Sheriff, etc., at the Parish Church of St. Nicholas, October 8, 1699. Upon the Election of the Mayor. By Nathanael Ellison, Vicar of Newcastle. Published at the Request of the Mayor and Aldermen. London: Printed by W. B. for Richard Randell, Bookseller in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, etc.," 1700. 4to. 34 pp.

"Of Confirmation. A Sermon Preach'd before the Right Reverend Father in God, the Right Honourable Nathanael Lord Crewe, Lord Bishop of Durham. At the Parish Church of St. Nicholas, in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, June 23, 1700. By Nathanael Ellison, Vicar of Newcastle. London: Printed for John Wyat at the Rose in St. Paul's Church-yard. MDCCI." 4to. 24 pp.

"The Obligations and Opportunities of doing Good to the Poor. A Sermon Preach'd before the Right Worshipful the Mayor, Recorder, Aldermen, Sheriff, etc., of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. At All Saints' Church on All Saints' Day, 1709. Upon the Opening of a Charity School there. By Nathanael Ellison, D.D., Vicar of Newcastle." Published at the Request of the Trustees. London: Printed for Richard Randell, Bookseller in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, 1710. 4to. 30 pp.

In the correspondence of Bishop Nicolson, of Carlisle, are two

letters from Dr. Ellison, one on the subject of the religious societies of his day, and the other relating to Robert Rhodes, the benefactor of St. Nicholas' and other Newcastle churches. Thoresby, the Yorkshire antiquary, states that the world was expecting from him a history of the Church of Durham, but there is no evidence that Dr. Ellison ever made preparations for such a work.

By his marriage with Elizabeth, daughter of Anthony Isaacson, of Newcastle, at St. Andrew's, April 27th, 1691, Dr. Ellison had three sons and seven daughters. Of the former, John became the vicar of Bedlington, as described in a previous biography, Nathaniel succeeded to the living of Kirkwhelpington and Lesbury, and Robert settled at Otterburn—a country squire and Justice of the Peace. Three of the daughters married clergymen, another was united to her relative John Isaacson, and a fifth became the wife of William Fenwick, of Bedlington.

## Nathaniel Ellison,

LECTURER AT ST. ANDREW'S, NEWCASTLE.

DR. ELLISON'S son, Nathaniel, the vicar of Kirkwhelpington and Lesbury, was an M.A. of Lincoln College, Oxford, and died on the 27th February, 1775, without issue. His nephew, Nathaniel, son of John Ellison, the doctor's first-born, was baptised in 1737, studied at Lincoln and Merton Colleges, Oxford, and obtained the living of St. Andrew's, Newcastle, on the resignation of his father, in 1766. He was a man of ability, and rose, partly by his own merits, and partly by family influence, to be vicar of Bolam, perpetual curate of Doddington, and domestic chaplain to the Earl of Tankerville. The lectureship, or curacy of St. Andrew's, he held for thirty-two years, during eleven of which he was assisted by the historian of Newcastle, the Rev. John Brand. Dying on the 1st August, 1798, aged 61, he was buried at St. Nicholas', where there is a marble tablet to his memory.

Mr. Ellison was united, January 12th, 1773, to Jane, daughter of Colonel Noel Furye, of Farnham, Berks, by whom he had numerous children. His eldest son, Nathaniel, became the local Bankruptcy Commissioner; his second son, Peregrine George, was a well-known

solicitor in Newcastle; the fourth son, Noel Thomas, fellow of Baliol College, Oxford, became rector of Whalton, Northumberland, and Huntspill, in Somerset, and died in 1859; Sarah, his third daughter, married Ralph Bates, of Milbourne; and Elizabeth married Major John Werge, by whom she had issue, Margaret, mother of Thomas Eustace Smith, formerly M.P. for Tynemouth, and Elizabeth, wife of Ralph Carr-Ellison, of Dunston Hill.

## Nathaniel Ellison,

BANKRUPTCY COMMISSIONER.

THE last man of mark in the Ellison family who bore the name of Nathaniel was the learned judge, still remembered as Mr. Commissioner Ellison of the Newcastle Court of Bankruptcy. Born in Newcastle on the 19th of March, 1786, he received his preliminary training at Durham Grammar School, and was admitted a commoner of University College, Oxford, on the 18th October, 1802. He was elected to a fellowship at Merton College in 1807, and took his M.A. degree in 1810. Being destined for the profession of the law, he became a member of the Honourable Society of Lincoln's Inn, and, studying under Mr. Holroyd, better known afterwards as Mr. Justice Holroyd, was called to the Bar on the 22nd November, 1811, in the twenty-sixth year of his age.

Soon after his call to the Bar, Mr. Ellison was appointed by Lord Chancellor Eldon to be one of the Commissioners of Bankruptcy in London, an office which he held till the establishment of a regular Bankruptcy Court there, under Lord Brougham's Act, in 1832. For the next ten years he practised at the Chancery Bar. Upon the extension of the London system of bankruptcy to country districts by the Bankrupt Law Amendment Act of 1842, he received from the Crown, on the nomination of Lord Chancellor Lyndhurst, the office of Commissioner of the District Court which was then first established in Newcastle, with bankruptcy jurisdiction extending over the counties of Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmorland, and Durham. He held that important office down to the time of his death, a period of nineteen years, having for his registrar Mr. W. Sidney Gibson, the antiquary, author of "The Monastery of Tynemouth," and other books and pamphlets of local interest.

The writer of a biography of Mr. Ellison in the *Gentleman's*

*Magazine* for January, 1861 (Mr. W. Sidney Gibson probably), tells us that Mr. Ellison brought to the discharge of his duties judicial qualities of a very high order. His great reading and long experience had stored his mind with a profound knowledge of the law; his retentive memory gave him a ready recollection of authorities and cases bearing on points in dispute before him; and his impartiality, urbanity, and patience were not less conspicuous than his learning. His judgment was so much respected that questions arising between the assignees and parties not within the Commissioner's primary jurisdiction were very frequently, by their consent, left to his decision; he seemed to court judicial labours, and never spared himself pains in the administration of justice. The venerable Lord Lyndhurst is known to have entertained a high opinion of his character and professional attainments, and to have considered his appointment to the court at Newcastle as one of the best he had ever made.

For some time before his death, Mr. Commissioner Ellison was absent from his court through illness, but he continued to manifest a lively interest in its operations, and in discussing the altered law and procedure which the Bankruptcy Act of 1861 introduced on and after the 11th of October in that year. At length, on the 9th of December, a couple of months after the Act came into force, he could not be restrained from attending the Court. He took his accustomed seat, and received from Mr. Joseph Watson, President of the Local Law Society, the congratulations of the legal profession on his apparent recovery. It was his last appearance. Returning to his house at Stote's Hall, Jesmond, he sank rapidly, and on the morning of the 12th December, the third day after his visit to the scene of his judicial labours, he expired. His remains were buried in Jesmond Cemetery.

Mr. Ellison married Frances, widow of W. P. Greg, Commissioner of Bankrupts, by whom he had an only son, Nathaniel Frederick, and an only daughter, Caroline, who became the wife of the Rev. John F. Bigge, rector of Stamfordham.

# Robert Ellison,

COMMONWEALTH M.P. FOR NEWCASTLE.

ROBERT ELLISON, kinsman and friend of the first historian of Newcastle, and a Parliamentary representative of the town during one of the most perilous periods of English history, was the second son of Cuthbert Ellison, merchant adventurer (by Jane, daughter of Christopher Ile) and great-grandson of Cuthbert No. 1, the founder of the Newcastle branch of the Ellison family. He was baptised at St. Nicholas' Church on the 2nd of February, 1613-14, and possibly received his education at the then newly-constituted Royal Free Grammar School, under that "learned and painfull man to indoctrinate youth in Greek and Latine," the "Reverend Master Robart Fowberry," and the succeeding headmaster, Edward Wigham. Losing his mother when he was five years old, and his father when he was but fourteen, he married, as soon as he came of age, March 29th, 1635, Elizabeth, daughter of Cuthbert Gray, and sister of the author of the "Chorographia." Thereafter, taking up his freedom of the Merchants' Company, to which he was entitled by patrimony descending through three generations, he commenced business in the town on his own account.

Whatsoever may have been his prospects of a successful commercial career at the outset, no long time elapsed before they became clouded and uncertain. The country was drifting into trouble with Scotland, and verging upon a state of civil war. Five years after his marriage, General Lesley was in possession of Newcastle, and every branch of local trade and industry was at a stand. The part which he played in the struggle does not clearly appear. He was but a young man, and his name is not found among those of the townspeople who took sides in the bitter controversies of that dreadful time. When, on the 19th of January, 1642-43, Sir John Marley announced to the Court of the Newcastle Merchant Adventurers that money must be raised immediately for the payment of the garrison, then three months in arrears, the assessors, who apportioned the several sums to be advanced by the brethren, assessed upon Robert Ellison a contribution of six pounds. The amount of the assessment

shows, by comparison with others, that he was a substantial burgess, but it affords no clue to his opinions. Perhaps, like many others, he was a moderate Royalist in the early stages of the conflict, and was gradually drawn into taking the side of the Parliament by force of circumstances. Among the anti-Royalists he was certainly found when Newcastle had been stormed and taken. For on the 5th of December, 1644, seven weeks after the capture of the town, his name appears in the Journals of the House of Commons in a series of important resolutions affecting the government of Newcastle. The House, on that occasion, displaced, disabled, and disfranchised the Mayor, Sheriff, Recorder, Collector of Customs, and several of

the Aldermen. In place of Sir John Marley, mayor, they appointed "Mr. Henry Warmouth"; in the room of James Cole, sheriff, they put "Mr. Robert Ellison." At the same sitting they elected a committee of fourteen persons to sequestrate the estates of local delinquents, and "Mr. Robert Ellison" was one of the fourteen. The year following (March 4th, 1644-45) he was admitted to the freedom of the Hostmen's Company of Newcastle; a couple of months later the Merchants' Company elected him one of their assistants in place of Captain Robert Whyte, who had been killed at the storming of the town the previous October. On the 20th of June, the same year, propositions, signed by himself and Edward Man, Town Clerk

of Newcastle, and his fellow-assistant in the Merchants' Company, concerning the management of collieries belonging to local delinquents, were submitted to Parliament.

Thus prominently taking part in public life, Mr. Ellison began to be considered competent for more responsible duties. A vacancy in the representation of the town had occurred by the disablement of Sir Henry Anderson, and in September, 1645, the Long Parliament ordered it to be filled up. Many of the electors turned their eyes towards Mr. Ellison; others favoured the Mayor, Mr. Henry Warmouth. So it happened that these two men, who had been chosen by Parliament to replace Royalists in the leading offices of the municipality, were pitted against each other in a parliamentary contest. Through some informality in the issuing of the writ the election did not take place till the middle of the year 1647. Both candidates went to the poll, and Mr. Ellison was beaten; but his friends, being dissatisfied with the result, petitioned for an inquiry, and won the ear of the House. On the 23rd July in that year Parliament decided that the election was null, and ordered a new writ to issue. Again Mr. Ellison was nominated, again he had a rival, and again that rival was the Mayor of the town. This time, however (December 1st, 1647), he triumphed; the Mayor, Thomas Ledgard, was defeated. "Mr. Ellison and the present mayor," so the *Moderate Intelligencer* informs us, "stood in competition; after much labouring they came to the poll; there was but 61 for the mayor, and 300 for the other; divers did not think the election fair at first, in regard of an ordinance that disables those that hath been in arms against the parliament; at last the sheriff declared that Mr. Ellison was chosen by the major voices, but whether both will not be returned, the one chosen by the well-affected, the other by the others, is in dispute."

Does this mean that Mr. Ellison was accused of disaffection to the Parliament? The paragraph seems so to read, or why any doubt on the subject, when 300 voted for him, and only 61 against him? Howsoever that may have been, his return was accepted by the House of Commons. *The Kingdome's Weekly Intelligencer* reported on the 8th of the month:—"It was confirmed that master Robert Ellison, a gentleman who had shewed himself well-affected to the parliament, was chosen burgess for that place."

Elected to the highest honour that his fellow-townsmen could bestow, Mr. Ellison took his seat in Parliament as the colleague

of John Blakiston. Between these two popular representatives of Newcastle there cannot have been much in common. Blakiston was an ardent Republican, prepared to go the full length of his opinions, even though that course might overturn both Church and Crown. Ellison, from all we can learn of him, was a reformer who, while earnest in his demands for redress of grievances, hoped to obtain them within the ancient lines of the Constitution. For a couple of months after taking his seat he took no part in the proceedings of the House. His name first appears in the Journals on the 23rd February, 1647-48, when he was appointed a member of a committee to which the House referred "An Ordinance for the more strict preservation of the Lord's Day, and all other days set apart by Authority for Publick Fasting and Humiliation." He occupied a similar position on the 16th June, 1648, upon an ordinance for "abolishing Deans, Sub-deans, Chapters, etc., and the sale of their possessions." In August following, the House, passing an order for payment of the garrison at Holy Island, desired Mr. Blakiston and Mr. Ellison "to take care of this business." And there his Parliamentary record ends. John Blakiston's name runs through the Journals till death removed it; Robert Ellison's appears no more till the Commonwealth was dying. The omission is striking. It indicates that for some reason or other Robert Ellison ceased his attendance at Westminster within a year of his election.

What was that reason? Local history affords no clue, and conjectures are dangerous. The most probable answer to the question is that he did not approve of the course upon which, in the autumn after his election, Parliament embarked—a course which led to the arraignment, trial, and execution of the king. Many members of the House disapproved of these violent proceedings—so many, indeed, that on the 6th of December Colonel Pride, accompanied by a military force, went down to Westminster, seized forty-two representatives of the people, and stopped a hundred and sixty more from entering the Chamber. The object of this outrage, called "Pride's Purge," was to eliminate from Parliament the party who were inclined towards the monarchy. Robert Ellison, it is supposed, was one of Pride's victims, and thus the omission of his name from the Journals receives an intelligible explanation. From a list of members of the Long Parliament taken in 1652, a few months before its dissolution, it appears that both seats for Newcastle were vacant.

When the Commonwealth, drooping through three Parliaments summoned by Cromwell, and one convened by his son and successor, approached its end, and the Army invited the scattered members of the Long Parliament to resume their functions, Robert Ellison came to the front again. It is not known whether he responded to the direct summons of the Army, but when those who accepted the invitation had assembled, and ordered a general election on the old lines, he became once more a candidate for the representation of Newcastle, and was successful. Since his previous appearance in the political arena, he had devoted himself to business, rescuing out of the wreck and ruin of civil war various commercial enterprises in which he was engaged, and building up a considerable fortune. He had acquired valuable landed estate at Hebburn and Jarrow, and at the time of his election was serving the office of High Sheriff for the county of Durham, having, a few weeks before, contracted his daughter Elizabeth in marriage to William, son of Edward Fenwick, of Stanton, High Sheriff of Northumberland.

Returning to Westminster in April, 1660, Mr. Ellison assisted in the restoration of the monarchy, and took an active part in the transaction of public business. As soon as the House assembled, he was placed upon the Committee for Privileges and Elections. Within a month afterwards he was serving upon four other committees of importance. Then the Corporation of Newcastle, who had paid him nothing for his previous attendance in Parliament, found means to recognise the value of his services. In the municipal accounts for September in that year appears the following entry:—"Paid Mr. Robert Ellison, by order of Common councell, the sum of £100, in parte paymente of his sallarye the time he sate as burgesse for this towne in the longe parliament, the yeares 1647 and 1648; so paid £100."

"The time he sate as burgesse"; "the yeares 1647 and 1648"; these phrases, it is to be observed, indicate the duration of Mr. Ellison's first parliamentary mission, and indirectly confirm the report of his exclusion by Colonel Pride. Curiously enough, his second period of representation covered an equally short term. He helped to pass through the Commons a Bill for giving members to the county of Durham, was entrusted with the carrying up of that Bill to the House of Lords, and served upon numerous committees; but after the dissolution of Parliament in December, 1660, he appeared in the Legislature no more. Sir John Marley and Sir

Francis Anderson, two uncompromising Royalists, were restored to power in the municipality, and to them was entrusted the representation of Newcastle in the "Pensionary Parliament"—the first of Charles II.

In his commercial and domestic life Robert Ellison found compensation for the comparative failure of his political career. Prosperous in all his business undertakings, he gathered under his roof-tree in the Side a happy and harmonious family. With them, a welcome and honoured guest, lived, a great part of his life, the literary brother-in-law and uncle, William Gray. It was in their home, probably, that Gray planned and prepared that second edition of his book which is now in the library of Mr. Ellison's descendant, Lord Northbourne. It was there, too, doubtless, that he made his will, expressing his acknowledgment of the "comfort and contentment" which he had experienced in his "dwelling and cohabiting with them" and bequeathing to them the most of his property.

Fourteen children were born into the united home circle in the Side, of whom nine were living when, on the last day of June, 1665, the first great shadow was cast upon it by the death of the wife and mother. Seven years later, when other of his children had married, and the domestic circle was narrowed to three or four of the youngest, Mr. Ellison took a second wife, Agnes, widow of James Briggs. Bereavements followed in rapid succession. William Gray, his faithful brother-in-law, died at the beginning of February, 1673-74; his second wife departed a few weeks later; and in May, 1675, he lost his son-in-law, William Fenwick of Stanton. He did not long survive these troubles. Making his will on the 11th January, 1677-78, he expired on the 12th, and on the 15th was buried at St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle.

# William and Elizabeth Elstob,

SAXON SCHOLARS.

AT Foxton, three miles south of Sedgefield, lived for centuries a family of Elstobs. Deriving their name from an adjoining hamlet, they held at one time nearly the whole of the vill. Adam d'Elnestob occurs in 1304, receiving a grant from the Knight Templars on condition of paying 24s. to their house at Shotton. The family

pedigree, printed in Surtees's "History of Durham," commences with John de Ellestobbe, who was living at Foxton in 1393, and comes down to the sale of the estate in 1746 by Anne, daughter of John Elstob of that place, and widow of Humphrey March, son of John March, vicar of Newcastle. None of the earlier members of the family played any prominent part in local history, nor does public interest attach to later generations, till Ralph Elstob, a younger son of one of the Foxton squires, settling in Newcastle, gave to the world two brilliant scholars, who immortalised the name by laborious investigations into a neglected branch of learning—the language and literature of the Saxons.

Ralph Elstob, second son of Charles Elstob, of Foxton, by his marriage with Mary, daughter of Ralph Featherstonehaugh, of Stanhope, came to Newcastle in 1662, and was bound apprentice to Robert Rutter, a member of the Drapers' branch of the Company of Merchant Adventurers. With him he remained but a few months, and was then set over to Gabriel Fulthorpe, hero of a notable quarrel, the unsavoury details of which are printed in Richardson's Tract, "The Eve of the Revolution in Newcastle." Fulthorpe, like Rutter, was unable to fulfil his contract, and in 1666 Elstob was turned over to Peter Sanderson, an eminent Puritan, who had served his time as a youth with John Blakiston the regicide. Under Sanderson's tuition he completed his articles and obtained the freedom of his company, which was granted to him on the 24th April, 1672. Six months afterwards he married, at All Saints' Church, Jane, daughter of William Hall, merchant, and commenced business for himself. Brief and not too successful was his mercantile career. He filled the office of Sheriff of the town in 1686-87, and the following year (13th April, 1688) he was buried, leaving a widow and three children with but slender provision for their maintenance. Two of these children, William and Elizabeth, were the future Saxon scholars.

William Elstob was baptised at All Saints' Church, Newcastle, on the 1st of January, 1673-74, and received his preliminary education at the Royal Free Grammar School, under the tuition of Richard Garthwaite. His uncle and guardian, Dr. Charles Elstob, prebendary of Canterbury, designing him for the Church, sent him at eleven years of age to Eton College, and afterwards to Catherine Hall, Cambridge, and Queen's College, Oxford, where he matriculated, December 15th, 1691, aged 17. He took his B.A. degree in

1694, and became a Fellow of University College, Oxford, and M.A. in 1697. The following year he was incorporated at Cambridge, and in 1702 he obtained preferment. Through the influence of his uncle, the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury presented him to the care of the united parishes of St. Swithin and St. Mary Bothaw, in the city of London, worth about £140 per annum. To Bush Lane, adjoining the church of St. Swithin, taking his sister Elizabeth to be his housekeeper, he removed the same year, and in that noisy locality they devoted their lives to literature.

Biographies of William and Elizabeth Elstob are mainly based upon a narrative written by Elizabeth herself, and discovered after her death among the MSS. of Mr. George Ballard in the Bodleian Library. From that document it would appear that William Elstob was dissatisfied with the meagre provision which had been made for him, and that having taken the degree of D.D. in 1705, he endeavoured unsuccessfully to gain promotion. All that he obtained was the titular office of chaplain to Bishop Nicolson of Carlisle. The post of preacher at Lincoln's Inn, which he had been anxious to receive, was refused him, and he did not long outlive his disappointment. He applied for the preachership in February, 1713, and on March 3rd, 1714-15, he died. His remains were interred beneath the altar-table of St. Swithin's.

Mr. Elstob's literary career, as described in his sister's manuscripts, was remarkable. His first attempt in Saxon literature was a Latin translation of the Homily of Lapus, made while at college at the request of Dr. Hickes, from a transcript of the original Saxon, and inserted by the doctor in the "Epistolary Dissertation." He wrote about the same time an "Essay on the Great Affinity and Mutual Agreement of the Two Professions of Divinity and Law, and on the joint Interest of Church and State, in Vindication of the Clergy's concerning themselves in Political Matters."

Sir John Cheke translated Plutarch's "Book on Superstition" into Latin, and premised a discourse of his own on that subject in the Latin tongue. A mutilated copy on this discourse, after it had lain long in obscurity, was discovered in the Library of University College by Mr. Elstob, who not only transcribed it for Strype, but also voluntarily took the pains of translating it into English. The version is printed at the end of Strype's "Life of Sir John Cheke." London, 1705, 8vo.

Before Mr. Elstob left Oxford, he printed, with large additions, a

new edition (the fifth) of the celebrated Roger Ascham's Epistles; to which he subjoined the letters of John Sturmius, Hieron, Orosius, and others, to Ascham and other English gentlemen. Oxford, 1703, 8vo. He dedicated it to Robert Heath, Esq., his familiar friend, to whom he had been assistant in his studies.

Soon after he was settled in his benefice at London, he published "A Sermon upon the Thanksgiving for the Victory obtained by her Majesty's Forces, and those of her Allies, over the French and Bavarians near Hochstet, under the conduct of his Grace the Duke of Marlborough. London, 1704." The text was Psalm ciii. 10. Also, "A Sermon on the Anniversary Thanksgiving for her Majesty's happy Accession to the Throne. London, 1704." The text was 1 Timothy ii. 1, 2.

In 1709, his Latin version of the Saxon Homily on St. Gregory's Day, which he presented to his sister in a short Latin epistle, was printed at the end of her fine edition of the Saxon original. Next, he published the larger Devotions that the Saxons made use of in their own language, which from probable conjectures he fancies was the performance either of Ælfric, Archbishop of Canterbury, or of Wolfstan, Archbishop of York. And to show the world that they did not contain anything but what is pure and orthodox, he gave the public a faithful translation of them.

Mr. Elstob had made a collection of materials towards a history of his native town of Newcastle-on-Tyne, and had collected a vast number of proper names of men and women formerly used in northern countries, and he likewise had written an essay concerning the Latin tongue, with a short account of its history and use, for the encouragement of such adult persons to set upon the learning of it who had either neglected or been frightened from receiving the benefit of that kind of education in their infancy; to which was added some advice for the most easy and speedy attainment of it.

But the most considerable of Mr. Elstob's designs was an edition of the Saxon Laws, with great additions, and a new Latin version by Sommer, notes of various learned men, and a prefatory history of the origin and progress of the English Laws down to the Conqueror, and to Magna Charta. He was prevented by death in another project, which was to publish King Ælfred's paraphrastic Saxon version of the Latin historian Orosius. In this work he had proceeded so far as to make a fair copy of the original with his own hand in the Bodleian Library, and to add a considerable body of notes and

explanations. Many years after his death, the Hon. Daines Barrington had the temerity to publish Mr. Elstob's transcript, adding a translation and notes of his own, which neither gave the meaning nor cleared up the obscurities of the Latin or Saxon authors.

William Elstob, his sister assures us, was a most dutiful son to his parents, "affectionate to his relations, a most sincere friend, very charitable to the poor, a kind master to his servants, and generous to all, which was his greatest fault. He was of so sweet a temper that hardly anything could make him show his resentment, but when anything was said or done to the prejudice of religion, or disadvantage of his country. He had what might justly be called an universal genius, no art or science being despised by him; he had a particular genius for languages, and was a master of the Greek and Latin. Of the latter he was esteemed a good judge, and able to write it with great purity. Nor was he ignorant either of the Oriental languages, or of the Septentrional. He was a great lover of the antiquities of other countries, but more especially those of our own, having been at the pains and expense of visiting most of the places in this nation that are remarkable either for natural or ancient curiosities, architecture, paintings, sculpture, etc. What time he could spare from the study of divinity was spent chiefly in Saxon learning."

Elizabeth Elstob, housekeeper and companion of her brother, survived him for many years. She was ten years his junior, having been born on the 29th September, 1683, and baptised at St. Nicholas' Church on the 7th of October following. Her scholarship, though mainly attributable to the direction and companionship of her brother, was based upon a love of literature derived from her mother. Ralph Elstob's wife, William Hall's daughter, encouraged all her children to acquire knowledge, and, observing the fondness which Elizabeth, while a very young child, showed for books, omitted nothing that might tend to her improvement. Unhappily the good mother died when Elizabeth was eight years old, and her progress in learning was arrested. Her uncle and guardian, Dr. Charles Elstob, although a prebendary, and presumably a scholar as well as a divine, entertained the old-fashioned theory that one tongue was enough for a woman, and refused to allow his niece to study any tongue but her own.

The force of natural inclination cannot, however, always be restrained even by guardians. Elizabeth Elstob persevered, and as

her propensity was strong towards languages, she, with much difficulty, obtained leave to learn the French tongue. But her situation in this respect was happily altered when she went to live with her brother, who, being impressed with more liberal sentiments concerning the education of women, very joyfully assisted and encouraged her in her studies for the whole time he lived. Under his eye she translated and published an "Essay on Glory," written in French by Mademoiselle de Scudery. But what characterised Miss Elstob most was that, as she intimates in her dedication to the Saxon Homily, she was the first Englishwoman that had ever attempted that ancient and obsolete language. She was an excellent linguist in other respects, being not only mistress of her own and the Latin tongue, but also of seven other languages; and she owed all her skill in the learned tongues, except what may be ascribed to her own diligence and application, to her brother. She was withal a good antiquary and divine, as appears evident from her works.

Elizabeth Elstob's first literary venture, after the publication of her translation of Scudery's "Essay on Glory," was

"An English-Saxon Homily on the Birthday of St. Gregory, anciently used in the English-Saxon Church, giving an account of the Conversion of the English from Paganism to Christianity, translated into Modern English, with Notes, etc." London, 1709.

It is a pompous book, in small octavo, with a fine frontispiece, headpieces, tailpieces, and blooming initial letters. She dedicated her work, which was printed by subscription, to Queen Anne. Among the subscribers are Alderman Joseph Atkinson, Thomas Bigge, Mark Browell, Edward Cook, John Cuthbert (the Recorder), Alderman Robert Eden, Dr. Nathaniel Ellison, the Mayor of Newcastle (Robert Fenwick), Matthew Featherston, Ralph Featherstonehaugh, William Hutchinson, William Milbourne, John Ord, Alderman Nicholas Ridley, Jonathan Roddam, Dorothy Stote, and Alderman Matthew White—all well-known inhabitants of Newcastle.

In 1715, Miss Elstob printed, with a fulsome dedication to the Princess of Wales,

"The Rudiments of Grammar for the English-Saxon Tongue, first given in English; with an Apology for the Study of Northern Antiquities, being very useful towards the understanding our ancient English Poets and other Writers." 4to.

In both the Homily and the Grammar, peering through the initial letter "G," is the portrait of the authoress, from which ours has been copied.

Mr. Astle had in his collection a MS. volume, chiefly in the handwriting of Elizabeth Elstob, but partly in that of her brother, entitled, "Collectanea quædam Anglo-Saxonica." And in Dr. Pegge's transcript of the "Textus Roffensis" there was the Saxon alphabet on the reverse of the second folio, signed E.E., which is evidently her name. It appears also, from a work of her brother's, that she had joined with him in preparing and adorning an edition of Gregory's Pastoral; a work which was probably intended to include both the original and the Saxon version of it. And she herself states in her manuscripts that she had transcribed all the hymns from an ancient MS. belonging to the Church of Sarum.

Elizabeth Elstob.

Elizabeth Elstob is described by Edward Rowe Mores in his dissertation on letter-founders as "the *indefessa comes* of her brother's studies, a female student in the university—a Northern lady of an ancient family and a genteel fortune; but she pursued too much the drug called learning, and in that pursuit failed of being careful of any one thing necessary."

In the preface to the Anglo-Saxon Grammar, Miss Elstob mentions a work of larger extent upon which she was engaged, and which had amply experienced Dr. Hicks's encouragement. This

was a Saxon Homilarium, or a collection of the English-Saxon Homilies of Ælfric, Archbishop of Canterbury. It was a noble though unsuccessful enterprise. This work was to have been printed in a pretentious folio at the Theatre in Oxford (five or more of the Homilies were wrought off in a very beautiful manner), and was to have borne the following title:—"The English-Saxon Homilies of Ælfric, Archbishop of Canterbury, who flourished in the latter end of the Tenth Century and the beginning of the Eleventh. Being a Course of Sermons collected out of the writings of the ancient Latin Fathers, containing the Doctrines, etc., of the Church of England before the Norman Conquest, and showing its Purity from many of those Popish Innovations and Corruptions which were afterwards introduced into the Church. Now first printed and translated into the Language of the present Times by Elizabeth Elstob."

But this excellent woman, notwithstanding her profound learning and masculine abilities, was very unfortunate in life. After the death of her brother, and the ill-success of her studies, she was obliged to depend upon her friends for subsistence, but did not meet with that generosity she might reasonably have expected, Bishop Smalridge being the only person from whom she received relief. After being supported by his friendly hand for a while, she at last could not bear the thought of continuing a burthen to one who was not very opulent himself; and, being shocked with the cold respect of some and the haughty scorn of others, she determined to retire to a place unknown, and to try to get her bread by teaching children to read and work; and she settled for that purpose at Evesham, in Worcestershire.

At Evesham she led at first an uncomfortable and penurious life; but, growing acquainted afterwards with the gentry of the town, her affairs mended, though she still scarcely had time to eat, much less for study. She became known at this time to Mr. Ballard, before mentioned; and about the year 1733, Mrs. Chapone, the wife of a clergyman of French extraction, who kept a private boarding-school at Stanton, in Gloucestershire, made her a visit. Mrs. Chapone, not being in circumstances to assist her herself, wrote a circular-letter to some friends, in order to promote a subscription in her behalf. This letter, describing her merit, her extensive learning, her printed works, her ease and affluence till her brother's death, her multiplied distresses afterwards, and the meekness and patience with which she had borne them, had the desired effect, and an annuity of twenty guineas was raised for her. A lady soon afterwards showed Mrs. Chapone's letter

to Queen Caroline, who, recollecting her name, on account of the dedication before mentioned, and delighted with the opportunity of taking such eminent merit under her protection, said she would allow her £20 per annum, "but," added she, "as she is so proper to be mistress of a boarding-school for young ladies of a higher rank, I will, instead of an annual allowance, send her £100 now, and repeat the same at the end of every five years."

On the death of Queen Caroline, in 1737, Miss Elstob was recommended to the Dowager Duchess of Portland; and her Grace, to whose father, the Earl of Oxford, she had been well known, appointed her governess to her children. This was in the year 1739, and from that period the letters she wrote to Mr. Ballard, which are now in the Bodleian Library, are observed to have a more sprightly turn, and she seems to have been happy in her situation. She died at an advanced age, in her Grace's service, May 30th, 1756, and was buried at St. Margaret's, Westminster.

Mr. Ballard, in a letter to Joseph Ames, dated September 13th, 1737, states that in addition to the MS. of Miss Elstob's life of her brother, he had "a dozen pieces of this accomplished gentlewoman's drawings, amongst which are the pictures of herself, Dr. Hickes, Mr. Dryden, Johannes Ogilvius, etc., very masterly done, and, as I am told, are extraordinary true likenesses."

## Richard Emeldon,

EIGHTEEN TIMES MAYOR, AND SEVEN TIMES M.P. FOR NEWCASTLE.

OFTEN as re-election to municipal honours occurred in Newcastle in former days, only one person gained the distinction of being appointed upwards of a dozen times Mayor of the town. George Carr filled the office upon eleven occasions; the Mayoralties of Henry Carliol numbered ten; more than one popular burgess counted six or seven elections to that exalted position. But Richard Emeldon, who flourished during the reigns of the three Plantagenet Edwards, overtopped them all. This honoured burgess became Mayor of Newcastle eighteen times. For nearly thirty years he must have been a central figure in the public life of Tyneside.

Perpetual wars with Scotland brought the Plantagenet sovereigns frequently to Newcastle. It was during one of the later visits of

Edward I. to the town that Richard Emeldon made his first appearance in local history. His Majesty had been informed that the English Merchant Adventurers were willing to be placed upon the same footing as merchant strangers—*i.e.*, to pay a general charge called petty customs, in lieu of prisage, murage, pontage, etc. To ascertain the truth of this statement, and to elicit the opinions of the trading classes generally upon the matter, he issued writs summoning a certain number of citizens and burgesses from all parts of the realm to assemble at York on the 25th of June, 1303. Richard Emeldon was one of the burgesses chosen by the commonalty of Newcastle to represent them at the conference. He attended, it may be supposed; if he did, he would learn how greatly the king had been deceived. "With one voice and consent, the citizens and burgesses refused to agree to the customs granted by the merchants strangers, or any other except those anciently due and payable."

The year following, Emeldon was appointed one of the four bailiffs of Newcastle, and at Michaelmas, 1306, and again in 1307, he was elected Mayor. A break of three years occurred during which Nicholas Carliol held the post of honour, and then, at the mayor-choosing in 1311, the burgesses, who had sent Emeldon to Parliament in August, elected him Mayor for the third time. For seven successive years afterwards he occupied that important position—seven years which witnessed notable events in local history. While he was Mayor in 1312, King Edward II. came to Newcastle with his favourite, Piers Gaveston, and made from Tynemouth that ignominious flight to Scarborough Castle, which ended in Gaveston's execution; while he was Mayor in 1314 the great army of England, the whole feudal force of the kingdom, came through Northumberland to the disastrous defeat of Bannockburn. His fellow-burgesses elected him member of the Parliament which met at York in September, 1314, and he would probably have been sent to the Parliament of January, 1314-15, if the threatening attitude of the Scots had not forced the Northumbrian sheriff to return the writs blank, with a notification that not a man could be spared from either the county or the boroughs within the county. For, flushed by their success at Bannockburn the Scots breathed threatenings and slaughters, till all Northumberland, and great part of the bishopric, were in a state of alarm, and the people were suffering great privation. So pressing were their needs that on the 6th May, 1315, the Mayor obtained special protection from the king for a servant of his

who was being sent beyond the seas for the purpose of purchasing corn and other victuals to supply the necessities of the townspeople.

About this time Richard Emeldon added to his other possessions in the neighbourhood of Newcastle a moiety of the manor of Jesmond. Thus, being a substantial citizen, in good repute with the king, he was able to obtain for the town some little acknowledgment of the services which the burgesses had performed, the privations they had suffered, and the losses they had sustained, during his Mayoralties. His Majesty granted to Newcastle a renewal of King John's charter, with some additional favours, confirmed the foundation charter of the Merchant Adventurers with new privileges, and sent to the inhabitants of the county forty casks of wine, of which Emeldon was to be one of three distributors. He would have been selected as a keeper of the truce with Scotland if the Pope's bull, commanding a cessation of warfare, had not been disregarded. But peace after Bannockburn seemed to be out of the question. Just before Richard Emeldon completed his tenth Mayoralty, King Edward was in the town again, and the encampments of the army, marching towards Scotland, covered the fields of South Gosforth.

From Michaelmas, 1319, till the same period three years later, Emeldon had riddance of the burden, the anxiety, the troubles of Newcastle Mayoralty. High in the confidence of his sovereign, he was appointed keeper of the castles, lands, and tenements of the Earl of Lancaster and other condemned nobles in Northumberland and Durham. In the document conferring upon him this trust, he is styled "chief custos of the town of Newcastle," and such, in his old office of Mayor, he became for another term of years from the municipal choosing day of 1322. On this occasion, his re-elections numbered four—extending his occupancy of the chair to the autumn of 1327. Again he is found sending to foreign parts for corn and other food, and receiving his reward in the appointment (June, 1323) of collector of customs on wines in the port of Newcastle and along the coast to Berwick. At the beginning of 1324 he was sent a third time to Parliament; near the middle of it, the king, "in part allowance for his long services, and great losses in the wars with Scotland," granted him the manor of Silksworth, in the bishopric, forfeited by the attainder of Robert Holland. This gift was disputed when Edward III. came to the throne, but that monarch confirmed it, and promised that no loss to the recipient should, under any circumstances, be allowed to accrue. In 1325 Emeldon went again to

Parliament, and in 1328, having laid down once more his robes of office as Mayor, he was twice elected M.P. The following autumn, that of 1329, saw him in the Mayor's chair for the sixteenth time. Then followed another break of a year. At Michaelmas, 1331, he entered upon his final term of municipal honour. In January, 1333, the king, yielding to a petition of the burgesses, gave the town a charter by which the mayors were created Royal escheators. The function of an escheator was to render account for lands and profits falling to the Crown by forfeiture, or by the death of a tenant of the Crown without heirs. Thus reads the document:—"Know ye that for good and laudable service to us and our progenitors, by our beloved Richard Emeldon, now mayor of our town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and other burgesses, many times rendered, with the assent of the prelates, earls, barons, and others in our present Parliament assembled, we give, and this our charter confirms, to the said burgesses, their heirs and successors, that the mayor of the said town for the time being shall be the escheator of us and our heirs in the same town and its liberties, and that he shall make and exercise the office of escheator in the same without interference in any manner of our escheators or sub-escheators for the time being, or other the minister of us, our heirs, or others; so that of the issues and profits thence arising he shall respond to us as shall be due."

In the early part of the same year that saw him made escheator, he received the appointment of collector of subsidies for the county of Northumberland; shortly after the escheatorship was conferred upon him, in the middle of his eighteenth Mayoralty, he died. Contemplating his approaching end, he had made provision for the repose of his soul by endowing the chantry of St. John the Baptist and St. John the Apostle, in the church of St. Nicholas. He obtained letters patent from the king to erect a building upon a piece of vacant ground over against the chapel of St. Thomas upon Tyne Bridge, that he might present it to three chaplains to pray for him, and for the souls of his wives, his father and mother, etc., "every day at the altar of the Baptist and the Apostle in St. Nicholas' Church." On the anniversary of his death, these chaplains were to honour his memory by a solemn tolling of the bells and devoutly singing by note, and, after the anniversary mass, one of them was to distribute among a hundred and sixty poor people the sum of six shillings and eightpence for ever.

At the inquisition after his decease, it was found that Emeldon

possessed the manors of Jesemuth (Jesmond), South Goseford, Elswick, Heaton-Jesemuth, Whitley and Shotton, divers lands and tenements in Throcklawe, Myndrum, Wark-on-Tweed, Wooler, Alnwick, Alemouth, Dunstan, Emeldon, Newton-on-the-Moor, and seven or eight other places in Northumberland, besides property in Newcastle. His second wife, Christiana, survived him. She had her thirds in Newton-on-the-Moor, Dunstanborough, etc., and, after marrying Sir William de Plumpton, knight, died in 1363. His daughters, being well dowered, were all united to men of position. Agnes became the wife of Peter Graper the younger, who was several times bailiff and mayor of Newcastle, and at least once member of Parliament. Maud, or Matilda, married Richard Acton, who filled the office of Mayor during the interval between Emeldon's death and the end of the municipal year, and after his decease she entered into a matrimonial alliance with Alexander, Lord of Hilton. Jane became the second wife of Sir John Strivelyn, a wealthy knight; Alice, the youngest, married Nicholas Sabraham. Long after his death Newcastle preserved the memory of his long municipal reign in a messuage called "Emeldon Place," or, as Bourne calls it, "Emeldon Barn," situate at the head of what is now Percy Street, "near the hospital of the Blessed Mary Magdalene, without the New Gate."

## James Everett,

METHODIST REFORMER.

FORTY years ago, when the Wesleyan Methodist body was in the throes of a great disruption, no man was better known in what may be called the religious life of Great Britain than the Rev. James Everett. A genuine Northumbrian, hard-headed and clear-headed, sturdy and independent, he practically led the movement which cleft the Wesleyan denomination asunder, and established the organisation which is now known as United Free Methodism.

Mr. Everett was born at Alnwick, on the 16th of May, 1784. He came of a good Methodist stock, his maternal grandfather, James Bowmaker, being the builder of the first Wesleyan chapel erected in his native town. In early boyhood he was sent to the new school opened at the foot of Pottergate, Alnwick, by the brothers John and Edward Bruce, and the knowledge which he acquired there was sup-

plemented at the Sunday-school held in the Methodist chapel. At that place of worship he heard the venerable John Wesley, then on his last visit to the North, a privilege of which in after years he cherished a joyous remembrance. As soon as he was able to earn a living he was sent to assist a local tobacconist and tallow-chandler named Scott, and when his employer emigrated he was bound apprentice to James Elder, to learn the trade of "flax-dresser and grocer." Full of spirit, frolicsome, and an adept at practical joking, he caused his mother much concern, and gave his master no small amount of trouble. But before his apprenticeship ended he was brought under religious influences stronger than those of his mother, and, joining the Methodists, he determined to become a local preacher. In furtherance of this design, he left Alnwick at the expiration of his apprenticeship, and obtaining employment at Sunderland, began evangelistic work among the Wesleyan communities upon the river Wear. His labours met with great acceptance, and before long he was induced to qualify for the regular ministry. On the 27th of May, 1807, he preached a trial sermon before eleven travelling ministers at the Orphan House, Newcastle, and being admitted a probationer, was appointed to the newly-formed circuit of North Shields, under the superintendence of venerable Duncan McAllum.

Having chosen his vocation, Mr. Everett endeavoured to repair the defects of early education by self-culture. In that desirable pursuit he was assisted by two well-known Newcastle men—William A. Hails and Charles Newby Wawn. Under their guidance he studied theology, took up Latin, Greek, and Hebrew, and made excursions into science and general literature, the while he preached, conducted classes, visited families, and discoursed in the open air. Labours so abundant soon attracted attention. Tyneside pitmen gave him the sobriquet of "The Hell-fire Lad," and flocked to hear him. Before twelve months had passed away the circuit contained two new chapels, and two others in process of enlargement, while the fellowship had received an addition of 350 members.

From North Shields, Mr. Everett went successively to Belper, New Mills, and Barnsley, and his probation being over he was married, 1st August, 1810, at the parish church of Sunderland, to Elizabeth Hutchinson. Received into full connection at the Conference of 1811, he travelled in various circuits till, in 1821, when on duty at Sheffield, his health gave way, and he was compelled to seek

repose as a supernumerary. For a time he took charge of the Wesleyan Book Room in London, but at the beginning of 1823 he resigned it, and commenced business in Sheffield as a bookseller and stationer. Here it was that he entered into temporary partnership with John Blackwell, as already described in vol. i. p. 324. From Sheffield he removed his business to Manchester, and there remained till 1834, when Conference ordered him to resume pulpit work, and appointed him to the Newcastle circuit. Amongst Newcastle Methodists he laboured for five years, and then was removed to York, in which city his health again broke down, and he was once more placed

on the list of supernumeraries. This time he did not enter into commercial pursuits, but accepted preaching engagements, regulating his own labours, and accommodating his arrangements to the necessities of his condition.

Being a man of independent thought, a keen debater, and a fearless critic, Mr. Everett, from an early stage of his ministerial career, had distinguished himself in controversy. He was continually writing pamphlets, dashing off satirical leaflets, or composing sarcastic rhymes, against those whose views did not agree with his own. When, in 1834, the ruling powers of Methodism desired to establish

a theological institute, he saw, or fancied he saw, in the proposal a "centralising job," and, in an anonymous publication, entitled "The Disputants," he attacked the scheme in a style that gave great offence to the leading lights of the denomination. Suspected of the authorship, he avowed it, and thenceforward he was regarded by the dominant party as a dangerous man. The feeling thus engendered was intensified by the publication, in 1840, on the eve of the first Conference held in Newcastle, of a book entitled "Wesleyan Takings." This book contained written portraits or sketches of a hundred prominent Wesleyan ministers. It was issued anonymously; yet everybody knew the writer. No preacher in the Methodist community, except Mr. Everett, was capable of producing such scathing satire, such veiled sarcasm, such humorous banter; and it was not supposed that any layman was equal to the effort. Conference condemned the book, the upper circles of Methodism condemned the author, and nothing serious came of either condemnation. But when "Wesleyan Takings" was followed by a series of printed circulars called "Fly Sheets," in which the whole administration of Methodism was attacked, and sweeping reforms were demanded, a furious storm of indignation burst forth. Suspicion fell upon Everett at once, and after many attempts to find out the writer by other means, Conference called upon him in 1849 to answer the pointed question, "Are you the author of the 'Fly Sheets'?" He declined to give a direct answer, whereupon the Conference, after a long and animated debate, expelled him from the ministry. A few days later the Revs. Samuel Dunn and William Griffith shared the same fate.

The expulsion of these three ministers created much excitement throughout the Wesleyan community. Memorials and protests poured in upon the Methodist Sanhedrim from thousands of members; deputations were sent to its sittings, "Wesleyan Reform" meetings were held here, there, and everywhere, but all appeals, personal or otherwise, were fruitless. Conference persisted in its course, refused to yield an inch, saw, without relenting, a rival institution in Methodism spring into active life, and complacently suffered the loss in five years of several chapels and nearly 100,000 members.

After his expulsion Mr. Everett occupied himself in building up and consolidating the movement to which the "Fly Sheets" had given vitality. Many of its warmest friends and adherents were to

be found upon the banks of the Tyne, and in the pit villages of Northumberland and Durham. It was advisable that he should dwell among his own people, and he removed to Newcastle. The Rev. Richard Chew (from whose "James Everett: A Biography," the facts herein contained are taken) states that he came from York to No. 4 St. Thomas's Crescent, Newcastle, on Friday, the 22nd July, 1853. All hope of reforming the constitution of Methodism, and of returning to the old fold, had been by this time abandoned. Everett saw no chance of reconciliation, and turned his thoughts to the question of forming the outlying branches of Methodism into one united body. Although approaching his seventieth year, he worked assiduously in that direction, though it was not until 1857 that his hopes were realised. In July of that year an amalgamation was effected. The new body took the name of "The United Methodist Free Churches"; and with a proper sense of the fitness of things, they elected Mr. Everett to be their first president.

In April, 1859, Mr. Everett removed to Sunderland, where his wife had some property, and that town, which had seen the beginning of his career, saw the end of it. First to depart was she who for fifty-five years had shared the fortunes and misfortunes of his life. After her death, on the 17th of July, 1865, the veteran retired from pulpit work, and on the 10th May, 1872, within four days of his 88th birthday, he finished his course and entered into rest.

So far we have hurriedly traced Mr. Everett's career as a minister, and a reformer of ministerial abuses. But he was a many-sided man, with respectable attainments in various departments of culture and research. As a preacher he was always popular. A contemporary writer describes his pulpit discourses as of the highest order—"rich in evangelical sentiment, abounding in apt and forceful illustrations, and while occasionally distinguished by quaintness of language and thought, always full of poetic imagery. His manner was calm and dignified, especially at the beginning, while his animated address and fervid appeals as he warmed with his subject showed that he was not a mere actor, but felt the responsibility of his office. On the platform he was still more effective. Epigram, antithesis, simile, and sarcasm, dry humour and withering satire came from his lips in a mingled stream, interspersed with flashes of brilliancy which irradiated the subject, and dazzled and delighted the hearer. His voice was one of great compass, full of flexibility. In his rapid surprises and transitions he reminded one of Daniel

O'Connell; he had all that great speaker's fearlessness, unbounded self-command, and perfect mastery over hearers. When once seen and heard he was a man to be remembered."

Mr. William Lockey Harle wrote of him in the *Northern Examiner* (1855) as a man who combined strong, sound sense with a highly poetic and vivid imagination. "Adam Clarke excelled him as a scholar, Richard Watson as a metaphysician, Robert Newton as an elocutionist, and Jabez Bunting as a debater; but none of them were equal to him in the skilful adaptation of the 'word spoken' to the capacity and exigencies of the persons addressed. He could reason with the logician, argue with the controversialist, delight a refined auditory by polished sarcasm and classic lore, or condescend to men of low estate by the utterance of plain truths, forcibly illustrated by familiar allusions."

At one period of his life Mr. Everett ranked amongst what was commonly known as the "Sheffield Poets"—a local coterie at whose head stood his friend James Montgomery—and although the prediction of a Berwick journalist that the names of Montgomery and Everett would go down to posterity together as those of "Christian poets who dared to sing of the beauty of holiness when trifles were the song of the age," has not been fulfilled, yet some of his effusions, as the Rev. George Gilfillan remarked, are "full of sweetness and fire."

Throughout his career Mr. Everett was a painstaking antiquary, a discriminating purchaser of old books, and an insatiable collector of coins, medals, and autographs. When he removed to Newcastle in 1853, and was becoming an active member of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, he wrote in his diary:—"Put my finishing hand to the work of cataloguing my books, and found my library to comprise 3,470 volumes, exclusive of manuscripts and several packages of pamphlets. These works were well selected, touching almost every department of literature, except novels and romances. Many of the works and editions are exceedingly rare and curious. I left my natural and other curiosities, foreign and domestic, to be catalogued afterwards, and also my coins and medals, the latter comprising Greek, Roman, Hebrew, Persian, Ceylonese, Egyptian, British, Saxon, English, French, Spanish, Portuguese, Italian, Danish, Russian, American, etc. My paintings, about seventy in number, well selected, I sold in Manchester in 1851, and regretted after I had done it."

In youth Mr. Everett had been fond of drawing and sketching, and to the end of his days he was imbued with a fine artistic feeling. It was at his suggestion that Henry Perlee Parker painted, in 1839, his Methodist Centenary picture—the "Escape of John Wesley from the fire at Epworth Parsonage." Mr. Everett was the model from which the artist drew the attitudes of the leading personages upon the canvas, and his portrait is introduced as that of one of the rescuers who, standing between the dog and the group below the window, is ready with outstretched arms to receive the child from its first deliverer.

As a man of letters and a writer of books, Mr. Everett enjoyed a high degree of popularity. Some of his works, running through edition after edition, are still read by delighted Sunday-school children and by admirers of religious biography, while others not so favoured are prized by local collectors and compilers of local history. The more important of his contributions to denominational and general literature are these—

"A Reply to Douglas's Pamphlets against Methodism." 1815.

"A Poetical Tribute to the Memory of George the Third." 1820.

"Winter Scenes, or the Unwin Family: a Tale." 1822.

"Historical Sketches of Wesleyan Methodism in Sheffield and its Vicinity." 1823.

"The Head Piece, or Phrenology opposed to Divine Revelation. By James the Less." 1828.

"The Village Blacksmith, or Piety and Usefulness Exemplified in a Memoir of the Life of Samuel Hick, etc." 1830.

"Edwin, or Northumbria's Royal Fugitive Restored." 1831.

"The Wallsend Miner, or a Brief Memoir of the Life of William Crister." 1835.

"Adam Clarke Pourtrayed." 3 vols. 1843-49.

"The Polemic Divine, or Memoirs of the Life, Writings, and Opinions of the Rev. Daniel Isaac." 1839.

"Memoirs of the Life, Character, and Ministry of William Dawson, late of Barnbow, near Leeds." 1841.

"Letters Selected from the Correspondence of William Dawson." 1842.

"Memoirs of the Life and Writings of James Montgomery." By John Holland and James Everett. 7 vols. 1854.

"The Camp and the Sanctuary, or the Power of Religion as Exemplified in the Army and the Church." [Life of Thomas Hasker, of Newcastle.] 1859.

"Gatherings from the Pit Heaps, or the Allens of Shiney Row." 1861.

"The Midshipman and the Minister." [Life of the Rev. A. A. Rees, of Sunderland.] 1862.

"Methodism as It Is." 1863-66. [With an Appendix in 1868.]

# Christopher Fawcett,

TWICE RECORDER OF NEWCASTLE.

"We ought always to make choice of persons of such worth and honour for our friends, that, if they should ever cease to be so, they will not abuse our confidence, nor give us cause to fear them as enemies."—ADDISON.

THE Recordership of Newcastle, a post of honour rather than of emolument, has been held at various times by notable men. In these pages have been already outlined the careers of two of them —Sir George Baker, one of the negotiators at the siege of Newcastle, and Edward Collingwood, the scholarly representative of an ancient and honourable Northumberland family, and now, in alphabetical order, comes Christopher Fawcett, a Recorder who brought upon himself considerable notoriety in the noisy controversies that raged between Hanoverians and Jacobites in the reign of George the Second.

Christopher Fawcett, eldest son of John Fawcett, Recorder of Durham, belonged to a race of yeomen and landed proprietors that, established for many generations at Boldon, Chester-le-Street, Lambton, and Sunderland (in which latter place the fine thoroughfare of Fawcett Street preserves their memory), possessed affluence, and exercised influence throughout the northern division of the County Palatine. He was baptised in the cathedral city on the 2nd of July, 1713—the year which produced the Treaty of Utrecht, settled the Protestant succession, and brought to within a few months of its close the reign of Queen Anne. Having received preliminary training at home, under the eye of his father, he was sent to Exeter College, Oxford, where he matriculated on the 2nd of May, 1729. Thence, destined for his father's profession, he proceeded to London, and becoming a student of Gray's Inn, was in due course, on the 8th of February, 1734-35, called to the Bar.

Mr. Fawcett's career as a student had been free and easy. He was not one of those who in their thirst for knowledge and for fame learn how to "scorn delights and live laborious days." His companions, scions of good families for the most part, belonged to that class of studious youth which works hard and reads hard when duty impels, and sows wild oats in the intervals. But when he had

become qualified to follow his profession he abandoned the wild pursuits of student life, and returning to the North, where his family influence lay, settled as a practising barrister in Newcastle. Sociable and well connected, he made friends; expert and clever, he attracted clients; before long he had acquired a good, and no doubt lucrative, practice. Among other aids to promotion he cultivated the goodwill of the municipal authorities—cultivated it with such success that, upon a vacancy occurring in the Recordership of the town by the death of William Cuthbert (August the 29th, 1746), he was unanimously appointed to that honourable office.

At the time of Mr. Fawcett's appointment, that desperate enterprise in which the adherents of the Stuarts made a final effort to overthrow the Hanoverian dynasty had but recently received a crushing defeat. Situated in the very centre of the rebellion, Newcastle remained faithful to the reigning family. The governing body and the great majority of the townspeople were Hanoverian to the backbone. They pitied, but sternly refused to follow, the Earl of Derwentwater, General Forster, and other local leaders of the insurrection, who had hoped to seduce them from their allegiance. And when the insurrection had been put down they kept a watch upon Jacobites and Papists, reported their doings to the Privy Council, and helped to bring them within the range of penalty and punishment. In this patriotic endeavour Mr. Fawcett, who in the meantime had been made a Bencher of his Inn, rendered assistance. Not content, however, with denouncing local suspects, he aimed at high game, and his weapon recoiled upon himself with most disastrous consequences.

Upon the decease, in 1751, of Frederick, Prince of Wales, eldest son of George II., palace squabbles and intrigues of a serious character broke out respecting the governance and tuition of the heir to the throne—Prince George, afterwards George III. Soon after his father's death, a household had been assigned to the future monarch, in which Lord Harcourt was made governor, and Andrew Stone, a man of ability, who had long been private secretary to the Duke of Newcastle, sub-governor; while Thomas Hayter, Bishop of Norwich, filled the important office of preceptor, and one Scott, a strong Tory and Jacobite, that of sub-preceptor. The Princess-Dowager, Prince George's mother, had taken an aversion to Harcourt and Hayter, and in sundry little disagreements had sided with Stone and Scott. Lord Harcourt resented this treatment,

complained that dangerous notions and arbitrary principles were being taught to the Prince by his preceptors, and in December, 1752, finding his warnings disregarded, resigned his office. The bishop followed his example, and the king, vexed by the clamours and intrigues of the Court, accepted their resignation. Naturally enough, the education and control of a prince, who would in due time become the reigning sovereign, excited great public interest. All sorts of rumours were circulated respecting the impending change, and while the public mind was in this state of tension, the episode occurred which gave to Mr. Fawcett an unenviable notoriety. Various versions of the story have been published, but the following narrative gives the facts in brief:—

"Lord Ravensworth posted up to town the first week in February, 1753, and acquainted Mr. Pelham, the Prime Minister, that he had strong evidence of Jacobitism to produce against Stone, the sub-governor; Dr. Johnson, Bishop of Gloucester, who had been recommended as preceptor; and the Right Honourable William Murray, Solicitor-General, afterwards the famous Lord Mansfield. Mr. Pelham would gladly have overlooked the matter, but it could not be stifled, for Lord Ravensworth had told his story to the Duke of Devonshire and many others. The Cabinet were compelled, therefore, to hear his important revelation, which amounted to this and no more—that Mr. Fawcett, Recorder of Newcastle, dining at the house of Dr. Cowper, Dean of Durham, had, in his lordship's hearing, expressed satisfaction that his old acquaintance, Dr. Johnson, had prospered so well under the reigning dynasty, for that he recollected the time when they both attended evening parties, and drank the health of the Pretender with Mr. Murray and Mr. Stone. The Cabinet devoted three whole days to hearing Lord Ravensworth and the Dean of Durham tell their curious story, and then, on the 16th February, Mr. Fawcett himself was brought into the Council Chamber and examined. He was in extreme terror and confusion; but with reluctance and uncertainty he confessed that the words he had uttered at Durham were true to this extent, namely, that about twenty years before, Murray, then a young lawyer, Stone, then in indigence, and himself used to sup frequently at one Vernon's, a rich mercer, a noted Jacobite, and a lover of ingenious young men; that the conversation was wont to be partly literature, partly treason, and that a customary health, taken on bended knee, was 'The Chevalier and Lord Dunbar.' He hesitated and trembled greatly

about signing his deposition, said he was fitter to die than make an affidavit, and altogether cut a very sorry figure in the business. Then the Cabinet sent for Stone, who denied the truth of the allegation, and said he was ready to swear that he had never drank the Pretender's health even when in the most Jacobitish company—not even when he was a student at Oxford. Murray, the Solicitor-General, proudly objected to have the depositions read to him, saying that they must be lies, and, when they were read, he took a solemn oath that the charge was absolutely false. When the business had occupied the Cabinet nine or ten days, they unanimously reported to the King that Fawcett's account was altogether false and scandalous."

Bubb Dodington, in his "Diary," states that the "exact truth" of the matter is that "Mr. Fosset [Fawcett], Messrs. Murray and Stone, were much acquainted, if not schoolfellows in early life. Their fortune led them different ways: Fosset's was to be a country lawyer and recorder of Newcastle. Johnson, Bishop of Gloucester, was one of their associates. On the day the King's birthday was kept they dined at the Dean of Durham's at Durham, this Fosset, Lord Ravensworth, Major Davison, and one or two more, who retired after dinner into another room: the conversation turning upon the late Bishop of Gloucester's preferments, it was asked who was to have his Prebend of Durham: the Dean said that the last news from London was that Dr. Johnson was to have it: Fosset said he was glad that Johnson got on so well, for he remembered him a Jacobite several years ago, and that he used to be with a relation of his who was very disaffected, one Vernon, a mercer, where the Pretender's health was frequently drunk. This, passing among a few familiar acquaintance, was thought no more of at the time: it spread, however, so much in the North and reached Town in such a manner that Mr. Pelham thought it necessary to desire Mr. Vane, who was a friend to Fosset, and who employed him in his business, to write to Fosset, to know if he had said this of Johnson, and if he had, if it was true. This letter was written on the 9th of January; it came to Newcastle the Friday morning. Fosset was much surprised, but the post going out in a few hours after its arrival, he immediately acknowledged the letter by a long, but not very explicit answer. This Friday happened to be the club-day of the neighbouring gentlemen at Newcastle—as soon as Lord Ravensworth, who was a patron and employer of Fosset, came into the town

Fosset acquainted him with the extraordinary letter he had received: he told him that he had already answered it, and being asked to shew the copy, said he kept none, but desired Lord Ravensworth to recollect if he held such a conversation at the Deanry of Durham the day appointed for the birthday. Ravensworth recollected nothing at all of it. They went to the club together, and Ravensworth went the next morning to see his mother in the neighbourhood, with whom he staid till Monday; but this thing, of such consequence, lying upon his thoughts, he returned by Newcastle. He and Fosset had another conversation, and in endeavouring to refresh each other's memory about this dreadful delinquency of Johnson, Fosset said he could not recollect positively, at such a distance of time, whether Johnson drank those healths, or had been present at the drinking of them, but that Murray and Stone had done both, several times. Ravensworth was excessively alarmed at this, with relation to Stone, on account of his office about the Prince; and thus the affair of Johnson was quite forgotten, and the episode became the principal part. There were many more conferences between Ravensworth and Fosset upon this subject, in which the latter always persisted that Stone and Murray were present at the drinking, and did drink those healths. . . . Fosset comes up, as usual, about his law business, and is examined by Messrs. Pelham and Vane, who never had heard of Murray or Stone being named: he is asked and answers only with relation to Johnson, never mentioning either of the others; but the love of his country, his king, and posterity, burned so strongly in Ravensworth's bosom that he could have no rest till he had discovered this enormity. Accordingly, when he came to town, he acquainted the ministry and almost all his great friends with it and insisted upon the removal of Stone. The ministry would have slighted it, as it deserved, but as he persisted and had told so many of it they could not help laying it before the King, who, though he himself slighted it, was advised to examine it, which examination produced this most injudicious proceeding in Parliament."

In the face of these proceedings, and under the ban of the exposure which followed, Mr. Fawcett's retention of the Recordership of Newcastle was impossible. Declared to have borne false witness himself, he could not sit in the seat of judgment and inflict punishment upon other offenders. Resigning the office, therefore, to Edward Collingwood, who had given it over to William Cuthbert

years before, he devoted his time and talents to his chamber practice, seeking in hard work relief from the pressure of defeat, and deriving from the sympathies of his friends consolation in the darkness of disaster. For he was not without active friends and sympathisers throughout the unpleasant episode which had thrown a shadow upon his life. There were those who held that the storm provoked by his heedless revelations had fallen with undue severity upon his own head; there were some who considered that he had been made a scapegoat undeservedly; there were others who believed that his original accusations were true. Long afterwards, when Mr. Murray had been raised to the bench as Baron Mansfield, and Lord Chief Justice of England, Junius reminded him of the suspicions which Mr. Fawcett had incautiously revealed. "The liberal spirit of youth prevailed over your native discretion. Your zeal in the cause of an unhappy prince was expressed with the sincerity of wine, and some of the solemnities of religion." Thus wrote the Great Unknown—implying thereby that in his opinion the allegations of the indiscreet Recorder were not so inaccurate as the Cabinet of 1753 had declared them to be.

Four years after his resignation Mr. Fawcett married. His wife was Winifred, daughter of Cuthbert Lambert, M.D., and sister of the youth whose remarkable escape at Sandyford Bridge, a couple of years later, gave to the locality the name of "Lambert's Leap." In comparative retirement he outlived the consequences of his imprudence, and when, in 1769, Edward Collingwood retired for the second time, he was reappointed to the Recordership. The Corporation conferred upon him, shortly afterwards, the honorary freedom of the town. Restored to his judicial functions, he filled the office with dignity and credit till he had passed the age of fourscore. He resigned it finally at Michaelmas, 1794, and on the 10th May following, aged 82, he died and was buried at St. John's, Newcastle.

Shortly before Mr. Fawcett's re-election, on the 3rd January, 1767, his next brother, Richard Fawcett, D.D., was appointed Vicar of Newcastle. Vicar Fawcett was of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, where he matriculated, August 26th, 1730, aged 15, proceeded B.A. in 1734, M.A. 1738, B.D. 1745, and D.D. 1748. He held the rectory of Ingelstree and Church Eyton in Staffordshire, was one of the king's chaplains-in-ordinary, and chaplain to Dr. Egerton, Bishop of Durham, by whom he was collated, in 1772, to the rectory of

Gateshead, a living which he was allowed to hold, by dispensation, with the vicarage of Newcastle. He was also a prebendary of Durham, where he died on the 30th April, 1782. Baillie, in the "Impartial History of Newcastle," describes him as possessing "no animation in his manner of preaching," but "highly distinguished for a clear, nervous strain of solid reasoning." He preached and published the consecration sermon at the completion of the present St. Anne's Church in 1768; and leased a portion of the vicarage garden for the erection of the Assembly Rooms. These are the only items that local history has preserved concerning him.

## George Fenwick,

SOLDIER AND MEMBER OF PARLIAMENT.

"Pipe of Northumbria, sound!
War pipe of Alnwicke!
Wake the wild hills around,
Summon the Fenwicke!
Percy at Paynim war,
Fenwicke stands foremost;
Scots in array from far,
Swell wide their war-host."

—W. RICHARDSON.

THE "Fenwyke of Northumberland," as we are told in a chapter of local history written by one who bore their name, "were of Saxon origin, and took their cognomen from their ancient fastness in the fen-lands near Stamfordham. By purchase and by marriage with some of the principal families in the county they obtained large possessions, which, from the unsettled state of the times, required the protection of military power. Fierce and resolute in their own character and disposition, they not only sustained the shock of many a Scottish inroad, but were ever ready to avenge real or supposed wrongs by a furious raid into the territories of the enemy. The slogan, or gathering cry of the clan—'A Fenwyke! A Fenwyke!! A Fenwyke!!!' was never heard in vain, and many a Border battle-field bears witness to their deadly strife with their Scottish neighbours."

To attempt an enumeration of all the members of this powerful and prolific race who, from the days of the Norman and Plantagenet

kings to our own, have helped to make history in the North of England, were a task beyond hope of accomplishment. Between Tyne and Tweed the name of Fenwick, like that of Carr, is legion. In the old ballad, "The Raid of the Reidswire," they are described as coming to one of the meetings of the March-wardens in a flock:—

> "I saw, cum merching ower the knows,
> Five hundred Fennicks in a flock,
> With jack and speir and bowis all bent
> And warlike weapons, at their will."

There were Fenwicks everywhere—at Brinkburn and Bywell, Earsdon and Eachwick, Heddon and Kenton, Meldon and Matfen, Newcastle and Offerton, Stanton and Stamfordham, and so on, right down the alphabet of local topography to Whitton and Wallington. At one time or another members of this widely diffused family have filled every position of trust and of honour in the county of Northumberland that sovereign could bestow, burgess award, or professional acquirement achieve.

In the time of the Stuarts, the three leading families of the Northumbrian Fenwicks were settled at Wallington, Stanton, Meldon, and Brinkburn. Wallington, acquired by marriage with the Strothers in the reign of Henry IV., was the seat of the most wealthy and the most powerful branch of the family. They were all three united by ties of consanguinity and intermarriage; but into minute details of their relationships it is unnecessary to enter. Fullest available particulars of their descents and marriages are to be found in the elaborate pedigrees which diversify the pages of Hodgson's "History of Northumberland."

The distinguished Parliamentary soldier who was known during the Civil War as Colonel George Fenwick, belonged to the Brinkburn branch of the great Fenwick family. He was the eldest son of George Fenwick of that place, by Dorothy, daughter of John Forster, of Newham, and was born in 1603—the year in which the throne of England passed from the family of Tudor into that of Stuart. Of his youth and early manhood nothing is recorded. Trained to the profession of arms, his earlier years were no doubt spent in the service of his country. It is said that he had distinguished himself in Ireland, and received £100 from the House of Commons for his meritorious achievements against the rebels in that island. Richardson, in one of his Reprints, suggests that he was an agent of the Puritan lords

Say and Sele and Brooke in New England, where he founded a jurisdiction called Say-brook, and where he lived and presided several years. Be that as it may, he was undoubtedly the George Fenwick who, in 1645, was sent to the Long Parliament by the electors of Morpeth. At the general election in 1640, the members returned for that borough were Sir William Carnaby and John Fenwick, son of the Sir John Fenwick whose biography forms a subsequent chapter. Carnaby, proving to be a Royalist, was disabled to sit by vote of the House; Fenwick was also disabled, and shortly afterwards killed, fighting for the Crown, at the battle of Marston Moor. To fill up the vacancies thus created, Colonel George Fenwick was elected, with John Fiennes as his colleague.

Although the Long Parliament sat continuously, its military members were excused from regular attendance in order that they might help to fight the forces of the Crown and repress local conspiracies against the Commonwealth. Colonel Fenwick was one of the representatives so excused, and he employed his time to some purpose. When, in 1648, Marmaduke Langdale seized Berwick for the Royalists, and, with Colonel Grey, Colonel Tempest, and others, troubled all Northumberland, he was sent, with Colonel Lilburn and Major Sanderson, to repel the advance of the enemy. A letter from Sir Arthur Haselrigg, Governor of Newcastle, informed the House of Commons of the complete success which had attended the campaign. Fenwick and his companions-in-arms came upon the "rebels" at Chollerton, on the 1st of July in that year:—"That Evening they marched towards the Enemy that lay about Eslington and Whittingham, and all along Cocquet water; and, having marched all that night, the next Morning they fell into their Quarters, and they fell in so close from Town to Town for about Seven Miles, that they suffered the Enemy to take no Alarm. There are taken most of the considerable Gentlemen of Northd. and Bishoprick that were the first Beginners of this War, and Encouragers of the Scots to come into England, and at least 300 private soldiers, and between 5 and 600 Horses, and good store of Arms, without the loss of one Man on either side."

Among the captured were the leaders, Grey and Tempest, Sir Francis Ratcliffe and his son, two Collingwoods, Captain Francis Brandling, and members of the great local families of Bellasis, Millet, Shafto, Featherstonehaugh, Bowes, Selby, Hodgson, and Trollop. The House ordered public thanksgiving to be made in

all the churches round about London for this victory, conceiving it to be one of the utmost importance, tending to a speedy and effective pacification of the North-Country. A few days later, on the 9th, Colonel Fenwick and Major Sanderson, uniting their forces, forded the North Tyne at Chollerford, and drove a party of Royalists under Colonel Carr out of Simonburn—Fenwick pursuing them to Haydon Bridge, while the major scoured the country through Haltwhistle to within fourteen miles of Carlisle. Again, at the close of August, the colonel "relieved Holy Island with Necessaries, stormed Fenham Castle, near thereto, in which was a Scotch Garrison, and summoned Haggerston, but there came so many from Berwick that they were constrained to quit it." At the end of the year he was appointed one of the commissioners for the trial of the king, but does not appear to have accepted the office, or to have taken any part in the proceedings.

Colonel Fenwick undertook the governorship of Berwick in the autumn of 1649, and in that capacity the following summer received Cromwell, marching to the "crowning mercy" of Dunbar. It would appear that the colonel marched with him, for he is mentioned in a letter written to the Council from Newcastle by Sir Arthur Haselrigg on the 31st October, 1650, respecting the sufferings of some unfortunate prisoners on their march from Morpeth to Durham:—"On being told into the great cathedral church they were counted to be no more than 3,000, although Col. Fenwick wrote me that there were about 3,500." Thence he accompanied the general to Edinburgh, and took part in the siege of the city—a part so prominent that when the castle was surrendered he was placed in charge of it. In the words of a Scottish historian, the fortress was garrisoned with "English blasphemers under Colonel Fenwick." Cromwell sent him in the February following (1650-51) to demand the surrender of Hume Castle, and there occurred an episode which Carlyle, quoting Whitlocke, has made memorable:—"The governor answered, 'I know not Cromwell, and as for my castle, it is built on a rock.' Whereupon Colonel Fenwick played upon him a little with the great guns. But the governor still would not yield; nay, sent a letter couched in these singular terms:—

'I, William of the Wastle,
Am now in my castle;
And aa the dogs in the town
Shanna gar me gang down.'

So that there remained nothing but opening the mortars upon this William of the Wastle, which did gar him gang down—more fool than he went up."

Returning to Newcastle, Colonel Fenwick received, on the 8th March, 1650-51, the honorary freedom of the town, and in October was appointed by the House of Commons one of eight commissioners to be sent into Scotland to treat with the representatives of that nation for redress of grievances and settlement of outstanding disputes. His name occurs frequently in the Journals of the House at this time as a member of important committees—among others one to consider a Bill for incorporating Scotland into a Commonwealth and Free State with England, and for abolishing the kingly office in that country. He was mixed up, too, in the troubles of John Lilburn, "Freeborn John," as he was called—a man whose inherent obstinacy neither friend nor foe could overcome, nor the terrors of Parliament subdue. With Lilburn's assistance, one Josiah Primat, a leather-seller in London, circulated a petition accusing Colonel Fenwick of complicity in a case of alleged confiscation and jobbery. Primat stated that, being by his under-tenants, George Lilburne, and George Gray the younger, in just and quiet possession of collieries at Harraton, in the county of Durham, called "the five-quarter and nine-quarter coal," and having spent near £2,000 to win the same, which lay drowned and lost from 1642 to 1647, "Sir Arthur Haselrigg, in September, 1649, procuring Colonel Francis Wren, one of the committee of that county, and Colonel George Fenwick to join with him, made an order to sequester the said collieries, under colour of an untrue suggestion that Sir William Armyne had sequestered the same in 1644, as belonging to one Tho. Wray, a Papist delinquent; and, thereupon, the said Sir Arthur violently dispossessed the tenants and seized their goods, and let the said collieries to Colonel Francis Hacker, and several of the officers of his own regiment." The House cleared Colonel Fenwick, Sir Arthur, and Colonel Wren from this formidable charge, voted the petition "false, malicious, and scandalous," condemned it to be burned by the common hangman, and not only directed the petitioner to pay nine thousand pounds, but fined John Lilburn also seven thousand pounds, and ordered him to be banished from the kingdom.

When the Long Parliament was broken up by Cromwell, Colonel Fenwick lost his seat. Being a man of bold and independent spirit, he seems, like his friend and relative, Sir Arthur Haselrigg, to have

fallen into disfavour. It is noticeable that neither he nor Sir Arthur were invited to join the Little, or Barebones, Parliament which followed. But in the summer of 1654, when freedom of representation had been restored to the constituencies, and again in August, 1656 (described as "Governor of the garrison of Leith"), he was returned member for Berwick. To this latter Parliament three Northumbrian Fenwicks were elected—William of Wallington, and Robert of Bedlington, for the county of Northumberland, and Colonel George for the Border borough. Death, however, soon reduced their number; the colonel survived his return but a few months. He was elected on the 11th August, but did not leave Berwick till the 8th September, when, according to Scott's history of the town, the Chamberlain was ordered to take sugar and wine to his house, and the Guild would drink with him before he departed. This was the final leave-taking. He died on the 15th of March, 1656-57, and was buried in that towerless and otherwise peculiar edifice, the parish church of Berwick, which, as we read upon his monument, he had been a principal instrument in erecting.

"Col. Geo.
Fenwicke of
Brenkburne, Esq.;
Governor of Berwick,
In the year 1652, was
A principal instru-
ment of causing this
Church to be built;
And died on March 15th,
1656.
A good man is a public good."

Colonel Fenwick married for his first wife Alice, daughter of Sir Edward Aspley, and widow of Sir John Brotlee, by whom he had two daughters—Elizabeth, wife of Sir Thomas Haselrigg of Nosely, and Dorothy, who married Sir Thomas Williamson. His second wife was Catherine, elder daughter of Sir Arthur Haselrigg, who outlived him, married Philip Babington, and was buried in the garden at Harnham, under circumstances detailed in the *Monthly Chronicle of North-Country Lore and Legend*, vol. i. p. 376.

No portrait of this famous Roundhead colonel is available, but his signature, written in a bold and legible hand, indicates, as far as handwriting indicates anything, a man of energy, firmness, and resource.

# Sir John Fenwick (1),

SIX TIMES M.P. FOR NORTHUMBERLAND.

TURNING now to the Wallington branch of the wide-spreading family of Fenwick, we start at that point of the pedigree where Roger Fenwick of Wallington, having married Dorothy, daughter of Sir John Widdrington, of Widdrington, died while quite a young man, leaving his son and heir, William Fenwick, aged three years, to be brought up under the guardianship of William Hilton. This William Fenwick came of age in 1571, and had special livery of his father's estates, including the manors of Wallington, Cambo, Harterton, Fenwick, Longwitton, Ryal, and Bitchfield, and lands in half-a-dozen other places. He married, in 1579, Grace, daughter of Sir John Forster, of Edderstone, and by her had an only son—the Sir John Fenwick whose name stands at the head of this page. After her decease he was united to Margaret, daughter of William Selby, of Newcastle, a lady known in after years by her ghostly visitations to the banks of the Wansbeck as "Meg of Meldon."

Sir John Fenwick of Wallington, knighted at Royston, 18th January, 1604-5, and afterwards created a baronet, was thirty-five years old at the inquisition after his father's death in 1614. He inherited Fenwick, Wallington, East Matfen, Cambo, Walker, Eshington, Gunnerton, Ryal, Sweethope, and Harewood, tenements in Hawick, Catcherside, Green Leighton, Longwitton, Hawkwell and Brunton, and half of a water-mill at Heaton called "Dust-little Mill." His maternal grandfather, Sir John Forster, had settled upon him, in 1602, the manor and capital messuage of Hexham, with lands and tenements there, Anick Grange, Dotland Park, Hexham Mills, the tithes of Hexham, Acomb, Anick, Sandhoe, Wall, and Fallowfield, and he purchased, on his own account, in 1618, Rothley, and in 1632 the regality of Hexham, with its long train of manors, villas, lands, and appurtenances. With the lordly estate acquired from his father and grandfather he was in a position to render the State some service. He had been High Sheriff of the county in 1620, and in 1624, upon the elevation to the peerage of Sir William Grey, one of the members for Northumberland, he was sent to the House of Commons.

Ten years before his election, Sir John had been described to King James I. and his Council, by Lord William Howard, as "a gentillman that more aimes at a private life then publick imploiement." In contemporary history we obtain glimpses of him as a country gentleman, engaged in the promotion of local sport, and participating in the diversions of the day. Chaytor, of Butterby, the local diarist, mentions "Puppie, a horse of Sir John Fenwick," which "bett a horse of the L. Kethe's in Scotland" in 1613. But the duties of a representative of the people in the reign of James I., and his successor Charles I., were not of an arduous nature. King James loved Parliaments but little; his son liked them still less. A few months after the election Charles came to the throne, and under his rule the lives of Parliaments were exceedingly brief. He summoned one in May, 1625, and dissolved it in August; convened another in February, 1626, and broke it up in June; ordered a third to assemble in March, 1628, and dispersed it in March following. To all these short Parliaments Sir John was returned. He was evidently a favourite with the king, for on the 9th June, 1628, his Majesty made him a baronet. It is equally clear that he was a popular man in the county, for he retained his seat throughout, while his colleague was a different person each time—first Sir Francis Brandling, next Sir John Delaval, and then Sir William Carnaby.

When the dissolution of March, 1629, had been effected, the king determined to govern without a Parliament, and Sir John, like other representatives of the knights and burgesses, it is to be presumed, stayed at home, looking after his broad acres. The Parliamentary suspension lasted for twelve years, and then the king, alarmed by the menacing attitude of his Scottish subjects, and by increasing disaffection on their side the Border, called the Houses together, ordering them to assemble on the 13th April, 1640. Sir John Fenwick again came forward to represent Northumberland, and was re-elected, having Sir William Widdrington for his colleague. This assembly proved to be the shortest of all King Charles's short Parliaments. Instead of granting supplies, of which the king stood in most earnest need, the Commons fell to a discussion of grievances, and refused to deal with finance till they had secured reformation of abuses. On the 23rd day of their assembling together the king ordered them to dissolve, and once more tried to govern by his own authority. Then followed the entry of the Scots into England, the

skirmish at Newburn, and the taking of Newcastle. The country was practically in a state of civil war.

The position which Sir John Fenwick occupied in the heated debates of the period is not traceable. His name does not appear in the Journals of the House of Commons during the five brief sessions in which he had sat as representative of Northumberland. When the next Parliament assembled—that which by its continuous sitting from November, 1640, to April, 1653, obtained the sobriquet of the Long Parliament—the representation of the county was changed. Sir William Widdrington retained his seat, but his colleague was Henry Percy (son of the ninth Earl of Northumberland), who, in the abortive sitting a few months earlier, had represented the borough of Portsmouth. Sir John Fenwick transferred his services to the adjoining county of Cumberland, and took his seat as member for Cockermouth—a borough which then, for the first time, obtained the privilege of direct representation. Why he made the change is not apparent. Pressure which he could not resist, possibly the influence of the Percy family in the county, must have been used to effect the transference of his candidature. He sat for Cockermouth no longer than was necessary to secure a favourable opportunity of returning to his old love, acting meanwhile, by special appointment of the Commons, as one of the local commissioners for perfecting accounts of billets and other moneys due to the county of Northumberland by the Scots army. An opportunity of making the desired exchange was not long in coming. It happened that, very shortly after Parliament met, both the new members for Northumberland fell under displeasure of the House. Sir William Widdrington's offence was trivial—a dispute about the bringing in of candles to enable a debate to be prolonged after dark—and after he had been imprisoned in the Tower for five days he made his submission and was restored to his seat and its privileges. Henry Percy's transgression was serious, and led to serious consequences. He was accused with others of an attempt to seduce the army against Parliament, of designing to bring it up to London, and secure the Tower, and so by force compel Parliament to obey its orders, etc., etc. Instead of facing this accusation boldly, Percy fled the country, and on the 9th December, 1641, he was declared by formal resolution to be no longer qualified to sit in the House, and a writ was issued for a new election. To the vacancy thus created, Sir John Fenwick was elected, thus representing his native county for the sixth time.

As the quarrel between king and Parliament progressed, Sir John Fenwick ranged himself on the side of the king. His name is not to be found among those of 229 members who signed the Covenant on the 22nd September, 1643, and very soon afterwards it was known that he had deserted to the Parliament which the king had set up at Oxford. Thereupon, at the sitting of the House on the 22nd January, 1643-44, a resolution was passed by which he and above fifty other members were "forthwith discharged and disabled for sitting or being any longer members of this House, during this Parliament, for deserting the service of the House, and being in the King's Quarters, and adhering to that party." A few months later, as Whitelock relates, he was taken by the Parliamentary forces, as he was proceeding with thirty horse and arms from Northampton to Banbury. Captivity, Whitelock supposes, brought him into submission to the Parliament, for, in less than a year after his expulsion from the House of Commons, he was chosen, for the second time, High Sheriff of Northumberland, and placed at the head of the county militia, upon which "the Papists and others (probably as a chastisement for his apostasy) plotted to surprise him and the militia, but were discovered and suppressed."

That Sir John had thrown off his allegiance to the king and become reconciled to the dominant party soon after the siege and capture of Newcastle, is evident from the course which the House of Commons took in his favour. At a time when they were sending for delinquents and sequestering estates of Royalists all over the country, they not only appointed him to these responsible offices, but they rescinded their order of expulsion, and admitted him again to a seat in Parliament. We read in the Commons' Journals, under date, Saturday, January 17th, 1645-46:—"The Question being put, Whether the Business concerning Sir John Fenwick's being put out of the House, shall be considered of in the House, it passed with the Negative. Resolved, etc., That the Business concerning Sir John Fenwick's being put out of the House be committed unto the Committee for absent Members, etc. This Committee, or any five of them, are to meet thereupon on Tuesday next, at Two of the Clock in the Afternoon, in the Queen's Court, and so *de die in diem.*"

And again, six months afterwards, on Friday, 26th June, 1646, immediately after prayers:—"Mr. Holles reports from the Committee for absent Members the State of the Case concerning Sir

John Fenwick. The Question being propounded, Whether the Order of this House of 22nd January, 1643, for Disabling of Sir John Fenwick to sit any longer a Member of this House, during this Parliament, as to the said Sir John Fenwick should be vacated. The Question was put Whether this Question should be now put or not: And it passed with the Affirmative. And then the Question itself being put; the House was divided. The Yeas went forth.

"Tellers for the Noe, { Mr. Ellys, / Mr. Reynolds. } With the Noe, 73.

"Tellers for the Yea, { Mr. Holles, / Sir Philip Stapilton. } With the Yea, 124.

"So as the Question passed with the Affirmative.

"Resolved, etc., That the Order of this House of the Two-and-twentieth of January, 1643, for Disabling of Sir John Fenwick to sit any longer a Member of this House during this Parliament as to the said Sir John Fenwick be vacated."

The seat rendered vacant by his expulsion had never been filled; it was, therefore, easy for Sir John Fenwick to resume his place in the House. It is probable that he was waiting for the verdict, and took his seat at once, for the next day he was appointed one of thirty-four members who were to act as "Commissioners for Conservation of the Peace between the Two Kingdoms, according to the Articles of the Large Treaty."

During the hasty invasion of the Scots, in the autumn of 1648, and on the eve of the battle of Dunbar, he was reported to have suffered considerable losses:—"In Northumberland many were plundered to great values, among other Sir John Fenwick, from whom was taken his best moveables; his damage valued at £2,000." This we read in Rushworth, under date September 1st, and turning to the Journals of the House of Commons, we find that on the 28th of that month a call of the House was ordered, and Sir John Fenwick reported as absent, but excused. Then on the 26th April following (1649) the House directed that "The petition of Sir John Fenwick, Knight and Baronet, be read to-morrow morning, the first business," but no further reference is made to the matter. Indeed, from that time till his death, little or nothing was heard of him. Mr. Hodgson states, on the authority of the "Diurnal of Occurrences," etc., that his name occurs frequently as a Parliamentary Committee man for sequestrating the estates of notorious delinquents, and levying taxes in Northumberland. But this allegation is not sustained by a search

through the Journals of the House. In those vast stores of political history his name does not appear after the end of 1648. It is not unlikely that he was one of the suspected pro-monarchy members who were "secluded" by Colonel Pride, on the 6th of December in that year, and that he did not sit again. All that we know positively about him after this time is that in 1654 his name occurs in a list of persons who were slack in their payments to the public revenue, as a debtor for £1,107 6s. 8½d., that he joined with his son William in mortgaging Fenwick and other estates in 1657, and that he died in the year following.

Sir John married, first, Catherine, daughter of Sir Henry Slingsby, of Scriven, by whom he had John Fenwick, colonel of dragoons, and M.P. for Morpeth, who was slain at the battle of Marston Moor, and buried in Hexham Church, where his helmet, or reputed helmet, may still be seen. His second wife was Grace, daughter of Thomas Loraine, of Kirkharle. From this marriage came Sir William Fenwick, who sat as M.P. for the county in the Long Parliament, in three of the Commonwealth Parliaments, and in two of those of Charles II. He was the father of Sir John Fenwick (2), whose erratic career and melancholy end form the subject of the next biography.

## Sir John Fenwick (2),

### A PERSISTENT JACOBITE.

Sir John Fenwick (2), the eldest son of Sir William Fenwick by his wife Jane, daughter of Henry Stapleton of Wighill, Yorkshire, was born about the year 1645. When he arrived at man's estate he married Lady Mary Howard, eldest daughter of the first Earl of Carlisle, and being a dashing cavalier, he became a great favourite in the restored court of King Charles II. Local historians have fallen into a singular error about the parliamentary career of this gifted scion of the Fenwick clan. Following the Rev. John Hodgson, usually a most trustworthy guide, they allege that Sir John was a member of the Convention, or Healing, Parliament which voted the Restoration, overlooking the fact that in 1660, when the Convention Parliament assembled, Sir John was a boy of fifteen! It was his father, Sir William Fenwick, who was a representative of North-

umberland on that occasion; he himself did not enter Parliament till February 1678-79. At the election in February, 1680-81, he was re-elected, and the same success attended his candidature in April, 1685, for the first Parliament of King James II. This last-named election was a memorable one. There had been an effort to exclude James from the throne, and all over the country the contest turned upon the subject of his exclusion. His friends were victorious at the polls, and demonstrations of joy rang through town and country.

Macaulay, describing the excitement and jubilation of the time, states that "In Northumberland the triumph of Sir John Fenwick was attended by circumstances which excited interest in London, and which were thought not unworthy of being mentioned in the despatches of Foreign Ministers." Quoting from a despatch of the Dutch Ambassadors, he adds that "Newcastle was lighted up with great piles of coal. The steeples sent forth a joyous peal. A copy of the Exclusion Bill, and a black box, resembling that which, according to the popular fable, contained the contract between

Charles the Second and Lucy Walters,[1] were publicly committed to the flames, with loud acclamations."

After the Revolution, Sir John Fenwick made himself conspicuous by his devotion to the cause of the runaway monarch, and his defiant attitude towards William and Mary. Under date March, 1689, Luttrell, in his book on "State Affairs from 1678 to 1714," writes:—"Letters from the North of England say that some disturbances are likely to break out there; that the Lord Preston, Lord Griffin, Sir John Fenwick, and Colonel Oglethorpe are there fomenting the same on behalf of the late King James." A month later Sir John was sent to the Tower. He lay in durance till October, when he was admitted to bail, and in November obtained his discharge. Taking no heed of the warning, he was no sooner out of prison than he resumed his hostile behaviour to the Court. A disaster to the Dutch in their war with France in 1691 afforded him the opportunity for displaying his antipathy to the new order of government, and to the occupants of the throne. Macaulay relates that when the news reached England the joy of the Jacobite party was boundless:—"In the Park the malcontents were in the habit of mustering daily, and one avenue was called the Jacobite Walk. They now came to this rendezvous in crowds, wore their biggest looks, and talked sedition in their loudest tones. The most conspicuous among these swaggerers was Sir John Fenwick, who had, in the late reign, been high in royal favour and in military command, and was now an indefatigable agitator and conspirator. In his exultation he forgot the courtesy which man owes to women. He had more than once made himself conspicuous by his incivility to the Queen. He now ostentatiously put himself in her way when she took her airing, and while all around him uncovered and bowed low, gave her a rude stare, and cocked his hat in her face. The affront was not only brutal but cowardly. For the law had provided no punishment for mere impertinence, however gross; and the King was the only gentleman and soldier in the kingdom who could not protect his wife from contumely with his sword. All that the Queen could do was to order the park-keepers not to admit Sir John again within the gates. But long after her death a day came when he had

[1] Lucy Walters was the mother of Monmouth, and the popular belief was that Charles had secretly married her, and that in a certain black box was hidden the marriage contract which, at the proper time, would exclude James from the succession, and show that Monmouth was the legitimate heir to the throne.

reason to wish he had restrained his insolence. He found, by terrible proof, that of all the Jacobites, the most desperate assassins not excepted, he was the only one for whom William felt an intense personal aversion." This story of Sir John Fenwick's rudeness to Queen Mary, adds Macaulay, had been told in different ways, but he had adopted what seemed to him "the most authentic, and what is certainly the least disgraceful version."

In May, 1692, a proclamation was issued for the apprehension of Sir John Fenwick, Sir Theophilus Oglethorpe, and others of the Jacobite party on a charge of high treason. Warned in time, the accused made their escape, but so hurried was that of Sir John that the musketeers who went to his lodgings to apprehend him found that in his flight he had left his breeches, with some guineas in them, behind him. Apprehended afterwards, he was held to bail for his surrender when called upon, but it does not appear that the case ever came on for hearing.

The death of Queen Mary, in Christmas week, 1694, revived the spirits of the Jacobites. The chief obstacle to the success of their plans was no more; the death of the king would remove the last barrier. If contemporary history be true, the wilder spirits of the party proposed to remove that barrier by assassination. The promoters of the plot imparted their designs to Sir John Fenwick, but, writes Macaulay, from whose narrative most of that which follows is quoted, "Fenwick, if his own assertion is to be trusted, was willing to join in an insurrection, but recoiled from the thought of assassination, and showed so much of what was in his mind as sufficed to make him an object of suspicion to his less scrupulous associates. He kept their secret, however, as strictly as if he had wished them success."

In the spring of 1695, while King William was away in the Netherlands, fighting the French, active measures were taken by the Government against the plotters and disturbers of the common weal. "During the King's absence the search for the Jacobites who had been concerned in the plots of the preceding winter had not been intermitted; and of those Jacobites none was in greater peril than Sir John Fenwick. His birth, his connections, the high situations which he had filled, the indefatigable activity with which he had, during several years, laboured to subvert the Government, and the personal insolence with which he had treated the deceased Queen, marked him out as a man fit to be made an example. He

succeeded, however, in concealing himself from the officers of justice till the first heat of pursuit was over. In his hiding-place he thought of an ingenious device which might, as he conceived, save him from the fate of his friends, Charnock and Parkyns. Two witnesses were necessary to convict him. It appeared from what had passed on the trials of his accomplices that there were only two witnesses who could prove his guilt, Porter and Goodman. His life was safe if either of these men could be persuaded to abscond." Two Irishmen—Clancy, a barber, and Donelagh, a disbanded captain—undertook to manage Porter, and they offered him three hundred guineas down, three hundred more as soon as he should be beyond sea, a handsome life annuity, a free pardon from King James, and a secure retreat in France. Porter was introduced to Lady Mary Fenwick and everything settled. Sir John wrote out letters securing for the fugitive the protection of King James, and the hour and place were fixed for handing over to him the first instalment of the promised reward. But Porter faltered. He had sent several Jacobites to the gallows, and he questioned whether his life would be safe among their friends and comrades in France? So he trotted off to Whitehall and disclosed the plot. On the appointed day Clancy met him and handed over the three hundred guineas. "Porter pocketed them and gave a signal. Instantly several messengers from the office of the Secretary of State rushed into the room and produced a warrant. The unlucky barber was carried off to prison."

"This mishap made Fenwick's situation more perilous than ever. At the next sessions for the city of London a Bill of indictment against him for high treason was laid before the grand jury. Porter and Goodman appeared as witnesses for the Crown, and the Bill was found. Fenwick now thought that it was high time to steal away to the Continent. He quitted his hiding-place and repaired to Romney Marsh. There he hoped to find shelter till the vessel which was to convey him across the Channel should arrive. It chanced that two smugglers had just been arrested on a charge of harbouring traitors. The messenger who had taken them into custody was returning to London with them when, on the high road, he met Fenwick face to face. Unfortunately for Fenwick, no face was better known than his. 'It is Sir John,' said the officer to the prisoners: 'stand by me, my good fellows, and I warrant you you will have your pardons and a bag of guineas besides.' The offer

was too tempting to be refused; but Fenwick was better mounted than his assailants; he dashed through them, pistol in hand, and was soon out of sight. They pursued him: the hue and cry was raised: the bells of all the parish churches of the Marsh rang out the alarm: the whole country was up: every path was guarded: every thicket was beaten: every hut was searched; and at length the fugitive was found in bed. Just then a barque of very suspicious appearance came in sight: she soon approached the shore and showed English colours: but to the practised eye of the Kentish fisherman she looked much like a French privateer. It was not difficult to guess her errand. After waiting a short time in vain for her passenger she stood out to sea."

Although in custody and under surveillance, Sir John managed to scrawl a letter to his wife. The letter was intercepted and sent up to Whitehall. "Every line contained evidence of his guilt. All, he wrote, was over: he was a dead man unless, indeed, his friends could obtain a pardon for him. Perhaps the united entreaties of all the Howards might succeed. He would go abroad: he would solemnly promise never again to set foot on English ground, and never to draw sword against the Government. Or would it be possible to bribe a juryman or two to starve out the rest." Taken to London and arraigned before the Lords Justices, he bade defiance to his accusers. The letter to his wife was produced and handed to him. He had not known of its miscarriage, and his distress and confusion was great, but, recovering himself, he asked for a postponement of his trial, threw himself upon the Royal mercy, and offered to disclose all that he knew about the plots of the Jacobites. The trial was postponed till the pleasure of the king should be known. His Majesty was in the Netherlands, and he directed that the prisoner's confession should be taken in writing and sent over to him.

Sir John had now to consider the form which his confession should assume. If he revealed all he knew his evidence would seriously affect many Jacobite noblemen, clergymen, and gentry. He decided to write a paper that would put off the trial for some months, would not injure a single adherent of the banished dynasty, but would cause distress and embarrassment to the enemies of that dynasty, and would fill the Court and Parliament with fears and animosities. When the king read the confession, in the early days of September, 1696, he saw at once the object with which it had been written. "I

am astonished," he wrote, "at the fellow's effrontery. He has nothing to say except against my friends. Not a word about his brother Jacobites." He directed that the document should be laid before the Lords Justices, and that Sir John should be brought before a jury with all speed. A few weeks later, on his return to England, the king was induced by his Ministers to grant Sir John an audience. "Your papers, Sir John," said his Majesty, "are altogether unsatisfactory. Instead of giving me an account of the plots formed by you and your accomplices, you tell me stories without authority, without date, without place, about noblemen and gentlemen with whom you do not pretend to have had any intercourse. In short, your confession appears to be a contrivance intended to screen those who are really engaged in designs against me, and to make me suspect and discard those in whom I have good reason to place confidence. If you look for any favour from me, give me, this moment, and on this spot, a full and straightforward account of what you know of your own knowledge." Sir John said that he was taken by surprise, and pleaded for time. The king inquired for what purpose; time could not be wanted except for the production of another such paper; while all that was wanted was a statement of what he had himself done and seen, and that could be given at once without pen and ink. Sir John then refused to say anything. "Be it so," said the king; "I will neither hear you, nor hear from you, any more."

Everybody wondered at the bold and confident tone of Sir John Fenwick at this interview. The explanation soon came. He had received a message from his wife that his life was in no danger; Goodman had been won over and sent to France, and as there was only one witness against him, no jury could now find him guilty of treason. Those whose loyalty had been attacked in the so-called confession were furious, and they brought the matter before the House of Commons. Sir John was ordered to appear at the Bar, and being brought in was exhorted from the chair to make a full and ingenuous confession. He hesitated, made excuses, and asked for time. Thrice he was removed from the Bar and thrice brought back, but persisting in refusing he was sent back to Newgate. His confession to the king was voted false and scandalous, and a motion to bring in a Bill of Attainder against him was carried by a hundred and seventy-nine to sixty-one votes. The Bill itself, after long and animated debates, was passed by a hundred and eighty-nine against

a hundred and fifty-six votes, and in the House of Lords it was carried by sixty-eight to sixty-one votes.

The king assented to the Bill on the 11th of January 1696-97. Lady Mary threw herself at William's feet with a petition; she appealed to the Lords and obtained a week's respite; she appealed to both Houses pleading for banishment, but King, Lords, and Commons alike refused her requests. On the 28th of January the execution took place. In the carriage of his kinsman, the Earl of Carlisle, Sir John was brought to the scaffold on Tower Hill, and met his fate with firmness and dignity. His remains were buried by torchlight under the pavement of the church of St. Martin in the Fields.

Upon a monumental pillar in the Howard aisle of York Minster is the following inscription:—

"This Monumental Pillar is erected and dedicated by the Right Honourable the Lady Mary Fenwicke, eldest daur. to Charles Howard, Earl of Carlisle, as a testimony of respect to the Memory of Sir John Fenwicke, Bart., of Fenwicke Castle, in the county of Northumberland, her deceased husband, by whom she had four children, one daur. and three sons. Jane, her eldest, died very young, and was buried in a vault in the par. church of St. Nicholas', Newc. Charles, having attained the age of 15 years, died of the small-pox. Wm. was 6 years old and Howard a year and a half when they departed this life. These three sons do all lie with their father in the parish church of St. Martin in the Fields, London, near the altar, where he was interred, January 28th, 1696, aged 52. Here lyeth the body of the Right Honourable the Lady Mary Fenwicke, relict of Sir John Fenwicke, Baronet, of Northumberland, and daughter of Charles Howard, Earl of Carlisle. She died on the 27th October, 1708, in the fiftieth year of her age. Her life was a patrimony to the poor and friendless; and her many virtues make her memory precious."

## John Fenwick,

### A NEWCASTLE COVENANTER.

To which branch of the widely-diffused race of Fenwick belonged the earnest but turbulent Puritan, who figures in local history as Lieutenant-Colonel John Fenwick, cannot be ascertained. He had apparently come from the country to Newcastle in youth to serve his apprenticeship as a boothman, or corn merchant; gone, when out of his time, to gain experience of commercial life in Germany, and had

then married and settled in the town. Nearly all that is known about him is contained in a curious pamphlet of his own writing, published in London, in 1643, under the voluminous title of—

"Christ Ruling in the midst of his Enemies; or Some first Fruits of the Churches Deliverance, Budding forth out of the Crosse and Sufferings and some remarkable deliverances of a twentie yeeres Sufferer, and now a Souldier of Jesus Christ; Together With Secretarie Windebanks Letter to Sr. Jacob Ashley and the Maior of Newcastle, through which the violent prosecutions of the common adversaries to exile and banishment are very transparent. Wherein also the Reader shall find in several Passages, publike and particular, some notable encouragements to wade through difficulties for the advancement of the great Designe of Christ, for setting up His Kingdome, and the ruine of Antichrist."

Taking this autobiographical narrative as our guide, we learn that, in the early years of Charles I.'s reign, the writer of it was in a considerable way of business in Newcastle. He tells us that he served the town "divers yeers in a publique office," that he had commercial relations with German houses, a good connection in the North of England, and extensive business transactions with producers in Scotland. Across the Border he frequently travelled, buying grain, freighting ships, and dealing in various other commodities that pertained to his calling. During these numerous Scottish expeditions he imbibed Presbyterian views, and taking no pains to conceal them, made himself exceedingly obnoxious to the ruling powers in Newcastle. When the troubles about religion in Scotland were coming to a head, and the Scots were beginning to talk about repelling the advances of prelacy by force of arms, he made himself an emissary between the Covenanters and their sympathisers on this side of the Tweed. He went even further. To the surprise of his friends and the indignation of the Royalist party—then very strong in the town—he and his friend Bittleston, a Newcastle tanner, proceeded to Edinburgh in May, 1638, and signed the National Covenant. This was a bold thing to do, and it had serious consequences. The authorities reported the daring act of these two Newcastle Puritans to the Government, and the Government ordered them to be apprehended and committed to prison. Secretary Windebank, writing in January, 1638-39, to Sir Jacob Astley, who had charge of the defence of Newcastle against a possible invasion, states that—"One John Fenwicke, a Merchant, and one Betleston, a Tanner, both of the Towne of Newcastle, have lately bin in Scotland and subscribed to the Covenant, and carried with them the Names of divers others which will doe the like. This being a most notorious and base Treachery,

especially in an English Subject, and of most pernicious consequence if it should spread further, His Majesty is pleased to recommend the strict Examination of it to your care, and commands, that if these find you not at Newcastle, you immediately repair thither, and advise with Mr. Marlay of that Towne what course is fittest to bee taken to come to a cleare and certain knowledge of the truth thereof: . . . and if upon examination you shall find Fenwick and Bitleston guilty of this charge, you are by his Majesties expresse Command to Commit them immediately to Prison, there to remaine close, untill his Majesties pleasure shall be further known."

Sir Jacob declined to undertake the work, and handed it over to Sir Alexander Davison, the Mayor, who reported a few days later that he and others had taken evidence in the matter. Fenwick was not at home, but had been thrice into Scotland since October, and they were persuaded that he was still there. If he returned, of which they were doubtful, as he was a man "sunk in his estate," they would not fail to examine him. They had committed Bittleston to the safe custody of a sworn officer, and enclosed his examination, together with those of Jane, Fenwick's wife, and George Basnett, his servant. Windebank, in reply, approved their proceedings, and added that if Fenwick were in Scotland, they must "carry a watchfull eye upon his returne," adding, "and if you can apprehend him, commit him immediately to some prison out of the towne, where his confederates may have no means of resort to him."

Fenwick was not to be caught, however. He had escaped, as they suspected, into Scotland, and there he remained until, in 1640, the army of the Covenant entered England. Under the wing of the invaders, he returned to Newcastle, and had the grim satisfaction of seeing his adversaries discomfited and put to flight, all which, in mocking phrase, he graphically describes and chuckles over in his pamphlet. But, although once more safely housed within the walls of Newcastle, his troubles were by no means ended. Protected as he was by the Scottish army, then in possession of the town, he found himself and his wife "continually reviled and abused by the malignant people of the town," from whom he could get no provisions for his family without authority and command of the Scots, or seldom go abroad without the company of some of the Scottish gentlemen, neither would anybody pay him the money they owed him. In these straits he went to London, journeying by water to avoid the king's soldiers, in order that he might place his griev-

ances before Parliament. Even there he was not safe, or fancied he was not, and so lay in hiding for some time, waiting for Parliament to consider his claims—claims which he had set forth in a petition, containing much biographical matter, as follows:—

"That your Petitioner hath been bred a Merchant in divers forraigne Countries many yeeres, and so lived a Merchant in his native countrey some eightene yeeres, in which time his imployments of shipping sea and land-men, and divers manufactures of this Kingdome, have not been unprofitable to the Commonweale, nor unfruitfull to his Majestie, affording to his Treasurie, three, four, and five hundred pounds per annum, fifteen or sixteen yeeres, as the Custome-house books will shew. And amongst other nations your Petitioner had commerce with the Scottish nation some fifteen yeeres, or more, in exchange of monies, buying and selling and shipping goods and merchandise to and from thence, and there being no restraint of commerce your petitioner went into Scotland about 26 Decemb. 1638, and bought a ship laden with Wheat of the Earl of Winton, a papist, as he had done a few moneths before, and with whom he had dealing divers yeeres before; Your Petitioner coming home to Newcastle was pursued as a Covenanter by divers ill-affected persons in the Magistracie, and a Warrant sent forth by Sir Alexander Davison and Sir Ioh. Marloe to the Constables, who watched your Petitioner, etc., etc. [Describes his flight to Scotland.] After your petitioner was thus most injuriously driven from his countrey, family, and friends, and all his affaires struck dead in an instant, to his utter undoing, the aforesaid Sir Iohn Marloe [and others] most illegally molested your petitioner his wife, examined her and her friends, and severall times did search your petitioners house, and took away writings at their pleasures, and sundry times imprisoned your petitioners wife, and at last drove her from her family and succour of friends into Scotland for her safetie, where she was forced to abide until the pacification at Barwicke, and then returned to Newcastle. [Describes how, upon news of the Scots army advancing into England, she was further searched and examined, and a guard of 12 musketeers set upon her, so that she was forced to escape by water into the country.] By which injurious dealing your petitioner hath been sore damnified in his liberty, estate and credit, which is a Merchants livelihood, to the dissipation of his family, and losse of all friends, and priviledges of a subject to possesse his right and his debts at home and abroad in forraigne parts,

no man to this three yeeres past, paying him, or will yet pay him anything without suit of law, which in regard of his long troubles and many losses, he is wholly unable to prosecute, untill by the justice of this assembly he be righted and repaired of his great losses and dammages of above foure thousand pounds, as he hopeth to make good."

This petition was put forward by the Scots Commissioners when arranging the treaty of pacification in December, 1640, but without result. Equally unsuccessful was it at the next treaty-making, in 1642, though upon that occasion the Commissioners recommended the case to the generous consideration of Parliament. There the matter remained; the exigencies of civil war left no time to consider such claims. Meanwhile, the claimant had joined the Parliamentary army. He alleges that he was called to arms at the first going out of the forces, and lost some blood "in Keynton Field," where he received a new life, and his lieutenant-colonelcy no doubt, "being sore wounded, and stript, and left for dead upon the ground, among the dead almost an hour, senseless." It was not until the middle of 1650, ten years after he had prepared it, that Parliament was induced to give a favourable ear to his petition, and then they rewarded his services, his sufferings, and his patience by giving him a valuable local appointment—the mastership of Sherburn Hospital. In the Journals of the House of Commons, under date July 2nd, 1650, we read:—

"Sir William Armyn reports from the Council of State the Petition of Lieutenant-Colonel John Fenwick, and that the House be desired to do something for his relief, viz:—

"That the Petition of Lieutenant-Colonel John Fenwick be reported to the House by Sir William Armyn; and they be desired to do something for his Relief and Subsistence; and particularly, if the House shall so think fit, by giving unto the son of the said Lieut.-Col. the Government of the Hospital of Sherborne, in the County of Duresme, for his Life, and after the Life of his Father.

"Resolved.—That the Mastership and Government of the Hospital of Sherborne, in the County of Durham, be settled upon Lieutenant-Colonel John Fenwick, for his Life, and that the Reversion, after his Decease, be settled upon John Fenwick, son of the said Colonel John Fenwick, during his natural Life; and that Mr. Attorney-General do prepare a Patent for passing the said Office to them

accordingly; and the Lords Commissioners for the Great Seal of England be authorised and required to pass the said Patent, under the Great Seal of England accordingly."

Surtees, in the "History of Durham," describes the intruding Master of Sherburn as "a tradesman in Newcastle, and Guide to Lesley's Army into England; appointed Master by authority of 'Sir William Ermyne and the other Commissioners of the then Parliament to invite the Scots into England, by a note under their hands, without order or vote of the House of Commons or Lords.'" Beyond that inaccurate statement, and the facts that he resigned Sherburn in favour of his son, and that the latter was dispossessed at the Restoration, nothing is known of the later days of Lieutenant-Colonel John Fenwick.

## John Fenwick,

ATTORNEY AND ANTIQUARY.

SEVERAL members of the race of Fenwick have become at various times citizens of Newcastle; a few of them have achieved distinction in the public life of the town. Nicholas Fenwick (to whom Ambrose Barnes surrendered his alderman's gown, and Vicar March dedicated his sermon, "The False Prophet Unmasked") filled the office of Sheriff in the municipal year 1678-79, and was Mayor in 1682-83, and 1697-98. Robert Fenwick became Mayor in 1708. Nicholas Fenwick (2) obtained the shrievalty in 1713, and was five times Mayor—1720-21, 1726-27, 1736-37, 1746-47, and 1747-48. He contested the borough as Parliamentary candidate on three successive occasions (1727, 1734, and 1741), and in each instance was successful. His town residence was the mansion in Pilgrim Street, afterwards converted into the Queen's Head Inn, and now the home of the Liberal Club; his country seat was at Lemington, near Alnwick, where he distinguished himself in forestry, for which he was honoured with the gold medal of the Society of Arts. Cuthbert Fenwick, passing through the shrievalty in 1719-20, filled the office of chief-magistrate in 1727-28, and 1739-40. William Fenwick was Sheriff in 1732, and John Fenwick was elected an alderman in 1836.

John Fenwick, the last of the series, attorney-at-law, known to most of us as "John the Baptist," claimed descent from the

historical family at Wallington, through one "Ambrose" Fenwick, who, he asserted, was a son of Sir William Fenwick, of Wallington, and therefore brother, or half-brother, to Sir William Fenwick, of Meldon, whose mother—Sir William of Wallington's second wife—was the famous Meg of Meldon. It is to be observed that no such person as this Ambrose occurs in Hodgson's elaborate genealogies of the Fenwicks, and if Mr. Fenwick's claim be well founded, it must be assumed that Mr. Hodgson overlooked him. To whom Ambrose Fenwick was married does not appear, but it is stated that the Rev. Edward Fenwick, Vicar of Stamfordham, in the reign of William and Mary, was his immediate descendant. From that point all is clear. There was a Rev. Edward Fenwick, who succeeded Ralph Fenwick, A.M., in the living of Stamfordham about the end of Charles the First's reign, and held the appointment for many years. He married in May, 1685, a daughter of Sir Francis Liddell, of Redheugh, the same Sir Francis, it is supposed, who was Sheriff of Newcastle in 1640, and the Mayor of that town in 1664.

Sir Francis Liddell died in 1702 at his son-in-law's house in Stamfordham, where long-lingering tradition endows him with great muscular strength, and the possession of a gold chain, which, when worn, encircled his neck by many folds, and when unclasped reached the length of the vicarage kitchen. After his death, the Rev. Edward Fenwick, in right of his wife, became possessed of Redheugh, and having two sons destined for the Church he exchanged that property with "his relative," the Earl of Derwentwater, for the advowson of Simonburn, one of the richest rectories in the diocese. The earl had married Catherine, one of the daughters of Sir William Fenwick, of Meldon, and would, therefore, if Ambrose were a brother or a half-brother of Sir William, be a near relative indeed. His lordship entered at once into possession of Redheugh, for the occupant of the rectory of Simonburn was over ninety years of age, and it was supposed that no great delay would occur in effecting a complete interchange. But almost directly after the transaction had been arranged, the Rebellion of 1715 broke out. Lord Derwentwater was attainted a rebel, and all his property, including Simonburn living, wherein his nominee still officiated, and Redheugh estate, which he had actually in possession, became forfeit to the Crown. Thus the Rev. Edward Fenwick found himself deprived of his wife's estate, and shut out of Simonburn, through no fault of his own—truly a hard case.

In December, 1730, pending suits against the Government for the restitution of one or the other of these properties—which were resisted on the ground that the exchange was simoniacal—the baffled clergyman died, leaving to his two clerical sons but a poor inheritance. The elder of them, Ambrose, had succeeded to the living of Stamfordham on the resignation of his father in 1719; the other son, Edward, had been inducted vicar of Kirkwhelpington in 1720. Ambrose married Elizabeth, daughter of Mr. Bradley, an attorney at Gateshead, and died childless in 1732. Edward thereupon embarked in a new suit to oust the nominee of the Crown from Simonburn, and, being unsuccessful, died heartbroken in July, 1734, leaving a widow, two sons, and six daughters in comparative poverty. It is said that on the Sunday after his death his parishioners reaped their fields—it being an early harvest year—in order that the impoverished family might have the benefit of the tithe. Nor were friends wanting in other directions. Edward, the eldest son, was brought up by Mr. Fenwick, of Bywell, and designed for holy orders, but, preferring a trade, he was bound apprentice to Mr. Toppin, a saddler, at Hexham. Subsequently he entered the army, and died abroad. His eldest son, also named Edward, was befriended by Sir Walter Blackett, who, it is said, believing him to be entitled to the estates of the celebrated Dorothy Windsor, took possession of one of them in the name of the infant, and, being ejected, secured a sum of money for the youth, which was paid over to him when he had served his time at Hexham to his father's business of a saddler. This Edward Fenwick married Mary, daughter of John Shield, of Catton, and became the father of John Fenwick, attorney, the subject of this biography.

John Fenwick was born at Hexham, April 14th, 1787. His father intended him to follow the sea, towards which he had a boyish predilection, and with that view he was taught navigation by George Brown, a local mathematician, for many years editor of the "Newcastle Tide Tables." At the age of fourteen he went as cabin-boy in a Shields vessel, stayed long enough to be promoted to the cook's galley, and then, conceiving a disgust at his surroundings, returned home and was articled to a Newcastle attorney. On the 9th of June, 1814, he married Ann, youngest daughter of Abram Rumney, headmaster of Alnwick Grammar School, and began to make his way in the town. The first number of Mr. Joseph Clark's *Northumberland and Newcastle Monthly Magazine*, published in January, 1818, con-

tains an article from his pen, dated "Shield Field, November 20, 1817," introducing a case relating to the practice of the Mayor and Sheriff's Court in Newcastle—the publication of which extended over several subsequent issues, and was supposed to correct some errors into which Wallis in his "History of Northumberland," and the Rev. John Hodgson in the "Picture of Newcastle," had unwittingly fallen. Before long Mr. Fenwick had connected himself with the public life of Newcastle in many different directions. A staunch and argumentative Baptist, he interested himself in most of the leading Nonconformist movements of the day, while, as an evangelical dissenter, he co-operated with members of other denominations in promoting general schemes of piety and benevolence. Among these latter may be noted the providing of a cemetery for the interment of Nonconformists at the junction of Elswick Lane with Arthur's Hill—a project that received its first impulse from a speech which he delivered in Newcastle in 1825, and afterwards published under the title of

"Substance of the Speech of Mr. John Fenwick, at a General Meeting of the Various Denominations of Protestant Dissenters of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, on the 14th of June, 1825, to take into consideration the propriety of obtaining a new Place of Sepulture. Newcastle: Printed for E. Charnley, J. Finlay, and J. Clark. 1826." 8vo.

Moving thus actively in public matters, he became in time local treasurer to the Baptist Missionary Society, the Religious Tract Society, and the Newcastle Benevolent Society, and a member of the managing committees of the local Indigent and Sick Society, the Sunday School Union, the Bible Society, the Bethel Union, the Anti-Slavery Society, and kindred organisations. At the same time he laboured effectually for the advancement of his profession, dabbled in local history, and indulged himself with a hobby—that of book collecting, combined with antiquarian research. A founder and active promoter of the Newcastle and Gateshead Law Society, he was honoured by election to the successive offices of vice-president and president of the society; an early member of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, he filled in after life the post of treasurer to that flourishing institution.

At the election which followed the passing of the Municipal Reform Act of 1835, Mr. Fenwick was nominated as one of seventeen suitable persons to represent the burgesses of South St. Andrew's Ward in the Reformed Town Council. He was not elected, but at

the first meeting of the new Council he was appointed an alderman, receiving twenty votes, being one vote more than Mr. James Hodgson, who stood at the bottom of the list. For some reason or other the position did not fit Mr. Fenwick. He attended eight out of twenty meetings of the Council, and then resigned, and his resignation was accepted without comment. His next appearance in the Council was at the head of a deputation from the Law Society, urging the expediency of extending the jurisdiction of the Mayor and Sheriff's Courts to the borough of Gateshead—a scheme which met with universal approval.

Mr. Fenwick was associated with John Trotter Brockett, John Adamson, and others, in the formation of the Newcastle Typographical Society. Though he wrote very little himself, he printed more tracts in the society's name than any other member, numbering indeed nearly a third of the whole series. Chiefly biographical, the majority of these tracts form useful helps in compilation, their principal demerit being excessive brevity, and, in some cases, scantiness of biographical detail. The best of them are the Memoir of Brockett, the Letters of Brand, the Obits of Losh and others, and the papers on Treasure Trove. A complete list of them, with dates of publication, and number of copies printed, is as follows:—

"Letters of the Rev. John Brand to Ralph Beilby." 1825. 100 copies.

"Cowper's Rose Bushes." 1829. 100 copies.

"Obituaries of James Losh, John Bruce, R. Hopper Williamson, and the Rev. R. Wasney." Portraits. 1836. 250 copies.

"Biographical Sketch of Joshua Marshman, D.D., of Serampore." 1838. 150 copies.

"Obituary of Charles Newby Wawn." Portrait. 1840.

"Recollections of Ann Fenwick." Portrait. 1840.

"Obituary Resolutions of the Committee of the Newcastle-on-Tyne Bible Society." 1842. 100 copies.

"The Gathering Ode of the Fenwyke of Northumberland." 1843. 100 copies.

"Biographical Sketch of John Trotter Brockett." Portrait. 1843. 250 copies.

"Memorial to the Senate of Hamburgh and Letter to the King of Denmark." Arms and 2 cuts. 1843. 150 copies.

"Herbert's Biographical Notice of the Rev. William Carey, D.D." 1843. 150 copies.

"Biographical Sketches of Joshua Marshman, D.D." Portrait. 1843. 150 copies.

"Bainbridge's (William) Comparison of the Great English and French Revolutions." 1844.

"Obituary Notice of Mr. William A. Hails." 1845. 150 copies.

"Obituary Notice of the Life and Ministry of the Rev. J. Mack of Serampore." Portrait. 1846. 250 copies.

"Lushington's (Dr.) Foundation Stone." A hymn. 1850.
"Dialogue between the North and South Tyne Rivers." 1850.
"Ellis's (James) Genealogy of the Family of Radclyffe, of Dilston." 1850.
"Letters between James Ellis, Esq., and Walter Scott." 1850.
"Treasure Trove in Northumberland." Illustrations. 1851.
"Report of Proceedings for Treasure Trove in the Barony of Wark."
"Slogans of the North of England." By M. A. Denham, John Fenwick, and W. H. D. Longstaffe. 1851.
"The Protest of certain Lords against the Bill of Attainder of Sir John Fenwick." Reprint, 1854.
"Obits of some of the more Distinguished Members of the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle." 1857.
"A Sketch of the Ship-boy Life of John Fenwick, F.S.A." 1857.

To the "Archæologia Æliana" Mr. Fenwick contributed nothing of his own, but he produced from his extensive collection relating to the Derwentwater family, materials which enabled Mr. Longstaffe and the Rev. James Raine to add to the first three volumes of the octavo edition of that excellent publication a series of papers of great interest and value. In the first volume appear—"Francis Radclyffe, First Earl of Derwentwater," and "Sir Edward Radclyffe, of Dilston." In the second volume are "The Heirs General to Radclyffe of Derwentwater" and "Extracts from the Accounts of the Steward of Sir Francis Radclyffe, Bart., at Dilston, from June, 1686, to June, 1687"; while in volume three come "The Markets, Fairs, and Mills of Morpeth," and "Discontinuance of an Action against a Recusant." His son, John Clerevaulx Fenwick, contributed to the third volume an interesting paper on "Bagpipes and Pipe Music."

In Mr. Fenwick pride of ancestry achieved its apotheosis. Every book, pamphlet, tract, or leaflet that he issued was decorated with Fenwick arms, crest, or motto—usually with all three, and the Percy arms to boot. In the Abbey Church of Hexham, upon a marble tablet to the memory of his father he caused to be inscribed in stately Latin (written by Mr. Garvin of Dr. Bruce's school) a declaration that the worthy old saddler was "descended from the knightly Fenwick, of Fenwick Tower and Wallington, and could also trace his lineage from the illustrious houses of Plantagenet, Percy, and Neville, and through them from lines of mighty kings and princes." His weakness in this direction sometimes exposed him to ridicule and occasionally to indignation. Neither ridicule nor indignation, however, shook Mr. Fenwick's faith in his Royal descent, and he died in that belief on the 10th of April, 1867, at the age of eighty.

# Sir John Fife,

POLITICAL AND MUNICIPAL REFORMER.

"Manhood when verging into age grows thoughtful,
Full of wise saws and moral instances."

—CAPEL LOFFT.

AMONG the fiery leaders who, sixty years ago, conducted the campaign upon Tyneside in favour of Parliamentary Reform and Municipal Freedom, the most dashing, if not the most daring or the most enduring, was the popular doctor, the bold huntsman, and the polished gentleman, who was known throughout the Northern Counties as "young Mr. Fife."

John Fife was a son of William Fife, a Newcastle surgeon, who practised his profession, at the beginning of the century, in Denton Chare, and afterwards, till his death in 1839, at the house which still occupies the space between the west end of that narrow thoroughfare and the junction of Westgate Road with Collingwood Street. Born in 1795, and brought up to his father's calling, young Mr. Fife rapidly made his way in the town. A high-spirited young man, of polished address and courteous manners, abounding in wit and gallantry, able to ride to hounds, and conduct himself bravely in a drawing-room, he became a general favourite. His abilities in these directions helped him to a fortunate marriage. On the 26th of March, 1818, he was united at All Saints' Church, Newcastle, to Elizabeth, second daughter of Joseph Bainbridge, a well-known solicitor, who lived in Pilgrim Street in a house he had built for himself, and to which, in honour of the great military hero of the day, he had given the name of Wellington Place.

About the time of his marriage, Mr. Fife, having taken up his freedom in the Incorporated Company of Barber-Surgeons and Chandlers, began to practise on his own account in Newcastle. Fortune favoured him. The Corporation, noting his abilities, made him, in 1819, one of the town coroners; the Barber-Surgeons, for similar reasons, elected him, in 1821, one of their stewards. A movement which he inaugurated the following year gave him wide popularity among the labouring classes. He had made diseases of the eye a special study, and in March, 1822, in conjunction with Mr.

T. M. Greenhow, brother-in-law of Harriet Martineau, he started, upon a very modest scale, in Brunswick Place, a medical charity, known in after years as the Newcastle Eye Infirmary.

Becoming associated with some of the leaders of advanced thought in the town, and evincing sympathy with their principles, he was invited to co-operate in public movements of a political character. But to these allurements he turned, for a time, a deaf ear. The author of "Tim Tunbelly's Letters," writing on the 5th November,

1822, expressed in these flattering terms the regret of his party at Mr. Fife's diffidence:—"Mr. John Fife, the steward of the Surgeons' Company, is a very clever young man; modest, sensible, and an enemy to all jobs; but he will never act as chairman on a guild day, though possessed of every requisite. I am sorry Mr. F. does not come more forward in politics. He has great skill, and is well adapted for an anti-corporate tactician. I fear some family trammels prevent him from taking the part he might, either in local or general

politics. If so, I am sorry for it; for he is equally able to enlighten the public mind as to remove films and cataracts from their eyes."

The wishes of "Tim Tunbelly," and the hopes of the Radicals whose sentiments he echoed, were destined to be realised even more fully than they could have anticipated. Mr. Joseph Bainbridge, the father-in-law of Mr. Fife, came to an untimely end, after a dangerous surgical operation in London, on the 15th December, 1823. He was a highly respectable solicitor, with an extensive practice among the privileged classes, and had no sympathy with popular movements. By his sudden death the "family trammels" which had restrained Mr. Fife from entering upon a political career were removed. Strengthening his intimacy with local leaders, and extending his influence among the people, he waited for an opportunity to show his strength. The opportunity was delayed. At the time of his emancipation political opinion in Newcastle was practically stagnant. The great election of 1826 stirred it a little; the struggle for Catholic emancipation produced a ripple or two; but for the most part the stream of political agitation in the North of England was standing still. It was the calm which precedes the storm.

All of a sudden, in July, 1830, a revolution broke out in France. Within three days the sovereign of that country had been driven from his throne; in less than a fortnight a constitutional monarch had been elected in his place. Thus abruptly set in motion, the wave of revolution spread to Brussels, passed over to Brunswick and Saxony, and affected, more or less, every throne in Europe. In this country the democracy, cowed by the Manchester or Peterloo massacre ten years before, were encouraged to lift up their heads and raise their voices once more. The Whigs, dexterously availing themselves of the democratic upheaval, joined forces with the proletariat in order to weaken the Tory Ministry under the Duke of Wellington, and agitate for Parliamentary and Administrative Reform. In Newcastle, the two parties, Whigs and Radicals, met in Charnley's book-shop, and projected a town's meeting to be held in the Guildhall, for the purpose of attesting the "sympathy of Englishmen with the cause of liberty in France." At this meeting, held on the 7th September, 1830, the Mayor in the chair, Mr. Fife made his first public appearance on the political platform. Some stirring speeches were delivered—so stirring, indeed, that they attracted the attention of the *Age* newspaper, which poured out the vials of its wrath in the following choice language:—

"*Mister* Alderman Cramlington was there, and a very fit fellow he is for such society; and John Bowes Wright was there, the traveller, him *wot* told the meeting what *he* saw when *he* was in Paris; Doctor Headlam and his hat, and *Mister* Fiffy and his stays, were both there; and Tom Doubleday, sonnet writer and soap boiler, was there, but he did not say six words—he was ashamed of his company; and Aleck Reid, the auctioneer and pawnbroker, was there; and Ralph Park Philipson was there; and the Green-eyed Monster was there; and, in fact, all the desperate upon or about the town were there, . . . creatures who are as unknown in good society in England as they are to the inhabitants of Timbuctoo . . . the scum and dregs of the town and neighbourhood. Let the quacks of Newcastle, medical and political, stick to their own business. Let them St. John Long their patients, or dabble on in coals and grindstones; but do not let them deal in politics or revolutionary humbug. Emulsionary Headlam and Sarsaparilla Fife may do very well for the coalheavers and skippers of Newcastle, but they are no more fit to embank the liberties of Europe than are the beavers on the lakes of America to prevent the outpouring of the waters at the Falls of Niagara."

Once embarked upon a political career, Mr. Fife's zeal was limited only by his opportunities. He was one of the leading spirits in the formation of the Northern Political Union, and one of the most effective and energetic speakers at the public and private gatherings of that triumphant organisation. To his skill in tactics the Union owed no small part of its success. While Larkin thundered forth fiery invective, Attwood threw out scathing satire, and Eneas Mackenzie emitted moral platitudes, Fife planned and plotted, marshalled and manœuvred. Possessing a suavity of manner that soothed the turbulent, and cultivating a polished rhetoric that disarmed the rebellious, he could plead, argue, or denounce with equal facility and effect. Yet, while never losing his temper, nor allowing himself to be drawn into excess of language, gesture, or demeanour, he knew how to "take occasion by the hand" and mould it to his purpose. When, in the summer of 1831, the burgesses of Newcastle met, under the presidency of the Mayor, to petition the House of Lords in favour of the Reform Bill, and a weak petition was submitted by the Whig section of the Reform party, he outmanœuvred them, drove the baffled Whigs out of the room, was put into the seat which the Mayor had occupied, and obtained from the excited

burgesses an enthusiastic vote for a much stronger petition which Mr. Attwood had conveniently found in his pocket. When the Lords threw out the Bill, he was the chief organiser of the great October demonstration upon the Town Moor, the leader in the subsequent march of three hundred men from Tyneside to Durham to prevent Lord Londonderry's "lambs" from breaking up a Reform meeting, and the proposer of the resolution, already adopted by the Birmingham Radicals, which pledged the members of the Northern Political Union to pay no taxes until the Reform Bill became the law of the land.

At the Newcastle Spital meeting, on the 15th of May, 1832, Mr. Fife struck the key-note which Charles Larkin expanded into a howl of defiance against the throne and the aristocracy that echoed and re-echoed all over the kingdom. Quoting a speech of Fox against the Sedition Bills of 1795, in which that impassioned orator asserted that Parliament might pass such bills, and they might even receive the Royal sanction, yet be so unconstitutional that obedience was no longer a moral duty, and insurrection itself be justifiable, and adding the emphatic declaration, "In these principles I will live and die," Mr. Fife continued: "Here is an immense multitude, and is there one man who will not join me in holding up his right hand and repeating after me—'In these principles I will live and die'?"

The response, a writer in the *Northern Tribune* tells us, was instantaneous. A forest of hands was uplifted in imitation of the speaker, and in solemn cadence the vast multitude ejaculated that memorable vow—"In these principles I will live and die." Scarcely had the hands disappeared when a forest of oak saplings was uplifted, and remained there for some minutes, amidst profound yet most significant silence. Then the speaker resumed: "I know that many of my fellow-countrymen are armed, that many others are arming, and every man in this country has as good a right to his arms as the Marquis of Londonderry; and I hold that the most ignorant and simple-minded man in this assembly is as likely to make a proper use of them. I, however, call upon you to remember that recourse to violence is the last and worst resort. The House of Commons yet stands between this country and a revolution. If it only prove that it is the representative of the nation, the people may obtain their rights without confusion and bloodshed. Let us, therefore, with one voice exclaim—'Privilege of Parliament! Privilege of Parliament!' But remember until that cry is disregarded, until privilege of Parlia-

ment ceases to exist, or is grossly violated, then, and not till then, shall I, for one, exclaim, 'To your tents, O Israel!'"

With the passing of the Reform Bill, Mr. Fife considered that to a considerable extent victory had been won, and that the fight should now be left to the enlarged constituencies. Finding himself in a minority upon this and other questions in the Council of the Political Union, he withdrew, and, after a brief existence, the organisation itself came to an end. But, although acting no longer with Attwood and Larkin, he avowed himself an earnest reformer still, and, being shortly after his retirement elected a member of the committee of the Newcastle Mechanics' Institute, he proved the sincerity of his avowal by presenting to the library a copy of Paine's "Rights of Man."

For the next few years, although he published a letter to Lord Howick in favour of household suffrage, triennial Parliaments, and vote by ballot, he concerned himself chiefly in the struggle for municipal reform. At the Michaelmas Guild of the burgesses in 1833, he headed a party of independent voters whose criticisms of the ruling powers were remarkably pointed and unusually free. Mr. Fife denounced the new police as "the mere tools of a political oligarchy, the instruments of tyranny, and the panderers of corruption," and described almost everything with which the Corporation had to do as being altogether "vile and corrupt." But, he continued, "had the burgesses but the power of electing those in whom they could place confidence, a change, a woful change to the governing few, would quickly take place. They would sweep away the long-continued corruption of family influence, the flagrant practice of nomination which for years had been used for the basest purposes, for selfish considerations, for family peculation—ay, even for fraud."

Towards the close of the proceedings, which were stormy and protracted, Mr. Fife and Mr. George Clayton Atkinson were nominated for the office of Sheriff. Mr. Fife lost, and Mr. Atkinson was elected amidst the groans and hisses of the burgesses. Then, continues the reporter, "Mr. Fife thanked his supporters, adding that it was not to be expected that a person professing his politics should be elected sheriff under the Corporation as at present constituted. At some future time, however, a change might take place, and, if so, he would take care, in the event of his election, that a terrible change would take place for some parties. Among other glaring evils he would put an end to that system of feasting which was infamous to the Corporation, and disgraceful to morality."

In the summer of 1834 Mr. Fife sustained a heavy bereavement in the death of his wife, and, for a time, he withdrew from active participation in public work. But as soon as the Municipal Reform Act was passed, he emerged from his seclusion, and threw himself once more into the arena of local conflict. At the first election under the new Act he was returned at the head of the poll for the ward of St. Nicholas, every man in the ward but thirty-seven having given him a vote. The contest throughout the borough was spirited, and when the excited burgesses assembled in the Guildhall to hear the results of the various polls, they demanded that he, as one of the heroes of the struggle, should address them. There was the old ring in his mellow voice as he stood forward and declared that "in placing in the new Council so many men well known as the zealous and enthusiastic friends of liberal principles, and so many who hold even extreme principles, you have struck a blow in the cause of reform which will be felt even by the House of Lords. (Cheers.) It is not only Great Britain that will feel the effect, but the result of the election in Newcastle will be wafted over the Channel, and carry consolation to insulted Ireland—(loud applause)—for it has in all probability spared the people of that country a civil war, and this country the degrading spectacle of a military dictatorship. We have long been in the situation of a people trampled on and oppressed. We have advocated Reform despite of persecution. The power is now with us, and how shall we use it? I trust with magnanimous forbearance. (Loud cheers.) Not a forbearance that will prevent the assertion of our principles, but a forbearance that will prevent our using the foul and unprincipled means of our opponents. (Applause.) Far from entertaining any feeling of hostility to those gentlemen in the Council whom I have politically opposed, I entertain for them, individually, sentiments of esteem and regard; but if ever they presume—(laughter and great cheering)—to make the slightest attempt to grasp at that political power which they have so long abused, then I say their entrance into the Council room will be like the entrance into hell, over the gates of which, according to the Italian poet, there is written, 'You who enter here, leave hope behind you.' (Laughter and cheers.)"

Upon the first occasion that the Reformed Council assembled Mr. Fife was appointed an alderman; at the second meeting of that body he fulfilled the threat which he uttered at the Guild meeting in 1833. Originating a discussion upon the use and abuse of the

Mansion House, he kept it going meeting after meeting, and never ceased to agitate till that famous resort of convivial burgesses was dismantled, and its contents sold to the highest bidder. In like manner his warning to the local Tories to leave hope behind them, as soon as they entered the Council Chamber, was found to have a substantial meaning. For years afterwards Whigs and Radicals shut out their political antagonists from the high offices of the municipality. They first of all discarded the Mayor of the old *régime*, Mr. J. L. Hood, and elected Mr. Charles John Bigge in his place; their second Mayor was Mr. Joseph Lamb; their third Dr. Headlam; and then came the turn of Mr. Fife. At Michaelmas, 1838, he was elected unanimously. He had fairly earned his promotion, and none of his opponents raised a hand against it.

In his election to the Mayoralty Mr. Fife's popularity reached its culmination; before his year of office expired it had received serious damage. The details need not be reproduced. They have been printed over and over again, and may always be read in Richardson's "Table-Book," in Gammage's "History of the Chartist Movement," and in "The Odd Book" of Thomas Ainge Devyr. Suffice it to state that in the summer of 1839 the townspeople were seriously disturbed by Chartist meetings and processions, accompanied by stone-throwing, window-smashing, and other mischief; that the Mayor, as chief magistrate, intervened for the prevention of such disorders; and that, failing to secure peaceable obedience to his commands, he called out the military, and broke up a Chartist demonstration at the point of the bayonet. For these services he was denounced as a traitor, a renegade, and a second Judas Iscariot by those who had beforetime been his warmest friends and supporters. Among the upper and trading classes, and especially among his old political foes, his conduct was just as highly approved. The Incorporated Companies of Newcastle passed a series of resolutions extolling the Mayor's "personal courage, coolness, activity, and firmness," and in reply to their flattering eulogies Mr. Fife published the only defence of his proceedings that he thought proper to make. "Holding as I then did, and trust ever shall, the same principles and regard to popular rights," he wrote, "my position was peculiarly delicate, and indeed painful; but," he added, "no other course remained to the magistrates than to act with decision." This is now, it is to be hoped, the judgment of posterity.

While the clamour against Alderman Fife was still raging among

his quondam admirers, the Melbourne Ministry were preparing to acknowledge the services which he had rendered to the cause of law and order. With the denunciations of the Chartists and their friends still ringing in his ears, on the 1st July, 1840, he was knighted by the Queen "as a mark of approbation of the manner in which he had sustained the office of chief magistrate under very critical circumstances." John Selkirk, faithful reporter of the proceedings of the Town Council, describes the new-made knight at this period as "A firm-minded man, a sound thinker on the whole, and an honest, self-relying politician. His views are liberal and branch towards democracy. . . . He has been accused of political apostasy, but the charge is manifestly untrue. It is made on the one hand by those who have themselves rushed to extremes, and blame the knight for not keeping up with them; and on the other by those who scruple not to say anything that may deteriorate the character of a staunch political opponent. Sir John is decidedly the best orator in the Council; indeed, it is quite refreshing to listen to his calm, sententious reasoning, in the midst of discussions which are often so hurried and conversational as to shroud the subject in obscurity."

Sir John was elected Mayor of Newcastle again in 1843, and he continued for many years to take an active part in the public life of his native town. Not, however, in the sphere of political conflict in which he had won his early fame. With advancing age his interest in politics, shaken by the events of 1839, declined, and although he took an active part in the Anti-Corn Law agitation, being chairman of the League meetings in Newcastle, he gradually settled down into a mild and colourless Whig. When the next wave of Parliamentary Reform swept over the country, assuming the attitude of offended dignity contemplating past services, he stood aloof, and there the new school of Reformers left him. Meanwhile, the fervour which distinguished his early career had found a new channel. The vapouring of certain French colonels in 1859 turned the thoughts of Englishmen to the use of arms, and Sir John's soldierly instincts pushed him into the forefront of the agitation. He took the chair at a meeting held in Newcastle in the summer of that year to promote the volunteer movement, and became the first president of the club which shortly afterwards developed into the 1st Newcastle Rifle Volunteer Corps. Of that corps he was made lieutenant-colonel, and he filled the post to admiration. He was proud of his volunteers, thirteen companies strong; the volunteers were proud of Sir

John, who looked every inch a soldier; Newcastle was proud of them all together.

Engrossed in volunteering, Sir John lost to some extent his interest in matters municipal as well as political. He had formed county connections, and began to consider himself as much a country gentleman as an alderman of Newcastle. When, therefore, in 1862, the farmers and dealers attending Newcastle Cattle Market fell into a hot dispute with the Corporation, Sir John, conceiving that they had reason for their complaints, made various proposals for settling the dispute, and upon these being rejected, accompanied by some heated personal remarks from one or two lively members of the Council, he resigned his office, and nothing could induce him to resume it. Failing health compelled him, in December, 1868, to relinquish his command of the volunteers, and from that time to his death, at Reedsmouth, on the 15th of January, 1871, the people of Newcastle saw but little of their gifted fellow-townsman.

Sir John Fife was in the commission of the peace for his native borough and for the county of Argyle; a deputy-lieutenant; an M.A. of Durham; and a knight in the English League of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. In religion he was a Churchman—an earnest advocate of the establishment of a bishopric in Newcastle. For thirty years he filled the office of surgeon to the Newcastle Infirmary, and, besides founding the local Eye Infirmary, was one of the early promoters of the Newcastle College of Practical Science, in which, for some years, he officiated as a lecturer.

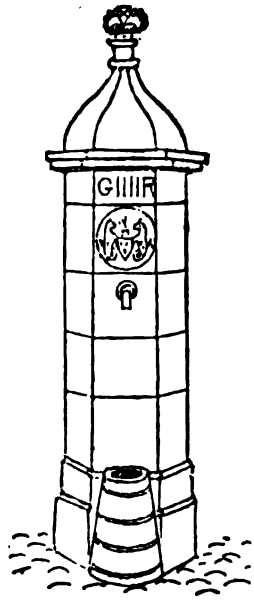
## George, Francis, and Joseph Forster,

MAYORS OF NEWCASTLE.

AMONG the numerous persons bearing the name of Forster who have occupied clerical or municipal office in Newcastle, three rose to the high position of chief magistrate. Francis Forster was Mayor in 1769-70 and 1779-80; Joseph Forster, his son, occupied the post in 1801-2, 1808-9, and 1818-19; George Forster filled the same office in 1811-12, 1820-21, and 1825-26. Now, a man who has been Mayor of Newcastle twice is presumably a "man of mark" in the town; but he who is appointed to that dignity thrice is

undoubtedly so. The three Forsters, therefore, with eight mayoralties among them, are clearly entitled to be included in these volumes.

About George Forster little is known. His connection with the historical family of that name is not traceable; probably it did not exist. He was a respectable linen-draper, a partner in the firm of Gibson & Forster, linen-drapers and mercers in the Wool Market, Newcastle, who, in March, 1802, upon the death of William Raisbeck, was elected one of the Common Council, and in July, 1810, upon the resignation of William Cramlington and the refusal of Isaac Cookson, senior, to accept the office, was appointed an alderman. Having laid aside the yard-wand to don the alderman's gown, he was raised the following year to the chief magistracy, and the like honour was conferred upon him again in 1820. During his second mayoralty the coronation of George IV. was celebrated in Newcastle, when oxen were roasted in the streets, and the public pants ran wine and beer, and the townspeople indulged in orgies which reflected little credit upon them, and less upon the authorities who encouraged them. Upon this occasion the Mayor was invested for the first time with the gold chain and medallion which still adorn the breast of our chief magistrate. His third mayoralty, in 1825-26, was uneventful, though the great election in Northumberland made it a stirring time for the district. Alderman Forster died at his house in the Forth on the 16th May, 1836, aged 71.



WINE PANT.

Francis Forster, it is supposed, was a descendant of the Adderstone Forsters. His upbringing is not recorded, but we know that he carried on business as a merchant in Newcastle, and acquired property at Seaton Burn, where he resided. In 1761, he joined Thomas Doubleday, merchant; Lancelot Stout, hatter; Jonathan Ormston, gentleman; George Westgarth, dyer; and Peregrine Tyzack, gentleman, all of Newcastle, in the purchase of premises and a wharf situate in Hillgate, Gateshead, which a dozen years before had been converted into a sugar-house by James Orton, of

Newcastle, sugar baker. He was the head of the firm of Forster, Rankin, & Atkinson, who owned the sugar-house in the Close, a partner in the Commercial Bank, a merchant of great enterprise, and, before he died, a man of considerable wealth.

Identifying himself with the interests of the town to which he owed his success in life, Francis Forster entered the Common Council, and in 1763, when the Blacketts, the Ridleys, and the Claytons governed Newcastle, he was appointed Sheriff. Six years later, at Michaelmas, 1769, the electors made him chief magistrate. Upon that occasion arose one of those difficulties about the Shrievalty which occurred every now and then, to the enrichment of the town's treasury. Several persons were invited to fill the office, and all of them declined, pleading age and infirmity, ill-health, or making some other excuse. Three of them—Ogle Wallis, wine merchant, R. Hall, merchant adventurer, and T. Durham, who is styled "esquire," were fined a hundred marks (£66 13s. 4d.) each, and it was not until the next day that William Reed, wine merchant, was prevailed upon to accept the position.

Reluctance of public men to undertake the duties of Sheriff was but a small difficulty to overcome. Troubles of much greater moment were impending. In the early part of the year, John Wilkes, expelled from the House of Commons, had been three times re-elected, and three times declared incompetent to sit, and the seat had been given to Mr. Luttrell, his unsuccessful opponent. Newcastle followed the example of other towns in demanding that the decision of Wilkes's constituents should be respected, and great was the outcry and the clamour. A petition to the throne was prepared, and on the Friday before Michaelmas Monday, a deputation from seventeen of the Incorporated Companies of the town waited upon Mr. Forster, as Mayor elect, with a requisition, asking that the burgesses might be specially summoned by the Town Clerk to attend the Guild meeting for the purpose of signing it. The requisition was long and strong, with such passages as these running through it:—"We have seen, with concern, for several years backward, the whole efficiency of government usurped by the great officers of state, and through their corrupt influence Parliaments have generally been at the absolute command of the Court, and have accordingly in innumerable instances decided in direct opposition to the known sense of the people. We have seen a multitude of persons holding or expecting places, pensions, and military commands, selected by the corrupt and

venal boroughs, and after receiving the wages of iniquity, re-elected into the House of Commons. We well know that a number of ill-gotten pensions and needless places, with emoluments to many thousands of pounds, are sunk into single pockets, and settled from generation to generation; whilst it is notorious to all that, with an incumbrance of near five millions yearly on land and commerce, on the regular payment of which public credit depends, every great branch of foreign trade is daily sinking in this island."

Mr. Forster, it is reported, expostulated a long time with the excited deputation on the situation of affairs, and most earnestly recommended his fellow-burgesses to postpone the petition till after the meeting of Parliament, but he was told that the burgesses were determined to petition the throne, and that they had one already drawn up, which would be laid before their worships on Monday for their approbation and subscription. On the Monday the Guildhall was crowded. The two members for the borough—Sir Walter Blackett and Matthew Ridley—were there; most of the aldermen were there; but not one of them would sign the document. Sir Walter, indeed, although he had voted for Wilkes in the House, struck an attitude strongly antagonistic. "Standing up, and laying his left hand upon his breast, stretching out his right as a mark of eloquence," he uttered these "weighty and emphatical" words:—"I will sooner have that right hand cut off than sign such a petition."

Deserted by their representatives, and discouraged by the Mayor, the promoters determined to have a meeting of their own. "Mounted on a galloway called Liberty," they despatched a messenger to Sir Francis Blake Delaval, at Seaton Delaval, and that "gay Lothario" consented to become their chairman. On the 16th November, 1769, the great meeting was held in the Long Room of Forth House, the petition adopted, an offer of Mr. Ridley to present it to the king without signing it refused, and the chairman requested to undertake that duty. In May following, a similar meeting took place, with Thomas Delaval in the chair, and this time it was a "remonstrance" as well as a petition which Sir Francis was desired to lay at the foot of the throne.

By their refusal to assist in the Wilkes agitation, the M.P.'s and the Mayor lost favour. At the next Parliamentary election an attempt, though a very unsuccessful one, was made to defeat both Sir Walter and Mr. Ridley. As for Mr. Forster, ten years was allowed

to pass before he was again invited to assume the dignity of chief magistrate. In the meantime asperities had softened down, and his second mayoralty was popular. So, at least, may be inferred from a note in the *Newcastle Chronicle* of the 7th October, 1780:—

"It cannot be imputed the incense of adulation to speak well of those who have conducted themselves in public stations as to merit the confidence and esteem of the people. Such a character we have in our late chief magistrate, Mr. Forster, who has discharged that important office in a manner that reflects the highest honour upon his principles and abilities, and will cause him to be long held in grateful and honourable remembrance by the burgesses and other inhabitants of this town. In his magisterial capacity he ever paid a due regard to the laws of our country, administering justice with impartiality, yet listening to the dictates of an honest heart. As a Briton, placed in that exalted station, he has shown himself a zealous supporter of those inestimable privileges secured to us by our ancestors, on the preservation of which the prosperity and happiness of Englishmen must ever depend. In the several constitutional efforts of the burgesses at this perilous period to check the enormous and growing influence of the Crown, or to attract the attention of the Legislature to the general welfare of the community, he has shown himself always ready to lend them his assistance, and warmly persevered in accomplishing such salutary and desirable objects. For the restoration of the ancient and legal privileges of the burgesses of nominating candidates for the representation of the town in a common hall he manifested an alacrity which can never be forgotten by the burgesses, particularly by those who signed the requisition. That inherent right had long lain dormant through obstinacy, we presume, in the governing part of the Corporation; but in the prudent and public-spirited mayoralty of Mr. Alderman Forster, the desires of the burgesses have been gratified, and their legal rights established."

Francis Forster died, at Seaton Burn House, on the 4th October, 1784, leaving amongst other issue a son and a daughter. The daughter, Eleanor Forster, married the Rev. James Manisty, B.D., vicar of Edlingham, and became, in 1808, the mother of Henry, afterwards Sir Henry, Manisty, one of her Majesty's judges. The son, Joseph Forster, succeeded his father in the sugar-house and the bank, and in the public work of the municipality.

Joseph Forster was born in the same year as George IV.—1762—brought up at Seaton Burn and in Newcastle, and soon after his

father's death, at Michaelmas, 1787, was chosen to be one of the electors of the Corporation, and at the same time appointed Sheriff. Seven years later, on the 8th of July, 1794, he was united in matrimony to Mary, only daughter of Henry Scott, the favourite niece of Sir John Scott, then Attorney-General, and afterwards Lord Eldon. By this marriage young Mr. Forster was brought into intimate social relationship with the local families of Surtees, Burdon, Atkinson, Cramlington, Chrichloe-Turner, and other people of position, which helped him to local honours if not to fortune. "Remember me affectionately to Mr. and Mrs. Forster," was the message which Lord Eldon sent to his niece and her husband when announcing to his brother Henry his elevation to the peerage in the month of July, 1799. The people of Newcastle were proud of their illustrious fellow-townsman, the coal-fitter's son who had been made a peer, and to some extent his lordship's kinsmen shared the public favour.

In April, 1801, when Lord Eldon was raised to the Woolsack, "the bells in all the churches of the town and Gateshead continued ringing from the arrival of the mail till late in the evening, and numerous groups of his lordship's relations and friends were formed in various parts of the neighbourhood to celebrate the event." At Michaelmas following, the Corporation elevated Mr. Forster, who had already been made an alderman, to the Mayoralty; and he seems to have been more than usually fortunate in securing public approbation. Upon his retirement, the *Newcastle Chronicle* (October 9th, 1802), in another outburst of admiration, pronounced the following eulogium upon his civic achievements:—"We seize the opportunity of paying a tribute to the merits of our late chief magistrate, Mr. Forster, who, whether we look to the various improvements projected in the town, or to the exertions of the police during his Mayoralty, we find equally deserving of praise. By his indefatigable exertions, that desperate gang of thieves, headed by the notorious family of Towns, which had so long committed their depredations upon the property of the inhabitants, has been broken, the ringleaders and several accomplices convicted, and they are now deservedly suffering the penalty of the insulted laws. His steady and determined conduct in the month of June last, when the intemperate behaviour of the seamen and keelmen threatened a temporary stop to the trade of the port, soon brought the misguided people to a sense of their duty, and the coal trade resumed its usual

course. With respect to the various improvements during the last year we cannot help again noticing the removal of that cumbrous mass of building, Pilgrim Street Gate, which has opened out one of the finest streets in the North of England, forming from the north a most beautiful avenue to the centre of the town. The widening the entrance to the Quay from the east by pulling down a larger portion of the old town wall than was thought necessary when Sandgate Gate was removed, is a very striking improvement. A new street from Westgate Street, on a line with Mosley Street, has been begun. And that most desirable improvement, a new butcher market, is now, by his zeal for the accommodation of the inhabitants, in a considerable state of forwardness. He has also pointed out a piece of ground adjoining the above for a fish market. In thus enumerating the advantages accruing to the town under the auspices of Mr. Forster we cannot omit congratulating our fellow-citizens upon the choice of Mr. Clennel as his successor," etc., etc.

Through the Eldon influence Mr. Forster received the appointment of joint receiver of the Derwentwater estates for the Commissioners of Greenwich Hospital. In 1808 he was elected Mayor for the second time. On this occasion, steering the Council through the noisy discussions about the audit of the municipal accounts, already lightly described in the biography of Mr. Joseph Clark, he received the encomiums not only of the friendly *Chronicle*, but of the Corporate reformers themselves. His last Mayoralty (1818-19) was equally successful. Shortly before his election some facetious burgess issued a handbill announcing the intended publication of a letter addressed to him "on the subject of paving the streets with Cobble Stones, Brick-bats, and all the Rubbish from the Town Walls," and showing "the Ability of the Finances of the Corporation to have the Streets paved with the very best Materials, equal to London, and likewise the facility of procuring those Materials whenever they please to order them." But this was only a harmless squib calling attention to a local grievance which Mr. Forster's influence might remedy. A glance at the newspapers of the period shows that he was invariably a leader in seeking to remedy grievances, and especially those which affected the commercial prosperity of Newcastle. In one day during his Mayoralty (March 8th, 1819) he presided over two meetings of the townspeople convened with that intent. At one of them it was determined to petition Parliament against a proposed measure for taxing coals at the pit's mouth. At

the other meeting a protest was made against a renewal of the "Insolvent Debtors' Act," and it was resolved to tell the House of Commons that "consequences most disastrous to the commerce of this country, and most destructive to public morals," had followed the enactment of that measure, while "the confidence and good faith which mark the transactions of the British trader, and which form the basis of commercial prosperity," had been shaken, "profligacy and extravagance" had been encouraged, and "frauds and perjuries multiplied to an awful extent." The burgesses of Newcastle were accustomed to express themselves in somewhat vigorous language, and upon this occasion the Mayor seems to have approved of it.

Mr. Forster's last appearance in a public capacity occurred at the Parliamentary election of 1820. Some of the electors, desirous of breaking down the influence of the members for the borough (Sir M. W. Ridley and Cuthbert Ellison), brought forward young Mr. Scott, son of Sir William Scott, the future Lord Stowell. Alderman Forster supported the nomination, and, in the absence of the candidate, entered upon a hopeless contest. At the close of the first day's polling he saw his mistake, and withdrew his relative from the struggle. But, like most men who have been accustomed to lead and to rule, he did not take kindly to defeat. Twelve months after the election, on the 7th April, 1821, he died at his town-house in Westgate Street, aged 59, and a few days later was buried in St. Nicholas'.

Mrs. Forster survived her husband for many years. To her we owe the majority of the personal reminiscences of Lord Eldon which besprinkle the pages of Twiss's voluminous "Life" of that great lawyer. While his lordship lived, Mrs. Forster spent much of her time with him, carefully collecting all the family traditions relating to his early life, and noting down his own genial gossip respecting his exceptionally fortunate career. After the death of Lord Eldon in 1838, she lived in comparative retirement, and, dying on the 17th April, 1846, aged 71, was buried in St. Nicholas' beside her husband.

# John Forster,

ESSAYIST, BIOGRAPHER, AND CRITIC.

ACCORDING to a memorandum written on the fly-leaf of Forster's "Life of Goldsmith" in the library of the Newcastle Literary and Philosophical Society, by James Gilmour, a relative of the family, John Forster was born "in a little yellow-coloured house standing immediately behind the residence of John Clayton, Town Clerk, in Fenkle St., Newcastle, which was pulled down by Richard Grainger to make way for Clayton Street. Thence the family removed to Low Friar Street, an old-fashioned gabled house, upon the site of which there now stands a soap and candle factory. From this house they removed to one in Green Court, and from it to a house still standing in the lane behind Pandon House, the last of the block as you leave Buxton Street to go to Sallyport. Here his father, Robert Forster, butcher, died; his brother, Christopher Forster, of the firm of Slack & Forster, Quayside, died very suddenly here also; and the remainder of those at home—viz., his mother, a gem of a woman, although the daughter of a Gallowgate cowkeeper; his sister Jane, who was the first victim of the cholera in 1853; his uncle, who was commonly called 'Gentleman John,' a butcher—removed to a little house in Shieldfield, where they all died, leaving a sister Elizabeth, in service as a governess." The following account of his career as a boy in Newcastle, and a man of letters in London, is abridged from a sketch contributed to the *Newcastle Weekly Chronicle* by Alderman William Lockey Harle, at the date of Mr. Forster's death:—

"John Forster owed everything as regards formation of character to the town of Newcastle. He was trained in classics at the Royal Free Grammar School by the Rev. Edward Moises, and in mathematics by a very able teacher—Mr. Henry Atkinson. No aspiring youth could anywhere obtain more accomplished tutors. Mr. Moises was very proud of Forster. I remember in the summer of 1826, as a small boy, visiting Mr. Moises at his house in Jesmond Bank. His whole conversation turned that summer night, as he sat in his garden, on the merits of the youth Forster, and the witty speeches of Mr. Beaumont during the long election at Alnwick.

"Forster must have been about seventeen or eighteen when I first heard of him as an aspirant for literary distinction. I was passing under the portico of the old Theatre in Mosley Street, when I noticed on the poster an intimation that a new drama in two acts, entitled 'Charles at Tunbridge, or the Cavalier of Wildinghurst,' written by a gentleman of Newcastle, would be acted that evening. I found on inquiry that the 'gentleman of Newcastle' was young John Forster —the favourite of Mr. Moises, an intense student of Byron and Scott, an enthusiastic antiquary and collector of ballad poetry, always seen with a book under his arm.

"The uncle—'Gentleman John'—was advised to send his

promising nephew to Cambridge; and to Cambridge young Forster accordingly went. It was anticipated that, after the careful training of Mr. Moises and Mr. Atkinson, he would acquire additional laurels on the Cam. Such was not the case. He soon withdrew from Cambridge, and went to London, where, in Gower Street, Brougham and Campbell (the poet) had succeeded in establishing a university. Soon after 1828 many young men crowded to this London University, especially to the law class, of which Mr. Amos was the first professor. In November, 1828, Forster wrote 'Remarks on Two of the Annuals,' and sent them to Mr. Mitchell for publication in the *Newcastle Magazine*. They are dated from

London, and appeared in January, 1829. As the work of a youth in his teens, the confident tone of the criticism, and the modes in which censure and praise are alike distributed, are really entertaining. Chief Justice Whiteside was at the London University with him, and in many respects they were much alike. Both were devoted to literature—both were fond of acting—and both were frequent speakers in the University Debating Society. Whiteside, in the December number of the *Newcastle Magazine*, 1829, published a sketch of Peter Burrows, of the Irish Bar; and Forster, doubtless, obtained this contribution from the future Lord Chief Justice of Ireland for his friend, William Andrew Mitchell, the editor.

"It is clear that at this time Forster had decided on a literary course of life. He was young, bold, and energetic; and he determined to write a book and connect himself with the periodical press. Wherever young men are gathered together, there is a tendency to contribute to a magazine. The London University had its magazine, and to this Forster copiously contributed. It died very early; and at the end of 1832 Forster had ceased all connection with the University, and had become the theatrical and literary critic both of the *Examiner* and of the daily *True Sun*. In the drama and literature of the *True Sun* Forster reigned supreme. John Bell was the political economist of the paper, and wrote leaders. J. C. Symons was the editor, and both Daniel Whittle Harvey and the Unitarian minister, W. J. Fox, were connected with this journal. Mr. Albany Fonblanque was editor of the *Examiner*. Political writing wholly occupied his attention, and Forster thus became possessor of the literary and dramatic authority of the great weekly *Examiner*, the reputation of which had been created by the brothers John and Leigh Hunt. With the daily and weekly press at his command, he became the centre of a little solar system, round which several unquestionable stars gladly revolved. Macready, Bulwer, Leigh Hunt, Serjeant Talfourd, Maclise, Sheridan Knowles, W. J. Fox, were all persons who recognised and acknowledged the influence of Forster. Charles Dickens at this time was in obscurity. He was reporting for the *Morning Chronicle*, and writing occasionally those slight sketches which appeared in the monthly magazines and elsewhere over the signature of 'Boz.'

"Dr. Dionysius Lardner—who had been a Lecturer on Natural Philosophy at the London University—planned a cyclopædia in monthly volumes which should comprise science, history, biography,

and treatises on the useful arts. Walter Scott undertook to write a history of Scotland, and Thomas Moore a history of Ireland. John Forster, scarcely out of his teens, undertook the lives of eminent British statesmen connected with the Commonwealth. Godwin, D'Israeli the elder, and Lord Nugent had previously laboured in the quarry of Charles I., Cromwell, and the Commonwealth; but Forster's volumes were the most successful regarding the era in question, and certainly constituted the most popular portion of Lardner's scheme.

"At this period Forster had secured chambers on the ground-floor of 59, Lincoln's Inn Fields. These chambers were expensively furnished, and his collection of books was enormous. The 'Lives of the Statesmen,' the *Examiner*, and the *True Sun* had placed him on a pedestal of great importance in the eyes of literature and art in London. No critic assisted Macready more in realising fame than John Forster. He not merely wrote up Macready, but ridiculed all other rivals near Macready's throne.

"John Forster was called to the Bar by the Inner Temple in January, 1843. I offered him business as a barrister in my professional capacity. He declined all connection with law excepting the name of barrister. In a note couched in the most courteous and friendly terms, he expressed his thanks for my attention; but he added that it was not his intention to practise at the Bar, and he considered it wrong to deprive those gentlemen of fees who made the law their livelihood. Lord Chancellor Cranworth appointed him secretary to the Lunacy Commission at a salary of £800 per annum, and eventually he succeeded to a commissionership at the same Board with a salary of £1,500 per annum. These appointments were not laborious or exacting, and left Forster ample leisure, after he had retired from journalism, to cultivate his literary inclinations.

"Soon after Charles Dickens rose into fame as the humorist of his day, he became the fast friend of John Forster. That friendship continued through life. The practical, sound sense of Forster, and his experienced critical acumen, were of immense service to Dickens. We know from his 'Life of Dickens' how largely the novelist drew on the wisdom of the arch-critic of the *Examiner*. Forster advised on the construction of the stories, negotiated terms with publishers, and in fact in every point of importance Dickens appeared to rely on the judgment and experience of his friend.

"There is little to add touching the intercourse of John Forster with his native town during the last twenty years of his life. As a Commissioner in Lunacy he came and went—he visited officially the asylums at Dunston Lodge, Coxlodge, and Morpeth; but nothing was known of him in Newcastle, and all his early friends appeared to have passed away. When Dickens and his party acted 'Not so Bad as we Seem,' as written by Bulwer for the benefit of the Guild of Literature and Art, Forster did not accompany the troupe of amateur performers to Newcastle. He had played John Hardman in the piece in London and Manchester; but he did not appear in the large Assembly Room of Newcastle. Mrs. Dickens, I remember, called on Miss Forster in the Shieldfield; and this was all that occurred to connect John Forster with the visit to Newcastle by the brilliant literary party that lavished their histrionic talent for an object in principle so praiseworthy and so noble.

"One little romance occurred in the early days of John Forster. He was engaged, I believe, to L. E. L.—Letitia Elizabeth Landon—the contemporary of Mrs. Hemans, and the beautiful lady minstrel of the *Literary Gazette*. Miss Landon was very popular in her day; and her 'Troubadour' and 'Golden Violet' were read everywhere by the young and enthusiastic. The cause of the separation of L. E. L. and John Forster was never clearly ascertained. He afterwards married Mrs. Colborne, widow of Mr. Henry Colborne, the well-known publisher—and it was understood that this lady was possessed of a considerable fortune. In the later years of his life he occupied the Palace Gate House, Kensington—a most agreeable place; and there, in the enjoyment of the society of the most accomplished men of his time, he was largely courted and admired.

"The career and the writings of Forster are woven for ever with the history of great names. Opinions may differ as to the quality of his work; but his name must go down to posterity in association with Dickens, Walter Savage Landor, Goldsmith, and Bulwer Lytton. He made himself a part of their intellectual struggles. In an artistic sense—as a specimen of finished literature—the 'Life of Goldsmith' is, I think, Forster's finest effort. The prevailing excellence of his books is their fulness of detail. He always seemed to exhaust his topic, even at the expense of symmetry and due proportion. His style cannot be said to equal the facile clearness of Southey or Macaulay, or the rich flow of his friend J. A. Froude. He seems occasionally cumbrous in manner; but an earnest student

in search of information respecting the period can nowhere find it so complete as in the Lives of Eliot, Cromwell, and Defoe. The 'History of the Grand Remonstrance' is a masterpiece of historical research. To me, however, it seems John Forster was greatest as a periodical critic on literature and art between 1830 and 1850. The criticisms themselves may be forgotten; but the bad taste that he ridiculed, and the genius in others which he elevated, improved, and cherished, proved the power of his position and the value of his labour.

"He sleeps now near his favourite sister Elizabeth in the vault at Kensal Green. Two of the greatest living historians, Carlyle and Froude, followed him to the grave. Lord Lytton, the son of his early friend Bulwer, formed a part, also, of the melancholy train; but the most touching incident at the funeral was the presence of some of the children of Charles Dickens. John Forster had known them as children while they played round the knee of their illustrious father; and it was grateful, tender, and fitting that both boys and girls should witness the closing scene of that father's friend. My humble wreath is woven and placed with reverence on the tomb; and long after that wreath shall fade and be forgotten, Newcastle will remember among her most distinguished sons the biographer of Dickens, the friend of Bulwer, and the profound historian of the Commonwealth of England."

Mr. Forster died on the 1st February, 1876; his widow in 1894. The books by which he is best known are—"Statesmen of the Commonwealth," 1840; "Life of Goldsmith," 1848; "Biographical and Historical Essays," 1859; "Arrest of the Five Members," 1860; "Sir John Eliot," 1864; "Walter Savage Landor," 1869; "Life of Charles Dickens," 1871-74; "Life of Swift," vol. i., 1875.

# Jonathan Langstaff Forster,

A LEARNED ATTORNEY.

"Learning maketh young men temperate, is the comfort of old age, standing for wealth with poverty, and serving as an ornament to riches."—CICERO.

ONE of the numerous branches of the Northumbrian Forsters established themselves in the township of Horsley, in the parish of Ovingham, where, at the time of the Civil War, the family

had a freehold estate. Towards the close of last century, the representative of this Horsley branch was one Matthew Forster, a substantial farmer at High Barnes, in that township. He had listened to the preaching of John Wesley, and became the friend and entertainer of that eminent man whenever he visited the society in the Horsley district. His eldest son, also named Matthew, born in 1775 (educated, most likely, at the celebrated school kept by the Rev. Christopher Gregson, vicar of Ovingham, Bewick's teacher), came to Newcastle to learn the profession of the law. He was articled to John Kirsop, attorney and notary public in Westgate Street, and having served his time, obtained his qualification, and spent a year or two in London to gain experience, commenced to practise on his own account. The compiler of Mitchell's Newcastle Directory for 1801 enters him as "Foster, Matt., attorney-at-law, High Bridge."

Shortly after his return to the North, Matthew Forster married Sarah, daughter of Joseph and Catherine Langstaff, members of an old Romaldkirk family, and, removing to Clavering Place, gradually built up a respectable and profitable business. Outside of his profession he was known as an uncompromising opponent of slavery. He filled for some years the office of joint-secretary of the Newcastle Auxiliary to the British and Foreign Anti-Slavery Society, and his name occasionally occurs during the early part of the present century attached to benevolent enterprises of an unsectarian character. He died at his residence in St. James's Street, Newcastle, in 1860, at the venerable age of 85, leaving behind him two sons, Jonathan Langstaff Forster, attorney, and James Forster, merchant and shipbroker.

Jonathan Langstaff Forster was born in Newcastle, on the 8th of January, 1804. His primary education was conducted by John Bruce, at Percy Street Academy, where he had for schoolfellow the great railway engineer of after years, Robert Stephenson; his finishing course was entrusted to the famous schoolmaster of Witton-le-Wear, the Rev. George Newby. Articled, at the proper age, to his father's friend, William Kirkley, attorney, in Newgate Street, he became a diligent student, distinguishing himself by assiduous attention to the theory and practice of the law, devotion to classical literature, and the cultivation of the poetic muse. At the expiration of his articles, he entered the office of Messrs. Fisher & Sudlow, in London, and, gaining there an insight into the working details of

a leading practice, returned to Newcastle, fully equipped for the responsible duties of his profession. Joining his father, he was in due time admitted to a partnership, the firm becoming that of "Matthew and Jonathan Langstaff Forster," with an office in Library Place, Westgate Street, and an excellent business in the intricate but peaceful department of conveyancing.

The active pursuit of his calling made no change in Mr. Forster's literary habits. Attaching himself to the local Literary and Philosophical Society, then in the height of its usefulness, he read hard and worked hard; his favourite studies being philosophy and languages. For the acquisition of languages he possessed a remarkable aptitude. Familiar with eight dead and living tongues, his chief delight was to read the Scriptures in Hebrew, Syriac, and Greek. A couple of Hebrew medals, belonging to Mr. John Clayton, which had puzzled local scholars, were deciphered and translated by him in a manner that elicited the warm approbation of an erudite Jewish Rabbi, to whose critical inspection they were afterwards submitted. It may be doubted whether any other man in Newcastle knew so many languages, or could use those which he knew with greater facility. So absorbed was he in his studies that until he was nearly forty years of age he did not find time to marry. The lady of his choice was Jane Rachel Wood (daughter of Major Wood, of Berwick, a retired officer of the Royal Artillery), to whom he was united at St. Andrew's, Newcastle, on the 26th April, 1842. Her decease, after only five and a half years of married life, was a great affliction to him, and he honoured her memory by devoting the rest of his days to the education and upbringing of the three sons whom she had left to his care.

From an early age Jonathan Langstaff Forster identified himself with philanthropic and benevolent enterprises in Newcastle. For a number of years he taught in the Sunday-schools attached to St. John's and St. Andrew's, and throughout his life he sacrificed no small portion of his leisure hours to helpful but unobtrusive ministrations among the suffering poor. He assisted his father as the first honorary secretary of the Newcastle Indigent and Sick Society, an institution established in 1827 to systematise charitable relief by organised visitation, and shortly afterwards he undertook the secretarial duties himself, discharging them with vigour and success for seven-and-thirty years. He was also for some years co-secretary with his father of the Newcastle Auxiliary to the British and Foreign Anti-Slavery Society. The North Eastern Reformatory School, and the

Newcastle Town Mission had no warmer supporter; he was one of the early promoters of both institutions, and for a long time held an active membership of their respective committees.

Like his father, Mr. Forster belonged to that branch of the Church of England which claims to be the true exponent of the principles of the Reformation, and had the same horror of excesses in ritual, and formality in worship. The Rev. Richard Clayton, head of the evangelical clergy in Newcastle, was his spiritual leader. When that excellent man died, and it was proposed to preserve his memory, and perpetuate his teaching, by the erection in Jesmond of a

memorial church, Mr. Forster was one of the five or six ardent workers who carried the movement to a successful issue. In him and four others the trusteeship and patronage of the church were vested, and he was rarely absent from its services.

The honour and dignity of his profession was an object of Mr. Forster's unceasing care. Upon his return from London in 1827 he joined the newly-formed Newcastle and Gateshead Law Society, and in 1835 moved the resolution by which an affiliated association, the Newcastle and Gateshead Law Institute, was created. This organisation was established to promote the study of the law by the formation

of a library, the reading of papers on law and jurisprudence, and the delivery of lectures in connection with the Literary and Philosophical Society. Mr. Forster was appointed co-secretary of the movement, with Mr. Joseph Watson, father of Dr. Robert Spence Watson, as his colleague. His services in the promotion of these institutions were recognised in 1859, when the Incorporated Law Society appointed him a commissioner to superintend the preliminary examination of law students.

Mr. Forster died on the 17th December, 1870, leaving three sons—Matthew Douglas, accountant, and assistant secretary to the Bishop of Newcastle's Church Extension Fund; Edward W., surgeon, Darlington; and Henry Langstaff, now in New South Wales. Under the editorship of the latter, two volumes were published containing some of the literary effusions in which Mr. Forster had occupied his leisure hours. The first, issued by Messrs. Hamilton Adams & Co. in 1872, is entitled "Episodes of Life in Poetry and Prose." The second, a work of great erudition, published by Messrs. Longmans, Green & Co. the following year, bears the title of "Biblical Psychology." Both of them portray a richly-stored mind, influenced by strong domestic affections, and guided by deep religious feeling. In the "Episodes" are many quaint conceits and happy turns of thought, such as this, referring to the loss of his wife—

> "In vain I oft with heart resigned
> Her profile, like her shadow, view;
> So life may leave its print behind
> That marks its absence too;"

while his translations from ancient authors, in which he delighted most, are graceful and pleasing. Among the latter is one from Horace, "To Aristius Fuscus," which, although for the most part easy, and often attempted by beginners, ends with a couple of lines that have puzzled every translator who has attempted to turn them into English verse.

> "Pone sub curru nimium propinqui
> Solis, in terra domibus negata;
> Dulce ridentem Lalagen amabo,
> Dulce loquentem."

The late Lord Ravensworth, in his "Odes of Horace translated into English Lyric Verse" (1858), expresses doubt whether any one has succeeded in conveying the full sweetness of the last lines, adding, "I confess my own failure, which is the more humiliating, after

having tried every conceivable variety of form for twenty years." His lordship's version reads—

> " Place me beneath the tropic sun,
> Where houseless men in deserts run,
> The softly speaking Lalage,
> The softly smiling still for me."

Mr. Forster's translation is as follows:—

> " Consign me where the sun above
> Bakes th' uninhabitable ground;
> Sweet smiling Lalage I'll love,
> Her prattling sweet shall sound,"

—and classical readers must judge between them.

In "Biblical Psychology," Mr. Forster endeavours to answer the question whether the common view that the human soul has a separate existence, apart from the body, is scriptural and true. His argument seems to show that the "soul" is the living "man," and has no immortality inherent in itself without the body:—"The *nephesh* (soul or self) is the organic personality of man, and the individuals of the entire animal creation; the *ruach* is the spirit of life imparted to each creature, both man and brute, by the divine *afflatus*. Personal identity is solely maintained by the union of the spirit with a body, and is lost on the separation of body and spirit. The doctrine of resurrection implies a restoration of all that constitutes conscious personal identity. An intermediate state is not sanctioned by the Bible, and originated from a Platonic interpretation of the Hebraistic phraseology. The opinion concerning the immortality of the soul is repugnant both to the original language and the doctrines of Scripture. The sole dependence of human immortality upon a resurrection concentrates all the hopes of the faithful in the Redeemer as 'the Resurrection and the Life.'"

The views which Mr. Forster expounds in this learned book are continually quoted by theologians who hold the modern doctrine of "conditional immortality." Whatsoever be their merits, about which no opinion need be expressed here, they are certainly sustained by close argument, and enforced by a wealth of quotation from Hebrew, Arabic, Greek, and Latin authors, which show extensive reading and deep research.

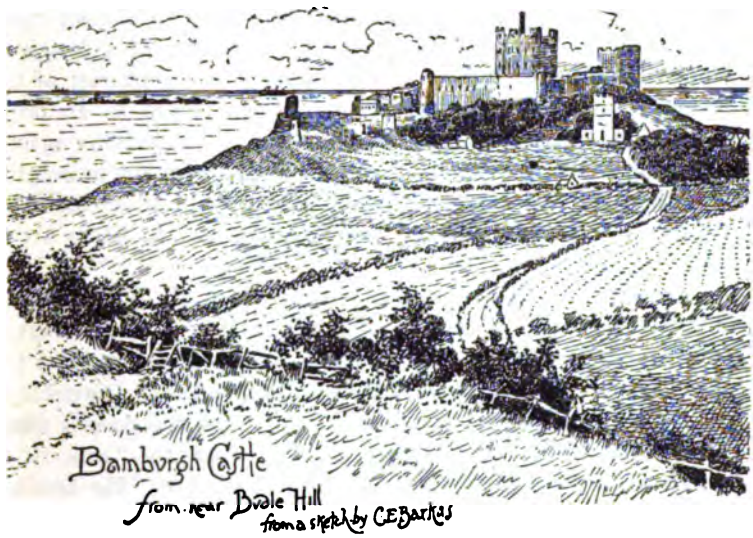
# Thomas Forster,

THE REBEL GENERAL.

THE Forsters of Northumberland were at one time as numerous as the Fenwicks, the Carrs, or the Greys. Settled at an early period of English history in the manor of Adderstone, or Etherstone, near Belford, they proved to be a most prolific race. One member of the family left twenty-two sons behind him, and it is not at all difficult to believe that, in a few generations, they overran the eastern seaboard of the county. About these early Forsters not much is written. Public interest in the family begins with Sir Thomas Forster, Knight, who, in the reign of Henry VIII., was Marshal of Berwick, made his will (still preserved at Durham) in 1526, and died soon after. By his marriage with a daughter of Robert, Lord Ogle, he had amongst other children Thomas Forster, of Adderstone, Sheriff of Northumberland in 1564 and 1572, and Sir John Forster, Knight, Warden of the Marches for seven-and-thirty years, Governor of Berwick, grantee from the Crown of Bamborough Castle, and the owner of the abbey lands of Blanchland. From these two brothers the Forsters of Adderstone and the Forsters of Bamborough and Blanchland descended, and from their respective families came, for the most part, the Forsters who figure conspicuously in local history.

For the purpose of this brief narrative it is unnecessary to trace the fortunate alliances, or to enumerate the fruitful progeny, of these two main lines of the opulent family of Forster. It is sufficient to state that towards the end of the seventeenth century they were amalgamated by marriage. Thomas Forster, of Adderstone, the representative of the older branch, chose for his wife Frances, eldest daughter of Sir William Forster of Bamborough and Blanchland (an honorary freeman of Newcastle), representative of the younger branch of the family. Sir William, like some of his ancestors, was blessed with numerous offspring, whose good fortune it was to make the name of Forster known beyond the limits of their native county. Dorothy, one of his daughters, married Bishop Crewe. William, his eldest son, entered upon a long parliamentary career. Chosen by the electors of Northumberland to

represent them in the Convention Parliament, which placed the Prince of Orange on the English throne, he was returned to each successive Parliament that met between that date and his death in 1700. His successor was his brother, Ferdinando, murdered in Newcastle under well-known circumstances, shortly after election, by John Fenwick, of Rock. With the death of Ferdinando, the male heirs of the Forsters of Bamborough ceased. Thomas Forster, of Adderstone, the brother-in-law, took their place in Parliament, while his son Thomas became co-heir with Lady Crewe of the family wealth. But for circumstances to be explained hereafter, Thomas




Forster, the younger, would probably have inherited the whole of the estates of the united families, for Lady Crewe had no children, and it might reasonably be expected that she would bequeath her moiety to her nephew, as representative of the two leading branches of the Forster race.

Baptised at Bamborough on the 29th March, 1683, Thomas Forster, jun., was trained with a view to parliamentary honours. When he was twenty-five years old, his father retired from the representation of the county in his favour. He was returned to the third Parliament of Queen Anne, on the 27th May, 1708, as "Thomas Forster, jun., Esq., of Etherstone," and seeking re-election

in the two following Parliaments of that Queen, and in the first summoned by George I., he was successful in retaining his seat. His parliamentary record during that time is, unfortunately, a blank. No mention of his name is to be found in the Commons' Journals during Queen Anne's reign, excepting in the form of an occasional service upon unimportant committees. After George I. came to the throne, even that ceased to appear. It is not known whether he took the oath of allegiance to the Hanoverian dynasty. His name is not in Cosin's list of those who refused. But if he did take the oath, he was not long faithful to it. Parliament met on the 17th March, 1715, and on the 21st September the king sent a message to the Commons declaring that he had just cause to suspect "Mr. Thomas Forster, junior," and five other members, of a design to support an intended invasion of the kingdom in the interest of the Pretender, and desiring the approval of the House to an order which he had given for apprehending them as conspirators against his person and Government. A rebellion had broken out among the adherents of the Stuarts in Scotland, under the Earl of Mar, and Thomas Forster was believed, and truly believed, to be in active sympathy with them.

The story of the Rebellion, and the part which Mr. Forster played in it, have been told in the biography of the Earl of Derwentwater, on pages 66-76 of the present volume. It is therein shown how the rebels marched through Penrith to Lancaster, and from Lancaster to Preston, designing to move triumphantly forward, and possess themselves of Manchester and Liverpool. Forster was the "general" of the so-called army, and terribly he mismanaged it. He and his "army" never were able to quit Preston. There was a sharp struggle with the king's troops, and then the "general" capitulated. Patten states that "many exclaimed against Mr. Forster, and had he appear'd in the Street, he would certainly have been cut to pieces; but as he did not appear publickly, yet he had been actually kill'd in his Chamber by Mr. Murray, had not I, with my Hand, struck up the Pistol with which he fired at him, so that the Bullet went through the Wainscot into the Wall of the Room. And since I mention Mr. Forster I cannot but justifie him against the many Aspersions he lies under in this part of the Action, I mean as a Coward. It must be own'd he was no Soldier, nor was the Command given to him as such, but as the only Protestant who could give Repute to their Undertaking, being of Note in Northumberland, of an Ancient

Family, and having for several Years been Member of Parliament for that County, and therefore very Popular. . . . As to Matters of Conduct, Mr. Forster, tho' he was call'd General, yet he always submitted to the Counsel of Colonel Oxburgh, who was formerly a Soldier, and had obtain'd a great Reputation; tho' it is manifest in our Case that he either wanted Conduct or Courage, or perhaps both. He was better at his Beads and Prayers than at his Business as a Soldier, and we all thought him fitter for a Priest than a Field Officer. . . . Besides the Influence of Colonel Oxburgh, my Lord

Thomas Forster.

Widdrington had too great Prevalency over Mr. Forster's Easy Temper; and this Lord, we thought, understood so little of the Matter that he was as unfit for a General as the other."

In the Diary of Lady Cowper, a daughter of John Clavering of Chopwell, the views expressed by Patten in the foregoing paragraph receive confirmation :—"The 16th [November] came the news that the rebels had surrendered to the king's forces at Preston. Mr. Forster, one of my cousins, knight of the shire for Northumberland, was their General. The messengers had been down in the summer to take him up, but he had hid himself at my cousin Fenwick's at

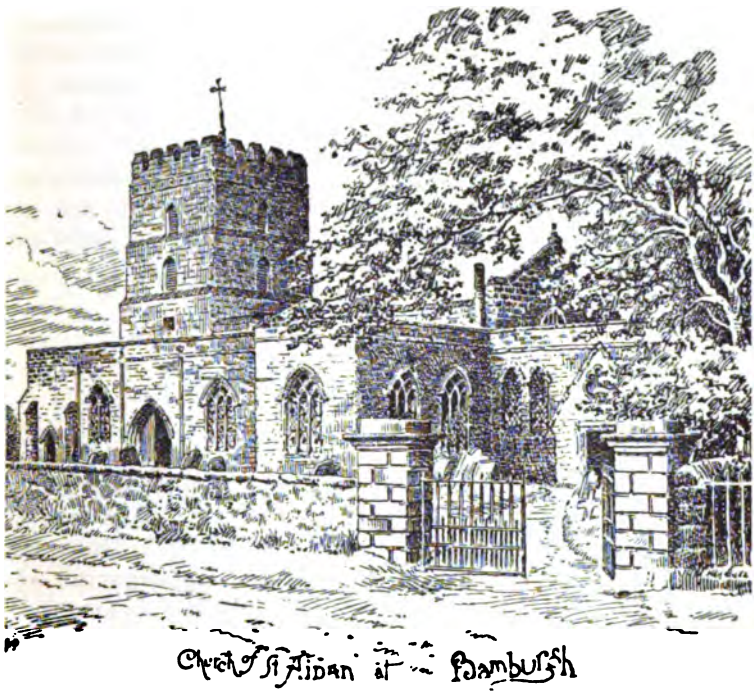
Bywell, so they did not get him. I conjecture that it was for the sake of his uncle and aunt [Lord and Lady Crewe] that he was made General, and not at all from the fitness of the thing, for he had never seen an army in his life. The concern and agitation of mind which my Lady Crewe had for fear the messenger should take him up killed her, for she fell into convulsions, and died in four days."

The surrender being effected, and the rebels made prisoners, Forster and Patten were sent, with others, to London. From Daventry southward these two were distinguished from the rest by their halters being led by troopers, "which gave the people as we passed along an opportunity to compliment us with encomiums upon a warming-pan"—an allusion to the alleged spurious birth of the Pretender, who, the common people believed, was not the child of James II., but a foundling smuggled into the Royal bed-chamber in a warming-pan. At Barnet they were pinioned, and in that inglorious manner, accompanied by a strong detachment of mounted Grenadiers and Foot Guards, marched through London to Newgate. Here Forster received a shock. Three of the rebels had been executed the day before; "their quarters were then in a box just by in order to be set upon the gates, which spoiled his stomach, so that he could not eat with his then unhappy companion."

Forster lay in prison awaiting his trial till April, when, according to a popular story, his sister Dorothy (Walter Besant's Dorothy Forster) effected his liberation. Riding to London disguised as a servant, behind an Adderstone blacksmith named Purdy, this brave young lady procured, upon a piece of clay, an impression of the key of the strong room in which her brother was confined. A false key was easily smuggled into the prisoner's hands, and near midnight on the 10th April he achieved his freedom. The escape was so well concerted that, as soon as he was out of the prison, horses were in readiness to take him to a vessel lying off the Essex coast, in which, within twenty-four hours after leaving Newgate, he safely arrived at Calais. The Government offered a reward of a thousand pounds for his capture, describing him as "of Middle Stature, inclining to be Fat; well shaped, except that he stoops in the Shoulders; fair complexion'd, his Mouth wide, his Nose pretty large, his eyes gray, and speaks the Northern Dialect." This proving ineffectual, the House of Commons, on the 24th of May, ordered a bill to be prepared attainting him of high treason, and

a month later, having passed through all its stages, the bill received the sanction of the House of Lords.

Under ordinary circumstances, the Crown would have reaped a rich harvest by the attainder of Forster, as it did by the attainder of the Earl of Derwentwater. But Forster had nothing left to forfeit. Historians, one after the other, tell us that his estates were confiscated, and that Lord Crewe purchased them of the Crown Commissioners and devoted them to charitable uses. This is an error



Church of St Aidan at Bamburgh

which the late William Dickson, of Alnwick, Clerk of the Peace for Northumberland, corrected long ago. In the "History of the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club," vol. vi. (1872), is a paper written by him which shows upon undoubted evidence that Thomas Forster surrendered to Bishop Crewe, his uncle by marriage, long before the rebellion broke out, all his interest in the estates of his family. Thus:—"Sir William Forster and his sons, William and Ferdinando, had run through all these fine estates by reckless

extravagance, and that in a very short space of time. Law proceedings began about 1701, and all the estates were sold before 1709 was out; thus proving conclusively that the estates were never forfeited by the rebellion, but sold in due course of law to pay debts by order of the Court of Chancery; and that when the rebel general committed the act of treason by joining in the rebellion, all his lands had been sold six years before to pay his debts, and he had not an acre left to bless himself with at the time he joined the Pretender in 1715."

To deceive the Government, and avoid the risk of capture, it was reported soon after his escape that Forster had died abroad, and to complete the deception a mock funeral was prepared, and a coffin full of sawdust was placed in the family vault at Bamborough with due solemnity. When he died in reality (at Boulogne, September, 1738, having survived his escape for two-and-twenty years), his body was secretly brought to Bamborough and privately deposited beside the dummy. There, in 1837, the real coffin and the sham coffin were found together.

## Westgarth Forster,

GEOLOGIST AND MINING ENGINEER.

WESTGARTH FORSTER, author of "A Section of the Strata from Newcastle-upon-Tyne to Cross Fell," was the eldest son of Westgarth and Lucy Forster, of Ivy House, Garrigill, Alston, and grandson of George Forster, of Jeffry's Rake, Hunstanworth, who married a daughter of the ancient family of Westgarth, owners for many generations of the estate of Unthank, in Weardale. Westgarth Forster, the elder, was a mining agent, who, in 1774, received the appointment of assistant-manager of the Allendale and Coalcleugh mines, and who, at his death in February, 1797, was described in the *Newcastle Chronicle* as "one of the best judges of lead-mines in the North of England." Westgarth, the younger, as appears by his tombstone in Garrigill Churchyard, whereon his age at his death in 1835 is stated to have been 63 years, was born in 1772, and it is believed that the family mansion of Jeffry's Rake was his birthplace. There, and at Allenheads, his boyhood was spent. Of that part of his life, however, little is known. Whether he was bright or

dull, studious or idle, what school he attended, and who were his teachers, are matters upon which no information can now be obtained. If one might judge of the boy from the man, and of the man from the tone of his letters, and the traditions of him which still linger among the people of Allendale, Weardale, and Alston, he would be described as of a kind and gentle disposition, of shy and retiring manners, and of studious habits. That he was exact and painstaking in his lessons, and, subsequently in his professional engagements, is evident from the manner in which a large copy-book has been kept which was used by him when a lad of about fourteen, in his exercises on surveying, and also from the many excellent sketches and plans and well-written papers which are now in the possession of his representatives.

Upon the death of his father, Westgarth Forster undertook, at the request of the directors, the agency of the Allendale mines. He was well qualified for that position by previous training, having for some years acted as assistant to his father. Tradition says that he constructed elaborate plans of these mines, which were of great service to his successors in the agency, and that he then earned a reputation as a skilful miner. An incident which is supposed to have happened during his tenure of the Allendale agency illustrates the ignorance which then prevailed even among practical miners with regard to the most elementary facts of geological science. Whilst a party of gentlemen from Newcastle were on a visit to Alston Moor, they met Forster, either accidentally or by appointment, at the Fox Inn, Garrigill. The conversation having turned to the subject of mining, a member of the party asked to what depth it might be necessary to sink from the surface in Garrigill, in order to reach the coal seams. Forster smilingly replied that it would be necessary to "rise," and not to "sink." The fact that the lead measures underlie the coal measures was at that time known only to a few specialists in geology.

For some reason, the nature of which cannot now be satisfactorily ascertained, Westgarth Forster, between 1806 and 1809, ceased to be agent of the Allendale Company. Great changes had taken place in the directorate of that concern since the death of the elder Forster. Sir Thomas Blackett was dead, and his place as chairman was filled by Colonel Beaumont. Whether or not these changes exercised any influence upon the fortunes of the agent we do not know. Probably they did not, since the colonel seems to

have been on the most friendly terms with the Forster family. His resignation of the agency seems to have been rendered necessary by the changes which took place in his home soon after his mother's death. By marriages, deaths, and removals, Westgarth and his sister Susan were left the sole occupants of Ivy House and the farm attached to it. The sister alone was not equal to the management of the house and farm; Westgarth could lend her no assistance because of the pressing nature of his own duties as mine agent; moreover, the distance of the mines necessitated frequent and long journeys between them and his home. Either the agency or the farm could have been dispensed with, for the income from either, supplemented by the income from other sources, was sufficient for the requirements of them both. Therefore, the suggestion that Forster resigned the agency because he desired to live at Ivy House is reasonable, especially when we remember that the Ivy Farm was his own property, and had descended to him from his grandfather.

A temporary retirement from one branch of his profession allowed him more time for the study of another. He was collecting materials for his "Strata," and in his search for them it was necessary that he should make frequent expeditions to distant places. Much time was consumed in those expeditions—more, indeed, than he could have spared if he had retained the agency. The first edition of the "Strata" was issued in 1809. In the same year appeared the first geological map of England, by William Smith. These two productions—both the results of patient investigation conducted in two different portions of the same field of inquiry—laid the foundation of a sound knowledge of English geology. Previously to their appearance there had been much speculation as to the origin and constitution of the earth. Many ingenious theories were propounded, discussed, and abandoned, but little real progress had been made. Since their appearance the progress has been both real and rapid. The cause of the change is obvious. It is plainly indicated in the introduction to the "Strata." "Theory," says the author, "has hitherto been the bane of geological science. It has cramped the efforts of inquiry, and paralysed the exertions of research. Geologists have been too apt to spurn the drudgery of patient investigation, but this is the road that leads to truth, and the road which I have undeviatingly pursued."

Forster's was the first "Section" of any importance published in this country, and it was well received by geologists and miners. In the

preface to his second edition, the author states that "the first was received with considerable avidity." Robert Bakewell, a geologist of some ability, and the contemporary of Forster, wrote thus of the book in the *Philosophical Magazine*:—"Much has already been done to elucidate the geology of part of the coal districts, by Mr. Westgarth Forster, whose 'Section of the Strata,' taken in part from actual admeasurement, comprises the coal districts on the eastern and middle parts, and the metalliferous limestone districts on the west, an extent of forty miles and an actual depth of nearly 1,400 yards. This section, perhaps the most important and extensive that has ever been made, was taken by a person educated as a practical miner, who had spent the early part of his life in that district. As such I consider it particularly valuable." This was written in 1815, that is, six years after the issue of the book. Though the profits accruing from the sale of the work were small, the author had good reason to be satisfied with the success it had achieved. It brought his name prominently before the mining community; and he was henceforth recognised as an authority on geological and mining questions. The owners of mining property, the directors of mining companies, and mining agents sought his assistance in their difficulties. A new career as a surveyor was thus opened out to him. He may be said to have fully entered upon his duties as a mine surveyor in 1810; he retired into private life in 1833. His professional course thus extended over twenty-three years, exclusive of the time during which he acted as agent for Sir Thomas Blackett and Colonel Beaumont. As compared with the average duration of professional careers, his was a short one; but, if measured by the amount of work accomplished, it is justly entitled to be considered a long one. During those twenty-three years he surveyed, mapped, and reported upon, mining fields in Cumberland, Westmorland, the North Riding of Yorkshire, Derbyshire, Cheshire, Shropshire, North and South Wales. He also visited Spain and North America, for the purpose of surveying mines in those countries. He had offers of employment in Ireland and Norway, but was unable to accept them. Some of his reports and many of his plans are still extant. The former are noticeable for their clearness, and for a comprehensive grasp of the subjects with which they deal; the latter are remarkable for their order and neatness.

The second edition of the "Strata" appeared in 1821. Among the subscribers to this edition were Dr. Buckland, author of the

"Bridgewater Treatise on Geology"; Sir Joseph Banks, President of the Royal Society; Count Breuner, of Vienna; the Duke of Devonshire; the Earls of Darlington and Strathmore; Dr. Shute Barrington, Bishop of Durham; Professor Millington, of the Royal Institution of Great Britain; Dr. Thompson, Regius Professor of Chemistry, Glasgow; Colonel Prowse; and Colonel Beaumont.

That the author contemplated the issue of a third edition in 1829 is evident from his letters. Writing to his friend Mr. Douglas, in August of that year, he says:—"I still hope to have the pleasure of seeing you here [Aberdovey, in Wales]. I should like to consult you respecting another edition of my book." In September he informed his sister Phœbe that he had some idea that he might soon want the plates and blocks which were used in the production of his work.

In the same year in which the second edition of the "Strata" appeared, Forster went down to Somersetshire, where he surveyed some mining property, and directed the efforts of a company who were interested in a new colliery. During the years 1825 and 1826 he surveyed, sketched, and reported upon mining properties in Cardiganshire, Merionethshire, Glamorgan, Monmouthshire, Pembrokeshire, Montgomeryshire, Denbighshire, Shropshire, and the Isle of Man; and among the proprietors who availed themselves of his services were the Marquis of Bute, Lords Dynevor and Talbot, Sir Charles Morgan, Sir Watkin W. Wynne, Sir John Aubrey, Sir G. Alderson, W. E. Powell, Athelstane Corbet, and Pryse Pryse. Westgarth Forster sailed for North America in April, 1830, and returned to Aberdovey, in Wales, in May, 1831, bringing with him a series of sketches which he had made during his stay on that continent. That he visited Spain during the interval between May, 1831, and April, 1833, is more than probable, though no reference to such a visit is contained in that portion of his correspondence which has escaped destruction; the diary which he is said to have kept in Spain, together with many other papers left by him at his decease, having perished long ago.

In his retirement at Ivy House, Garrigill, Westgarth Forster found such occupation as failing health permitted in outdoor sketching and planning when the weather was favourable, and in colouring plates of unsold copies of the "Strata" when outdoor work was impracticable, busying himself at the same time in the affairs of the village, and keeping up a correspondence with Professor Sedgwick, Hugh Lee Pattinson, and other friends of his prime. These congenial

employments were, however, of but brief duration. During the summer of 1835 he was seized with a fatal illness, and on the 9th of November in that year he died.

Though half a century has elapsed since the grave closed over Westgarth Forster's remains, his name still continues a household word among the people of Alston Moor, Weardale, and the two Allendales. He lives in their minds as a clever though somewhat eccentric man, different in many respects from the ordinary run of mankind. Local mining agents and local geologists are familiar with his name; mining agents and geologists who have a reputation which is more than local still continue to quote him as an authority on mining and geological questions. His "Section of the Strata" is still the standard work on the geology of the two Northern Counties, and it was never more highly prized by miners than it is now. A third edition of it was published in 1883 by the Rev. William Nall, M.A., prefaced by a memoir of the author from which the present narrative has been condensed. Though the book was written when the science of geology was in its initial stage; when even people of education recognised no distinction between one kind of rock and another; when such terms as "stratified" and "unstratified," "aqueous" and "igneous," seldom appeared in print, and were scarcely ever heard; when the great works of Buckland, De la Beche, Philips, Lyall, Murchison, Sedgwick, and other geologists had not yet appeared, the classification of the strata which it contains is the one still in use. Forster rendered valuable service to the sciences of mining and geology, and for that service, if for no other reason, his name will long continue to be remembered.

# Ralph Gardiner,

ANTI-MONOPOLIST.

AMONG the men of renown whom the great national rising of 1642 brought to light, not the least remarkable was a spirited brewer at Chirton, near North Shields, named Ralph Gardiner, whose resistance to the "tyrannical oppression" of the old Corporation of Newcastle, with his well-known work entitled "England's Grievance Discovered in Relation to the Coal Trade," has rendered his name familiar to most dwellers on the Tyne. At the time he wrote his book, he was only twenty-eight years of age—a man broken in fortune, but not in spirit, by persecution. His clear mind perceived the evil flowing from the monopoly given to Newcastle, by royal charter, of the trade and commerce of the North-East of England; and he scorned the idea that the people of Shields, or of any other place on the estuary of the Tyne, should neither bake nor brew, nor steep malt, nor build ships, unless they had inherited from their fathers, or chose to buy or obtain by service, the freedom of the town of Newcastle.

Ralph Gardiner, or Gardner, it appears, was the son of Devereux Gardiner, gentleman, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and (probably) grandson of Nicholas Gardiner, of Mearcefenn (Mason, or Mason Dinnington), in the parish of Ponteland, in the county of Northumberland, yeoman. All that we know of his father is that he was bred to the legal profession and wrote a beautiful hand, and that, having failed apparently to secure a livelihood by practising law, he accepted the post of writing-master in Queen Elizabeth's Grammar School in Newcastle, which he retained till 1632, when he obtained his leave from the Common Council, who presented him, however, with £10, "in respect of his poverty for a full discharge to depart the school." It was while Devereux Gardiner was thus engaged that his son Ralph was born, on the 29th of August, 1625. He was baptised at St. John's, Newcastle, as "Ralph Gardiner, s. to Mr. Deveruxe Gardiner." The lad seems to have received a good education, and Nature had endowed him with a dauntless spirit. Of his youth we know nothing; but in his twenty-third or twenty-fourth year he was established as a brewer at North Shields,

and resided in a two-storeyed house at Chirton, near that town, which house was taken down in 1856 to make way for a new mansion then about to be erected on its site by Mr. Collingwood, of Lilburn Tower, for Mr. John Foster Spence, of North Shields.

The Free Hostmen of Newcastle claimed, on the authority of a clause in Queen Elizabeth's Charter, to bake and brew for all the ships in the port of Tyne. This right Ralph Gardiner disputed. He asserted that charter law was in opposition to both common and statute law; and, at that particular epoch, when Monarchy was overthrown and a free Commonwealth established, he had every reason to expect that this interpretation would be adopted. The Corporation of Newcastle was still strong, however, even though Cromwell was at the helm. Some time during the municipal year

1650-51 the Company of Bakers and Brewers "goeing to Sheiles and Tinemouth" saw what was going on, and gave "warneing to Mr. Gardiner to surcease brewing." This he would not do; and actions at law were consequently brought against him. Heavy fines were imposed and costs accumulated. In August, 1652, he was cast into Newcastle Gaol, "upon a bare arrest," as Thomas Salkeild, gent., afterwards deponed, and actions laid for "upwards of Nine hundred pounds where Twenty pound could not be recovered," and was "kept locked up in a prison from all comforts, in a tower above thirty-six foot high, and destitute of the most common conveniences." He offered good bail, freemen of Newcastle, who were accepted and entered in the book, "and two days after raced out again, and he still kept there." He desired to be admitted to defend his own

cause in their court, but this was refused; desired to go with a keeper to counsel, which was also denied; his friends and servants were often not admitted to come to him; he "proffered good Bond to be a true Prisoner, to the end he might have the benefit of the fresh Aire for the preservation of his health, but at the Gaoler's house, which the Sheriff granted at the first, but presently after refused, saying that the Mayor, Aldermen, and himself had a meeting, and resolved he should have no liberty, being an enemy against their Privileges." He was "constrained to drink the gaoler's beer, not fit for men's bodies." This, to a brewer, was "the most unkindest cut of all." No trial was ever had against him. The Common Council disobeyed two or three writs of *habeas corpus* "which the Sheriff received, and his Fee, and was proffered to have their charges born, but never returned them." Finally, his substantial bond to appear in London before the judges was refused. Seeing no end or outlet from all this oppression, he "brake prison," after five months' detention, in February following.

From February, 1652, till May, 1653, Ralph seems to have been at liberty, gathering up his evidence, and setting himself to overturn the monopoly which had been so ruinous to him. But one day in the latter month the Newcastle myrmidons, "with swords drawn and pistols cocked," and a warrant from the mayor and sheriff, surrounded his house, while he was peacefully seated in it, shot at some of his servants, and struck his wife; and he not being the man to submit tamely to such an outrage, "much blood was spilt," for the seamen got ashore and fell upon the Newcastle men like furies, wounding and disarming them. The pretence for these proceedings was a debt of £900 for fines and court expenses; and although the victim then escaped, he was not suffered to go at large long. Shortly afterwards he was put in prison once more; and his whole case against Newcastle, which is contained at large in that remarkable volume of his, "England's Grievance," seems to have been got up by him while thus confined. Gardiner's petition to the "Supreme Authority, the Parliament of the Commonwealth of England," is dated 29th September, 1653. The case was to have been heard on the 13th December. But on the 12th December Cromwell dismissed the Long Parliament, and the proceedings fell to the ground at once, with a multiplicity of similar affairs.

Notwithstanding this defeat, Ralph did not lose heart. Though still in prison, he determined to persevere. He petitioned for a

copy of certain records in the Exchequer, in order to substantiate his charge; and asked to have them gratis, on account of his being then in confinement. We know not how he obtained his liberty, or by what means, or on what terms. But three years later we find him once more at large, and as keenly engaged as ever in battle with his old antagonists. And the contest continued for many years afterwards.

It appears from the vestry book of the parish church of Tynemouth, that Ralph Gardiner removed to London in 1659. With the Restoration, which took place in the following year, all hope must have fled of being able to put down the monopoly against which he had been fighting so long. His safety for the time lay in silence and retirement. But, though appeals to Parliament would have been in vain, and consequently were not attempted, Ralph Gardiner came back to brew his beer, and "withstand the little tyrants of his fields" on the banks of the Tyne as stoutly as ever. For, in the Bakers' and Brewers' Books of Newcastle of 1662-63, we find, amid the expenditure of the Company, the following entry:—"Item, paid att Sheils and other places for the discovery of Mr. Gardiner's brewing with whirry hire, and given to Peter Easterby, for his paines touching the same, 22s." This is the last direct notice we have of him at Shields, though in some "Expedients proposed for the easing and advantaging the coal trade, and lessening the price of coals in London and some other places," drawn up about 1675, local writers profess to see marks of his bold Roman hand.

Although Gardiner was twice in prison, and suffered much otherwise, both in purse and person, he maintained to the last a degree of respectability creditable to himself. In the records of Christ Church, Tynemouth, for 1651 his name stands first on the list of the "Four-and-Twenty." He also held the office of churchwarden in 1651-52, and from that time down to 1659 he seems to have been quite a pillar of the church, his name generally standing next to that of Ralph de Laval in the place of honour. In the year 1658 the following occurs:—"May 22nd, 1658.—Received, the day and year above mentioned, of and from the hands of Anthony Dow, churchwarden for the parish of Tynemouth, for the Shields part of the half-year's rent for the meating place at Chirton, the sum of forty shillings, due at Michaelmas next ensuing the date hereof, this day received by me.—RALPH GARDNER.

"Witness, Anthony Dow. This being a true coppie."

Gardiner was married to Catherine Reed, of Chirton, on the 9th September, 1648. She was probably a daughter of Ralph Reed, of Chirton, gentleman, who had come from Newcastle and settled there, along with George Milbourne, of Newcastle, gentleman. Ralph's first child, John, was born in 1649-50, and three others, George, Ralph, and Ann, are mentioned in the register of the parish church of Tynemouth as having been baptised—the first, February 4th, 1651; the second, September 15th, 1652; and the third, July 23rd, 1655. John and Ann died in the years they were born.

When, or under what circumstances, Ralph Gardiner died is unknown. A story was long current of his having been hanged at York for coining, on the authority of a letter from a nameless alderman of Newcastle, quoted in the "Life of Ambrose Barnes." There once was, it is true, a person of the same name hanged at York for the crime above specified; but that was in 1661, as appears from official records, whereas Ralph Gardiner, of Chirton, was still alive twenty years after that. The Surtees Society's volume of "York Depositions" shows him to have been living in 1682; for on March 4th, 1681-82, a letter, signed "Davenport Lacy," was addressed to the judges of assize for the city and county of York, requesting them to respite, until the next assizes, the recognisance of "one Mr. Ralph Gardiner, who is now in his Majesty's present service in the Horse Guards, and bound to appear to an indictment of trespass and assault, pretended to be done by him in the city of York," "by reason he is ordered to wait upon the king in a party to Newmarket, in order to keep guard during his Majesty's stay there." It had not previously been ascertained what became of Gardiner when he left the North. It now appears that he entered the army, and was in the Royal Horse Guards.

Though bearing marks of the haste and unpropitious circumstances in which it was composed, the "Grievance," with its pictorial illustrations, is one of the most curious monuments of the manners and customs of the times, and is specially valuable as throwing light on the municipal, commercial, and social history of Newcastle. Its full title is—

"Englands Grievance Discovered, In relation to the Coal-Trade: With The Map of the River of Tine, and Situation of the Town and Corporation of Newcastle: The Tyrannical oppression of those Magistrates, their Charters and Grants; the several Tryals, Depositions and Judgements obtained against them; With a Breviate of several Statutes proving repugnant to their Actings; With

Proposals for reducing the excessive Rates of Coals for the future; And the rise of their Grants, appearing in this Book. By Ralph Gardiner, of Chriton in the County of Northumberland, Gent. London: Printed for R. Ibbitson in Smithfield, and P. Stent at the White horse in Giltspur Street, without New-gate, 1655."

Copies of the original edition, printed as above, in small quarto, having become extremely rare, the book was reprinted at Newcastle in 1796 by the Akenheads. This, too, has become scarce. But about originals and copies, maps and illustrations, and other particulars of this remarkable book the reader may consult a valuable paper by Mr. Charles James Spence in the "Archæologia Æliana," vol. xiii. pp. 285-305.

# William Garret,

FREEMAN'S LEADER AND BIBLIOPHILE.

"Sacred to the Memory of William Garret, who for forty years devoted himself to the interests of the freemen, and was ever ready to defend their rights and privileges. He filled the office of Chairman of the Stewards of the Incorporated Companies for a long period, and was Steward of the Skinners' and Glovers' Company. He also contributed to our local literature by editing a black-letter manuscript of the Battle of Flodden, and compiling an account of the principal Floods in Northumberland and Durham. Died 28th December, 1857, aged 63 years. Erected by the Skinners' and Glovers' Company, and private friends of Mr. Garret, in commemoration of his public services. This stone was erected in its place on the 31st March, 1860."—INSCRIPTION IN JESMOND CEMETERY, NEWCASTLE.

A GENERATION of Novocastrians that has scarcely yet passed away, was familiar with William Garret, whose portly form, fluent speech, and imperious bearing gave him a distinct individuality in the town forty to fifty years ago. Champion of the freemen of Newcastle against their civic rulers, and far-searching collector of every available chip that could exemplify, or scrap that could illustrate, the workmanship of Thomas Bewick, he figured for many years as a minor light in local administration on the one hand, and as a bibliophile and relic-hunter of wide-spreading repute on the other. The highest official position to which he attained was that of Chairman of the Stewards of the Incorporated Companies; his commercial status was that of a bookseller; yet, in the thirties and forties of the present

century, one could not be many days in Newcastle without hearing of William Garret.

Born in 1793, the son of John Garret, a hairdresser, who carried on his business first in the Groat Market and afterwards in the Bigg Market, William Garret received a good education, for his father was a man of advanced ideas, a promoter of the Royal Jubilee School, and a supporter, to the extent of his means, of other institutions designed to encourage mental and social improvement.

Developing studious habits and exhibiting bookish tendencies, he was bound apprentice, in or about the year 1807, to his father's neighbour, the famous bookseller, Emerson Charnley. Soon after his term of servitude expired, on the 3rd November, 1814, he was admitted to the freedom of the Stationers' Company, and thenceforward became qualified to exercise his calling in any way most conducive to his wishes. He chose to remain at the famous shop wherein he had acquired his business knowledge, and for thirty years he continued with Mr. Charnley, rising from the position of

'prentice lad to that of assistant, and from the post of assistant to that of manager.

During the early days of his engagement with Mr. Charnley, Mr. Garret indulged in mild literary recreations on his own account, encouraged thereto, without doubt, by his friend and pastor, the Rev. William Turner. The formation of the Newcastle Typographical Society, in 1817, provided him with the temptation to see himself in print, and he contributed, between that year and 1822, the following tracts to the society's series:—

"An Elegy to the Memory of Her Royal Highness the Princess Charlotte of Wales," 1817.

"An Account of the Great Floods in the Rivers Tyne, Tees, Wear, Eden, etc., in 1771 and 1815. With the Names of the Principal Sufferers in Northumberland, the Amount of their Estimates, and of the Damage done in each Township; Also an Account of the Subscriptions made for their Relief in 1771. To which is added an Account of the Irruption of Solway Moss." Newcastle: Printed for Emerson Charnley, 1818. Four Bewick Cuts. Dedicated to John Adamson.

"The Battle of Flodden Field." Reprint, in black-letter, of a rare tract originally issued by Richard Fawkes, printer, about 1514. Newcastle: Printed for Emerson Charnley, 1822. With one Bewick Cut. Dedication of three pages to John Trotter Brockett.

Nothing more appears to his credit in local literature till the election of 1830, when he issued a well-known broadside, entitled "The Gathering of the Whigs in Sir Matthew White Ridley's Committee Room," commencing—

" Little wot ye wha's comin,
Dan o' Blagdon Ha's comin,
Harry's comin, Scaife's comin,
Henderson an' a's comin.

Canny Mr. Mayor's comin,
Cornel Bell an' a's comin;
Bobby Boyd an' a' the Bank,
Canvas Bags an' a's comin!"

and running on through eight other verses of the same character. By this time more absorbing, and perhaps more useful, work than the compilation of local tracts had been found for Mr. Garret to do. At an early period of his freedom he had been elected steward of his company, and now he was engaged in continuing the work which Joseph Clark had begun, of denouncing municipal extravagance, and demanding a restoration to the freemen of their alleged rights and

privileges. Those who consult *The Corporation Mirror*, *The Northern John Bull*, and other ephemeral periodicals of the time will read reports of the noisy guild meetings that preceded the Great Reform Bill, and be able to gauge the heighth and depth of the agitation that ensued in favour of a similar measure for securing Municipal Reform. At all those meetings Mr. Garret was one of the guiding spirits; through all that agitation he was a chief spokesman; sometimes leading the attack, sometimes conducting the defence. At the Municipal Inquiry held in Newcastle during the early part of November, 1833, he took the lead in cross-examining the representatives of the Corporation, and in addressing critical remarks to the Commissioners. Mr. John Clayton, the Town Clerk, principal witness for the civic authorities, received a regular fusillade of questions from the freemen's chief inquisitor, and the genial way in which he turned the tables on his interlocutor formed a subject of admiration and amusement for long after. Thus, on the subject of the cost of admissions to freemen :—

"Mr. GARRET begged to correct a statement made by the Town Clerk. When he was made a freeman he paid several items not mentioned by the Town Clerk, amounting altogether to £1 4s. 4d. instead of £1 2s. 5d.

"The TOWN CLERK said the extra payments mentioned by Mr. Garret were presents to the doorkeepers about the Court, which that gentleman and others were liberal enough to make voluntarily. No doubt those officers felt very much obliged to Mr. Garret for his liberality. (Laughter.)"

Then, on the question of the duties, functions, and emoluments of the Mayor, the method of election, etc. :—

"Mr. GARRET: Gentlemen, you may depend upon it a great many reforms have taken place within the last few days. (Laughter.)

"Commissioner RUMBALL: Then we have come too late?

"Mr. GARRET: Oh, no! There's a great deal to do yet. Besides, these reforms were not made till they heard of your coming. (A laugh.)

"The TOWN CLERK: It must be satisfactory to reformers to have good done and improvements effected in any way. (Increased laughter.)

. . . . . .

"Mr. GARRET said that, under pretence of pointing out who were respectable and well-known men, the Town Clerk had, at the last election, placed a broad arrow opposite his name, among others, for they knew he was a rather troublesome elector the year before.

"The TOWN CLERK intimated that Mr. Garret could have no objection to being marked as a respectable and well-known man. (Laughter.)

. . . . . .

"Mr. GARRET: There was a second bellman appointed, but the Corporation put him down.

"The TOWN CLERK: It was judged that the noise made by one of those functionaries was quite sufficient. (Laughter.)"

The passing of the Municipal Reform Act in 1835 settled most of the disputes between the Corporation and the freemen. Several of the latter found their way into the Reformed Town Council; but Mr. Garret, although nominated by both wards of the parish of St. Andrew, did not enter the charmed circle. He remained outside, and, as chairman of the Stewards of the Incorporated Companies, led the freemen through many a wordy fray and convivial encounter, for which, later on, they rewarded him with the customary "handsome piece of plate."

In 1844, the year before Mr. Charnley died, Mr. Garret left the famous book mart in the Bigg Market, after thirty years' service, and started in business for himself. From No. 39 Mosley Street, he issued a catalogue announcing an intention to make the collection of local literature his chief concern, and stating that he would have "constantly on hand almost every book, pamphlet, portrait, plan, or print relating to the town of Newcastle and the counties of Northumberland and Durham." The promise was well kept. He began with a goodly number of local books, and before long he had one of the largest stocks in town. Bewick's blocks and illustrations were the principal objects of his search. His first catalogue contained six copies of the "Birds," six of the "Quadrupeds," four of the "Select Fables," and three of "Æsop," with several separate cuts, prints, and drawings. In little more than a twelvemonth he sent out a catalogue in which were no fewer than 108 entries under the name of Bewick, and an announcement that, besides these, he had in stock "upwards of one thousand specimens" of the "minor and early" work of that great engraver. Local curios and relics also added interest to his collections. Among other objects that he offered for sale were:—

"Saint Nicholas' Church: A beautiful Model in Wood, upwards of eight feet high, 'accurate by Measurement in all its Parts.'

"Lord Derwentwater's Wine Glass: A curious old 'Party Glass,' engraved 'F. R.,' surmounted by a coronet on one side, and 'Success to Prince Charles' on the other.

"Lord Derwentwater's Girdle Purse: An old Leather Double Purse, the Tassels fringed with Silver Lace.

"Wine Pant: A Tin Model, 19 inches high, of the Pant that ran Wine on the Sandhill, Newcastle, at the coronation of George IV.

"A Fine solid Plaster Bust of William Martin, the Natural Philosopher.

"Sixty Saxon Stycas found at Hexham.

"Seven Pairs of very old Leather Shoes made in Newcastle, in fine condition, and very curious.

"Fruit Piece by George Gray, 'admitted to contain some of the ripest fruit he ever painted.'"

Devotion to Bewick brought Mr. Garret into communication with that enthusiastic collector, the Rev. Thomas Hugo. In the preface to the first volume of his "Descriptive Catalogue of the Works of Thomas and John Bewick," Mr. Hugo attributes to two men in Newcastle—William Garret and John Bell—his chief success in gathering together the vast and unique collection which bore his name. Of Mr. Garret he wrote:—"I enjoyed for a number of years the pleasure and advantage of his correspondence, and not unfrequently that of his excellent company at Newcastle. Of all the men I ever knew, he was among the first and foremost for local knowledge—and Newcastle and Bewick were his pet subjects. A question never came amiss to him. As it may be supposed, he was not in general ready to part with his hoarded literary and artistic treasures, and, when he did so, showed that he was well acquainted with their value. But in the latter years of his life he was pleased to make my Collection the depository of his best and choicest 'gems,' to use his customary word, and took a lively interest in its perfection and completeness. In his business dealings I ever found him most exact and honourable, while as a correspondent and companion, his facility in imparting information on all local matters, and his native ability, happy enthusiasm, courtesy, and genial good-humour, united to endear him to all who were brought within his influence."

Mr. Hugo's two well-known volumes are full of notes from Mr. Garret's pen, giving little histories of the objects enumerated, bits of gossip about the workmanship of them, or stories concerning their previous owners. Besides these jottings, Mr. Garret does not appear to have added anything to his early efforts in literature. He issued the "Fisher's Garlands" for 1844 and 1845, and afterwards made up a few sets of those charming songs with a title-page dated 1842. He gathered together handbills, broadsides, and tracts relating to special subjects, and bound them in unique volumes, like those of John and Thomas Bell, with title-pages and occasional notes—volumes prized by local collectors, and now rarely obtainable. Beyond this class of bookmaking he did not venture.

Four or five years after Mr. Garret started in business for himself, some local dispute with the Stationers' Company led to his withdrawal from the fellowship. The Skinners' and Glovers' Company, "taking into consideration his extensive knowledge of Corporate affairs [this is from an obituary note printed in black letter by Mr. Roger Cradock Watson], and the able and eloquent manner in which he had discharged his duties as a steward, and also his long and unwearied exertions in defending the just rights and privileges of the freemen, called a special meeting on the 12th December, 1851, and admitted him an honorary member. On the resignation of Mr. George Halliday, they appointed him the Glovers' Steward, the duties of which office he fulfilled to the general satisfaction of his brethren."

Towards the close of his life, finding bookselling less remunerative, and his natural powers failing him, he accepted the position of deputy-registrar of births and deaths for the district of St. Nicholas and St. John. Occupying that office, he died on the 28th December, 1857, and was buried in Jesmond Cemetery.

# The Gibsons of Hexham, etc.

## FRIARS, PRIESTS, AND BISHOPS.

THAT part of the Tyne valley above which the venerable Abbey Church of Hexham rears its time-worn tower, has been, for three hundred years, the birthplace and the home of a family bearing the ancient patronymic of Gibson. Their pedigree, printed in Hodgson's "History of Northumberland," commences with Richard Gibson, who obtained a grant from the Crown of lands at Hexham, and settled there in the latter part of the sixteenth century. Public interest in them begins a hundred years later, when Richard, son of George Gibson, of Hexham, adding to his patrimonial inheritance other property in the town, and acquiring lands at Corbridge, laid the foundation of a goodly estate. To him were born three sons, two of whom, George and William, choosing the religious life, joined the order of St. Dominic, while the other son, Thomas, remained at home, married, and perpetuated the race. From the date when George and William Gibson entered the cloister, the family have

remained loyal to the Catholic faith, and have given to its propaganda several distinguished priests and bishops.

In Gillow's "Biographical Dictionary of the English Catholics" are sketches of six ecclesiastical persons who sprang from this notable family, and with that work, Hodgson's history, Maziere Brady's "Annals of the Catholic Hierarchy," and a useful little book entitled "Chapels at Ushaw" at our elbow, the services which the Gibsons of Hexham and Stonecroft have rendered to their country and their religion will be easily explained and exemplified.

First, as to the two brothers who set the example of entering the priesthood. George, the elder, was professed at the Dominican Convent at Bornhem, near Malines, in 1673, where he taught philosophy and theology, and for a year occupied the responsible position of sub-prior. From Bornhem he went to Rome, where he rose to the more exalted office of Prior in that great house of his order which bore the united names of St. John and St. Paul. In the summer of 1686, he was sent to England as chaplain to the Claverings of Callaly, with whom he remained till 1693, when his brother Thomas, having acquired the estate of Stonecroft, near Hexham, put him in charge of a mission there. At Stonecroft he died on the 17th of December, 1696, and was buried in Newbrough churchyard, where, in Hodgson's time, was an inscription to his memory.

William Gibson, born in 1668, professed at Bornhem in 1687, and ordained priest at Rome in 1692, taught philosophy at Aglia, in Piedmont, till the death of his brother called him to England to take up the work of the Stonecroft Mission. At that place he remained till 1712, when he was obliged to leave the country. He had solemnised a marriage, and for that heinous offence an information was laid against him, and warrants were issued for his apprehension. Flying to Bornhem, he was welcomed by the brethren, who made him Professor of Theology, Master of Novices, and Spiritual Director of secular students, and in May, 1714, elected him to be their Prior. Three years later he became confessor in the Dominican house at Brussels. In 1719, having received his degree of S.T.M., he returned to England, and was appointed chaplain to one of the foreign embassies in London, where he died on the 7th June, 1724, aged 56.

Thomas Gibson, brother of the two Dominicans, married Bridget, daughter of Jasper Charlton, of Hawkhope. Through this alliance

he acquired a moiety of Hawkhope; later on he purchased from his wife's sister the other half, and thus became possessed of the whole estate. He bought, also, Stagshaw Close House from Sir William Blackett; Stonecroft and Nunbush from William, Lord Widdrington; and Housesteads from the Armstrong family. Two of his sons were men of mark, as well as marked men. George, the heir, was out with the Earl of Derwentwater and General Forster in 1715, was captured at Preston, tried and condemned for treason, and would have suffered, like many others, but for an outbreak of fever in Newgate, which carried him off before the date fixed for his execution. Patten, in his "History of the Rebellion," describes him as "a Papist: a gentleman well beloved in his country." Another son, Thomas Gibson, born September 29th, 1688, was ordained priest at Douay, and shortly after the death of his brother in Newgate received an appointment to the Catholic mission in Newcastle. By the attainder of the Earl of Derwentwater the mission had been deprived of its chapel—a part of the old residence of the Radcliffe family, situate in a court or yard, known long after as Bell's Court, Newgate Street; but Mr. Gibson found a home and raised his altar on the opposite side of the way, in the Nun's Gate. There he officiated in peace (being also Archdeacon of Yorkshire) till the second Rebellion—that of 1745—broke out. Newcastle and Gateshead were intensely loyal to the Hanoverian dynasty, and when the Duke of Cumberland came over the Tyne, marching to the victory of Culloden, the populace evinced their gratitude by burning the Catholic chapel at Gateshead, and wrecking Mr. Gibson's in Newcastle. For some time the ousted priest went in fear of his life; but, resorting to various disguises, even adopting women's attire, he was able to visit his flock till the storm blew over. Meanwhile, the old Radcliffe mansion in Newgate Street had fallen into Catholic hands again. It was occupied by Mary, widow of Albert Silvertop, daughter of Joseph Dunn, of Blaydon; and one of her daughters being married to a nephew of Mr. Gibson's, she invited the persecuted ecclesiastic to return, like a wandering shepherd, to the old fold, and he accepted the invitation. For nearly twenty years after the return of the mission to its former domicile Mr. Gibson remained in charge, and, dying on the 20th January, 1765, aged 76, was buried in All Saints' Churchyard.

A third son of Thomas Gibson, and, therefore, brother of the "rebel" and of the Newcastle priest, bore the name of Jasper. He

married, September 26th, 1719, Margaret, daughter of Nicholas Leadbitter, of Nether Warden, by whom he had two-and-twenty children. Four of his sons entered the Catholic priesthood, and two of them rose to be bishops; an indication of devotion to a creed which in their day was intensely unpopular, that probably few other English families can equal. George and Richard were the two sons who remained priests; Matthew and William were the brothers who donned the mitre.

George Gibson, the eldest of the four, born in March, 1726, was educated at Douay, and for some years remained in the college there as general prefect. Upon his return to England he was appointed to the mission at Hexham, where he established a manufactory for spinning wool to provide employment for the children of the poor. He died at that place, on the 3rd December, 1778, aged 52.

Richard Gibson, the youngest of the four, born in 1739, was ordained at Douay. After leaving the college, he assisted in a school at Standon, in Hertfordshire, and was successively appointed to Hare Street and Old Hall, in the same county. About the year 1784, he removed to Mawley Hall, the seat of Sir Walter Blount, in Shropshire, where he spent the remainder of his life, "much respected and beloved by the family and his congregation, notwithstanding his constitutional roughness and apparent harshness." He died there on the 13th of September, 1801, aged 62.

Matthew Gibson, fourth son of Jasper, was born in 1734, and, like his brothers, was sent to Douay to be educated for the priesthood. He took the college oath in 1752, and having finished his theological course, and received ordination, occupied for four years the chair of Philosophy, and afterwards, for six years, the professorship of Divinity. Returning to England in 1768, he entered into the general work of the mission, and two years later was chosen Archdeacon of Kent and Surrey. In 1776, under Bishop Walton, Vicar-Apostolic of the Northern District, he became Vicar-General, and the following year received the higher appointment of Special Vicar. A Vicar-Apostolic, it may be explained, is a bishop who possesses no diocese, but exercises jurisdiction over a certain district by direct authority of the Pope; a Vicar-General is a priest who performs quasi-episcopal functions under episcopal authority, while a Special Vicar is an officer entrusted with duties resembling those of a coadjutor bishop. For three years Mr. Gibson discharged his duties as Special Vicar, and then, through the death of Bishop Walton, a vacancy occurred

in the supreme office of Vicar Apostolic. The Pope, approving his zeal for the faith, his success in propaganda, and his undoubted abilities in administration, appointed Mr. Gibson to be Bishop Walton's successor. He was consecrated in London, September 3rd, 1780, by the title of Bishop of Comana in Cappadocia, and a few days afterwards entered upon the onerous duties of his office. How onerous these were may be inferred when it is explained that the Northern District, mapped out in the reign of James II., and unaltered till 1840, comprised the counties of Northumberland, Durham, Cumberland, Westmorland, York, Lancaster, and Chester, and therefore extended, at a time when railroads had not been invented, from the Tweed in the North to the Humber and the Mersey in the South.

Up to the date of Matthew Gibson's appointment the Catholics of Northumberland and Durham saw their bishops at long intervals only, and their vicars-general as seldom. The Rev. W. Maire, of Lartington, who acted from 1767 to 1769 as coadjutor to Bishop Petre, and was buried at Romaldkirk in the latter year, formed the only exception to this rule. Bishop Gibson, being a Tynesider, not only paid frequent visits to his native county while discharging subordinate functions, but four years after his consecration he came to the North to reside. There was a Catholic mission at Stella, founded a hundred years before by the Tempests, and worked from their ancestral home, Stella Hall. Under the protection of the Widdrington family, successors of the Tempests, the mission had been continued, the officiating priest sharing the hall with the agent of the estates, and celebrating mass in a chapel attached to it. Thither, in the spring of 1784, Bishop Matthew Gibson took up his residence with the priest of the mission, the Rev. Thomas Eyre, and from thence he governed his extensive charge. Upon Tyneside his life was quiet and unobtrusive. He spent the great part of each summer in visiting the remoter parts of his district, and the winters in attending to duties nearer home. In no public capacity outside of spiritual functions discharged among his own people did he appear; nor did he contribute much to ecclesiastical literature. Nothing is known to have issued from his pen but a revised edition of "The London, or Little Catechism," and a Pastoral Letter on a proposed oath to be taken by "Protesting Catholic Dissenters." He died at Stella Hall, on the 19th May, 1790, aged 57, and was buried among his relatives at Newbrough.

William Gibson, fifth son of Jasper, born in February, 1738, was educated and ordained at Douay, where he took the college oath, November 3rd, 1755. Returning to England, he took up his residence at Minsteracres, officiating for many years as domestic chaplain to the Silvertops. He was appointed President of Douay in 1781, and remained there till the death of his brother, whom he succeeded as Vicar-Apostolic of the Northern District, with the title of Bishop of Acanthos, in 1790. This bishop was the founder of the great Catholic College of Ushaw. He had resigned the presidency of Douay to assume the mitre, and when, three years later, that famous French training-house of English priests, and its companion establishment at St. Omer, had been broken up by the French Revolution, he devoted himself to the task of gathering together the scattered students, and carrying on in England the educational work which the Republic had suppressed. Some of the refugees were provided for at Old Hall Green, Herts; others were placed for a time in a lay school at Tudhoe. In 1794, Bishop Gibson obtained a lease of Crook Hall, ancient seat of the Bakers, in the parish of Lanchester, and opened it as the first Catholic college established in England after the Reformation. Thither students flocked in annually increasing numbers, until Crook Hall became inadequate to their accommodation. Then, as we read in the Rev. Henry Gillow's "Chapels at Ushaw," the bishop took in hand a project of greater magnitude—the founding of an institution which, in size and teaching power, might compare with the college at Douay. He applied to Sir Edward Smythe to sell him a farm of 300 acres, situated near the village of Ushaw, four miles west of Durham; the price being arranged, the land was purchased, and a scheme drawn up for a large collegiate edifice. "The plan was considered far too extensive by many of the clergy, and the Bishop was greatly blamed for entertaining so ambitious a project. Nothing daunted by the opposition to his views, he adhered to his resolution, and early in the year 1805 the first stone was laid of a quadrangular building, measuring 180 feet from east to west, and 230 feet from north to south, enclosing a large open court, surrounded by corridors. Three wings of the college were so far completed in the summer of 1808, that, on the 19th of July, the President sent the first body of students to take possession of their New Alma Mater."

Residing generally at York, but occasionally at Durham with the resident priest, the bishop managed to conduct the business

of his huge district without flinching, and without neglecting any part of it. "For many months," he wrote, "I administered the sacrament of confirmation three or four times a week, and as often preached sermons before Catholics and Protestants. My journeys were very long and fatiguing. In Lancashire I confirmed about 8,000, and almost all of those confirmed received the holy communion." It was not until the seventeenth year of his episcopate that he obtained the services of a coadjutor. After that time his health gave way under the weight of years and the burden of his office. In 1819 his condition was such that his three vicars-general asked for extraordinary faculties to be given to the assistant bishop, Smith. Dr. Gibson had been, they said, infirm for years, and latterly was in such a condition of paralysis that two men were required to lift him from his chair. His mind also was affected, and he was almost senile. Yet he clung with childish tenacity to the semblance of power, and, although unable to do any business, would not permit his coadjutor to act for him in any case where he did not possess the requisite faculties. In this condition of mind and body the venerable prelate remained till his decease. He died at Durham on the 2nd of June, 1821, aged 83, and was buried in the college cemetery at Ushaw. His literary work comprises a translation of a French book, "The Truth of the Catholic Religion, proved from the Holy Scriptures," published at Newcastle by Edward Walker, in 1799; a "Charge," delivered on the passing of the Act of 1791, which freed Catholics from various declarations and disabilities; the joint authorship of an encyclical letter in 1791, and of a Pastoral Letter in 1793, and a "Conversation between the Right Hon. Edmund Burke and Dr. W. Gibson," undated.

## Thomas Gibson,

PHYSICIAN, DIVINE, AND AUTHOR.

DR. THOMAS GIBSON, born at Morpeth in the latter part of the fifteenth century, must have been a remarkable man, if all that is told of him by his early biographers be true. Later writers have, however, thrown some doubt upon the accuracy of the record, suggesting that there may have been two persons of the same name living at the same time, the one educated at Cambridge and

the other at Oxford, whose respective achievements have been, in error, attributed to the Morpeth worthy alone. The Rev. John Hodgson, in the Morpeth section of his "History of Northumberland," supports the theory of separate individualities, chiefly on the ground that a well-known contemporary writer, and a native of Morpeth himself, Dr. Turner, makes no reference to Gibson, with whose life and labours he must have been acquainted. Mr. Hodgson's account, condensed from Bale, Aikin, and Watts, is as follows:—

"Gybson, or Gibson, Thomas, was not only, like his townsman and contemporary, Turner, famous for his knowledge in divinity, physic, and botany, but was one of the early English printers. Bale mentions him in terms of high commendation, and says his cures were almost incredible. He entered zealously into the spirit of the Reformation, and wrote in its favour; but during the Marian persecution, fled to the Continent, from whence he returned on the accession of Elizabeth, and settled in London, where he died in 1562.

"Pulteney, in his 'Progress of English Botany,' has left him unnoticed; while he bestows twenty pages and great encomiums upon Turner. Of the merits of his works I have not had an opportunity of forming any judgment, having never seen a volume of them; and in turning over such works of Turner as have fallen in my way, I have thought it remarkable that I never met with Gibson's name, especially as there were so many coincidences in their lives, for they were not only townsmen and contemporaries, but both reformers, divines, physicians, and naturalists, both banished for the same cause, and both lived and died in London. All his works were printed by himself, excepting the last in the list below; but it does not appear that he printed for any other person.

"The Concordance of the New Testament, most necessary to be in the handes of soche as desire the communicacion of any place contayned in the New Testament. Imprinted by me Thomas Gybson. Cum privilegio regali." London, 1535. 8vo, with the mark T. G. on the sides of a cut.

"A Treatise behooueful, as well to preserue the people from the pestilence, as to helpe and recouer them that be infected with the same; made by a bishop and doctour of phisick in Denmark; which medicines haue been proued in many places in London." London, 1536, 8vo.

"The Great Herball newly corrected. Then the contents of this book. A table after the Latyn names of all herbes. A table after the English names of all herbs. The propertees and qualityes of all things in this booke. The

descryption of vrynes, how a man shall have trewe knoweledge of all sekenesses. An exposycyon of all the wordes obscure and not well knowen. A table quyckly to fynde remedyes for all dyseases. God save the kynge. Londini in edibus Thome Gibson, 1536."

"John Campenses, his Paraphrase on the Psalmes," etc. No date.

"A summe of the actes and decrees of the bishops of Rome." No date.

"A Breue Cronycle of the Bysshope of Rome's Blessynge, and of his Prelates beneficiall and charitable rewardes from the tyme of Kynge Heralde vnto this day. Imprinted—by John Daye—in Sepulchre Parishe, at the signe of the Resurrection, a little above Holbourne Condiute."

Anthony Wood, in the first volume of his "Athenæ Oxonienses," which is devoted chiefly to a history of Oxford writers, claims him as a student of the University of Oxford:—

"Thomas Gibson, a noted Physician of the Age he lived in, was born at Morpeth in Northumberland, and for a year, or years, was, as I conceive, educated here, because that several of both his Names and Time were conversant with the Muses in this University; but whether he took a Degree, or was licensed to practise Physic it appears not. Afterwards he being noted for his extraordinary Success in curing Diseases, was very much resorted to by great, as well as ordinary People, especially by those of the reform'd Party, he being one himself, and a great Enemy to the R. Cath. Bishops; in spite and envy to whom he wrote,

"A History of the Treasons of the Bishops from the Norman Conquest to his time. Whether this was printed, I know not, because had it been so, there's no doubt but inveterate Prynn would have found it, to gain matter thence, when he compos'd his Book of the same subject. He wrote also,

"An Herbal.

"Treatise against unskilful Alchymists.

"Treat. of curing common Diseases.

"Of the ceremonies used by Popes—besides other things, and had laid the foundation of a little Book to show the various States that Britany hath been in, which he divided into five Parts; but whether he compleated it, is uncertain. He lived after Qu. Eliz. came to the crown, being then in his middle Age, but when he died it appears not. 'Tis said, that because divers Persons had medled with the applying of dark Prophecies, purposely to advance the Fame and Glory of Charles, then Emperor, so one Tho. Gibson did endeavour to do the like to promote the glory of Hen. 8 of England; which Th. Gibson we are to understand to be the same with Th. Gibson before-mentioned."

The Coopers, on the other hand, in their "Athenæ Cantabrigienses," claim Gibson for the University of Cambridge. Thus:—"Thomas Gibson, a native of Morpeth, Northumberland, was, it is asserted, educated at Oxford. It is certain, however, that one of the name took the degree of M.B. in this University, 1511. He was noted for his extraordinary success in curing diseases, as also for his strong antipathy to the Roman Catholics. He wrote much, and from 1535 to 1539, or afterwards, carried on the business of a printer

in London. With one exception, all the known productions of his press were compiled by himself. Bishop Latimer, writing to Cromwell, 21st July, 1537, recommends that Gibson, who was the bearer of the letter, should be employed as the printer of a work then about to be published. He says, 'He ys an honeste poore man, who will set ytt forth in a good letter, and sell ytt good chepe, wher as others doo sell too dere, wych doth lett many to by. Doctor Crom, and other my frendes obteyned of me, natt with owght sum importunyte to wrytt unto you for hym.' In the reign of Mary he was a fugitive for religion, but returned to England on the accession of Elizabeth, and in 1559 had a licence from this university to practise physic. His death occurred in London, 1562."

To the list of his works, printed by Hodgson (omitting "John Campenses his Paraphrase"), the Cambridge writers add the four extra books named by Anthony Wood, and another, "De Utroque Homine." They further state that he and his wife and daughter became members of the English congregation at Geneva on the 20th November, 1557. And that is all that is known about him. Whether he was one Gibson, or two Gibsons rolled into one, is an open question that, in these pages at any rate, need not be debated.

## William Sidney Gibson,

BARRISTER AND ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORIAN.

UPON the extension to the provinces of the London system of bankruptcy procedure, under the Bankruptcy Law Amendment Act, 1842, a District Court was established at Newcastle, and on the 15th November, in that year, in a suite of rooms forming the eastern end of the Royal Arcade, the court was formally opened for the transaction of business. Lord Chancellor Lyndhurst appointed a member of a well-known local family—Nathaniel Ellison, of the Chancery Bar—to be the first Commissioner or Judge of the new court, and under him, as Registrar, he placed William Sidney Gibson.

Mr. Gibson, a native of Parson's Green, Fulham, where he was born in 1814, was studying for the Bar when he came down to Newcastle to discharge the duties of his office, and shortly afterwards he received his call from the Honourable Society of Lincoln's Inn.

Although a stranger to the district, the reputation of a scholar, devoted to antiquarian research and historical investigation, had preceded him, and he was heartily welcomed by the little band of antiquaries that were endeavouring to stimulate a taste for the exploration and preservation of ancient remains in and about Newcastle. He had not been long in the town before he began to inquire, to investigate, and to write; giving therein abundant evidence of scholarly acquirements, archæological knowledge, and literary skill. One of the first objects to attract his attention was the noble ruin of the Conventual Church of Tynemouth, familiarly known as the Priory, under whose shadow he had fixed his residence. Disappointed with the meagre details to be found in local literature, he set himself the task of writing the history of that magnificent structure, and after three years' unremitting labour he published in two volumes, royal quarto—

"The History of the Monastery founded at Tynemouth, in the Diocese of Durham, to the Honour of God, under the Invocation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, and S. Oswin, King and Martyr." London: William Pickering, 1846 and 1847.

Decorated with illuminated pages, and adorned by initial letters copied from mediæval MSS., resplendent in hand-applied gold and colours, these sumptuous volumes were further illustrated by etchings from the studio of the elder Richardson, *fac-simile* representations of ancient deeds and seals, and by wood engravings. No more superb example of typography and illumination had been seen in the district, and its illustrations were equalled only by the thorough and comprehensive character of the text. In the first volume are the legend of St. Oswin, the general history of the monastery from its foundation to the time of William Rufus, when the place was refounded by Robert de Mowbray, and downward through the regnal periods of successive sovereigns to the Dissolution, with lists of the possessions of the fraternity, spiritual and temporal, and notices of the sale and disposition of the property among laymen. The second volume contains biographical sketches of the priors by whom the monastery was governed, historical and descriptive notices of the conventual church and of the castle of Tynemouth, together with copies of the charters and other documents connected with the monastery, or relating to its possessions. Apart from the exceedingly "high" views which the writer thought fit to express in his preface, and, indeed, more or less obtruded

throughout, the work is well done. Regarded either as a history or a book of reference, it leaves nothing to be desired.

Beyond the titles of the books he wrote, and the lectures he delivered, little is known of Mr. Sidney Gibson's life during the quarter of a century which he passed in Newcastle. With the exception of the Homœopathic Dispensary, in which he acted as a member of the managing committee, he does not appear to have associated himself with any public institution in the locality, not even in those non-political and unsectarian organisations which are devoted to social amelioration and philanthropic improvement. He was a model Registrar in the Court of Bankruptcy—courteous,

painstaking, methodical, punctual, and accurate; but to his duties there, and occasional lecturing before cultured audiences, his public work was limited. Absorbed in literary and antiquarian pursuits, he lived the life of a recluse amidst the bustling activities of Tyneside. Some of his friends reproached him with preferring authorship to the attractions of Newcastle society, with choosing to bestow upon books the time and means which he might have expended upon entertainments and a higher style of living. And this, prefixed to the second volume of his History of Tynemouth Monastery, was his reply:—"If while residing in Newcastle he has seemed to value lightly the temptations of society, when put in competition with the

pursuit of a literary undertaking and the companionship of books, it is necessary he should say in justice to his own disposition, that no person can enjoy more than he can do the fascinations of kindred association, or entertain a greater regard than he does for hospitality, if genuine and refined. Few persons fond of these pleasures, and possessing the means of indulging in expensive tastes, would have failed, in his circumstances, to expend time and money in that manner which brings, even to a stranger, reputation and goodwill among the wealthy clansmen of the district. The author, however, has derived higher pleasure from devoting, though at the cost of self-denial, his time and money to the composition of a work which —whatever the sacrifice attending its production, and whatever may be its reception and success—was designed as an offering to the glory of God, and has been pursued—not for the gratification of personal ambition, but as a humble endeavour towards rendering justice to an institution which was characteristic of the good old times of England, and which, while it flourished, was ever devoted to the service and honour of the Most High."

An enumeration of Mr. Gibson's literary productions shows extraordinary mental activity, and the faculty of wielding a rapid and fluent pen. Taking in order those of his books and papers which treat of local history alone, it is seen that in a little over ten years after he had put forth his great work on Tynemouth Priory he had published five others of importance, each of them involving patient research and displaying minute investigation, viz. :—

"Descriptive and Historical Notices of Some Remarkable Northumbrian Castles, Churches, and Antiquities: In a Series of Visits to the ruined Priory of Finchale; the Abbey Church of Hexham; the Parish Churches of Houghton-le-Spring, Morpeth, Bothal, Ovingham, and Ryton; the antient Castles of Prudhoe and of Bothal, the ruined Abbey of Newminster, etc. With Biographical Notices of Eminent Persons. First Series. Revised and Reprinted (by request) from the *Newcastle Journal*, with numerous additions, and embellished with Views of Finchale and of the Abbey Church of Hexham." Newcastle: Robert Robinson, Pilgrim Street, 1848. 8vo. 140 pp.

"A Descriptive and Historical Guide to Tynemouth: Comprising a Popular Sketch of the History of the Monastery, the Church, and the Castle; with Notices of North Shields, Seaton Delaval, and Neighbouring Antiquities. Embellished with highly-finished Engravings." North Shields: Philipson and Hare, Tyne Street, 1849. Sm. 8vo. 161 pp.

"Descriptive and Historical Notices of Remarkable Northumbrian Castles, Churches, and Antiquities. Second Series. Dilston Hall, or Memoirs of the Right Hon. James Radcliffe, Earl of Derwentwater, a Martyr in the Rebellion of

1715. To which is added A Visit to Bamburgh Castle; with an Account of Lord Crewe's Charities, and a Memoir of the Noble Founder. Embellished with a Portrait of Lord Derwentwater, and several highly-finished Engravings." Newcastle: Robert Robinson, Pilgrim Street, 1850. 8vo. 220 pp.

"Do. Third Series. Visits to Naworth Castle, Lanercost Priory, and Corby Castle, in Cumberland; the ruined Monasteries of Brinkburn, Jarrow, and Tynemouth; Bishop Middleham and the Town of Hartlepool; Newcastle-on-Tyne and Durham Cathedral. Embellished with Views of Naworth Castle, as Restored, and of Corby Castle, near Carlisle." Newcastle: Robert Robinson, Pilgrim Street, 1854. 8vo. 168 pp.

"A Memoir on Northumberland. Descriptive of its Scenery, Monuments, and History." Newcastle: F. and W. Dodsworth and Robert Robinson, 1860. 8vo. 77 pp.

These all relate to local history and topography. But they by no means indicate the full measure of Mr. Gibson's literary activity at the period in which they were written. For while they were passing through the press, the author was writing for reviews and magazines, and publishing treatises on a variety of interesting subjects, such as these—

"Remarks on the Mediæval Writers of English History. Being the Substance of a Paper read to the Morpeth Church Institution." Newcastle: Robert Robinson, Pilgrim Street, 1848. 8vo. 51 pp.

"An Essay on the Filial Duties. In which their Divine Obligation is established from Holy Scripture, and their Importance to Social Happiness and Public Welfare is enforced." Newcastle: R. Robinson, Pilgrim Street, 1849. 8vo.

"Marvels of the Globe. Two Lectures on the Structure and Physical Aspects of the Earth." Newcastle: Robert Robinson, 1856. 8vo. 68 pp.

"A Lecture on Poetry and the Fine Arts: their Affinities and Powers." Printed for private circulation. London, 1857. 8vo. 46 pp.

At an earlier period Mr. Gibson had published books on "The Certainties of Geology," on "Some Antient Modes of Trial," a "Letter to the Lord Chancellor on the Amendment of the Law in Bankruptcy," and a Prize Essay on the "Antiquities of Highgate." In 1858 he collected together four-and-twenty lectures and essays, the former delivered at various Church Institutes in the district, the latter contributed to the *Quarterly Review*, *Colburn's New Monthly*, *Household Words*, *Notes and Queries*, the *Dublin Review*, etc., etc., and published them under the title of—

"Lectures and Essays on Various Subjects, Historical, Topographical, and Artistic." First Series. Newcastle: R. Robinson, 1858. 8vo, 308 pp. This volume includes papers on 'Poetry and the Fine Arts—their Affinities and Powers'; 'Leaves from Old Trees, comprising Notices of Trees remarkable for

Age, Magnitude, or Associations'; 'Origin and Present State of the Inns of Court'; 'Historians and Literature in the Middle Ages'; 'New Lights in History—a Review of Mr. Froude's History of England'; 'Notices of Some Remarkable Church Bells'; 'The Stone of Destiny, the Black Rood of Scotland'; 'Curiosities of the Number Seven'; 'Londiniana—an Essay on London, Past and Present'; 'Arundel House, and the Dispersion of the Marbles Collected by Thomas, Earl of Arundel'; 'The Renaissance at Alnwick Castle'; 'History of Bothal Church and Castle'; 'An Archæologist's Holiday in York'; 'A Border Chieftain's Tower'; 'On Church Extension and the English Episcopate'; 'A Letter against the Proposed Revision of the Liturgy'; 'On the Northumberland Cabinet of Roman Family Coins'; 'On Testamentary Jurisdiction'; 'Notes on the Origin of Executors of Wills'; 'On a Revision and Consolidation of the Statutes'; 'Notes on the Title of Defender of the Faith'; 'Use of Norman-French in Parliamentary Forms;' and a 'Letter on the Validity of Oaths.'"

A few years later, in 1863, another collection of essays, lectures, and reviews, which Mr. Gibson had contributed to the *Ecclesiologist*, *Chambers's Journal*, *Bentley's Miscellany*, *Household Words*, etc., was published. In this volume, which extends over 385 pages, are seven topographical essays on "Auckland Castle, the Residence of the Bishops of Durham"; "Finchale Priory"; "Byron at Newstead"; "The Percy's Stronghold—Alnwick Castle"; "Summer Days in Scotland"; "Scandinavian Travel—Jutland and the Danish Isles"; and "The Mediterranean." The remainder are upon various subjects—"Science and Royalty under Highland Skies"; "The British Association at Oxford"; "Mineral Springs—their Medicine and Mythology"; "Rivers and their Associations"; "Hailstorms and their Phenomena"; "Art Treasures at South Kensington"; "Augustus Cæsar—his Court and Companions"; "Canterbury and its Archbishops"; "Eminent Judges of England," etc., etc. He prepared, also, a "Memoir of the Life of Richard de Bury, Bishop of Durham, and Lord Chancellor of England, temp. Edw. III." This work, although advertised, does not appear to have been published. The author read it as a paper at the Congress of the British Archæological Association at Durham, in August, 1865, and a summary of it, with an engraving, by Mr. O. Jewitt, of the elaborate and beautiful seal of the bishop, appears in the "Journal" of the Association for 1866.

Mr. Gibson was a Fellow of the London Society of Antiquaries, a Fellow of the London Geological Society, a member of the Ecclesiological Society, of the Royal Society of Northern Antiquaries, Copenhagen, the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, and of

the Architectural Societies of Durham and St. Albans, a local Secretary of the Archæological Institute, an honorary member of the Academie des Sciences et Belles Lettres de Dijon, etc. In 1857, the degree of M.A. was conferred upon him by the University of Durham in recognition of his contributions to the literature and archæology of the North. Enjoying these honours, and the esteem of an ever-widening circle of friends, he remained in Newcastle till the abolition of the District Courts of Bankruptcy, in 1870, sent him into retirement. The Government rewarded his services with a handsome pension, which, unfortunately, he was not long destined to receive. Seized by a fatal illness, he died in London on the 3rd January, 1871, aged 56 years. During his lifetime he had expressed an ardent desire to be buried in the grounds of the old Priory Church at Tynemouth, about which he had written so copiously and so well, and shortly before his decease he obtained from the Home Secretary the necessary permission. His remains were brought to Tynemouth, and after a solemn service in the restored Lady Chapel, at the east end of the ruin, were laid to rest in a vault closely adjoining. A headstone marks the place of his interment, and in the chapel itself a stained-glass window perpetuates his memory.

## George Gibsone,

PAINTER OF "GIBSONE'S CONCHES."

In the middle of last century there lived in a house which he had erected for himself on rising ground between Deptford and Lewisham, in Kent, an architect named George Gibsone. Born in 1712, the son of William Gibson, a surgeon in the Dragoons, author of several works on Farriery, he claimed descent from the Gibsons of Durie, who were created baronets of Nova Scotia by Charles I. in 1637. It is said that this relationship was recognised by Lord Marchmont, who introduced him to Queen Caroline, wife of George II., by whom he was sent to Rome to study his profession, and that while in Italy he added the final "e" to his name, "to accommodate it to Italian pronunciation." Upon his return he was employed to draw plans for a Royal palace, but the design was never carried out; he, however, received for his services a pension of

£200 a year from "Queen Caroline's Fund." In 1781, on the death of Sir John Gibson of Pentland, leaving issue an only daughter, the architect, presuming himself to be nephew and heir, took upon himself the title of Sir George Gibsone, Bart. Shortly afterwards one Captain Robert Gibson, a brother of Sir John, who had been long abroad, and was supposed to be dead, returned to England. To him the architect resigned the title, but as neither land nor money was attached to the dignity, the old captain dropped it, and when he died childless the architect did not resume it, and so the title lapsed.

George Gibsone married a Miss Green, daughter it is supposed of a shipowner or merchant at Hull, and by her had three sons—George (2), son and heir, William, and John. George (2), born in 1762, was brought up to his father's profession of an architect, and at the proper time was admitted a partner. He married in 1796, Eliza, daughter of Prebendary Waring, and soon afterwards the whole family removed to Newcastle.

There was at that time a prominent man in Newcastle named Richard Fishwick. He had come from Hull, in 1780, to establish lead works at Elswick, and, being successful in his enterprise, he projected the erection of iron works on the banks of the Tyne at Lemington, a few miles further west. There may have been a family connection between the Fishwicks and the Gibsones through the marriage of George (1) to Miss Green; in any case the two George Gibsones joined Mr. Fishwick in his Lemington speculation, designing and building the two blast furnaces with which the new firm commenced operations, while the younger son, John, started a colour manufactory at Paradise, and afterwards at the South Shore, below Gateshead. In Baillie's "Impartial History of Newcastle," published in 1801, the formation of the Company at Lemington (Fishwick, Gibson & Co., Tyne Iron Works) in the preceding year is noticed in the following eulogistic terms:—

"The company are of the first respectability, and, it is said, have embarked in the enterprise above an hundred thousand pounds. To secure at all times a sufficient quantity of ironstone they have not only engaged ground in various parts which abound with it, but they have also purchased, it is said, an estate in Yorkshire, near Robinhood's Bay, which contains vast quantities of ironstone of the very best quality, from which they expect to extract iron and steel perfectly malleable and ductile. . . . It is said that the proprietors intend,

upon the plan of the Carron Manufactory, to extend theirs to every branch of hammered work, from an anchor to a needle, as they find the smelted metal favourable to their undertaking. Nor would we at all wonder if gentlemen, such as Messrs. Fishwick, Gibson, etc., of so much professional knowledge, should succeed in a design so extensive. . . . Every circumstance is inviting, and the situation is particularly friendly to success—abundance of coal, a fine navigable river, the Tyne, washing the walls of the works, which not only serves now at small expence to transport their stone from Yorkshire in a sloop, but will at an easy rate carry their manufactured goods to London."

The hopes expressed by the "impartial" historian were destined never to be realised. On the 30th of June, 1803, Surtees' Bank stopped payment, and the partners in the Lemington Iron Works were ruined. Mr. Fishwick went to London, where he died in 1825 in a state of mental aberration. George Gibsone (2) became manager of his brother John's colour works at Bill Quay, South Shore, while the father, George (1), went to reside with John, at Dent's Hole, and there, on the 16th January, 1809, at the great age of 97, he died, and was buried in Longbenton Churchyard.

George Gibsone's wife, Prebendary Waring's daughter, was a woman of considerable acquirements, and, in 1812, she opened an upper class girls' school in Forth House, Newcastle, a little west of the Royal Free Grammar School. George Gibsone himself probably taught drawing; in any case the scheme was successful. A few years later the school was removed to No. 5 Saville Row, and finally, after some years' work in that place George Gibsone and his wife retired with a competence. They erected, in 1831, a house for themselves at Gateshead Low Fell, known as Belle Vue Cottage, and having purchased an annuity of £40 from the Corporation of Newcastle, and secured a like income from another investment, they prepared to pass their declining years.

Mr. Gibsone had from time to time given attention to various branches of the natural sciences, and was an active member of the Natural History Society of Northumberland, Durham, and Newcastle. He painted coins, plants, minerals, shells, etc., etc., and acquired great dexterity in illustrating conchology. Before he retired from the school he had begun to concentrate his efforts upon delineations of the Testaceæ, and until the close of his life he worked assiduously at this self-imposed task, in which, and in gardening, he found his

chief recreation and delight. To obtain objects for his pencil he wandered round half the coasts of England and Scotland, and across the Channel to France, while the conchologists of the Northern Counties—John Adamson, Sir John Trevelyan, Mrs. Fryer, and others—assisted him with specimens from distant waters. When he died, in 1846, he left behind him a vast collection of drawings of shells—admirable as works of art, accurate and beautiful in their delineation of natural colours. At a meeting held in Newcastle in June 1888, under the presidency of the Mayor, Alderman W. D. Stephens, it was determined to purchase these drawings by subscription and present them to some public institution. The money was obtained, and in August, 1890, "Gibsone's Conches," in sixteen portfolios, containing 1965 separate sheets, upon which are 7,260 delineations of 3,025 species or varieties of shells, were acquired from the present representative of the family, the Rev. B. W. Gibsone, M.A. (Fellow of King's College, London, and Vicar of Wolvey), and deposited in the Public Library of Newcastle.

## Robert Gilchrist,

LOCAL POET.

ONE of the most attractive features of the late Thomas Allan's sumptuous edition of "Tyneside Songs and Readings" (1891) is the excellent biographies by which selections from the productions of the local Muse are preceded. To that admirable storehouse we resort for details of the life of Robert Gilchrist, a Tyneside bard of some celebrity in his day, and certainly one of the brightest of the race.

Robert Gilchrist was born in Gateshead, on the 8th of September, 1797. His father, John Gilchrist, was a sailmaker, and to that trade he was himself at the proper age apprenticed. While serving his indentures he amused himself and his companions by writing verses, and so highly were these appreciated by the youths of his acquaintance that, in 1818, when he attained the age of manhood, they presented him with a silver medal, inscribed "Presented to Robert Gilchrist by the Admirers of his Poetical Merits. *Meritum fecit Hominem.*" In the same year he took up his freedom, and thus qualified himself to follow his calling in Newcastle.

Encouraged by the approbation of his friends young Gilchrist ventured into print at the age of twenty-five with

"Gothalbert and Hisanna, with Other Poems." Newcastle: Printed at the Mercury Press, by W. A. Mitchell, Dean Street. 8vo. 24 pp.

An introductory paragraph describes it as "a whimsical Poem, the offspring of a few leisure hours," which, although it had "the appearance of burlesque," yet the characters contained in it were "nothing else than real life." Gothalbert was probably himself, and

ROBERT GILCHRIST.

Hisanna (His Anna) a youthful flame. It is a sprightly production, but written in a strain of self-assurance which exposed the author to the ridicule of a Sunderland bard (T. Ferguson), who published in the same number of pages, the following year, a fragment entitled—

"Gothalbert of the Tyne, or the Gothic Minstrel's Progress from Parnassus to the Press! Delivered under the similitude of A Satire: Wherein is Discovered—The Manner of his Setting Out; His Dangerous Journey, and Safe Arrival at the Printing Office! Also the Wonderful Effects of Education, Inspiration, Ostentation, and Publication!

"Of Bob's first 'lucubrations' and the *fruit*
Of his pedantic *Muse*, whose *mortal taste*
Brought *trash* into the world—likewise his *woe*
For loss of *Anna*—I attempt to sing."

In 1824 Gilchrist issued another booklet of 24 pages, which he named

"A Collection of Original Songs, Local and Sentimental." 8vo. Newcastle: W. A. Mitchell.

A second edition, with an altered title, and an extra poem, "The Loss of the *Ovington*," followed, and in 1826, with 88 pages more, the author completed the series. Among these later effusions no local songs appear; the pieces are sentimental and didactic, or else religious, for Gilchrist was a Sandemanian, or Glassite, and chose sacred themes when his Muse wearied of love and the local dialect. About this time he married a Miss Morrison, and his father dying in 1829, he succeeded to the sail-making business which his father had carried on at No. 39, Quay, Newcastle. After his marriage he lived in Shieldfield Green, and published books no more. His effusions thenceforward were struck off in slips or broadsides, or printed in the columns of the local press. The time that he had consumed in sentimental versifying he devoted to his trade and to the business of the Freemen, among whom he was guide, poet, and friend. So he lived, and so, on the 11th of July, 1844, aged 47 years, he died. His remains were interred in the burying-ground at the Ballast Hills, in the east end of Newcastle.

The best of Gilchrist's local songs are in Allan's Collection.

# Thomas Gillow,

A POPULAR CATHOLIC PRIEST.

BEFORE the Reformation, the ancient family of Gillow was remarkable for the number of its members who entered into holy orders, and assisted to propagate Christian doctrine among a rude and unlettered people. The chief scenes of their labours were the dioceses of Durham and York. The *Liber Vitæ* of Durham Cathedral contains an entry, dated about the 12th century, of Michael Gillow, an abbot; York Minster received, in the latter part of the 14th century, the remains

of Robert Gillow, a priest there, with the title of vicar; a rectory in the diocese of London was held, in the middle of the 15th century, by Henry Gillow. Another Henry Gillow, Rector of Houghton-le-Spring, and Master of Kepier Hospital, was temporal chancellor of the diocese of Durham during the episcopate of Lawrence Booth, and afterwards prebendary and sub-dean of York, in which office he died, leaving instructions in his will that his body should be buried at Houghton-le-Spring, "near his mother's grave," a chapel to be built over him, etc., etc. Two of the brothers of this dignitary were monks at Durham, one of his nephews was a priest in the same

diocese, and another nephew became vicar-choral in York Minster. The list might be extended, but sufficient has been quoted to show that prior to the Dissolution the Gillows showed a marked tendency towards religious life and propaganda. Since the Reformation the same tendency has continued to characterise their race. Gillow's "Biographical Dictionary of the English Catholics" contains notices of fifteen persons bearing the name, and more or less related to each other, who have been ordained priests in the Catholic Church since the middle of last century. Some of them have risen to positions of prominence in ecclesiastical matters, among them being a president

of Ushaw College, a vice-president of the same institution, a dean, a canon of the Chapter of Hexham, and a vice-rector of the English College at Rome.

Two or three members of the family became men of mark between the Bishopric and the Border, namely, the Rev. Thomas Gillow, of North Shields, Canon Gillow, one of his nephews, and the Rev. William Gillow, a grand-nephew.

Thomas Gillow, born November 23rd, 1769, at Singleton, fourth son of Richard Gillow, of that place, entered Douay College as a student on the 22nd of May, 1784. While he was in his pupilage the French Revolution broke out, and the college was placed in a position of danger. Douay, filled with revolutionary soldiers, was not a secure home for a religious seminary. The professors conducted their classes in peril; the students suffered from threats and alarms; nobody knew from one day to another what might happen. Upon one occasion a mob of insurgents thundered at the doors for admittance. The authorities were frightened; the boys were terrified—all but young Gillow. It is recorded that he ran courageously down the stairs, met the assailants at the entrance, and by shouting "Vive la Republique!" saved the institution. The mob seized hold of him and carried him about in triumph through the streets of Douay. In August, 1793, when the college was broken up and the inmates were ordered to retire to their country house at Esquerchin, three miles off, as prisoners under surveillance, young Gillow determined to make his escape. The incident is thus related by Bishop Bewick:—"As he approached the city gates the sentinel was at his post, and by the wayside sat a poor woman with a stall of fruit. To avert suspicion he turned aside as if to make a purchase; at that moment a laden waggon, drawn by eight magnificent mules, chanced to come up. The young student, with a quickness of perception which never failed him through life, saw his opportunity at once. He entered into conversation with the waggoner, and while the sentinel was admiring the animals he passed through the gateway unnoticed and unchallenged. This done he directed his steps to Esquerchin, where some of the students were spending a holiday, told them of the edict that had gone forth, and urged them to join him in his flight and push towards the frontier. At length he prevailed upon one of them to share his fortunes—Thomas Penswick, who afterwards became Bishop of the Northern District. Without delay the two students set out on their perilous journey.

Many were the dangers they had to pass through, and many the difficulties they had to surmount; but they reached the frontier in safety, and in due course were welcomed at their fathers' homes in Lancashire."

After spending a month at home, Mr. Gillow went to the institution at Old Hall Green. There he remained till December, 1794, when he was sent to Bishop Gibson's newly-founded college at Crook Hall, near Durham, where, three years later, he was ordained priest. Awaiting a vacancy among the private chaplaincies of the Catholic gentry, he taught at Crook Hall till the 21st August, 1797, when he entered upon a ministerial career in Northumberland. His first appointment north of the Tyne was at Callaly Castle, the seat of the Claverings. In that somewhat isolated position his duties were light, and he had much spare time, which he utilised by establishing and superintending a school in the adjoining village of Whittingham. While thus employed, in 1817, he was nominated Bishop of the West Indies, but declining, from motives of health, to wear a mitre, he was selected to conduct a mission at North Shields. In June, 1821, after 25 years' service in the beautiful Vale of Whittingham, he entered upon his work at the mouth of the Tyne. A church had just been erected there by his cousin, the Rev. James Worswick, of Newcastle, and it became, under Mr. Gillow's care, not merely a place of worship for his co-religionists, but a centre of active propaganda throughout the district. To the church he added a presbytery and schools, providing the means, for the most part, out of his private fortune, the residue of which, sunk as a fund for the relief of the poor, was lost through the failure of the Union Bank in Newcastle. Across the water, at South Shields, he started a mission, and through his influence the funds were obtained to erect a small chapel in that town. Before long, no mission in the Northern Vicariate was more flourishing, and none more successful, than that over which Mr. Gillow presided at the northern entrance to the Tyne.

In 1842, a nephew, the Rev. Richard Gillow, was sent to aid him in his arduous labours. Born May 9th, 1811, and ordained at Stonyhurst in 1837, Richard Gillow was in every sense a fit helpmate to his uncle. He was a theologian of ability, a musical composer of promise, and a home missionary of high reputation. After the restoration of the hierarchy in England, and the revival of the see of Hexham, he was raised to the dignity of a canon. A most useful career seemed to be opening out before him. Short,

however, was its course. Devotion to his work among the victims of the cholera visitation of 1853 cost him his life, on the 18th of November in that year, at the early age of forty-two. His aged relative survived him four years. Although deprived of his eye-sight, and, therefore, dependent upon the help and guidance of others, he was able to say mass till within a week of his death, which happened on the 19th March, 1857, in the eighty-eighth year of his age. "The whole town and neighbourhood, regardless of differences in religious belief, flocked to his funeral, and even the bells of the Protestant parish church rolled out a muffled peal in token of the universal respect in which he was held."

After the death of Canon Gillow, Dr. Chadwick, afterwards Bishop of Hexham and Newcastle, assisted the venerable patriarch in his mission, and he was followed by his successor in the bishopric, the late Dr. Bewick. When Dr. Bewick left, in 1869, his place was filled by a grand-nephew of the old priest, the Rev. William Gillow. He had been ordained at Ushaw in 1861, and, after officiating for three or four years at Castle Eden, joined the staff at St. Mary's, Newcastle, under Monsignor Eyre, now Archbishop of Glasgow. From St. Mary's he went to Wolsingham, and from thence proceeded to North Shields, where he remained till, in 1873, he was removed to Barnard Castle. In 1877, having taken charge of the mission at Callaly, the old home of his great-uncle, which was undergoing a change through the sale of the estate by Sir Henry Bedingfeld (heir, by marriage, of the Claverings), his health gave way, and he retired to his brother's house in Lancashire. The following year he took charge of the mission at Berwick, where he died, November 30th, 1880, aged 45.

The Rev. Thomas Gillow published "A Sermon preached at the Opening of the Catholic Chapel in the town of North Shields, on Thursday, the 14th June, 1821. Newcastle: Preston and Heaton"; and a pamphlet, entitled "Catholic Principles of Allegiance Illustrated. Newcastle: Edward Walker, 1807." His portrait was painted by Ramsay, G. A. Lutenor, and others. One of Ramsay's portraits was engraved by C. Turner in imperial folio; that of Lutenor, from which ours is copied, was engraved, in quarto, by W. Collard.

# Richard Gilpin,

PHYSICIAN AND DIVINE.

"At the present day, in nearly all gradations of circumstances, at home and abroad—from the original Cumberland and Westmorland to 'the grey metropolis of the North'; from the Castle of Scaleby to 'huts where poor men lie'; and from Wyoming of Pennsylvania to Acadie of Evangeline and 'distant Ind,'—Gilpins, descending from our Worthy, and proud of the descent, sustain the ancient renown of goodness and brain-power."—REV. A. B. GROSART.

FROM the district of Kendal, in Cumberland, sprang a race of Gilpins whose genius, at various periods of our history, irradiated the religious and social life of Great Britain, and shed its influence among English-speaking communities far away. Two members of the family, Bernard Gilpin, of Houghton-le-Spring, and Richard Gilpin, his grand-nephew, may fairly be claimed as belonging to our own side of the island. For, although born in the "Gilpin Land" about Kendal, both these two eminent men lived the most part of their time, wrought the greater portion of their public work, and achieved the highest phases of their renown, in the counties of Northumberland and Durham. Placed by circumstances, the one on the south and the other on the north side of the dividing river, with a hundred years of conflict and of change separating their lives, there was between them a remarkable identity of temperament and a striking similarity in modes of action. Both of them were leaders of men at widely differing periods of social disruption, yet each in his sphere shook off his early environments, led the forward movement, and placed himself in the van of progress and reform. Bernard Gilpin, educated in the ancient faith of Christendom, chose the "new learning" of the Reformation, and, refusing a bishopric, became the world-famed "Apostle of the North." Richard Gilpin, trained in the Reformed religion, went out from the church of his family, and declining, like his great-uncle, to wear a mitre, became the apostle of northern Nonconformity.

Richard Gilpin, the later apostle, son of Isaac Gilpin, of Strickland Ketel, a homestead on the road from Kendal to the Windermere Ferry, was baptised on the 23rd October, 1625—the year in which James I. died and Charles I. ascended the throne. Little is known of his early days. It has been ascertained that he was

designed for the profession of medicine, but that, feeling a stronger inclination towards divinity, he laid aside his medical studies and determined to become a preacher. In the "Life of Ambrose Barnes" it is stated that he received his education in Scotland. Another authority places him at Queen's College, Oxford, "where he took the degree of M.D." The Rev. A. B. Grosart, in an admirable memoir prefixed to a reprint of one of Gilpin's books, surmises that he may have been trained at the famous school which his ancestor founded at Houghton-le-Spring. But, wheresoever he obtained his education, he is found in 1653, when twenty-eight

years of age, installed as the parish clergyman of Greystoke, in his native county—preferment to which he had probably been appointed by the Parliamentary Commissioners for sequestered livings.

Shortly after his settlement at Greystoke, Richard Gilpin married, and, as family cares increased upon him, he purchased from the Musgraves the old fortalice and estate near Carlisle known as Scaleby Castle. In the comparative privacy of Greystoke and Scaleby he laboured as a faithful minister, keeping a watchful eye upon the great movements of his time, yet living in charity with all men. Holding Presbyterian views of Church government, and sympathising politically with the leaders of the Commonwealth,

he was tolerant and forbearing towards those whose views and sympathies tended otherwise—including even the Quakers, whose demeanour towards the clergy was often unreasonable, and at times offensive. Thus winning his way to the hearts of the people among whom he lived, he acquired a reputation far beyond as preacher, teacher, and Christian gentleman. Evidence of the esteem in which he was held by his fellow-clergymen is to be found in the "Agreement of the Associated Ministers and Churches of the counties of Cumberland and Westmorland," which, at their special request, emanated from his pen in 1656. Testimony of the respect entertained for him by the higher authorities is seen in the Patent by which, a year later, Lord Protector Cromwell nominated him a "Visitor" of the College proposed to be founded and endowed out of the Church lands of the see of Durham. Proof of his own large-hearted tolerance appears in a sermon which he preached in 1658 before the Associated Ministers at Keswick, and, by their unanimous desire, published. "Disputings," said the preacher, "though they have their fruits, yet are they like trees growing upon a rocky precipice, where the fruit cannot be gathered by all, and not by any without difficulty and hazard. How do we needlessly multiply our controversies and disputes; and with what bitterness do we manage them, even when the strife is merely about words and method; and, generally, how is the name of God and religion abused to serve the designs of men!" Remarks, these, which are as applicable in our own day as they were when uttered, two hundred and thirty years ago, on the banks of Derwentwater.

The struggles of the Presbyterian party after the Restoration are matters of general knowledge. Prelacy, as the Puritans termed the episcopal form of Church government, triumphed, and the Act of Uniformity came into operation. Gilpin, moderate and tolerant, as we have seen, could not approve of an Act so rigorous and unreasonable. Unable to subscribe to it in its entirety, he resigned his living and retired to his house at Scaleby. King and Council tried to win him back, and tried in vain. They offered him a bishopric—the see of Carlisle; he refused the bribe, and determined to remain a Nonconformist. A younger brother, Allen Gilpin, who had served his apprenticeship with a well-known local merchant, Phineas Allen, was at this time living in Newcastle, where Nonconformity, gathering strength through persecution, needed leaders and preachers. Hither, therefore, from his seclusion at Scaleby,

came the famous minister of Greystoke to take pastoral charge of a Nonconformist congregation. "Mr. Gilpin," writes the author of the Life of Ambrose Barnes, "living retired in the West, succeeded him [Samuel Hammond, D.D.] at Newcastle, where, by the encouragement his ministry met with from the liberality of the people, and his emoluments by the practice of physick, he raised a considerable estate. He went to Holland, and took the degree of Dr. of Physick at Leyden. The purchase of the lordship of Scaleby had put him into debt, but he now cleared it off; and Mr. Barnes went with him to Sir Richard Musgrave, and got the conveyances finisht. When the Five Mile Act came out [in 1665], Dr. Gilpin lodged at Mr. Barnes his house for more security. When his goods were distrained upon, Mr. Barnes, to prevent their being squandred away, replevyed them. These good offices contracted a friendship between them. They placed out their eldest sons at the Inns of Court together. And when there was a design to banish the Doctor from Newcastle, Mr. Barnes, by persuading the magistrates of his great usefulness in the town, by his skill in physick, procured him quietness to the end of King Charles his reign."

Before this happy consummation was attained, Mr. Gilpin and his co-religionists suffered much persecution. Bishop Cosin busied himself greatly with their proceedings, writing to the king and council about their meetings, and sending to the archdeacon and clergy reproachful letters upon the lukewarmness of the municipal authorities in dealing with them. In December, 1668, the Vicar of Newcastle, Thomas Naylor, received one of these episcopal missives, desiring him to impress upon Ralph Jenison (the Mayor), Sir Francis Anderson, and Sir James Clavering, whose sister was married to Gilpin's co-pastor, William Durant, the duty of suppressing their "illegal, riotous, schismatical, and, as near as may be conjectured, seditious assemblies."

A similar message, enclosing one from the king, was sent to the Mayor and aldermen direct, who replied that if offenders had not been punished it was for want of evidence, and suggesting that his lordship's informers should have taken the trouble to give them, the authorities, the information first. Whereupon the bishop fired up, telling the Mayor and aldermen that these meetings were notorious; one of them, held in the Barber-Surgeons' Hall, upon All Saints' Day, November 1st, being "voiced and made known to all the town and country about"; while at another, upon the 25th November, held

in one of the ring-leaders' houses, "they appointed and kept a fast, with preaching and praying, which they held out from eight of clock in the morning till four in the evening, the work being held forth by their four chief leaders and abettors, Mr. Gilpine, Mr. Durant, Mr. Leaver, and Mr. Pringle. Of all which surely you had or might have had knowledge."

The magistrates still remaining inactive, other means were tried. During the following summer occurred that oft-quoted scene in which Cuthbert Nicholson, cordwainer, being on the look-out one quiet Sabbath morning in July, "about five or six of the clock, did see a great nomber of people goe inn to the howse of Mr. Richard Gilpyn, minister in the White Freers, and afterward he went to parson Jon. Shaw [of St. John's] and acquainted him with the premisses. Whereupon the said Mr. Shaw, togeither with the churchwardens, constables, and serjeants-att-mace, by the comaund of Mr. Maior, did repaire to the said Richard Gilpin's howse. And when they came there, all the dores were shutt and made fast. And after the dores were broken open he did see these severall persons come out, viz., Robert Johnson, merchant, Dr. Tunstall [the town's physician], William Hutchinson, George Headlam, and diverse other persons to the nomber of fortie." Whereupon, again, the watchful cordwainer laid an information against "Mr. Richard Gilping, Mr. William Duerant, Mr. John Pringle, and Mr. Henry Lever, preachers," and fifty-five others, including five past sheriffs, four ex-mayors, and an alderman or two.

More peaceful times for Dr. Gilpin and his followers were coming, were at hand. In 1672, Charles II. issued his famous declaration of indulgence, setting aside the penal enactments against Roman Catholics; "and," writes Macaulay, "that the real object of the measure might not be perceived, the laws against Protestant Non-conformists also were suspended." Under shelter of this declaration Dr. Gilpin obtained a licence to preach in his dwelling-house, and shortly afterwards he occurs as pastor of a congregation, assembling in a newly-built place of worship, near the Close Gate. It was an old tradition in local history that William Durant founded the Close Gate Meeting-House, and that Dr. Gilpin was his successor, till Mr. Grosart's researches brought to light a letter written by the doctor in his old age, December 13th, 1698, to a friend in London, which suggests that it was by his (Gilpin's) adherents that the building was erected. Thus it reads:—

"It hath pleased God to take from me my dear assistant, Mr. Pell, by a fever. It is a sad stroke upon us all, but it falls at present most heavy upon me. Ever since his sickness it became necessary for me (such are our circumstances) to preach twice every Lord's Day; and I must continue to do so at least every other Lord's Day for some time, because they are a small party (and but a very small one) who have formed a design, and are now encouraged upon this sad occasion to open it. This party were the remainder of Mr. Durant's congregation, who have kept communion with ours in all ordinances, without making any exceptions, about fifteen years; but when old Mr. Barnes (their politick engineer) brought home his young son Thomas from London, they presently showed their intentions to choose him for their pastor; but, as introductory to that, they (in my absence) thrust him into the pulpit, without as much as asking leave. I was silent, and suffered him to preach in the evenings; but they being weary of that—few people stopping to hear him—they thought it more conduceable to their design to separate from us, and set up at the Anabaptists' meeting-house; but no great party would follow them, and now they have chosen him to be their pastor. . . . That their design is to worm us out of our meeting-house, and to break our congregation, is visible to all. They now openly claim the meeting-house for their pastor's use (when he pleaseth), and pretend old Mr. Hutchinson (upon whose ground the house is built) promised them so much when they contributed towards the charge of building; but Mr. Jonathan Hutchinson, his son [M.P. for Berwick], denieth any such promise, and stands firmly to us, though Mr. Barnes (his father-in-law) surprised him with solicitations; but we offer to repay them all the money they contributed towards the building."

Durant had died in 1681, and his son John in 1683; and here, in 1698, as Mr. Clephan has pointed out, we have Gilpin referring to some design upon the pulpit of the Old Meeting-House, formed by the few remainders of Mr. Durant's congregation, from all which we may gather that there were two distinct flocks under the two ministers down to the year of Durant's death; some little time after which, a scattered remnant of his people flowed in among Gilpin's, constituting a somewhat separate and divided interest. The Old Meeting-House was built for Gilpin's people on the ground of "old Mr. Hutchinson," who died, as his tombstone states, on the 6th of March, 1689-90. It was founded and reared, therefore, during the lifetime of Durant; and this decisive fact is proof that he and Gilpin

were contemporary pastors of independent churches, and that the latter did not succeed to the pulpit of the departed preacher. Some time between 1672 and 1680 he acquired a meeting-house of his own; and we learn from the Rev. William Turner's tract of 1811 that the old communion cups were then still in use in Hanover Square, inscribed—"Church Plate, Richard Gilpin, Pastor, 1693."

"Dr. Gilpin," continues Mr. Clephan, "survived the men of his period—Leaver, Pringle, Durant, and many others. Death had laid the band to sleep one by one, and he himself was not to outlast the century in which his life was begun and his labours were performed. His activities closed only with his life. On the 4th of February, 1700, he took his accustomed place, suffering from feverish indisposition, and preached from 2 Cor. v. 2. His weakness was manifest to the congregation; and he was conducted home. In ten days came the end. 'Dr. Gilpin, that eminent man of God,' wrote his friend at Stockton, the Rev. Thomas Thompson, 'died much lamented by all, on (Tuesday) February 13, 1699-1700, about 8 o'clock in the morning.' He was buried at All Saints', Newcastle, on Friday, the 16th, the parish register briefly describing him as 'Richard Gilpin, Doctor of Physick.'"

The character of Dr. Gilpin is sketched by Calamy, in "The Nonconformist's Memorial," with an admiring hand. The great apostle of Northern Nonconformity is described as having been "designed by God for great work in His church," and "singularly qualified for it." "Scarcely anything that accomplished a man, a scholar, a physician, or divine, but he possessed it in great perfection." He had "a fine and delicate fancy," a memory "strong and faithful," a judgment "most quick and penetrating," a voice "strong but sweet, and well modelled"; his gestures were "admirably graceful," he always preached without notes, and his discourses had "all the graces of natural orators," while "in prayer he was most solemn and fervent." Further, writes Calamy:—"His skill in government appeared in the managing a numerous congregation of very different opinions and tempers; his integrity, modesty, and contempt of the world, in refusing the bishopric of Carlisle, as another of the family (Mr. Bernard Gilpin) had done before him, consistent to their motto, *Dictis factisque simplex.* His unblameable character procured him esteem amongst all but those whose ill-nature would suffer them to speak well of none who differed from them. He was much respected by many for the good he had done them as a physician. Among

persons of rank and quality, all necessary means were scarce thought to have been used, if he had not been consulted. He went about doing good to the souls and bodies of men."

In addition to the "Agreement" and the "Sermon," printed while he was rector of Greystoke, Dr. Gilpin issued a book of 216 small quarto pages, entitled, "Dœmonologia Sacra, or a Treatise of Satan's Temptations. In Three Parts." London: Printed by J. D. for Richard Randel and Peter Maplisden, Booksellers in Newcastle-upon-Tine. 1677. Reprinted by Mr. Grosart, with Memoir and Portrait, in 1867.

Just before his death Dr. Gilpin published an Assize Sermon which he had preached to the judges at Carlisle ten years earlier, and a discourse, "The Comforts of Divine Love: Preached upon the Occasion of the much Lamented Death of the Reverend Mr. Timothy Manlove," one of his Newcastle assistants. He left behind him the MS. of a considerable volume on "The Pleasures of Religion," which his descendants allowed to crumble into dust.

## Edward Glynn,

A LITERARY ATTORNEY.

"A gentleman who could stay with us only long enough to make us know how much we lost by his leaving us."—DR. JOHNSON.

TOWARDS the close of last century, James Glynn, son of a Morpeth freeholder, came to Newcastle and commenced business as an ironfounder and engineer. Down in the valley of the Ouseburn, on the east side of Ouse Street, with a long frontage to the streamlet, he set up his factory, and there, in course of time, being an intelligent and enterprising man, he brought together a large and profitable connection. For a while he lived in Hanover Square, but as his undertakings at the eastern extremity of the town multiplied, he found it desirable to change his residence. Soon after the present century came in he removed to St. Ann's Row, at the far end of the New (or Shields) Road. St. Ann's Row, at that time, was rather a pleasant place to live in. Behind it were gardens and meadows; in front, deep down below, ran the river; while over and beyond was an uninterrupted view of cornfields and pastures, bounded by the picturesque acclivities of Heworth and Sheriff Hill. At No. 1, St.

Ann's Row, in the year 1817, Edward Glynn, youngest son of the ironfounder, was born.

James Glynn's elder boys had been educated at Mr. John Bruce's newly-opened academy in Percy Street, and thither, at the proper age, Edward also was sent to be equipped for the battle of life. Two of his brothers were learning their father's business, and it was determined that he should be trained to a different profession. In 1834 he was articled to Messrs. John and Matthew Clayton, to learn the theory and practice of the law. Under the personal superintendence of Mr. John Clayton, then, as for many years before and after,

EDWARD GLYNN.

Town Clerk of Newcastle, he served out his indentures, and having spent, according to custom, a year or two in a London office, and passed his examinations, he was admitted, in 1839, an attorney.

Shortly after his admission an opportunity of beginning life on his own account presented itself at Hexham. In that quaint and quiet town he started business, taking for his partner Mr. Thomas Johnson, son of the steward of the Beaumont estates. It was not a prosperous venture. Hexham was too well provided with lawyers, and the firm soon discovered that they had embarked upon a barren enterprise. After two or three years' unsuccessful endeavour, the partnership was dissolved, and Mr. Glynn returned to Newcastle.

Six years before his own admission, his friend, Mr. C. U. Laws, son of Mr. William Laws, of Prudhoe Castle, one of the Duke of Northumberland's Commissioners, had been entered on the rolls, had opened an office in Collingwood Street, and commenced practice as a solicitor and bailiff of the manor of Tynemouth. With him Mr. Glynn joined hands, and, removing to Grey Street, created the firm of Laws and Glynn. The union thus established proved to be a most prosperous one. Before long the firm became as well known in Newcastle as the clock of Reid's shop, over which their offices were situated.

In his student days Mr. Glynn had been attentive and industrious. Although fond of society, and inclined to conviviality, he had kept those tendencies in due subjection. While he read hard for the law, he read harder still for self-culture. Without neglecting the classics, he made himself acquainted with the best works of the best authors, French as well as English, in fiction, poetry, and the drama. Thus, being blessed with a retentive memory, he was able to relieve the graver duties of his profession by recreative excursions into literature. For some years his gifts in these directions were held in check —known to his intimate friends, but rarely displayed. The dignity of his profession held him in thrall; he could not be induced to make public use of his diversified abilities. It was not until the establishment of the *Newcastle Daily Chronicle*, in May, 1858, that he was prevailed upon to indulge with freedom in the delights of journalism. He had written occasional articles for the weekly issue, but with reluctance and at long intervals. Once the Rubicon had been crossed, however, there was no turning back with him. He wrote the editorial article for the first issue of the *Daily Chronicle*, and from that time forward his pen was seldom idle. Nothing came amiss to him—politics, science, the drama, art, trade, industry; he could write, and write well, upon them all; while in the by-paths of political squib and social caricature he was, locally at least, unique and inimitable. How many of his best things are hidden in the early files of the *Daily Chronicle* can never now be known; but there they are—leading articles, special articles, songs, satires, and parodies innumerable.

Three of Mr. Glynn's productions were separately published with his name attached. He had gathered together a number of the waifs and strays of the streets, furnished them with brushes, blacking, and uniform, and under the superintendence of Detective Elliott, afterwards Chief-Constable of Gateshead, organised them

into a brigade. For the benefit of these boys was published, in the same year that the *Daily Chronicle* started—

"Sketches of Oldminster. The 'Chares' of Newcastle and their Inhabitants." By Edward Glynn, Honorary Secretary of the Shoeblack Brigade. Newcastle: M. and M. W. Lambert, Grey Street. 1858. 56 pp.

Another pamphlet was written to assist a movement for removing the deaf and dumb from hampered quarters in the town to the breezy expanse of the Moor—a movement that, through the munificence of Sir William Armstrong, was eventually successful. It was entitled—

"Silence. A Visit to the Northern Counties Institution for the Deaf and Dumb. A Contribution to the Building Fund." By Edward Glynn. Newcastle: M. and M. W. Lambert, Grey Street. 1859. 12 pp.

At the date of this last-named pamphlet a Press Club had been started in Newcastle. The editors, managers, and reporters of the Newcastle papers formed themselves into a little mutual admiration society, which utilised Saturday afternoons in summer for roaming expeditions to Marsden, Bywell, Hartford Bridge, and other places of resort, and in the winter assembled for the reading of papers, the interchange of ideas, and the enjoyment of social intercourse. Of that faithful brotherhood Mr. Glynn was an acceptable member. He possessed a wealth of anecdote which time could not impoverish; his skill as a *raconteur* was only excelled by his abilities as a singer. At one of the meetings he read a paper—"Mems. of a Mourning Mercer"—which was to have been printed for private circulation, but, so far as can be remembered, remains concealed in the columns of the local press. Shortly afterwards the club itself went into mourning. A local editor read a paper upon "Capital Punishment," and the members never ventured to meet again.

For the Drama Mr. Glynn had a love which amounted to passion. From first performances, in London or Newcastle, he was rarely absent, and for some years he was a most regular attender on Friday evenings at the Newcastle Theatre Royal. He wrote, or adapted from the French, two or three plays of merit. One of them was acted under Mr. Davis's management in Newcastle. Another, his own composition entirely, and written in French, was accepted by the management of the Porte St. Martin Theatre in Paris, on the eve of an insurrection which gave the Parisians something else to think about. It was by his influence that, at the end of 1859, after weeks of discussion and criticism, an amateur dramatic representation of

"Much Ado About Nothing," for the benefit of the Deaf and Dumb Asylum Building Fund, took place in the Town Hall. He rehearsed the part of Dogberry, but at the last moment was taken unwell, and resigned his place to another. For this performance he wrote a prologue—one of his best efforts—in which he enumerated local men of mark, or some of them, in happily chosen phrase, thus:—

"Let us not think, as ancient names decay,
Our race of worthies all have passed away.
New Collingwoods shall lead our sons to war,
Stowells and Eldons sway th' admiring bar;
And future Stephensons, from sire to son,
Shall run their course, as those before have run;
Some future bard, in future times aspire
To take up Akenside's neglected lyre.
The strains of music Shield from nature drew
(I mean the ancient Shield and not the new,[1]
Though he will have his turn); in future age
Find in this spot a rival on the stage.
Bewick on wood or metal once more trace
With skilful burin all our feathered race;
Loftus explore the halls, sublime idea!
Of buried Babylon or old Chaldea;
And Gateshead hospitality bestow,
In days to come, upon a new Defoe.
Let us not wait the honours time shall give,
But show our worthies honour while they live.
If with a master's pencil, bold and free,
Carmichael still pourtrays the restless sea;
If Richardson draws Nature's beauties forth,
In search of Nature Hancock braves the North;
If other Richardsons the furnace ply
For secrets yet undreamed in alchemy,
And other Hancocks shadow forth the strife
Of tropic birds, with art that mimics life;
If pondering o'er the sea an Alder dwells,
Finds worlds in spray, and harmony in shells;
If Dobson's genius rears the massive pile,
And Armstrong's guns protect our sea-girt isle—
To all their due."

At this class of literary work Mr. Glynn was an adept. It was easy to him, he delighted in it, and no one in the North of England could do it better. The prologue spoken by Miss Desborough at the opening of the Tyne Theatre, September 23rd, 1867, was his;

[1] Harry Shield, wine merchant, Newcastle, who took the part of Benedict.

so also was the long poetical address delivered by the lessee, Mr. George Stanley, May 9th, 1868, at the close of the first season of that popular place of amusement.

Next to love of the play and devotion to literature, Mr. Glynn cultivated a taste for music. Indeed, music may claim to have been his first love. He assisted in 1848 to establish the Newcastle Philharmonic Society, and was an active member of its committee of management. Organised for the cultivation of vocal and instrumental music, and the advancement of amateur performance, the Philharmonic Society did useful work in the town. Its concerts in the Assembly Rooms were the principal attraction of local society forty years ago. At one of them, in November, 1848, Miss Gibb, sister of Dr. Gibb, entered upon her successful career as a vocalist. At most of them the music, vocal and instrumental, was of a high order, "fit for cultured ear"; while the annual ball with which each season was wound up, was a special event at which mayors and magistrates, the officers from the barracks, and the local aristocracy in town and country were accustomed to disport themselves. Of these "Philharmonics" Mr. Glynn was the moving spirit. In 1851, upon the retirement of Mr. Francis Taylor, Jun., he took upon himself the added labour of the honorary secretaryship, and so continued till the society was merged into some other organisation whose name has been forgotten.

Although Mr. Glynn could not be persuaded to enter the governing body of his native town, he took considerable interest in municipal matters. Thus, after the great explosion of October, 1854, had reduced great part of the riverside property in Newcastle and Gateshead to ruins, he started the question of providing the town with a fire brigade. For a time he laboured in vain; the authorities would not listen. But a series of fires that occurred in 1857, 1858, and 1859, strengthened his advocacy, and in October of the last-named year, a town's meeting, convinced by his arguments, appointed a committee to carry out his proposals. In the end his persistency triumphed, and he lived to see in Newcastle efficient means provided of coping with destructive conflagration, and of minimising incendiary disaster.

As an advocate Mr. Glynn was clear, concise, and logical. He did not often appear in court, but when he did so his speeches, lit up by poetic quotation, relieved by gentle raillery, and spiced with subtle sarcasm, were something to be remembered. He was the defender of young Vicomte de Maricourt, arraigned for presenting a

pistol to the head of a local editor who had insulted the French Consul, his father. No one who heard it can ever forget that brilliant defence, and its suggestive conclusion:—

"I take the liberty to direct your attention to a precedent which I think you might without the least impropriety follow, or which may, at any rate, serve to guide you in your judgment. You will find it in that invaluable digest, the 'Ingoldsby Legends,' for which the learned world is indebted to the late Mr. Barham. It is the celebrated case of Mrs. Winifred Price killed by an unlucky 'lick' given her by her husband, whom she had provoked by her pungent taunts to 'shy' his stick at her.

> "Then came up Mr. Ap Thomas, the coroner,
> With his jury to sit, some dozen or more on her.
> The jury retired, and sat on the body,
> And after discussing the case in gin toddy,
> They returned to the room at eleven at night
> A unanimous verdict of—Sarved her right."

In politics Mr. Glynn was a Liberal, but for party warfare he had no great taste. Social reforms lay nearest to his heart, and he was more at home among shoeblacks, Ragged School boys, Wellesley lads, and dwellers in the slums, than with politicians in the Lecture Room or demonstrators in the streets. Not that he disapproved of political agitation, or underrated the utility of those great movements which in his day received their most forcible exposition among the leaders of advanced thought in Newcastle. But they were not in his line. He had an exalted idea of the dignity of his profession, and held to the principle that country lawyers should not, in matters of politics and religion, appear publicly as violent partizans. About social and personal questions there was less need of reserve, and in such matters he allowed no professional prejudice to stand in the way of doing what he conceived to be proper. He was the first solicitor in Newcastle who adopted what was called in 1858-59 "the beard movement." Many and ominous were the warnings of the shavelings against this innovation upon old-established practice. But he laughed them down, and allowed his hair to appear where Nature intended it to grow. With admirable mimicry he was accustomed to describe the astonishment of his clean-scraped London agent when first he presented himself in the Metropolis with his hirsute adornments thick upon him. The old lawyer eyed him from top to toe, put on his glasses and looked him over again,

and then, resuming his seat, remarked "Humph I hope you'll find that sort of thing pay in Newcastle."

Shortly before his death, Mr. Glynn read a paper to the Newcastle and Gateshead Articled Clerks' Society, of which he was a vice-president, on "Other Knowledge required by an Attorney, besides a Knowledge of Law." It was published by the Society, and forms the last of the three pamphlets to which he appended his name. The advice which he gave to these young men was characteristic. Get a knowledge of book-keeping, practise drawing, acquire modern languages, cultivate the art of public speaking, study human nature as revealed in fiction and the drama, read the newspapers, and walk about and let people see you. Such was his counsel, of the soundness of which he was perhaps one of the best living exemplars, and it was about the last he was destined to give. The paper was read on the 30th of March, 1871, and on the 25th of October in that year he died at the age of fifty-four, and was buried in Jesmond Cemetery.

## Joseph Glynn,

ENGINEER AND AUTHOR.

JOSEPH GLYNN, one of the elder sons of James Glynn, ironfounder and engineer, and brother of Edward Glynn, attorney, was born in Hanover Square, Newcastle, on the 6th of February, 1799. Being a precocious child, and exhibiting at a very early age an unusual taste for mechanics, his father determined to give him a superior education, and, with that object in view, placed him under the care of Mr. John Bruce. He was one of the first pupils to enter the far-famed Percy Street Academy at its opening in Midsummer, 1806, and he left it about the time that George Stephenson took his son Robert there. Between the elder Glynn and the elder Stephenson an acquaintance had been formed, arising probably out of a similarity of pursuits, and the two lads became fast friends, and so remained through life.

When his school-days were over, young Glynn went into the Ouseburn factory as assistant to his father, and, making good use of his time and opportunities, acquired a knowledge of the theory and practice of mechanical engineering that qualified him, when he arrived at man's estate, to undertake important operations on his

own account. Assisted by two young mechanics, Peter (afterwards Sir Peter) Fairbairn and William Hawthorn, he executed, in 1820, his first engineering work—the erection of a steam engine for the Earl of Carlisle to pump the water out of Talkin Colliery, near Brampton. In the following year he designed and carried out the works required for lighting the town of Berwick with gas, and prepared plans for a similar undertaking at Aberdeen. Shortly afterwards he accepted the appointment of engineer to the Butterley Iron Company, in Derbyshire, and left Newcastle.

The Butterley Ironworks enjoyed a wide reputation in those early days of steam machinery, and the appointment of Mr. Glynn to superintend them was a flattering testimony to his skill and ability. Only ten years before, the place had attained notoriety through the marvellous attempt of William Brunton to solve the problem of the application of steam to locomotion. In May, 1813, this ingenious gentleman patented machinery "for propelling or drawing carriages upon roads or railways, also boats, barges, or vessels upon canals, or navigations, by means of certain levers, or legs, alternately or conjointly acting upon such roads, railways," etc. Mr. Brunton conceived the idea that a locomotive should walk like a horse, and he made an iron animal at Butterley, which took deliberate strides, twenty-six inches long, and travelled two and a half miles in an hour. The owners of Newbottle Colliery, near Fence Houses, took such a fancy to this remarkable invention that they ordered one. It was "propelled by iron pillars, similar to the legs of horses," as a modern historian of the Coal Trade describes it, adding, however, the obvious remark that "it was found to be inconvenient and objectionable, and was consequently abandoned."

When Mr. Glynn went to Butterley, Brunton's iron horse was rusting into decay, and the establishment had acquired a more lasting fame by its production of engines, mill work, bridge work, and other machinery propelled by steam, or turned by the motive power of water. His practical skill soon extended the area of the company's operations. Within a few years of his appointment, he had designed and constructed steam dredgers for use in the Elbe and elsewhere; marine engines for the British and Russian Governments and the newly-formed General Steam Navigation Company; water wheels driven by steam for draining fens and marshes in Holland, Hanover, Cambridgeshire, Norfolk, and other places; milling machinery for the colonies, winding engines for collieries,

and several well-known bridges. Under his management, the Butterley Iron Company were able to undertake contracts for high-class machinery, to design methods of overcoming special engineering difficulties, and to carry them out successfully.

During his early days at Butterley, the railway fever raged, and Mr. Glynn's services as an engineer were in frequent requisition. From his association with the Stephensons and their experiments at Newcastle, he had become interested in railway enterprise, and an ardent supporter of its extension throughout the kingdom. Promoters engaged him as a witness on behalf of their projects while undergoing the ordeal of Parliamentary Committees; directors and administrators consulted him as to extensions, routes, expenditure, and the infinite details of management. He gave evidence to the Royal Commissioners on the Use of Iron in Railway Structures, and reported upon the Overland Route to India, and the competing scheme of the Euphrates Valley line. When it was proposed to unite the railway from York to Darlington, known as the Great North of England line, with the section that extended from Darlington to Newcastle, he was one of the committee appointed to negotiate the purchase and effect the amalgamation. In like manner, when a committee was elected to investigate the affairs of the Eastern Counties, now the Great Eastern, line, which had drifted into a position of difficulty approaching to disaster, he was appointed secretary to the investigators, and subsequently, when a satisfactory adjustment had been completed, he became deputy-chairman of the Eastern Counties Board.

To the literature of Mechanical Engineering, Mr. Glynn contributed several valuable books and papers. In February, 1836, he received the gold (Isis) medal of the Society of Arts for a paper on his method of applying steam power to the draining of fens and marshes—a contribution to the Society's "Transactions" which was translated into French, German, and Dutch, and had a wide circulation. He became a member of the Society shortly afterwards, and in later life was honoured by a seat in the Council, and the office of vice-president. In the "Transactions" of the Institute of Civil Engineers, of which learned body he became a member in 1828, are the following productions of his pen:—

1839. "Description of a Sawing Machine for cutting off Railway Bars."
1840. "On the Use of Mica as a substitute for Glass in the Windows of Workshops."

1844. "On the Causes of the Fractures of the Axles of Railway Carriages."
1847. "A Review of the Plans which have been proposed for connecting the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans by a Navigable Canal."
1851. "On the Isthmus of Suez and the Canals of Egypt."

The meeting of the Institute in 1847, at which Mr. Glynn read his paper on the union of the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, was rendered memorable by two interesting events—first, the award of the Telford medal to the reader, and, secondly, the presence of Prince Louis Napoleon, afterwards Emperor of the French, who made a speech expressing great interest in the subject, and concurrence in some of the views which Mr. Glynn had enunciated. The subsequent paper, on the Canals of Egypt, was rewarded by the gift of a Council premium, consisting of valuable books.

In the fourth and fifth volumes of "Papers on Subjects connected with the Duties of the Corps of Royal Engineers," are elaborate contributions of Mr. Glynn's upon the subject of cranes for the Royal Dockyards, and he drew up a memorandum for the Lords of the Admiralty, showing the advantage of applying the screw propeller to ships of war. For Weale's Rudimentary Series of Science Manuals he wrote two books, entitled:—

"The Construction of Cranes, and other Machinery for Raising Heavy Bodies, for the Erection of Buildings, and for Hoisting Goods."
"The Power of Water as applied to drive Flour Mills, and to give Motion to Turbines and other Hydrostatic Engines."

Upon the occasion of his obtaining the Isis Medal of the Society of Arts, the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle, in whose proceedings as a youth he had been an active participant, elected Mr. Glynn an honorary member, and he was the first person so honoured. Two years later he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society. He died in London on his 64th birthday, February 6th, 1863.

# Sir Daniel Gooch,

RAILWAY ENGINEER.

JOHN GOOCH, of Beccles, in Suffolk, yeoman, married, in the early seventies of last century, Barbara, daughter of Michael Longridge of Newburn-on-Tyne, by his wife, Mary, daughter and heiress of Taylor Dorman, M.D., of Newcastle. They had, among other issue, a son

named John Gooch, who was united at St. George's, Hanover Square, London, on the 23rd of December, 1805, to his second cousin, Anna, daughter of Thomas Longridge of Gateshead. From this marriage came nine children, the sixth of whom was Daniel Gooch, whose name heads this page. He was born on the 24th of August, 1816, at Bedlington, where the Longridges had opened out extensive ironworks, utilising the waters of the river Blyth for their motive power. At Bedlington Ironworks his boyhood was spent, and amidst the machinery and appliances of that establishment he imbibed a knowledge of mechanics, and acquired a taste for mechanical operations. George Stephenson was a frequent visitor to the Bedlington Gooches and Longridges; his son Robert frequently accompanied him, and their talk being invariably of iron, of rails, and of locomotion, young Gooch was, so to speak, brought up in an atmosphere of steam and engineering.

Having made choice of a profession, he studied under Robert Stephenson for a while, and then went to the Tredegar Ironworks in Wales to learn the Welsh methods of making iron, and to observe the mineral industries of the district. In 1834, returning to the Tyne, he was employed for a time at Stephenson's works, and afterwards assisted Robert Stephenson to construct the line between Leeds and Manchester. Three years later, on the recommendation of Brunel, he was appointed locomotive superintendent of the Great Western Railway, and in that post, fighting the battle of the gauges, he remained for twenty-seven years. When Brunel projected the *Great Eastern* steamship, and a company was formed to realise his gigantic conception, Mr. Gooch became one of the shareholders, and eventually Chairman of the Company. In like manner he joined the directorate of the Atlantic Telegraph Company, and it was in connection with these two enterprises that he achieved distinction.

The Atlantic Telegraph Company, formed to achieve the formidable task of uniting Great Britain and America by a cable submerged in an unfathomable ocean, commenced its operations in 1857, and after two vain attempts, succeeded, in 1858, in laying down a cable, and for five-and-twenty days managed to keep up a feeble communication between the New World and the Old. Then the stranded messenger ceased to respond to the eager operators; their utmost endeavours failed to break its silence. Mr. Gooch suggested the employment of the *Great Eastern* in the work, and the idea finding favour and support, that great vessel left the shores of the United Kingdom in July, 1865, with a cable weighing upwards of

four thousand tons on board. Mr. Gooch went with her, but the ill success of previous efforts fell upon his enterprise, and the vessel returned with her mission unfulfilled. Undeterred by failure of the fourth effort, Mr. Gooch and his colleagues raised fresh capital, and formed the Anglo-American Company. Alterations were made in the *Great Eastern*, and on the 30th of June, 1866, the steamer left the Medway, and having on the 13th of July spliced the eastern end of the cable at Valencia, pursued her course through the waters, paying out cable as she went. Within a fortnight the junction was effected at Newfoundland, and a message of success was flashed across the ocean:—"Mr. Gooch has the pleasure to inform Lord Stanley that the Newfoundland shore end of the Atlantic cable was laid to-day, and the most perfect communication established between England and America. God grant it may be a lasting source of benefit to our country."

The year before the cable was successfully laid Mr. Gooch had been elected M.P. for Cricklade, and now he was rewarded by a baronetcy, appointed chairman of the Great Western Railway Company, and in 1873 presented by the shareholders of that company with 5,000 guineas. He was returned again for Cricklade in 1868, 1874, and 1880, and in 1885 he retired from Parliamentary life.

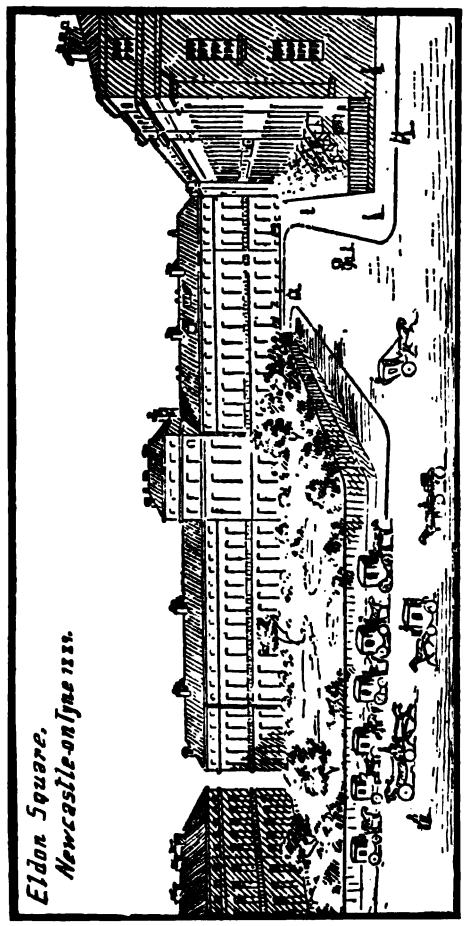
Sir Daniel Gooch, although resident in the South of England for the greater part of his life, retained a business connection with his native district, and was interested in collieries at Lintz Green, in the adjoining county. He died at Clewer Park, Windsor, on the 15th of October, 1889. By his marriage in 1838 with Margaret, daughter of Mr. Henry Tanner, of Bishopwearmouth, he had three sons, the eldest of whom, Charles Fulthorpe Gooch, succeeded him in the baronetcy. Mrs. Gooch died in 1868, and Sir Daniel married, in 1870, Emily, daughter of Mr. John Burder, of Norwood, who survived him.

# Richard Grainger,

THE RE-BUILDER OF NEWCASTLE.

RICHARD GRAINGER, the second son of Thomas Grainger, porter, was born in High Friar Lane, Newcastle, on the 9th of October, 1797. He received a respectable education in the charity school of St. Andrew's parish, and in 1809 was bound apprentice to John

Brown, carpenter. About this time his father died, and his mother (a native of Gibraltar, who survived till 1835) brought up her family by clear-starching, glove-making, and other humble industries dependent upon dexterity with the needle. His elder brother, George,



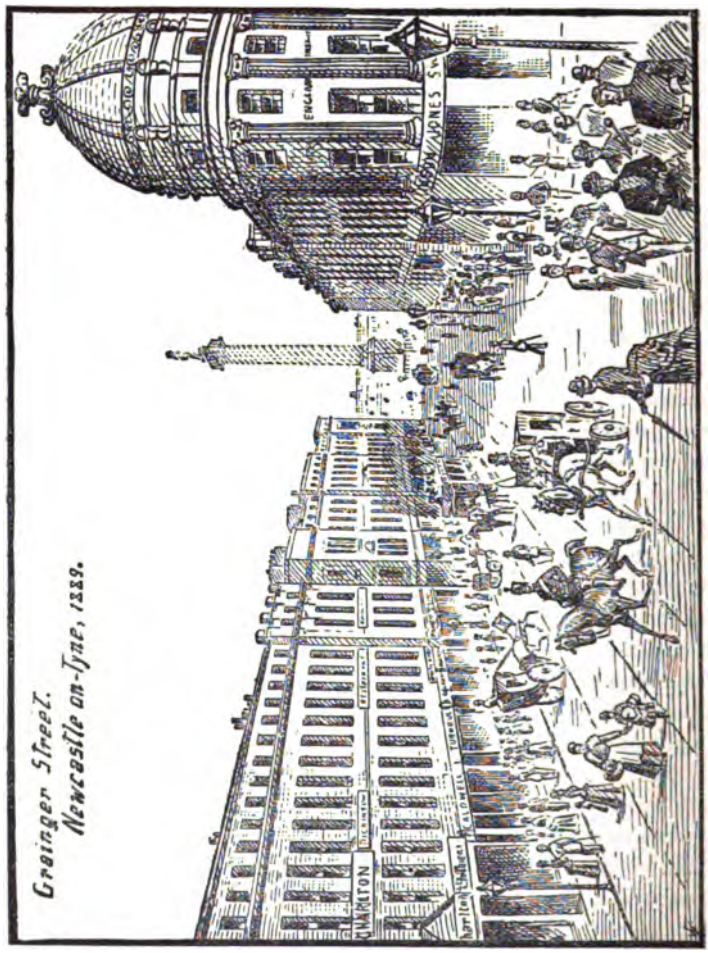

served indentures to a bricklayer, and when Richard was out of his time the two young men commenced business in a small way as housebuilders. George died shortly afterwards, leaving Richard to continue the business on his own account.

The first undertaking of magnitude with which Mr. Grainger's name is associated was the erection of the fine row of houses known as Higham Place, New Bridge Street. These were the property of Mr. William Batson, a Newcastle alderman, who had employed the young man in repairs and restorations, and was struck by his intelligence and enterprise. Through Mr. Batson's influence he was introduced to influential persons in Newcastle, and among others to the family of Mr. Joseph Arundale, tanner, whose eldest daughter, Rachel, he married. Mr. Arundale had money, and he bestowed upon his son-in-law enough of it to enable him to commence building operations upon an extensive scale in Newcastle. He began by building thirty-one houses in the new thoroughfare of Blackett Street; before these were finished, and while the great political contest of 1826 was raging, he was busy with the formation of Eldon Square. In 1829 he commenced to build Leazes Terrace and Crescent, and in 1831 the Royal Arcade. When the Arcade was completed, he had erected property of the value of nearly £200,000, and had become a rich man. On the 30th July, 1833, he was entertained at a public dinner, the Mayor, Mr. John Brandling, in the chair, and presented with a silver tureen and salver, and a full-length portrait of himself in recognition of his exertions in ornamenting and improving his native town.

In the spring of 1834, Mr. Grainger purchased for £50,000, from the representatives of Major George Anderson, the fine old mansion and grounds called Anderson Place, occupying the whole of the space north of the High Bridge between Pilgrim Street on the east and Newgate Street on the west. He kept his acquisition a secret till he had matured his plans, and then it transpired that he had bought other old property to the amount of £45,000, enabling him to open communications between some of the busy parts of the town which were distant from each other, and could only be reached by circuitous ways.

Mr. Grainger's plans being too comprehensive for his purse, he associated himself with the Town Clerk of Newcastle, Mr. John Clayton, and laid his designs and proposals before the Common Council. His plans were exhibited in the Arcade, and met with such general approbation that a public meeting of the inhabitants passed a unanimous resolution (and five thousand signatures were appended to a memorial) in their favour. At a meeting of the Council, on the 12th of June, it was resolved, by a majority of 24

votes to 7, to treat with Mr. Grainger; on the 15th July the sanction of the Corporation was formally obtained, the old market of the town, which stood in the way, being given up for the sum of £15,000, in exchange for a new one to be built, for which it was




agreed to give £36,000. This result was welcomed with peals from the church steeples, bonfires, and other rejoicings.

On the 30th of the same month, Mr. Grainger commenced to lay out his new streets, the levelling of the ground alone costing £21,500.

Six weeks later he came to terms with the proprietors of the Theatre Royal, in Mosley Street, engaging to erect a new theatre and convey it to them in exchange for the old one, paying also any difference in value which might be estimated by arbitrators, to the extent of £500. He was anxious to give the corndealers a new market, but this design was frustrated. There were vested interests at stake, and the Corporation would not yield. Instead of being discouraged, Mr. Grainger went quietly on with his market, and the result is seen in the stately and massive Central Exchange, now the Art Gallery. In like manner he offered to build, at the upper end of Grey Street, new Assize Courts and municipal buildings, for the sum of £20,000, taking in payment a plot of ground in Forth Field, and some old buildings near the Cattle Market. But the offer not meeting with the support of the Council, he withdrew it, and upon a part of the site raised the beautiful edifice which is now used as Lambton's Bank.

Some idea of the work Mr. Grainger did may be gathered from his own statistics. Examined before the Cholera Commission in January, 1854, he stated that he had erected houses as follows:—New Bridge Street, 5; Carliol Street, 9; Croft Street, 5; Portland Place, 3; Northumberland Street, 1; Blackett Street, 31; Eldon Square, 22; Newgate Street, 3; Percy Street, 9; Leazes Terrace, 68; Leazes Crescent and streets adjoining, 80; St. James's Street and Terrace, 14; Grey Street, 81; Market Street, 38; Grainger Street, 68; Nun Street, 26; Nelson Street, 26; Clayton Street, 107; Clayton Street West, 27; Hood Street, 16; Shakespeare Street, 16; Pilgrim Street, 14; Nun's Gate, 6; Rye Hill, 23; Elswick, 19; Railway Street, 20; total, 737 houses, and the Royal Arcade, Central Exchange, and New Markets. In the course of a few years he had raised Newcastle from an irregular cluster of smoke-dyed brick and timber dwellings to a condition exceeding anything to be seen elsewhere in Britain, except in the best parts of Edinburgh and Glasgow.

When the great question of railway extension in the North of England was in its elementary stages, Mr. Grainger ventured into authorship. He had a plan of his own for working the traffic in Newcastle, and he published it under the title of

"A Proposal for Concentrating the Termini of the Newcastle and Carlisle, the Great North of England and proposed Edinburgh Railways, and for providing spacious and eligible Depôts, with convenient access from these several Railways to the town of Newcastle; submitted to the consideration of the respective Companies, and to the Proprietors of Property interested in the same." 8vo. Newcastle: T. and J. Hodgson, 1836.

Mr. Grainger died on the 4th of July, 1861, in his 64th year, and was buried in the churchyard of Benwell. The only memorials of him in the town of his nativity, the town which he re-constructed and beautified, are the street bearing his name, a drinking fountain in front of the *Chronicle* office, and a tablet in St. John's Church containing this inscription:—

"Sacred to the Memory of Richard Grainger and Rachel, his wife. A Citizen of Newcastle does not need to be reminded of the genius of Richard Grainger, and a stranger is referred to the principal street in the centre of the city as forming the most splendid and enduring monument to that genius. He died 4th of July, 1861: His wife, 16th of Oct. 1842."

# John and Benjamin Green,

ARCHITECTS.

JOHN GREEN was born on the 20th June, 1787, at Newton Fell House, an isolated habitation lying north-west of the village of Nafferton. In that sequestered locality his father carried on a respectable business as a contractor, builder, carpenter, and agricultural implement maker. At some local school, and perhaps under one of the famous village pedagogues to whose tuition half the best men of the county not so long ago owed their success in life, he received a sound, practical education. He was thereby enabled to assist his father in planning, designing, and estimating for work to be done in the surrounding villages and farmsteads. When he approached man's estate, he began to study architecture, and this proved to be so useful to his father's interests that, soon after he came of age, he was admitted to be a partner. With the talent and energy which he threw into the affairs of the firm, business increased until Nafferton became too small to hold it, and the workshops were removed to Corbridge. Extending the sphere of their operations, Messrs. Green & Son advanced from the construction of stables, cowbyres, and cottages, to the erection of country houses and public buildings, and soon had their hands full of contracts. They did their work well, and reaped the reward of well-doing—public confidence.

After a time, proficiency in architecture and engineering encouraged Mr. John Green to attempt higher things. He left

Corbridge about the year 1820, and established himself in Newcastle as an architect and civil engineer. Under his superintendence, in 1821, the building of Cresswell House, from designs by Shaw, was begun. The following year he commenced the erection of the building in Westgate Street that has been ever since the home of the Newcastle Literary and Philosophical Society. His next important work was the projection of a bridge over the Tyne—that elegant structure which, still serving its original purpose, is known as Scotswood Suspension Bridge. It was begun on the 21st July, 1829, and completed on the 12th April, 1831. At the banquet which followed the opening ceremony, Mr. Green was the recipient of a silver claret jug, bearing on its face an engraving of the structure, and an inscription stating that it was presented by the Bridge Company "in testimony of the talent and skill displayed by him in designing and executing" the work. Until the construction of the High Level Bridge, ten years later, "Scotswood Suspension" was one of the "sights" of the district.

While Scotswood Bridge was being thrown across the water, Mr. Green undertook other important public works. Besides a church at Usworth, the foundation-stone of which was laid in June, 1831, he designed, and the same year successfully carried out, the construction of a chain bridge over the Tees at Whorlton, about three miles below Barnard Castle. Next he erected a stone bridge across the same river at Blackwell Ford, and after assisting Mr. Dobson to secure the foundations of St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, he constructed (1834-35) the bridge over the North Tyne at Bellingham.

About this time Mr. Green's son, Benjamin, who had been specially trained for the profession by the elder Pugin, came into the business. It becomes difficult thenceforward to distinguish the work of the father from that of the son. As a rule the former superintended bridge and engineering work, while the latter planned public buildings, churches, and villas; but they worked together, and local annalists, recording their undertakings, make no distinction between them. Chapels-of-ease at Dissington and Sugley, in the parish of Newburn, erected in 1836, were in all probability designed by Benjamin Green. Newcastle Theatre Royal, of which it was written that "among the higher efforts of the art which modern ages have so copiously produced it would be difficult to find many specimens fit to be set in competition with it," was certainly his conception. The beautiful column, crowned by Baily's statue of

Earl Grey, which the firm erected at the head of Grey Street, was probably his also. To the same source may, with equal likelihood, be ascribed the Corn Exchange in the Cloth Market, Newcastle, begun in 1838, and removed in 1854 to make way for the present Town Hall.

But the achievement which gave the firm its chief reputation was undoubtedly the work of John Green. He it was who invented that new style of building wooden bridges for railway transit across still waters and over deep valleys which our forefathers in the "thirties" and "forties" considered to be the highest combination of strength and economy known in railway engineering. The invention consisted in bending three-inch planks—"laminated timber," as it was called—into arches, strengthening them with struts and braces, and resting them upon iron plates or shoes fixed to stone piers. Those who attended Section G at the British Association meetings in Newcastle on Saturday, August 25th, 1838, the day after Earl Grey's statue had been raised to the height of its column, heard Benjamin Green, on his father's behalf, describe these timber viaducts, and had the opportunity, with the rest of the assembled *savants*, of seeing the system exemplified in the bridges that were destined, for many years after, to carry the North Shields Railway across the Ouseburn and over the Dene at Willington. In the Exhibition of Mechanical Inventions which the British Association gathered together during this, its first, visit to Newcastle, no more attractive objects were shown than the models of the Messrs. Green. There was one of a Suspension Bridge which John Green proposed to erect across the mouth of the Tyne, with a span of 1,000 feet, at a height of 110 feet above high-water level; another of the Scotswood structure as at first projected; a third showing the construction of the Ouseburn and Willington Viaducts; with others representing the Grey Monument and the Corn Exchange, Newcastle, a church, a Gothic cross, and the monument to the memory of John Bruce, the schoolmaster, in Westgate Cemetery. The models of the viaducts were the theme of universal praise. Professor Robison, of Armagh, lectured upon them, and the local secretaries of the association cited their attractiveness as a justification of their action in coupling, for the first time in the history of the organisation, an exhibition of models with scientific discussion.

"Green's Viaducts" seem to have attracted as much attention in 1838-39 as the Forth Bridge did in 1888-89. Hetherington, in

"Newcastle Fifty Years Ago," tells the story of their inauguration—"One beautiful day, the 18th of June, 1839, we had been aroused before six o'clock in the morning by the ringing of St. Nicholas' bells, and the booming of cannon from the top of the Old Castle—an annual custom to remind us that the day was the anniversary of the great battle of Waterloo. But on that day we had a much more important event in view. We had a victory to witness where neither life was to be sacrificed nor blood spilt—a victory of peace, no less renowned than war. On that day the first train of railway carriages was to leave Newcastle for North Shields—a triumph of skill, ingenuity, and labour unprecedented. . . . The general theme of conversation was the grand success of the important undertaking, and the wonderful engineering skill displayed in the erection of the viaduct over the Ouseburn, with its nine arches, stretching like a cobweb a hundred and eight feet high, and spanning a distance of seven hundred and fifty feet. This gigantic structure, built from the designs of our talented townsmen, John and Benjamin Green, excited the surprise and admiration of all persons possessed of scientific and mechanical knowledge. It, and the similar viaduct at Willington Dene, on the same line, firmly stood the test. They were as much admired, and produced as much wonder, as the later erection—the High Level Bridge across the Tyne. The glories of Waterloo were eclipsed that day; Tyneside was too intent on the new achievement to be agitated by the glories of war."

For a description of these timber bridges, Mr. Benjamin Green received, in 1841, the Telford medal of the Institution of Civil Engineers. Sketches of them, painted in water-colours by T. M. Richardson, and reproduced in lithography, may still be seen among the mural surroundings of elderly Novocastrians, and in the portfolios of local collectors.

During the next few years, railway extension was the principal occupation of architects and engineers in the North of England, and the Messrs. Green obtained a goodly share of the work. They drew the plans from which the church of Tynemouth, and that of St. Hilda at Middlesbrough, were erected, but most of their skill was displayed upon that great main line which, creeping northward, gradually linked "Scotia's darling seat" to the world's metropolis. John Green designed some of the bridges over which the railroad ran; his son planned booking-offices and houses for stationmasters. It is said that all the stations between Newcastle and Berwick were

erected from Benjamin Green's drawings. Fine, handsome buildings some of them were; more like the villas raised by retired tradesmen than residences for railway officers.

For several years John Green held an appointment as architect of farms, etc., for the Duke of Northumberland, upon whose estates he erected many good and substantial houses. He published, among other designs, a plan for a college in Newcastle—a castellated building of two storeys, forming three sides of a parallelogram, with a piazza running the entire length of the inner court—and was the author of one of the schemes by which it was sought to connect the higher levels of Newcastle and Gateshead. Benjamin Green, as became a disciple of Pugin, threw the glamour of art over his conceptions. While the father's style was plain, severe, and economical, the son's was ornamental, florid, and costly. Two well-known examples of their work will illustrate this difference of treatment—John Green's monument to the memory of the Earl of Durham erected on Pensher Hill, and Benjamin Green's Church of the Virgin Mary Hospital in Ryehill, Newcastle.

John Green died September 30th, 1852; Benjamin Green died November 24th, 1858.

## Thomas Michael Greenhow,

DOCTOR OF MEDICINE.

TOWARDS the close of last century, Edward Martin Greenhow, a native of Stirling, who had served as an army surgeon under General Elliott during the protracted siege of Gibraltar, established himself as a general practitioner on the north side of the harbour of Tyne. With the reputation which attached to all the brave men who for years had held the key to the Mediterranean against the combined fleets of France and Spain, Mr. Greenhow worked his way to an extensive and lucrative practice. Married at Tynemouth in 1786, he became the father of sons who afterwards distinguished themselves in various departments of public usefulness—Conrad H. Greenhow, shipbroker, who took a leading part in the discussions which preceded the repeal of the Navigation Laws; Edward Henry, who followed his father's profession at North Shields; and Thomas

Michael, who became a prominent surgeon, and an active public man in Newcastle.

Thomas Michael Greenhow was born at North Shields on the 5th of July, 1792. Brought up as a boy in his father's surgery, he was sent, at the proper age, to Edinburgh University, where he passed his examinations and obtained his diploma. Securing, on the 5th of November, 1814, the membership of the Royal College of Surgeons, he entered the army as assistant surgeon, but life among soldiers not being to his taste he returned to the North, after a couple of years' service, and commenced practice

T.M. Greenhow, M.D.

on his own account in Newcastle. His first professional appointment in the town was that of surgeon to the Lying-in Hospital in Rosemary Lane, where he had for a colleague the celebrated Dr. Elliott, through whose instrumentality the institution was removed to its present commodious quarters in New Bridge Street. About the same time he received the appointment of co-surgeon to an affiliated organisation, the Charity for Poor Married Women Lying-in at their own Houses. In 1822 he joined Mr. (afterwards Sir John) Fife in the establishment of an Infirmary for Diseases of the Eye—an institution that brought

him considerable reputation as a bold and skilful operator, and added considerably to his private practice. From that period his surgical career in Newcastle was one of rapid and undeviating success.

At the time when the Eye Infirmary was opened there were discussions in the town respecting the proper method of remunerating medical men for their professional services. General practitioners, compounding their own medicines, charged heavy prices for their drugs and little or nothing for attendance. The practice was condemned as hurtful alike to doctor and to patient. Mr. Greenhow ventured into print on the subject, publishing a pamphlet entitled—

"Hints Towards the Adoption of an Improved Principle of Remunerating the Surgeon Apothecary, or General Practitioner in Medicine; Addressed to the Members of the Profession and the Public at Large." 8vo. Newcastle: Emerson Charnley, 1824.

In this pamphlet he argued that the system had a tendency to degrade medical men in the eyes of the public into mere traders in medicine, anxious to dispose of the largest possible quantity, and he proposed that they should charge a fair and moderate fee for attendance and receive for medicine only a bare remuneration, or else send the patient with a prescription to a competent apothecary. The year following he went to press with a work of a more pretentious character—a treatise on vaccination (then becoming fashionable) as a security against small-pox. Upon this subject he wrote with enthusiasm. A medical reformer himself, he viewed with impatience the conservative doubts of older practitioners. To his mind vaccination was a sure preventive of one of the worst diseases that afflict humanity, and he desired to see it widely adopted, believing, as stated in his book, that it was capable, if universally employed, of exterminating small-pox altogether.

Being now thoroughly established in Newcastle, he found time to interest himself in other matters than those which pertained exclusively to his profession. The education of the young was one of the subjects which attracted him at this time, and it continued to interest him to the end of his days. At a town's meeting, held in the Guildhall, on the 25th February, 1825, under the presidency of Henry Cramlington, the Mayor, it was resolved to establish infant schools, by which the children of the poor, from the age of two to six years, might, by a small weekly payment, not only be kept from

the dangers of the streets, but, by a judicious interchange of exercise and instruction, be prepared for the education provided in the town for children of a more advanced age. To carry out the benevolent intentions of the promoters, subscriptions were sought and obtained; the Wesleyan Orphan House in Northumberland Street, the Sallyport Chapel in Causey Bank, and a house in the Castle Garth were opened for the public reception of infants, and for many years useful and lasting work was done in them. Of this excellent movement, Mr. Greenhow and Mr. Jonathan Priestman were co-secretaries.

Towards the close of 1827, No. 1 of the fine range of mansions known as Eldon Square was completed, and Mr. Greenhow removed into it, retaining his surgery in Blackett Street, adjoining. When, in the winter of 1831, an outbreak of cholera occurred in Newcastle, he laboured with great assiduity among the worst slums of the town, and, as soon as it was over, published a book on the subject:—

"Cholera as it has recently appeared in the Towns of Newcastle and Gateshead; Including Cases illustrative of its Physiology and Pathology, with a view to the establishment of sound Principles of Practice." 8vo. Newcastle: E. Charnley, 1832.

His exertions during that dreadful visitation procured for him, the year after, a coveted distinction—one of the four honorary surgeonships of the Infirmary of Newcastle. In the spring of 1834, he helped to establish the "Newcastle Medical and Surgical Society," the objects of which were to form a library of professional works and to hold meetings from time to time for the reading of papers and the discussion of subjects connected with the profession. Of this useful institution he was elected secretary and treasurer.

During the agitation which preceded the Municipal Reform Bill of 1835, Mr. Greenhow was an occasional speaker on the side of the Reformers. When the bill had become law, and ward meetings were held to nominate suitable townsmen for election to the new Town Council, the voters in North St. Andrew's Ward put him forward as a candidate. Although not successful in winning a sufficient number of votes to carry him into the Council on that occasion, yet, in the following year, upon the occurrence of a vacancy in South St. Andrew's, he was returned at the head of the poll. His maiden speech was delivered upon a memorable occasion—the closing day of the debate on the retention of the Mansion House. He gave his voice and vote with the Reformers, and thus added

one to the majority of four by which the furniture of the Mansion House was ordered to be sold, and the establishment to be broken up. His stay in the Council was but brief. In June, 1839, the magistrates nominated him for the office of surgeon to the gaol, the Council, by 23 votes to 17, confirmed the nomination, and his seat in the Council Chamber became vacant.

While a member of the Council, Mr. Greenhow had not curtailed his interest in other public matters, nor neglected his professional duties. He assisted, in 1837, to establish the "North of England Society for the Promotion of the Fine Arts," and became, with the late Alderman Lockey Harle as his coadjutor, hon. secretary of the organisation. During the visit of the British Association to Newcastle in 1838, he read a couple of papers in the medical section—one "On the Beneficial Action of Mercury rapidly introduced in certain cases of Neuralgia," and the other "On a New Sling Fracture Bed." The latter was an expansion of a pamphlet which he had published five years earlier, describing an invention of his own for slinging a broken leg or thigh in such a manner as to give the operator considerable freedom of movement in making extensions, etc., while retaining the limb in a safe position. The following year he promoted the series of entertainments long remembered in Newcastle as the "Saturday Evening Concerts and Lectures." His contributions to the series were two lectures—the first, delivered July 13th, 1839, on "Education," and the second, read January 18th, 1840, on "Slavery." The subject of the first lecture seems never to have been absent from his mind. In season and out of season, he urged the necessity of providing collegiate education for the youth of the rapidly increasing industrial community, of which Newcastle was the centre and the capital. Through the press, by discussions at the Literary and Philosophical Society, and through the medium of a town's meeting, held in the Guildhall, he had endeavoured to rouse his fellow-townsmen to a due sense of the benefits of scientific training. Papers which he read on the subject to the members of the Literary and Philosophical Society were published under the general title of

"The Expediency of establishing in Newcastle an Academical Institution of the Nature of a College or University for the Promotion of Literature and Science, more especially among the Middle Classes of the Community, briefly considered." 8vo. Newcastle: W., E. & H. Mitchell, 1831.

Such was his zeal in this direction, that the writer of the "Supple-

ment to the Corporation Annual for 1836" satirically described him as being "most strenuous in his endeavours to have the Council better versed in Old English by the establishment of an University in Darn Crook."

Like many other enthusiastic educational reformers, Mr. Greenhow found himself far in advance of his time. His idea was that Newcastle possessed the nucleus of a collegiate institution in its Grammar School, Literary and Philosophical Society, Natural History Society, School of Design, Fine Arts Society, and School of Medicine, and that out of these materials might be moulded "an Academy of Science and Literature of incalculable value in the development of intellect, the nurture of talent, and the general advancement of mind; while special objects would be successfully promoted by imparting suitable knowledge to young men intended for the direction of mines, and for engineers and chemical manufacturers." Newcastle people listened and applauded, formed themselves into committees, and passed resolutions, but they did not provide the funds necessary to bring the scheme into operation. The Corporation received deputations upon the subject, were very courteous, and apparently sympathetic; talked of emoluments which might some day become available out of the funds of the Virgin Mary Hospital for appropriation to an institution such as Mr. Greenhow desired, and then quietly allowed the matter to subside.

Mr. Greenhow's surgical career was exceptionally brilliant. He frequently practised major operations, and was eminently successful in conducting them to a happy issue. It is upon record that in August, 1848, he performed the operation of complete excision of the os calcis, for caries of the bone, and "at that time he was unaware that the late Mr. Hancock had performed the same operation two months previously, so that the credit of its invention belonged to him equally with Mr. Hancock." He acquired a considerable reputation in ophthalmic cases from his long connection with the Eye Infirmary, and displayed remarkable inventive skill in designing instruments and adapting surgical appliances to modern requirements.

In the early days of sanitary reform he was an energetic and watchful leader of the movement. His warnings after the cholera visitation of 1832 were unheeded, but he abated none of his zeal in the cause. In 1852, he foretold that the United Kingdom would again be visited by the pestilence. Addressing himself to the Mayor

of Newcastle, he called attention to the unpreparedness of the town to resist such a visitation—a warning which the dreadful mortality of the succeeding year too truly verified and vindicated. The Royal College of Surgeons, recognising his special abilities, elected him to an original Fellowship in 1843, and in 1855, the University of Durham conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Medicine. He was appointed to the Chair of Medical Ethics in the Newcastle College of Medicine in the same year, and in 1857, when the two rival schools of medicine in Newcastle amalgamated, he was elected a member of the united Council.

Dr. Greenhow married, in 1820, Elizabeth, elder sister of Harriet Martineau, the authoress, and granddaughter of Mr. Rankin, of Newcastle, sugar refiner in the Close. With his celebrated sister-in-law the doctor continued on terms of affectionate intimacy for many years. She was a frequent guest at his house, and it was to be near him that, when stricken by illness in 1839, shortly after her visit to the British Association in Newcastle, she took the lodgings at Tynemouth in which, confined for five years, a helpless invalid, she wrote her "Life in a Sick Room." Into the estrangement that followed it is unnecessary to enter here. Miss Martineau, writing her "Autobiography" many years afterwards, refers to it in the following regretful terms:—

"Her home at Newcastle [Mrs. Greenhow's], with all possible kindness from her hospitable husband and herself, was always at our command, without hindrance or difficulty, until my recovery from a hopeless illness in 1844 by Mesmerism proved too much for the natural prejudices of a surgeon and a surgeon's wife, and caused by the help, or the ill offices, of another relation, a family breach as absurd as it was lamentable."

Mrs. Greenhow died on the 10th of February, 1850. Ten years later the doctor retired from practice in Newcastle, and having married for his second wife Miss Lupton of Leeds, removed to the neighbourhood of that town soon afterwards. He died at Newton Hall, Chapel Allerton, near Leeds, on the 25th of October, 1881, in his ninetieth year, leaving, among other issue, a son—William Thomas Greenhow, B.A. and LL.B., Recorder of Berwick, County Court Judge of Leeds and Wakefield, a member of Convocation, London University, and author of "A Manual of Shipping Laws"; born February 6th, 1831; married, May 20th, 1857, Marion, eldest daughter of Charles Martineau, of Tulse Hill.

# Sir Leonard Greenwell,

A DISTINGUISHED SOLDIER.

ABOUT the beginning of the eighteenth century, two brothers Greenwell, descendants of the ancient Durham family of that name, married sisters, co-heiresses of William Aubone, a Newcastle alderman. One of the brothers, John Greenwell, settled in Newcastle as a merchant; the other, Robert Greenwell, lived upon his maternal estate at Kibblesworth. William Greenwell, son of Robert, came like his father to Newcastle for a wife, and found one in the person of Mary, daughter of Joshua Twizell. A son of this union, Joshua Greenwell, of Newcastle, marrying the heiress of the Rev. Thomas Robinson, rector of Wycliffe, had among other issue two sons, Leonard and Robinson Robert Greenwell. The latter became the head of a large commercial firm in Newcastle, and at his death in Ridley Place, November 1st, 1840, aged 63, was consul for Hanover, and vice-consul for Denmark. The former rose to be a distinguished soldier, known to a past generation as Major-General Sir Leonard Greenwell, K.C.B., K.C.H., aide-de-camp to George IV.

Sir Leonard was born at Kibblesworth in 1781, and passed his boyhood at the Royal Free Grammar School in Newcastle, under the head-mastership of the Rev. Edward Moises. He entered the army on the 7th of August, 1801, as an ensign in the 45th Foot, and remained with that regiment throughout his career. Very early in life he was employed in active service. He accompanied the expedition to South America, and was present at the attack upon Buenos Ayres in 1806, and again in 1807, where he was severely wounded. In most of the battles of the Peninsular war he served with distinction, and, it is said, received wounds in almost every part of his body. He commanded his regiment during Massena's retreat from the lines at Fuentes d'Onoro; at the siege of Badajos, he was the first officer to scale the walls; at Orthes, he commanded the light troops of the 3rd Division, under Sir Thomas Picton, and bore himself throughout with great gallantry and determination.

During one of the Peninsular engagements, seeing a young officer, who was in action for the first time, flying in panic from the field, he rode up to him and offered him the alternative of returning to his

regiment, promising, at the same time, to keep his secret, or of being shot as a deserter. The young man, it is said, prudently selected the former course, came out of the battle unscathed, rose to be a distinguished general officer, and no doubt often thanked his stars that fate had sent Greenwell across his path to save him from disgrace and ruin. For his services during the Peninsular campaign he received a medal and two clasps, was appointed aide-de-camp to the king, created a Knight Commander of the Royal Hanoverian Guelphic Order and of the Military Order of the Bath, and rewarded with a grant out of the distinguished service fund. In recognition of his bravery at Badajos the king authorised him to add to the family arms (or, two bars azure, between three ducal coronets gules) a representation of Badajos, with a jacket of the 45th floating from one of the towers. Retiring on half-pay in 1827, he obtained, four years later, the appointment of Commandant at Chatham, an office which he held till 1837. He died unmarried in London on the 11th November, 1844, aged 63, and his body being brought to Newcastle, was interred among his kindred within the walls of St. Nicholas', where a handsome mural monument records his achievements.

# Ancient Northumbrian Greys,

SIR THOMAS, SIR RALPH, AND LORD WILLIAM.

"I always consider an old English family as well worth studying as a collection of Holbein's portraits, or Albert Dürer's prints."—WASHINGTON IRVING.

THE biographer who collects materials relating to the Northumbrian family of Grey, or Gray, may well be deterred by the magnitude of his enterprise. "The history of a family of this antiquity," writes Raine ("History of North Durham," page 327), "possessed of extensive estates, allied to the chief nobility of England, nay, even to royalty itself, frequently employed in the service of the Borders, or in wars at home or abroad, would of itself afford ample matter for a volume of considerable size. No family, perhaps, in the whole of England, has in the course of the centuries through which the line of Grey can be traced, afforded so great a variety of character. It has had its warriors and its statesmen, its authors and its divines. It can boast of an ancestor made immortal by Shakespeare, the treason

disappearing before the wand of the magician; it can boast of a churchman, who, like a second Bernard Gilpin, lived a life of the most disinterested liberality and the most unfeigned piety, and who died the death of a saint; and it can boast of a statesman whose name will descend to posterity as the chief promoter of one of the most important political changes which has been effected in the British Constitution for many a century." No man, as yet, has been found equal to the task of writing a history of this illustrious family, and in these volumes it is impossible to do more than touch the very fringe of the subject.

The pedigree of the Greys of Heton, Wark, Chillingham, Howick, and Bitchfield, *i.e.*, the historical family, commences with Thomas Grey, who, according to the Hundred Rolls, was domiciled at Heton in 1273, the second year of the reign of Edward I. From him descended in succession four Sir Thomas Greys of Heton and Constables of Norham Castle, three of them being Sheriffs, and the other a Justice of Assize of Norham and Islandshire. All of them, save one, were loyal subjects, enjoying the trust and confidence of their sovereign—long-reigning Edward I.—and helping to keep his peace, to fight his battles, and to maintain his dignity and power. The exception was the last of the four, Sir Thomas Grey of Heton and Lord of Wark, who, conspiring against Henry V., under circumstances which Shakespeare has rendered immortal, brought disgrace upon the family, and in the flower of his manhood died the death of a traitor.

Sir Thomas Grey was born "in the middle gate-house of Alnwick Castle, November 30th, 1384, and baptised in the Church of Alnwick on the same day, swarthed in a scarlet cloth, and wearing round his waist a gilded zone." His father died in 1400, and upon attaining his majority in 1405 he came into a lordly estate. Marrying Alice, daughter of Ralph, Lord Neville of Raby, he was appointed in 1407 High Sheriff of Northumberland, and would no doubt have risen to a high position in the service of the Crown if he had kept his fealty and allegiance. With what motive he entered into the rebellion of the Earl of Cambridge and Lord Scrope of Masham has not been clearly ascertained. Shakespeare ascribes it to French gold:—

> "O England! . . . France hath in thee found out
> A nest of hollow bosoms, which he fills
> With treacherous crowns: and three corrupted men,—
> One, Richard Earl of Cambridge; and the second,

> Henry, Lord Scroop of Masham; and the third,
> Sir Thomas Grey, Knight of Northumberland,—
> Have for the guilt of France (O guilt indeed !),
> Confirm'd conspiracy with fearful France;
> And by their hands this grace of kings must die
> (If hell and treason hold their promises)
> Ere he take ship for France, and in Southampton."

Holinshed, on the other hand, notes how "divers write that Richard Earle of Cambridge did not conspire with the lord Scroope and Thomas Graie for the murthering of King Henrie to please the French king withall, but onlie to the intent to exalt to the crowne his brother-in-law Edmunde, earl of March, as heire to Lionell duke of Clarence; after the death of which earle of March the earle of Cambridge was sure that the crowne should come to him by his wife and to his children." Raine suggests a motive for Thomas Grey's association with the conspiracy which reads probable enough. Grey was nephew by marriage to Henry Percy, Earl of Northumberland, who, in the latter part of his life, espoused the cause of the Earl of March against Henry IV., and suffered death at York. He was, further, first cousin to Henry Percy (Hotspur), the son of the latter, who had died in the field at Shrewsbury in 1403, in the same cause, leaving behind him a third Henry Percy, whom his grandfather had concealed in Scotland, where (in 1414) he was living the life of an outcast, deprived of his honours and estates, of which John, Duke of Bedford, the brother of the king, was in full enjoyment.

Sir Thomas Grey's near relationship to this exiled boy might account for his engaging in a conspiracy to dethrone the reigning king in favour of the line in whose cause his uncle and cousin had shed their blood, and for which the son of the latter was so signal a sufferer. It is true that young Percy was restored the year before the rebellion was detected, but Grey might be too deeply implicated to withdraw. At all events, he was not advocating a groundless claim, and he persevered in the cause, to his own ruin. How the plot was detected on the eve of the king's embarkation from Southampton to the great victory of Agincourt is matter of history. Shakespeare draws a masterly scene of the king's interview with the conspirators, his denunciation of their treachery, and the admissions of guilt which the discovery wrung from them. Into the mouth of Sir Thomas Grey the dramatist puts this fine sentiment:—

" Never did faithful subject more rejoice
At the discovery of most dangerous treason,
Than I do at this hour joy o'er myself,
Prevented from a damned enterprise."

History, more prosaic, tells us that an inquest of twelve jurors of the county of Southampton found that the Earl of Cambridge and Sir Thomas Grey had treasonably conspired to proclaim the Earl of March, and to call in a Scottish army; and that the Lord Scrope was guilty of misprision of treason. All three were executed, and the head of Grey was sent northward, to be placed upon one of the gates of Newcastle, "in view of the people passing by."

The spirit of attachment which Sir Thomas Grey had manifested to the House of York did not, Dr. Raine points out, descend in the family. In 1463, during the reign of Edward IV., a lineal descendant of that Earl of March in whose cause Sir Thomas had shed his blood at Southampton—Sir Ralph Grey, his grandson, became a martyr to the cause of the house of Lancaster. During the Wars of the Roses, the nobility and gentry of the North were for the most part Lancastrians. The Percys of Northumberland were decidedly so, for reasons to be found in the public history of the period; and the Greys, their near relations and neighbours, were converted to the same cause by disappointed ambition. In the course of the struggle, King Edward captured Alnwick, and Sir Ralph Grey expected to receive a grant of that stronghold, with its rich manors, as the reward of his fidelity. The king, however, bestowed it upon Sir John Ashley, upon which Sir Ralph Grey changed sides and became as strong a Lancastrian as he had previously been a Yorkist. "When Queen Margaret entered Northumberland in 1463, with a small band of Scots and French, to retrieve the loss of the battle of Towton, she seems to have been received with open arms; Bamborough immediately surrendered itself, and her appointment of Sir Ralph Grey to be its captain appears to have been a popular measure. He was then a young man, only thirty-four years of age. But the army of the queen, although joined by the Duke of Somerset, Sir Ralph Percy, and others, was soon destroyed. Sir Ralph Grey fled to Bamborough Castle, in which he was immediately arrested and conveyed to Doncaster, where he was convicted of treason." The sentence of degradation and death passed upon him may be read in Stow:—"The degrading of knighthood and of thine arms and nobles, the King pardoneth thee for thy noble grandfather,

who suffered trouble for the King's most noble predecessors. Thou shalt goe on thy feete unto the townes end, and there thou shalt be laid downe and drawne to a scaffold made for thee, and thou shalt have thy head smitten off, thy body to be buried in the Friers, thy head where the King's pleasure shall bee. . . . And the cause of this punishment of him in such manner was by cause of his perjury and doubleness which he had done to King Henry the Sixth, sometime king, etc., and also to the King Edward the Fourth, who now is."

Nearly two hundred years had passed away, and civil war was once more devastating the country, when another member of the great family of Grey came to the front of the conflict. This was William Grey, of Chillingham, born in 1598; created a baronet June 15th, 1619; elected on December 14th, 1620, with Sir Henry Widdrington, and again on the 12th of February, 1623-24, with Sir Francis Brandling as his colleague, to represent Northumberland in Parliament; created a peer, by the title of Lord Grey of Wark, in the summer of 1624. He espoused the Parliamentary side of the great national quarrel, and acted as lieutenant-general under Fairfax till he was ordered, in 1643, to accompany the Earl of Rutland on an expedition northward for the purpose of inviting the Scots to enter England. Upon that mission he declined to serve "in regard he had such an ill disposition of body as would not endure the sea," and as he continued obdurate, the House of Lords, on the 17th July in that year, committed him to the Tower, and deprived him of his command. A week afterwards he obtained his release from durance, and within a month was appointed Speaker of the Upper House, a position which he held till the end of January, 1645-46. Subsequently he regained his command in the army, and on the 28th of August, 1648, received the thanks of Parliament for the capture of the Duke of Hamilton and 3,500 horse at Uttoxeter. The same year he was created one of the Commissioners of the Great Seal, and performed the duties of the office for nearly a year. At the Restoration he made his peace with the Royalists, was included in the general pardon, and lived till 1674, when he died at Epping, in Essex, and was buried there. His grandson, Ford, Lord Grey, was created Earl of Tankerville.

# Charles, Earl Grey,

THE REFORMER.

THE Greys of Howick and Falloden are the descendants of a union between two ancient North-Country families—the Greys of Heton and Chillingham, and the Greys of Horton. Sir Ralph Grey of Chillingham, grandson of the Sir Ralph who was beheaded at Doncaster under circumstances already recorded, married Isabel, co-heir of Sir Thomas Grey of Horton, and their third son, Sir Edward Grey, constable of Morpeth Castle in 1584 and 1589, and high sheriff of Northumberland in 1597-98, acquiring Howick, founded the family that, ever since his time, have taken their territorial designation from that place. One of Sir Edward's descendants, Sir Henry Grey of Howick, married Hannah, daughter of Thomas Wood of Falloden, and this lady brought the Falloden estate to the Greys as her jointure or dowry. Of that union came five sons, the fourth of whom, Sir Charles Grey, a general in the army, was raised to the peerage in 1801 by the title of Baron Grey, and in 1806 was created an earl. The earl married Elizabeth, daughter and heiress of George Grey of Southwick, granddaughter of George Grey, the diarist, and left, among other issue, Charles, Earl Grey, the Prime Minister who carried the Reform Bill, and George Grey of Falloden, with whose life, and that of his son, later pages deal.

Charles Grey was born at Falloden on the 13th of March, 1764, and at the age of six was sent to a preparatory school in Marylebone. He remained there three years, and then completed his education in the usual manner at Eton and Cambridge. On leaving the university he made the "grand tour" in the suite of Henry, Duke of Cumberland, and, in 1784, upon the elevation of Lord Algernon Percy to the Upper House by the title of Lord Lovaine, he was elected one of the representatives of his native county in Parliament.

Mr. Grey made his maiden speech in the Commons at the opening of the session in February, 1787, in opposition to a commercial treaty with France, framed under the auspices of Mr. Pitt. "The effect of that speech was at once to place him, young as he was," writes the Hon. C. Grey in a Memoir of his father's life and opinions, "in the foremost rank, amongst the orators of an assembly

rendered illustrious by the names of Fox, Pitt, Burke, Sheridan, etc." Ranging himself under the banner of Mr. Fox, he took an active part in the debates, supporting in the main the progressive policy of the Whig party. In 1792 he assisted to establish an Association designated "The Friends of the People," and in the following session of Parliament he moved that a petition of that Association, backed up by similar petitions from all parts of the kingdom, in favour of a reform in the representation, should be referred to a committee of inquiry. Under the terror inspired by the French Revolution the motion was defeated, after two days' earnest debate, only 41 in a house of 323 members venturing to vote in its favour.

A period of political agitation and disturbance followed, and in 1797 Mr. Grey submitted to the House a definite plan of Parliamentary reform. He proposed to increase the number of members, to extend the right of voting in counties to copyholders and leaseholders, and in boroughs to householders, to restrict every voter to one vote, to take all polls on one day, and to limit the duration of parliaments to three years. Again the proposal was defeated, the majority against it being 195. The Whigs, annoyed at their discomfiture, and resenting the coercive policy of the Pitt administration, withdrew for a time from Parliament. Mr. Grey attended occasionally, and took part in the debates—friendly and sympathetic whenever any motion favourable to the extension of civil and religious freedom was introduced, hostile and censorious whenever infringements of the liberty of the subject were under discussion. One question on which he resumed attendance in 1799 and 1800 was a proposal for a legislative union between England and Ireland. Mr. Grey had married, in 1794, Mary Elizabeth, daughter of Mr., afterwards Lord, Ponsonby, whose relatives were members of the Irish Liberal party, and therefore he had means of knowing the feeling of the best friends of Ireland upon this project. The knowledge so gained convinced him that the proposed union was contrary to the wishes of the Irish people, and he formed one of the small minority by which the measure was opposed throughout.

In January, 1806, Mr. Pitt died, and Lord Grenville being empowered to form a new Ministry, entered into a coalition with Mr. Fox, in which Mr. Grey was included as First Lord of the Admiralty. Before the year was out Mr. Fox died also, and Mr. Grey, who, by the elevation of his father to an earldom, had become Viscount Howick, succeeded him as Secretary for Foreign Affairs, and leader

of the House of Commons. In that capacity he had the satisfaction of introducing and piloting to a successful issue, after years of agitation, a Bill for the total abolition of the slave trade. This great triumph achieved, the Ministry turned its attention to another long-debated question—that of Catholic Emancipation. On the 5th of March, 1807, Lord Howick moved for leave to bring in a Bill securing to Roman Catholics the privilege of serving in the army and navy upon their taking an oath in a form to be prescribed by Parliament. To this measure the king displayed uncompromising hostility. He required not only its withdrawal, but a pledge that his Ministers would not propose any further concession to Catholic claims. This pledge the Government would not give, and the result was a dissolution of the Ministry and of Parliament.

Lord Howick had sat continuously for the county of Northumberland from 1786, having been returned seven times without opposition. But at the election which followed the dissolution in March, 1807, finding himself opposed by Lord Percy, he declined a contest, and transferred his services to the borough of Appleby. The elections took place in May, Parliament was prorogued in August, and with the close of the session Lord Howick's career in the Commons came to an end. His father died on the 16th November, and succeeding him in the estates and title of Earl Grey, he took his seat in the House of Lords as joint leader, with Lord Grenville, of the Whig section of the Opposition.

Various efforts were made in the next few years to induce Earl Grey and Lord Grenville to join coalition ministries, but none of them were successful. Earl Grey retired to his paternal estates, and enjoyed the repose which he had long desired, taking his place in the Lords only when great measures were under consideration, and then invariably supporting by voice and vote those which tended to the extension of political and religious freedom. During the period of discontent and distress which the country experienced after the peace of 1815, he contended that the best way of defending the constitution was to conciliate the affection and esteem of the people, and that the natural mode of removing discontent was to remove its causes. When, therefore, the Government introduced bills to suspend the Habeas Corpus Act, and suppress seditious meetings, and when Lord Sidmouth issued a circular authorising Justices of the Peace to issue warrants for the apprehension of persons charged with selling or publishing blasphemous or seditious libels, he met

these coercive measures by most vigorous opposition. Upon the Sidmouth circular he spoke for four hours, extorting from even Lord Chancellor Eldon the admission that though he could not agree with the speaker "the case had been argued with such ability as held him in some degree of check." He moved, but without success, for an inquiry into the Manchester or Peterloo massacre, opposed the Bill of Pains and Penalties against Queen Caroline, gave his support to Mr. Huskisson's plans of commercial reform, and helped to carry, in 1829, the great measure of Catholic Emancipation upon the defeat of which, two-and-twenty years earlier, he had resigned office.

Soon after the accession of William IV., in 1830, the Ministry of the Duke of Wellington resigned, and the king, summoning Earl Grey from his retirement, requested him to form a Cabinet. Within a week the Grey Administration was completed, with the Earl as Premier, Brougham on the Woolsack, Althorp at the Exchequer, Melbourne at the Home Office, and Palmerston at the head of Foreign Affairs, and "Peace, Retrenchment, and Reform" as their avowed policy. True to their pledges, the Government prepared a comprehensive Bill for reforming the representation of the people, and on the 1st of March, 1831, presented it to the House of Commons. Lord John Russell had charge of the Bill, which passed its second reading on the 22nd March, by a majority of one, and a month later was defeated in committee on a clause of importance by a majority of eight. Earl Grey at once appealed to the country; a new Parliament pledged to Reform was elected; on the 24th of June a second Reform Bill, similar in tenor to the first, was introduced; on the 7th July it passed its second reading by a hundred and thirty-six majority, and on the 22nd September its third reading was secured by a majority of a hundred and nine.

Fortified by these triumphant figures, Earl Grey brought the Bill into the House of Lords, announcing his determination to stand by it, and to permit neither mutilation nor curtailment, adding that he had quitted his retirement to serve the nation and the throne, and that if Parliament withdrew its confidence from him he should return to his happy retirement conscious that he had done his best both for the good of his country and the service of his king. The Lords replied by an adverse vote; they threw out the Bill at half-past six in the morning of the 8th of October by a majority of forty-one.

Parliament was prorogued on the 20th of October, and re-assembled on the 6th of December. A third Reform Bill was introduced a week later, was read a second time on the 17th of the month by a majority of a hundred and sixty-two, and passed its third reading on the 23rd of March, 1832, with a majority of a hundred and sixteen in its favour. Introduced to the Lords, it was read a second time, with nine majority, on the 14th April, and defeated on a question of procedure, raised by Lord Lyndhurst, by a majority of thirty-five, on the 7th of May. Ministers at once resigned, and the excitement throughout the country, which had been for some time intense, rose to fever heat. No other statesman could be found willing to accept the burden of office in such a crisis, and after an interregnum of eight days Earl Grey returned to power, accepting the Premiership, with a promise that the king would exercise his influence to satisfy the demand of the country for "The Bill, the whole Bill, and nothing but the Bill." Opposing peers, in obedience to the royal wish, absented themselves from the House, and the Reform Bill, carried through its remaining stages with only formal opposition, was read a third time by a majority of eighty-four, on the 4th of June, 1832, and three days later received the royal assent. "Thus," as a writer of the period remarked, "Earl Grey had the rare felicity of achieving in old age a glorious victory, to which the benevolent efforts of his long political life had been devoted. The benedictions pronounced by so many millions upon his name, and the flood of gratitude which has flowed upon him from every channel in the land, must have convinced him how deeply he is enthroned in the hearts of his countrymen."

The first Reformed Parliament met on the 29th of January, 1833. Its principal measures were the abolition of colonial slavery, withdrawal of the monopoly enjoyed by the East India Company, the reform of the Irish Church, and the remodelling of the Poor Law. Having assisted to pilot these measures through the Lords, Earl Grey, on the 9th July, 1834, resigned the premiership, after a political career of nearly half a century, and passed the rest of his days in retirement. The occasion was made available by his admirers to present him with addresses expressive of gratitude and gratulation. From South Shields, Tynemouth, Sunderland, Darlington, Morpeth, Alnwick, Felton, and Wooler they came, and there were two from Newcastle. Still further to honour him, and the cause for which he had fought, the finest of Grainger's new streets

in Newcastle was named after him, and at the head of it was erected a lofty column, bearing on its summit a statue of the Earl by Baily.

Earl Grey died at Howick on the 17th of July, 1845, in his eighty-second year. By his marriage with Lord Ponsonby's daughter he had thirteen children, most of whom, surviving him, filled exalted positions in the service of their country, *e.g.*:—

Henry, born December 28th, 1802; succeeded his father as third

STATUE OF EARL GREY.

Earl Grey; M.P. for Winchelsea, 1826-30; Higham Ferrers, 1830-31; Northumberland, 1831-32; North Northumberland, 1832-41; and Sunderland, 1841-45; Secretary for War, 1835-39, and for the Colonies,, 1846-52; lord-lieutenant of Northumberland, 1847-77; K.G. and P.C.

Charles, born March 15th, 1804; M.P. for Wycombe, 1832-37; a General in the Army, Private Secretary to the Queen; died March 31st, 1870, leaving among other issue a son, Albert Henry George, sometime M.P. for South Northumberland.

Frederick William, born August 23rd, 1805; G.C.B.; Superintendent in the Bosphorus, 1855-56; Commander-in-Chief on Cape Station, 1857-60; Lord of the Admiralty, 1861-66; died May 2nd, 1878.

George, born May 16th, 1809; Port-Captain at Gibraltar, 1846-56; Admiral Superintendent of Portsmouth Dockyard, 1858-63; Bath King of Arms from 1865; died in 1891.

John, born March 1st, 1812; M.A. of Trinity College, Cambridge; Rector of Houghton-le-Spring, 1847; Hon. Canon of Durham, 1848; Rural Dean, 1880.

Francis Richard, born March 31st, 1813; M.A. of Trinity College, Cambridge; Rector of Morpeth, 1842; Hon. Canon of Durham, 1863; died March 22nd, 1890.

Harry Cavendish, born October 16th, 1814; Captain in the army; died September 5th, 1880.

William George, born February 15th, 1819; Secretary of Legation in Paris; died December 19th, 1865.

Louisa Elizabeth, married John George Lambton, first Earl of Durham; died November 26th, 1841.

Elizabeth, married John Croker Bulteel of Flete House, Devon; died November 8th, 1880.

Caroline, married Captain the Hon. George Barrington, R.N.; bedchamber woman to the Queen; died April 28th, 1875.

Mary, married Charles Wood, first Viscount Halifax; died July 6th, 1884.

# Francis Gray,

A NEWCASTLE CLERGYMAN.

AT the beginning of the seventeenth century the townspeople of Newcastle comprised within their ranks a considerable number of persons bearing the name of Gray. Like the Grays, or Greys, of the county, from which they sprang, they were divided into many branches, the precise relationship of which to their namesakes in the North, and to one another, it is impossible now to discover. For the most part they were engaged in trade and handicraft, as merchants, shipowners, millers, brewers, tailors, and so on. A few of the wealthier families among them sent their sons from time to time

into the professions—Medicine, the Law, or the Church, and some of these sons, helped, no doubt, by the family connection, as well as by their own merit and ability, attained to respectable positions in the town and neighbourhood. Such a one was Francis Gray, a prominent clergyman in Newcastle during the reign of Charles the First.

Francis Gray's father, Robert Gray, was a merchant tailor of some standing in Newcastle. He was a parishioner of St. Andrew's, in the baptismal registers of which parish his name, and that of Dorothy, his wife, frequently appear as sponsors for their own and their neighbours' children. Francis was the eldest of a numerous family. Having been sent to college, and received ordination, he obtained the curacy of the church in which he had been baptised and brought up to the religious life. At the death of his father, in 1622, he was Master of Arts, preacher at St. Andrew's, and a resident in the house which his father bequeathed him—the "head house," or family residence, situate in the Nowt, Nolt, or Neat Market, near the White Cross, and closely adjoining the scene of his ministrations.

In the not very lucrative position of curate he remained for seven years, when a more valuable preferment was bestowed upon him. Robert Fowberry, Master of the Virgin Mary Hospital, and the first master of the Royal Free Grammar School, who had been brought from Hull because he was "a learned and painfull man to indoctrinate youth in Greek and Latine," died in 1622, and his successor, Edward Wigham, following him in 1629, the Corporation of Newcastle, patrons of both the Hospital and the School, gave the combined office to Francis Gray. Among the pupils entrusted to his care was that exceedingly obstinate and most intractable person, John Lilburn —"Free Born John" as he was derisively named. Long afterwards, when Lilburn had attained the height of his notoriety, he wrote a pamphlet entitled "Innocency and Truth Justified," in which, describing his youth and education, he states:—"I was brought up well-nigh ten years together in the best schools in the North, namely, at Auckland and Newcastle; in both which places I was not one of the dronesest school-boys there. . . . And, at Newcastle, I did not only know, but also was known of the principal men there." Lilburn was born in 1618, which date brings his pupilage at the Grammar School, beyond doubt, within Mr. Gray's mastership.

Francis Gray held his curacy and his double-mastership till 1637, when, for some reason or other, he gave up the Grammar School to

his friend, Amor Oxley, a native of Morpeth, who was ejected for his loyalty in 1645. The curacy, and, so far as is known, the mastership of the Virgin Mary Hospital, he retained till his death, which occurred on the 14th of January, 1641-42.

Like his father, Francis Gray was the parent of a large family. The baptism of twelve children born to him and Margaret his wife are entered in the parish registers. Some of them did not long survive him. A visitation of the plague which followed the storming of the town in October, 1644, and lasted well into the winter of the following year, carried off his widow and two of his sons. Their deaths appear in the register of St. Andrew's among a crowd of victims, thus recorded:—

1645—September 21. "Henry, son to Mr. Francis Gray, prechor of this church, desesed of the playg."

1645—September 28. "Margaret Gray, wife to Mr. Francis Gray, prechor of this church, desesed of the playg."

1645—October 12. "John, son to Mr. Francis Gray, prechor, desesed of the playg."

Of his other sons, three were apprenticed to merchant adventurers —Francis to Robert Ellison, M.P., William to Joseph Tully, and Thomas to William Huntley. Robert Ellison, as we have seen, was married to Elizabeth Gray, sister of William Gray, author of the "Chorographia," whose mother was Elizabeth Huntley. It would appear, therefore, that the children of the deceased clergyman were helped forward in life by relations of the family.

The future career of the sons and daughters of Mr. Gray presents no point of interest, but it may be mentioned that Francis, Robert Ellison's apprentice, ran a successful course as a merchant, and married for a second wife Ann Tomkins, who, after his death, was united to Edward Collingwood, of Byker and Dissington; that his daughter Ann married into the local family of Bonner; and that three of his sons, John, Robert, and Ralph, taking up their freedom by patrimony, in the prosperous times that followed the Restoration, became merchant adventurers of Newcastle, as their father and uncles had been before them.

# George Grey,

COUNSELLOR AND DIARIST.

A BRANCH of the far-spreading family of Grey was established at Southwick, in the parish of Monkwearmouth, by George Grey, of Barton in Rydale, Yorkshire, who, about the year 1630, purchased the freehold estate of the Hedworths in that village. The eldest son of the settler, George Grey (2), a Captain of Foot for the Parliament in the Northern Association, who married a Robinson of Rokeby for his first wife, and a Newcastle lady for his second, left, among other issue, George Grey (3), a well-known clergyman. The clergyman—rector of Lawton, in Cheshire for a time, and afterwards, for about thirty years, rector of Burniston, near Bedale, became the father of two notable men—Dr. Zachary Grey, the learned editor of Hudibras and opponent of Warburton, and George Grey (4), counsellor at law in Newcastle.

Counsellor George Grey was born at Lawton on the 20th of October, 1680, and received his early education at Burniston Grammar School. From thence he was sent to the University of Edinburgh, where he remained a year only, and then proceeded to Howgrave, to study law under Thomas Bendloes. The next step in his educational progress was his entry in May, 1699, as a student at Gray's Inn, London. For a couple of years he had chambers there, but in 1701 he exchanged these for lodgings at the house of Jacob Tonson, the original publisher of Milton's "Paradise Lost," Dryden's Plays, and other famous works. At Tonson's house he made the acquaintance of the wits and beaux of the period, and formed literary friendships which enabled him to vary the graver studies of the law with excursions into what was then called the Belles Lettres, or polite literature. With Tonson he remained till he was called to the Bar in 1706, and commenced practice.

Choosing the Northern Circuit as the one most likely to yield him clients, Counsellor Grey came down to York Assizes in 1710, and thence followed the judges to Durham and Newcastle—a memorable journey, which led to his marriage. For as he was lodging in the house of one Robert Sutton, at Gateshead, he was told of a young lady, Alice, daughter of James Clavering of Greencroft, and grand-

daughter of Sir James Clavering of Axwell, who would make him a suitable wife. He had not then seen the lady, nor even heard of her before, but during the winter, being on a visit to her great uncle, Robert Ellison, of Hebburn, he was taken to a party at Ravensworth Castle, at which Miss Clavering was a guest. He came, saw, and conquered—in other words, he fell in love with the maiden, proposed for her hand, was accepted, and on the 13th October, 1712, married.

By the death of his father the year before, young Mr. Grey had received his share of the family property at Southwick; besides which he was heir to the Newton Picot estate of an uncle, the Rev. Matthew Robinson, of Burniston, and his prospects of success as a barrister were encouraging. So, to be near Southwick, and not too far from his wife's relatives at Greencroft, and at the same time to keep in touch with a great commercial centre, out of which pretty constant employment for lawyers never fails to arise, the young couple settled in Newcastle. We know from Bourne's history whereabouts in the town they lived. Their residence was in the fine old respectable thoroughfare of Westgate Street, where so many of the professional men of the time had their chambers and their homes.

"Lower down a little," writes the historian, describing the Bailiffgate end of Westgate Street, "almost at the End of the Street, on that same Side of the Street where are the Houses of George Grey, Esq., Mr. Anderson, etc., was the House of the Carmelites or White Fryers." Somewhere, therefore, between Westmorland House and the Postern lived Counsellor George and Mrs. Grey at the date of Bourne's history.

In Newcastle, practising chiefly as a chamber counsel, and varying his professional work with the life of a country gentleman upon the family estate at Southwick, Mr. Grey lived for sixty years. If not exactly a public man in the sense of occupying an official position, or taking a prominent part in the political or municipal life of the town, he was eminent in legal acquirements and professional influence—a good conveyancer and equity draftsman, enjoying the confidence of the attorneys of the district, and possessing a wide connection among the landed gentry. In what may be termed the unpublished history of the Northern Counties—wills and deeds, transmissions of property, pleadings at the Assizes and in the Courts of Law at Westminster—his name constantly appears. Thus, Mrs. Anne Davison, making her will in December, 1719, left the surplus

of her personal estate to him and three others, to be devoted to purposes of charity, and he, outliving his co-trustee, founded with the proceeds the almshouses in the Manors for widows of clergymen and merchants which, until swept away by the railway, was known as Davison's Hospital. In like manner Barbara Gee, widow, made him, with Benjamin Bennet, author of the "Irenicum," Joseph Airey, and another, a trustee of her will, by which she charged property in Pilgrim Street, now covered by the Royal Arcade, with payment of £6 10s. per annum to the minister of the Close Gate Meeting-House—a payment that is still received by the trustees of the Church of the Divine Unity in Newcastle.

Moving among the upper ranks of local society—the Claverings, Liddells, and Ellisons—Counsellor Grey was one of the "conversible" men whose paucity of numbers in Newcastle at the middle of last century Dr. Alexander Carlyle, of Inveresk, noted down in his "Autobiography." And not only was he a "conversible" man. He had been a diarist in his youth, and in his maturer age he wrote to his more celebrated brother Zachary letters that have been preserved, and exhibit him as a man of many parts, taking an intelligent interest not only in his profession, but in agriculture, literature, and the passing questions of the day. There is a letter of his to Zachary, written in Newcastle during the rebellion of 1745, which is of considerable local interest:—

"The last post brought me the favour of your kind letter and concern for the great danger we have been in; but God be thanked for our deliverance by the infatuation of our enemies. If upon their victory they had immediately marched for England, they might easily have surprised this place, got to York, and I cannot tell how much further, without any effectual opposition, and returned in safety to Scotland on the approach of the king's forces; but they have lost that opportunity, and we only fear a French invasion.

"We are repairing our walls, planting cannon, of which we have received from Tynemouth 18 large ones, and 16 from Sunderland, and can make them up above 100. Our militia, being near 1,000, are daily on duty, and we have 800 soldiers. The 700 Switz are marching hither from Berwick, and St. George's dragoons are now at Darlington; we have upon our coast eight men-of-war and two frigats, and General Husk, a very experienced and loyal officer, to command in town.

"We took a spy, who is servant and confidant to the Duke of

Perth; he had an original letter from the Pretender to invite his friends in Yorkshire, Lancashire, etc., to joyn him, and it is whisper'd that he has discover'd the names of such gentlemen as he was directed to apply to. The night after his apprehension he cut his throat, but is like to recover. Though we seem to be very secure and safe, yet our preservac'on must come from Heaven, and it is from Him alone that we hope for deliverance."

The diary of the counsellor constitutes his chief claim to celebrity. For minuteness of detail, innocence of expression, and inappreciation of the relative importance of events, it beats the prolix diaries of Anthony Wood and Elias Ashmole out of the field. Large portions of it appear in Surtees's "History of Durham," *e.g.*:—

"1680. October 20. I was born at Lawton, in Cheshire, and baptised October 31. My grandfather Cowdry one of my godfathers. About this time the great comet was seen.

"1684-85. March 18. Came from Cheshire to Burniston with my father; I was carryd on a pillow on horseback before one Tho. Frank.

"1687. May. I was admitted to the Latin School at Burniston, under Mr. Samuel Hulm. 1689. I had a bile on my neck.

"1693. May 31. Being Whitsuntide, I went to Southwick with my Schoolmaster, being my first journey to that place. In August, I went to Ripley to visit uncle Robinson; and the rivers being out on my return, I was in danger of drowning at Hutton Mill, but a Cheshire gentleman I accidentally met with took care of me. I was then learning Terence, and Greek Testament.

"1696. October. My father went with me to Edinburgh; I was admitted of the College under Mr. Robert Scott; we went from Southwick, and crossed the Tyne at Shields ferry, and did not go through Newcastle.

"1699. May 1. I went to London in stage coach, and May 19, I first went into Chambers in Gray's Inn; it was a ground (chamber) in Chappel Court.

"1701. April. I left chambers in Gray's Inn, and lodged with Mr. Jacob Tonson the bookseller. July. I went into Yorkshire along with Mr. Hayfrid Wainwright and learned mensurac'on. October. I gott my book of mapps.

"1703. Dec. 24. I got my watch which I now have, in exchange for a gold one. Feb. I was very ill in the toothache, and took Dr. Gilstrop's advice, had two teeth drawn.

"1704. I went to Cambridge to meet my brother Zachary, and admit him of Jesus College. June. I bought my foot rule, with compasses and pencil, it cost 7s. 6d. June 29. Bought my 8vo Bible, it cost 7s. 6d. July 10. Went into Yorkshire in stage coach. I eat on the road some raisins, which in my pocket happened to mix with a dentrifice made of beaten china, which threw me into so violent vomiting and purging that I had like to have dyd on the road. Dec. I was at Southwick, and we divided Simonside.

"1706. April 29. I was called to the Barr; the day before being Sunday, Dr. Moss preached on Prov. i. 10; and Dr. Linsted on Job xix. 25.

"1708. Feb. 14. Set forwards in stage coach for Yorkshire; I then had a severe cold, which fixed my jaws that I could not chaw my meat; but though the frost was very severe I recovered on the road, and got well home by the blessing of God.

"1710. Aug. 19. At York assizes, and from thence went to Durham assizes, and then to Newcastle, and lodged at Mr. Robert Sutton's in Gateshead, and Mrs. Sutton then recommended my dear Alice to me for a wife, though I had never heard of such a person. Feb. 20. I was made a Freemason at Beedall.

"1711. I went to Robert Ellison's Esq. at Hebburn, January 18, and staid mostly there till 14 Feb. Mr. Ellison proposed my dear Alice to me for a wife, carryd me to Ravensworth Castle to see her, went to Greencroft, and proposed the match to Mr. Clavering and wife, her father and mother.

"1712. June 13. I came from Gatonby to settle at Newcastle; brother Zachary was with me. July 19. At York assizes. Sept. 16. At Durham Chancery sitting, and suffered a common recovery of my estate at Southic. Sept. 29. Bought the wedding ring. Oct. 11. Got a licence. Oct. 13. I marryd my dear Alice.

"1713. April 30. My dear wife came to my house at Newcastle. Aug. 4. Son George born 30 minits past eleaven at night; baptised 25, brother Liddell and brother Clavering godfathers, aunt Rogers godmother.

"1714. Oct. 30. Daughter Jane born a quarter past six at night. Jan. 26. Sworn by a Dedimus for Commission of Peace for County of Durham."

In his pocket-book Mr. Grey entered, amongst other things, an account of his negotiating, in September, 1751, for a burial-place in St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, and a long string of maxims for

improving his property at Southwick. Three of his "maxims" were these:—"(1) To water the land next the river with salt water, suppose by a wheel or windmill. I could raise it when high water, and carry it over all that ground by troughs, or by a water-engin used for extinguishing fires. (2) Drain all my clay land with gutters about a yard or three-quarters of a yard deep, and make some bigger, and let all have a communication one with another, and keep them open; 'twill certainly improve the ground. *Probatum est per* Sir Hugh Smithson: Let there be a gutter every 40 or 50 yards; you may carry your gutters into your ponds. (3) Lay all the ground as flatt as possible, without ridges, the flatter the better."

Mr. Grey lost his "dear Alice" the day after Christmas, 1744, and two years later his only surviving son. This son, the fifth George Grey of Southwick, had married Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel Ogle, of Kirkley, by whom he left issue one son, also named George, and a daughter named Elizabeth. The latter, uniting the Greys of Southwick and Howick by her marriage with Charles, son of Sir Henry Grey, became the first Countess Grey, and the mother of Earl Grey, the Reformer. The old counsellor lived twenty-eight years after his wife's decease, and ten years after his grand-daughter's marriage. Dying at length on the 24th May, 1772, at the patriarchal age of ninety-one, he was buried in St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle.

## Sir George Grey (1),

### THE FIRST FALLODEN BARONET.

GEORGE GREY, younger brother of the second earl, was born at Falloden on the 10th of October, 1767. He entered the navy as soon as he left school, and at the early age of fifteen, being a lieutenant in the *Resolution*, took part in Rodney's famous engagement against the fleet of Spain. In 1793 he obtained post rank in the *Boyne*, 98 guns, bearing the flag of Sir John Jervis. He was in command of that vessel when she was destroyed by the explosion of her powder magazine off Spithead on the 4th of May, 1795. He served under Sir John throughout the campaign in the West Indies —his brother Charles, afterwards the first Earl Grey, being in chief command of the land forces—and at the siege of Guadaloupe he headed a detachment of 500 seamen and marines which were

landed to co-operate with his brother's forces ashore. Subsequently he had command of the *Victory*, another vessel carrying Sir John Jervis's flag, and he remained under Sir John's orders until the great exploit off Cape Vincent, on the 14th February, 1797, raised that gallant admiral to the peerage. Three years later, when Sir John, as Earl St. Vincent, took charge of the Channel Fleet, Mr. Grey joined him as captain of the *Ville de Paris*. In 1801 he was appointed to one of the yachts in attendance upon the royal family at Weymouth, and continued in that service till 1804, when he succeeded Sir Isaac Coffin as Commissioner of Sheerness Dockyard, from thence he was appointed to a similar position at Portsmouth. When the allied sovereigns visited the fleet at Spithead, in 1814, George IV. presented him with a patent of baronetcy; six years later he was made a K.C.B. He remained at Portsmouth as resident commissioner of the dockyard till his death, which occurred on the 8th of October, 1828. Besides his captaincy and commissionership, he held, at his decease, the offices of Marshal of the Vice-Admiralty Court at Barbadoes, Vice-President of the Naval and Military Bible Society, and alderman of the borough of Portsmouth.

Sir George married in June, 1795, Mary, daughter of Samuel Whitbread by Lady Mary Cornwallis, and sister to Samuel Whitbread, M.P. for Bedford, who had espoused Lady Elizabeth Grey, Sir George's sister. By this lady he had two sons, the eldest of whom, Sir George Grey of our own time, succeeded him.

## Sir George Grey (2),

STATESMAN.

BORN at Gibraltar on the 11th May, 1799, the second Sir George Grey received his education at Oriel College, Oxford, where he matriculated, June 25th, 1817, gained a first-class in classics, and took his arts degrees—that of B.A. in 1821, and that of M.A. in 1824. From Oriel his course was steered to Lincoln's Inn, and in 1826 he was called to the Bar. At that time to be a Grey was to be a politician, and Sir George, succeeding his father in the title and estates within two years after his call, found more attraction in the pursuit of politics than in the profession of the law. Among the unreformed constituencies no opening occurred for the gratification of his ambi-

tion; but as soon as the Reform Bill of his uncle had transferred political power to the middle and trading classes, he found himself in a condition to enter Parliament. There was no seat available in his native county, and at the general election which followed the Reform Act (December, 1832) he sought the suffrages of the electors of Devonport, a new constituency that had been created outside the ancient borough of Plymouth. Amongst naval men the memory of his father was cherished; amongst dockyard tradespeople a Whig Reformer was a welcome guest. Sir George was returned trium-

phantly, with Sir Edward Codrington as his colleague, to represent the new borough in the first Reformed Parliament.

Shortly after Sir George Grey had taken his seat he made his mark in the House by a maiden speech on a Coercion Bill for Ireland. The following year (1834) he received his first Ministerial appointment—that of Under Secretary for the Colonies. Scarcely had he settled down to the duties of his office when his uncle, the Prime Minister, resigned. Lord Melbourne, who succeeded to the Premiership, carried on the Government till December, and then the Whigs gave place to the Tories. Sir Robert Peel became Prime Minister,

but was unable to hold the reins of office more than three or four months, and upon the return of Lord Melbourne, in April, 1835, Sir George resumed his post at the Colonial Office. There he remained, taking an active part in the heated discussions respecting Canadian affairs and their administration by Lord Durham, till 1839, when he accepted the quiet, and practically sinecure office of Judge Advocate General, and in June, 1841, the irresponsible post of Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster. In September of that year the Whigs were defeated upon the question of the sugar duties, and Sir George retired, with his colleagues, to make way for Sir Robert Peel and the Tories. The latter obtained a much longer lease of office this time. They retained the confidence of Parliament and the country till June, 1846, when Sir Robert, who had passed his Free Trade measures, was defeated upon another phase of the everlasting Irish question, and the Whigs, with Lord John Russell as Premier, came back to power. Lord John appointed Sir George Grey to the high office of Home Secretary, and he was occupying that responsible position when, in the summer of 1847, Parliament was dissolved, and an appeal was made to the country.

Anticipating a dissolution, the Whig leaders in the Northern Division of Northumberland, who had suffered a heavy reverse in 1841 by the rejection of Earl Grey's heir, Lord Howick, invited Sir George to assist them in retrieving their loss. They presented to him a memorial, signed by upwards of a thousand registered electors —a full third or more of the constituency—asking him to contest his own division of his native county. Although reluctant to abandon Devonport, where he had been on six separate occasions during fifteen years returned in triumph—four times at general elections, and twice on accepting office—he acceded to their request. He entered upon the contest with the full approval of the Devonport electors, who, as they expressed it, while viewing the meditated separation "with feelings of deep and sincere regret," expressed their "unqualified approval of, and sympathy in, the important struggle to restore the independence of North Northumberland, and to reinstate it in its former liberal influence." His opponents were Lord Ossulston, now Earl of Tankerville, one of the retiring members, and Lord Lovaine, the present Duke of Northumberland, who was brought forward to retain the seat which Mr. Addison John Baker Cresswell had wrested from the Whigs at the previous election. The Tories had some advantage in personal canvassing, for Sir George

was detained in London by his ministerial duties as Home Secretary till the 26th July, and the nomination was to take place on the 7th of August. But his friends worked hard on his behalf, and when he himself arrived, the constituency was literally "devoured" by his activity. His was not the cold, aristocratic temperament of the Grey family. On the contrary, he was full of fire and enthusiasm. From the Town Hall steps at Alnwick, a rustic platform at Belford, and the Market-Place of Morpeth, he delivered stirring speeches, which not only quickened the pulses of Whigs that were staunch and true, but won over the half-hearted and the wavering. With a rapidity of utterance that plunged newspaper reporters into the depths of despair, he declared his adhesion to the advanced political principles of his party in their fullest development. He told the electors, amid ringing cheers, that "he stood there as the advocate of principles which had been identified with all the great improvements in the social position of the people of this kingdom for the last half century. He stood there as one of that party who had fought the battle of Reform in adverse times—as one of that party who, whether in office or out of office, in adverse or prosperous times, had contended against negro slavery; who had striven to strike off the manacles from the hands and feet of their negro fellow-subjects. He stood there as one of that party who had never flinched from the great principles of civil and religious freedom; as one of those who had ever striven widely to diffuse the blessings of education, considering that a well-educated people could alone be prosperous and happy. He stood there as one of those who had contributed their aid to remove those fetters and restrictions which had been imposed upon the trade and commerce of this great empire, and who were prepared to maintain an honourable peace with all the nations of the world."

Although not so exciting a contest as that of 1826, the election was conducted with the greatest possible enthusiasm on both sides. Out of 3,030 registered electors, 2,490 went to the poll, of whom 1,084 plumped straight for "Grey and Independence." Sir George headed the poll throughout, and when, after two days' polling, the figures were added up, it was found that he had secured 1,366, Lord Ossulston 1,247, and Lord Lovaine 1,236 votes.

The year 1848 was a year of revolution and of trial, and it was during this stormy period that Home Secretary Sir George Grey attained the height of his fame as a statesman. By his firmness and

vigour he secured the preservation of peace and order while barricades were rising in the streets of Paris, Vienna, and Berlin, physical force chartists were training and drilling all over Great Britain, and Ireland was in a state of insurrection. It fell to his lot to introduce Bills considered necessary for public security—the Felony Bill, Alien Bill, and the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act. In piloting these measures through Parliament, he won the respect of all parties, and gave offence to none; not even, it is said, to those against whose proceedings the Acts were directed. In the following year, 1849, the Queen conferred upon him the honorary distinction of G.C.B. When he went out of office, on the defeat of the Ministry in the early part of 1852, he was regarded as the most successful administrator in the ranks of the Liberal party.

At the general election which followed, Sir George was unfortunate. In conjunction with Lord Ossulston, Lord Lovaine again came forward for North Northumberland, and the electors, reversing the verdict they had given in 1847, placed him at the top of the poll. Although 1,030 voters plumped for Grey—only 54 short of the previous number—the Liberals were defeated. Lord Lovaine obtained 1,414, Lord Ossulston 1,335, and Sir George only 1,300 votes. For the remainder of the year he remained out of Parliament, but in January, 1853, room was made for him at Morpeth. The Hon. E. G. G. Howard accepted the stewardship of the Manor of Northstead and Sir George took his place.

Meanwhile, the Coalition Ministry of the Earl of Aberdeen had come into power, and all the offices of state had been filled by Whigs and Peelites. Sir George entered the House as an unattached member, and remained without a portfolio till February, 1854, when he accepted the seals of the Colonial Office. In the heated discussions upon the Crimean War he took no active part, but upon Mr. Roebuck introducing a motion for an inquiry into the condition of the army before Sebastopol, he warmly opposed the proposal. Mr. Roebuck carried everything before him; his motion was adopted by a large majority; the Coalition Ministry was destroyed; Lord Palmerston became Prime Minister; and under his leadership, in 1855, Sir George returned to the Home Office. There he remained till 1858, when Lord Palmerston, being defeated on the Conspiracy Bill, made way for Lord Derby and the Conservatives. They, in turn, were defeated the following year upon their Reform Bill, and after an appeal to the country, resigned office.

In June, 1859, Lord Palmerston returned to the Premiership, and Sir George Grey, accepting the Chancellorship of the Duchy of Lancaster, resumed his place in the Ministry. He held the Chancellorship till, in 1861, Sir G. C. Lewis's transference to the War Department recalled him once more to his old office of Home Secretary. This was the position for which he was best qualified, and he held it, with increasing reputation, till the defeat of the Russell Government in 1866. Two years later, when the Liberals returned to power under Mr. Gladstone, he did not accept office. From that date to the general election of 1874 Sir George spoke and acted as an independent Liberal, and then, gracefully yielding to the wishes of an extended constituency for a working-man representative, he made way for Mr. Thomas Burt, closed his connection with the borough that had returned him to Parliament for twenty-two years, and withdrew from public life.

Sir George Grey, in personal appearance, was tall and stately—a fine specimen of a Northumbrian gentleman. He had a pleasing countenance, though the cares of office had, years before his death, blanched his cheek and left lines of thought upon his forehead. He was courteous in his address, and courtly in his manner. He had a marvellous readiness of utterance, but yet he was no orator. He was a talker rather than a speaker, and this mode of expressing his thoughts had no doubt arisen from his being compelled to rise so often in the House and answer questions or defend the policy of the Government. He spoke clearly and to the point, though sometimes, in his endeavour to make a subject clear, he overburdened it with explanations of principles which, he might have taken it for granted, his hearers knew. While there was no passion in his speeches, he seldom spoke without feeling, and impressed every one by his evident sincerity. He had a very rapid utterance, being one of the quickest speakers in the House; but he spoke very distinctly, and he had an agreeable voice. From his position as Home Secretary, he was much in attendance upon her Majesty, and was a great friend at Court.

By his marriage, on the 14th of August, 1827, with Anna Sophia, daughter of Dr. Ryder, Bishop of Lichfield, Sir George Grey had a son and heir—George Henry Grey, equerry to the Prince of Wales, and lieutenant-colonel of the Northumberland Militia. Lieutenant-Colonel Grey died within a few months of his father's retirement from the representation of Morpeth, leaving a young family.

Thenceforth Sir George devoted himself to the upbringing of his grandchildren, and the supervision of his estate. Thus engaged, an unusually active life drew peacefully to its close. Sir George passed away on the 9th of September, 1882, at the venerable age of 83, and was succeeded in the title and estates by his grandson, Sir Edward Grey, M.P. for the Berwick division of Northumberland, and Parliamentary Secretary to the Foreign Office.

## Gilbert and George Gray.

ECCENTRIC GENIUS IN HUMBLE LIFE.

MACKENZIE'S "History of Newcastle," and Thomas Bewick's "Autobiography," contain most of that which is known about two remarkable men—Gilbert Gray, bookbinder, philanthropist, and author, and George Gray, his son, botanist, geologist, and painter.

Gilbert Gray was of Scottish parentage, and had been educated at the University of Aberdeen for the Presbyterian ministry. Being a young man of independent thought and eccentric action, he had been unable to subscribe to the "standards" of the Church, and, deeming himself in other respects altogether unfitted for pastoral work, had ceased his theological studies, acquired the art of bookbinding, and somewhere between 1730 and 1740 had engaged himself as bookbinder and general shopman to Allan Ramsay, the poet, who carried on the business of a bookseller in Edinburgh. Allan Ramsay, as we know from an oft-quoted couplet, was a friend and correspondent of Martin Bryson, the Tyne Bridge bookseller, and when Mr. Bryson took into partnership his apprentice, William Charnley, and wanted an assistant, Gilbert Gray was sent to Newcastle by Allan Ramsay to help the new firm in extending their local connection. The partnership of Messrs. Bryson & Charnley began in 1750; that is therefore about the time when Gilbert Gray, an unmarried man of forty, came to settle in Newcastle. Five years later the firm resolved itself into its original elements, and Gray transferred his services to Mr. Thomas Slack, printer, bookseller, and founder of the *Newcastle Chronicle*. With Mr. Slack, and his successor, Solomon Hodgson, acting in the triple capacity of proof-reader, bookbinder, and warehouseman, he remained for nearly forty

years, and, dying on the 12th February, 1794, aged 85, was buried in the Nonconformist burial-ground at the Ballast Hills.

The story of Gilbert Gray's life in Newcastle is told by Mackenzie and by Bewick with substantial agreement. They exhibit him as a man of conspicuous ability, industry, and benevolence. Mackenzie states that, without trenching upon his duty to his employers, he was able to undertake considerable business on his own account. Among his abortive speculations was an attempt to manufacture paper in Pandon Dene out of paper shavings; among his successful enterprises were the manufacture of "Dr. Anderson's Scotch Pills," which

he sold to Mr. Slack "by the bushel," and the compilation of useful books for country readers. He re-issued, and sold in numbers, an anti-clerical publication known as "The Independent Whig; or, a Defence of Primitive Christianity against the Exorbitant Claims of Fanatical and Disaffected Clergymen"; wrote himself and published "The Countryman's Treasure"—a book devoted to the ailments of domestic animals, and the best means of curing them; and "Multum in Parvo," a collection of moral axioms. He also compiled "The Complete Fabulist," and an "Epitome of the History of England," for the use of schools, "which is thought to have been the first work

of the kind published." These books he offered for sale in a cheap form to country people who attended Newcastle Market.

"His mode of living was singular, and economical. He varied his favourite dish of oatmeal porridge, or hasty pudding, with pease meal brose, the meal for which, finely ground, usually stood in a bowl near to him while at work, and which, with boiling water, and a grain of salt, satisfied the wants of nature. He scarcely ever tasted animal food; and on being once presented with a goose, it was salted, hung up, and cut into slices and broiled as wanted. If ever he ventured into a public-house with his friends, he strictly limited himself to one pint of ale. When drowsy he lay down; when refreshed he rose up, without any regard to time or custom. His savings were generally applied in releasing from prison some poor, honest, unfortunate debtor; but he was frequently imposed upon by the artful tales of his countrymen, all of whom, at last, he viewed with undiscriminating suspicion. In Newcastle he married a woman called Wallace, and some time after her death another named Spence, by whom he had three sons—George, William, and John. In early life he had embraced the tenets of the Quakers, and he always retained the calm, deliberate, and punctual manner of that sect. His wife admired and practised his principles of abstemiousness and charity; and they lived together in a state of uncommon felicity."

Bewick's testimony is that of a youthful friend and admirer. The work-room of Gilbert Gray was a rendezvous for thoughtful lads of Bewick's age. It was there that he met William Bulmer, afterwards famous as the founder of the Shakespeare Press; Thomas Spence, the Spencean Reformer, and others less known to fame. Writing about the early days of his apprenticeship, Bewick describes the old man's kindly attentions and eccentricities with high appreciation:—

"When the time arrived that I was to cater for myself upon four shillings and sixpence per week, I went to lodge with my aunt Blackett, who, being the widow of a freeman [Thomas Blackett, silversmith], kept a cow upon the Town Moor, and I was abundantly supplied with milk, which was the chief thing I lived upon. At Mrs. Blackett's I became acquainted with Gilbert Gray, bookbinder, and this singular and worthy man was, perhaps, the most invaluable acquaintance and friend I ever met with. His moral lectures and advice to me formed a most important *succedaneum* to those imparted by my parents. His wise remarks, his detestation of vice, his industry, and his temperance, crowned with a lively and

cheerful disposition, altogether made him appear to me as one of the best of characters. In his workshop I often spent my winter evenings. This was also the case with a number of young men, who might be considered as his pupils; many of whom, I have no doubt, he directed into the paths of truth and integrity, and who revered his memory through life. He rose early to work, lay down when he felt weary, and rose again when refreshed. His diet was of the simplest kind, and he ate when hungry, and drank when dry, without paying regard to meal times. By steadily pursuing this mode of life he was enabled to accumulate sums of money—from ten to thirty pounds. This enabled him to get books of an entertaining and moral tendency printed and circulated at a cheap rate. His great object was, by every possible means, to promote honourable feelings in the minds of youth, and to prepare them for becoming good members of society. I have often discovered that he did not overlook ingenious mechanics whose misfortunes—perhaps mismanagement—had led them to a lodging in Newgate. To these he directed his compassionate eye, and for the deserving (in his estimation) he paid their debt, and set them at liberty. He felt hurt at seeing the hands of an ingenious man tied up in prison, where they were of no use either to himself or to the community. This worthy man had been educated for a priest; but he would say to me, 'of a trouth, Thomas, I did not like their ways.' . . . Gilbert had had a liberal education bestowed upon him. He had read a great deal, and had reflected upon what he had read. This, with his retentive memory, enabled him to be a pleasant and communicative companion. I lived in habits of intimacy with him to the end of his life, and when he died, I, with other of his friends, attended his remains to the grave at the Ballast Hills."

George, the eldest son of Gilbert Gray by the second marriage, was born in 1758. He received his education at the Royal Free Grammar School in the Spital, under that famous head-master, the Rev. Hugh Moises. Among his fellow-pupils were Michael Bryan, author of the "Dictionary of Painters"; Rowland Burdon, M.P., builder of Sunderland Bridge; George Stephenson, M.A., curate of Bishopwearmouth and vicar of Redmarshall; and, possibly, the Rev. Edward Moises, M.A., successor to his uncle in the head-mastership. A marked fondness for drawing, which young Gray exhibited in early childhood, induced his father to place him under

the tuition of Mr. Jones, an eminent fruit-painter in Newcastle, and rarely had artist a more promising apprentice. Before many years were over, the skill of the pupil exceeded that of the teacher. Besides drawing and painting, he studied botany, mineralogy, and chemistry—studied them to such purpose that, in 1787, he determined to enlarge his stores of knowledge by foreign travel. Fired by the example of Bruce, stimulated by the adventures of Captain Cook, he sailed from Whitehaven to North America, resolved to see for himself the habits of life among savages, and to investigate upon his own account the secrets which Nature had hidden in that far-off region. Unaided and

George Gray, Fruit Painter.

alone he traversed the wild regions of the New Continent, and returned to Newcastle with a rich harvest of experience in the manners and customs of uncivilised tribes, and abundant treasures in natural history.

The fame of this adventure was speedily noised abroad, and in 1791 he was engaged by Prince Poniatowsky to conduct an exploring party into the interior of Poland, for the purpose of examining and reporting upon the geology of that country. This appointment was entirely to his taste, but the method of conducting the expedition did not correspond to his plan and simple habits. He had learned from his father to be frugal and abstemious in his living; he had

acquired for himself a degree of slovenliness in attire and negligence of personal appearance that placed him at a disadvantage among his fellow-explorers. Fancying himself slighted, he abandoned the expedition at Cracow, and returned with all speed to Newcastle.

The fear of similar disappointment led him to refuse an offer from Major George Anderson, who desired to secure his services as botanist, geologist, and draughtsman in a tour through Iceland. He preferred to remain at home, where he could teach drawing, paint a little, and indulge his eccentricities free from criticism, or, at least, free from supervision and control. In 1794, he opened a shop in Dean Street, as a "portrait, fruit, house, and sign painter"; but his want of capital and his contempt for the forms and courtesies of business, soon induced him to resign the project. After this, he removed to Pudding Chare, where he lived very retired, and devoted much of his time to chemical researches. "Some of his discoveries, particularly two on making bread from roots, he communicated to the Literary and Philosophical Society. He was long engaged in making an improved ink for printers, and the late Lord Stanhope [of the Stanhope Press] took out a caveat for his substitute for oak bark. His proper business of painting and teaching drawing he followed only so far as was absolutely necessary. Many of his fruit pieces were exquisite, and exhibited a natural transparency of texture seldom attained. He always endeavoured to practice his father's abstemiousness, and to avoid eating with his gormandising acquaintance. He certainly enjoyed the conviviality of a little circle of clever men, but on one occasion he was obliged to fly to Sunderland in order to escape the temptations to which he was exposed by his jolly companions. A woman was never permitted to cross his threshold; but after he had struggled for a time with a severe fit of sickness in his solitary apartment, he began to think that 'it is not good for man to be alone.'" He, therefore, married a Mrs. Dobie, the widow of a poor shoemaker; but upon her death, he declared that all the riches of Mexico and Peru should not tempt him to repeat the experiment.

Bewick, who was five years his senior, formed a friendship for George Gray which only death divided. In the "Autobiography" he describes him as "one of the best botanists and chemists in this part of the country." Although his room was "never cleaned or swept," and he carried on his employment "surrounded with models, crucibles, gallipots, brushes, paints, palettes, bottles, jars, retorts,

and distils, in such a chaos of confusion as no words can describe," yet "from this *sanctum sanctorum* he corresponded with gentlemen of science in London and other parts." "Few men," he adds, "were better liked by private friends, as well for his knowledge as for his honesty, and the genuine simplicity of his manners."

The Rev. John Hodgson, historian of Northumberland, while doing duty as curate of Gateshead (1806-8), paid a visit to Gray's den in Pudding Chare, and in his Journal records his interview with the eccentric artist as follows:—"I went to-day with Mr. Ornsby, of Darlington, an excellent scholar, to George Gray's room. He was painting a half-sized picture of Bruce the schoolmaster. On observing that he did not put his name to all his pieces, I said, 'But it is not a matter of moment; they will always be recognised.' He seemed pleased, and said, 'An artist's style is like a handwriting, peculiar and easily known.'"

Notwithstanding his unwholesome habits and his unhealthy surroundings, George Gray lived to the age of sixty. He died at his house in Pudding Chare, on Thursday, December the 9th, 1819, and was buried in St. John's Churchyard on the Sunday following. "Upwards of thirty gentlemen who had known him for a number of years, and who admired his abilities as a fruit-painter, attended his funeral."

John Bell, the antiquary, made an appeal to the Newcastle public for means to erect a monument to his memory, upon which he proposed to place the following epitaph; but so far as can be ascertained the proposal was unheeded, and "neither stone nor storied urn" marks his resting-place:—"This Tribute of Respect is raised to the Memory of George Gray of this Parish, Fruit Painter, Who Died December 9th, 1819, in the 61st Year of his Age. His Chemical and Botanical Knowledge, and his innocent Eccentricities will long be remembered by his Numerous Acquaintance; Who, in Testimony of his Worth, saw his Earthly Remains deposited here, December 12th, 1819."

# Henry Grey,

AN EVANGELICAL DIVINE.

THE Rev. Henry Grey, an eminent preacher in the Church of Scotland, and of exceeding popularity on this side the Border, was born at Alnwick on the 11th of February, 1778. His father was an apothecary in that town, who, after a family quarrel which occurred soon after the boy was born, left home, and never returned to it. Though he went no farther away than Morpeth, where he carried on his business, it does not appear that this obstinate scion of the Border family of Grey took any further interest in his offspring. The deserted mother, returning to her relatives, devoted herself to the upbringing of the boy so sadly deprived of a father's care. She sent him to school in Newcastle, and when he was old enough obtained his admission to the University of Edinburgh. He was a youth of great promise—studious, bookish, and religious. Soon after he had become a student, he attached himself to West, or St. Cuthbert's Church, where the Rev. Sir Harry Moncrieff, leader of the Evangelical section of the Church of Scotland, officiated. Under the influence of that celebrated preacher he formed the design of entering the ministry, and, being encouraged thereto by his mother and his friends, he closed his literary studies, and passed into the theological classes. In due course he obtained a licence to preach, and in 1801 he was presented to his first charge, the living of Stenton, in East Lothian. Of this sequestered rural parish he was ordained minister on the 17th September in that year, and thither he removed a week or two later, with his mother as his companion and housekeeper.

Although deserted by his father, Mr. Grey was not forsaken by his father's relatives. While at college he had been a frequent guest at the house of his uncle, George Grey, of Milfield, and upon terms of affectionate friendship with his cousins there—the eldest of whom in after years was known throughout the Northern Counties, and to half the world besides, as John Grey of Dilston. To Milfield the Rev. Henry Grey went for a wife, and a few years after he had entered into possession of the manse of Stenton, he took home his cousin Margaretta as his bride.

In the "Memoir of John Grey of Dilston," by his daughter, Mrs. Josephine Butler, are passing glimpses of Henry Grey and his wife before their marriage. The young minister is described as possessing considerable personal beauty, as paying regular visits to Milfield while journeying to and from college in his student days, and as entertaining his aunt and his cousins on those occasions by his conversation about books. Margaretta is depicted as a strong-minded girl, independent and courageous in thought, generous, affectionate, ambitious, and inquisitive, possessing great natural eloquence, and wishing to use it. "Her desire to hear debates in Parliament was so unbounded that, there being at that time no

ladies' gallery, she had the hardihood to make her way into the House dressed as a boy."

At Stenton Mr. Grey remained till 1813, when an opportunity arose of placing him in a more conspicuous station. Sir Harry Moncrieff had been interesting himself in the establishment of "chapels-of-ease" in various parts of Scotland, and for some years, with the aid of his colleague in the ministry, had revived public worship in a corner of his own parish, utilising for the purpose an old building known as the original St. Cuthbert's Chapel. The work had been successful, and it was resolved to appoint a permanent minister. Sir Harry's choice fell on his friend Mr. Grey, and he,

responding to the call, left his rural flock to assume the charge of a more cultured congregation in the metropolis of Scotland. Seven years later he was elected by the magistrates and the Town Council of Edinburgh to the ministry of the New North Church, as it was called—one of the several distinct churches to whose services the old Cathedral of St. Giles was devoted. His parish extended only from Parliament Square to the Castle, and the portion of the Cathedral in which he officiated was small and inconvenient. It was not possible to accommodate within its walls the number of persons who desired his ministrations. A further removal became necessary, and in 1827 he was translated to the Church of St. Mary, a new edifice just then completed on the northern outskirts of the city.

Shortly after his induction at St. Mary's, one of those curious controversies which every now and then disturb Christian communities broke out and raged with much violence. It was a dispute as to the conduct of the Bible Society, in permitting the Apocrypha to be circulated along with the canonical books of the Scriptures. Mr. Grey, or rather Dr. Grey, for by this time he had become a Doctor of Divinity, took up the cudgels on behalf of the Society; Dr. Andrew Thomson, another Edinburgh minister, espoused the opposite side. The death of the latter in February, 1831, ended the strife, which was painfully personal while it lasted, though it is said that the friendship of the two disputants was not seriously ruffled by the storms of controversy.

When this temporary disquietude had passed away, Dr. Grey recovered the confidence of the friends who had taken sides against him, and became once more the popular preacher of modern Athens. One of his biographers tells us that, outside of his pulpit ministrations he was a hard-working and self-denying pastor. His manners made him welcome at every sick-bed, and he reckoned nothing so important as to prevent him from travelling day after day, for months together, to the chambers of the poorest of his flock. To young students, unaccustomed to the ways of a great city, he was a true friend. Every session he took under his charge a certain number of such students, whom he encouraged in their studies and entertained at his house. His hospitalities knew no limit of sect or creed. "Any one who on invitation started in the early morning, met the sea breeze as it came up from the blue Frith, passed the spire of St. Mary's, crossed the bridge which spanned the Water of Leith, and,

skirting the grounds of Warriston, entered Dr. Grey's family mansion opposite, was sure to meet a circle of persons of both sexes with sufficient diversity of judgment to make tedium impossible."

At the great disruption in 1843 Dr. Grey followed Dr. Chalmers, and gave up his preferment. "He had invariably held it to be the duty of the Church to maintain independence of external authority within the sphere of her spiritual action, and when it became evident to him that that could not be done while she remained in alliance with the State, he saw no consistent alternative but secession." He quitted the house in which he had so long resided for one of narrower dimensions, left the beautiful Church of St. Mary for a humble tabernacle, and began his clerical life afresh as a minister of the Free Church of Scotland. Next to Dr. Chalmers he was the secessionist whose self-sacrifice was most highly honoured and appreciated. Over the first General Assembly of the Free Church Dr. Chalmers presided as Moderator; at the second Assembly Dr. Grey occupied that exalted position. In 1851 the jubilee of his ministry was celebrated in Edinburgh, and the commemoration was made of permanent interest by the establishment of a "Grey Scholarship in Divinity" and the execution of a marble bust of himself which now adorns the library of the Free Church College.

During all this time active correspondence and frequent interchange of visits had taken place between Dr. Grey and his wife and the families at Milfield and Dilston. Mrs. Butler's Memoir contains many references to their affectionate intercourse, and several examples of the vigorous letters on public questions which Dr. Grey's wife addressed to them. Another of John Grey's sisters had married, first Mr. Lundi, of Kelso, friend and associate of Scott, Leyden, and Brougham, and after his death Dr. Duncan, the founder of Savings Banks in Scotland, a brother minister of Dr. Grey's, and like him a seceder from the National Church. With her also correspondence was maintained, and for many years the family circle remained unbroken.

Soon after the celebration of his jubilee, domestic sorrows fell upon Dr. Grey in quick succession. In 1854 he lost his eldest son, the Rev. Henry C. Grey, M.A., rector of Wartling, Sussex; in 1857 his eldest daughter, married to the Rev. J. Hampden Gurney, M.A., rector of St. Mary's, Marylebone; and in 1858 his wife. Mrs. Grey's death was immediately preceded and followed by the death of two young relatives in whom he took an affectionate interest—first a

grandniece, daughter of the Rev. Dr. Horatio Bonar, who died while on a visit to his house; the other his grandson, son of the Rev. C. M. Birrell, of Liverpool, whose studies at Edinburgh Academy he was supervising. A few months later Dr. Grey himself was called away. He died on the 13th January, 1859, in the eighty-first year of his age, and the fifty-ninth of his ministry, and was buried in St. Cuthbert's Churchyard, Edinburgh.

Dr. Grey, although he had the pen of a ready writer, limited his literary efforts to the publication of sermons, and the issuing of pamphlets on current controversies. These, to his mind, were the most effective methods of aiding movements in which he was interested —the anti-slavery agitation, the struggle for Reform, and the Scottish Church conflict. His papers on the Apocrypha dispute contain, it is said, the best defence that could be made for the retention of the uncanonical scriptures. His published sermons had an influence that extended far beyond the bounds of the Northern kingdom. At the jubilee celebration of his ministry, Dr. Duff asserted that by the reading of an extract from an early sermon of his, "The Macedonian Cry," which he found in an elocution class book, his mind had received a powerful impulse towards missionary enterprise—an impulse that, acting concurrently with other circumstances, had sent him out to the heathen. Another sermon, that which he preached in his official character of Moderator of the Free Church Assembly, and afterwards published under the title of "Times of Trial: Times of Self-Sacrifice," had a wide circulation.

The secret of Dr. Henry Grey's success both as a writer and a preacher was the solidity and consistency of his character. Edinburgh church-goers, mostly cultured and well-to-do people, were critical in the matter of sermons. They liked them to be long in duration, sound and substantial in character. Dr. Grey, being a hard-headed Northumbrian, gave them the profound discourses they preferred, expressed in what one of the public bodies which honoured his memory described as "felicity of diction, and classic elegance of style." Thus to the verge of his eightieth year he kept together a highly intellectual congregation, who, when he was taken away from them, inscribed upon his tombstone their testimony to his character and his works in the words of Scripture:—"For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord."

# John Grey,

"JOHN GREY OF DILSTON."

JOHN GREY was descended from the Greys of Angerton, a collateral branch of the historical Northumbrian family, settled on a small patrimony at West Ord, on the south bank of the Tweed, two and a half miles west by south of Tweedmouth. His father, George Grey, had settled at Milfield Hill, six miles north-west of Wooler, where he died in 1793, leaving his widow with four children, of whom John was the eldest. His boyhood was spent at Richmond school, in Yorkshire, where he had the privilege of passing holidays with the greatest agriculturists of that day—men whose names have been handed down to posterity as benefactors of their kind—the Collings, the Charges, and the Booths. From them he heard discussions on agricultural subjects, and on the revolution in stock-raising created by the introduction of short-horned cattle. He was privileged to make himself acquainted with the patriarchs of that esteemed bovine race—the "Favourites," the "Comets," and the "Dukes"—whose names stand on the foremost pages of the Herd Book. Family circumstances required that he should, at the age of eighteen, take the management of extensive farming concerns. Thus early put into harness, he was preserved from many temptations to which young men of the upper middle class are often subjected, and the hard work to which he had to apply himself tended in a marked degree to produce that earnestness of character and aptitude for business which distinguished him throughout his life.

The principal farmers of Northumberland had begun about that time to form agricultural societies for mutual encouragement and instruction. One of these was the Tweedside Society, established at Cornhill, near Coldstream, about 1815, and amalgamated in 1820 with the Border Society at Kelso, under the title of the Union Agricultural Society. Mr. Grey was one of the earliest members of that Society, and was for many years one of its most successful exhibitors. Obtaining by diligent study and hard work a recognised position among the agriculturists of the North of England, he became known to that fast friend of the British farmer, Sir John Sinclair, first president of the National Board of Agriculture.

When the baronet was engaged upon his "Code of Agriculture, including Observations on Gardens, Orchards, Woods, and Plantations," he called Mr. Grey to his aid, and referred to him various sheets for remark and criticism, so that it was his privilege, even at that early date, to study agriculture in theory, as well as in practice. At a later period he had the honour to be consulted by three remarkable men—Lord Althorp (afterwards Earl Spencer), Mr. Pusey, and Mr. Hanley, in originating the Royal Agricultural Society of England, and he was invited year after year to act as one of that Society's judges, and likewise to contribute to its publications.

In 1833, Earl Grey, then, for the last time, Prime Minister, gave Mr. Grey the appointment of Commissioner of the Greenwich Hospital estates in Durham and Northumberland. This extensive and valuable property had been greatly neglected, although it was under the superintendence of two receivers, two clerks, and seven bailiffs. The net annual income of the estates was only £25,000, and the tenants were some six or seven thousand pounds in arrears of rent. Had he been so disposed, Mr. Grey might have contented himself by simply attending to his routine duties as receiver; but indolence and inaction were foreign to his nature. The farms on the estate were all valued by a competent valuer, an improved system of husbandry was introduced and enforced; and while the incompetent or incorrigible were weeded out, every encouragement and assistance was given to deserving and industrious tenants. While he looked sharply after the rents in the interests of his employers, he encouraged the tenants to improve their holdings, and being a farmer himself, he was able to advise and instruct them as to the best means of cultivating the land, and show them the art of growing rich themselves, while enriching the charity. He was a strong advocate for large farms, long leases, extensive and systematic draining, the application of chemistry to agriculture—of everything, in short, in the way of land improvement, and security of tenure to the farmer, conjoined with punctual payment to the landlord. When he retired, after thirty years' Commissionership, the net annual income of the property was £40,000 and the arrears of rent were £30 only.

At the instigation of Lord Althorp, Mr. Grey prepared an elaborate report upon the practice of farming in his native county. It was intituled "A View of the Past and Present State of Agriculture in Northumberland," and it was suggested by the superior farming

which his lordship had noticed on both banks of the Tweed, when he visited Milfield. It was written in 1846, and published in July of that year in the second part of the second volume of the Society's Journal. So well was it received that the Journal Committee offered fifty pounds premium for similar essays, and from that time forward they received reports of more or less sterling value from all the English counties.

Local appreciation of Mr. Grey's services to agriculture found expression in October, 1849, when he was presented with a handsome service of plate, valued at £300, by the members of the Tyneside Agricultural Society. Upon it was engraved the following inscription:—"To John Grey, Esq. Presented by the members of the Tyneside Agricultural Society, of which he was the founder, and by his numerous other friends, as an expression of the high estimation they entertain of his character and talents, and of his invaluable services rendered in the interests of agriculture."

Finding the infirmities of age stealing upon him, Mr. Grey gave up his appointment in 1863, when he had attained his seventy-seventh year. Leaving the residence at Dilston with which his name is identified, he took up his abode at Lipwood House, on the banks of the Tyne, near Haydon Bridge, where he spent the remainder of his life in retirement.

Mr. Grey had, from youth upwards, a predilection for politics, though not in the strict party or controversial sense. During the troublous years preceding the Reform Bill of 1832, he fought for the Liberal cause with inborn ardour and energy, and was looked upon by the leaders of the party as an active and useful ally, who might make his mark upon the floor of St. Stephen's. He was an elegant and effective speaker, not on political questions merely, but on general, and especially agricultural topics. When the Royal Agricultural Society met at Newcastle in 1846, and the members, fifteen hundred strong, dined in their own pavilion, under the presidency of Lord Portman, the speeches were mostly of a high caste, but that delivered by Mr. Grey, in proposing "The Labouring Classes," was acknowledged to be the best. But he was utterly devoid of personal ambition, and though on several occasions solicited to come forward as a candidate for Parliamentary honours, he always declined.

Free Trade, the Anti-slavery Movement, Catholic Emancipation, the Repeal of the Test and Corporation Act, and the great question

of Parliamentary Reform, all had a steady, earnest advocate in Mr. Grey. As early as 1824 he advocated Free Trade in wool, though that was the staple of the district in which he lived, and he seems also to have been in favour of Free Trade in corn for some years before the bulk of his party abandoned the theory of Protection. His political opinions, though thus advanced, were well matured, and were by no means the accident of birth or breeding. He held to them, moreover, with a strong tenacity, such as springs from an earnest nature and deep conviction. In his "Memoir," written by his accomplished daughter, Mrs. Butler, from which many of the facts contained in the preceding pages have been derived, is the following anecdote:—"On the occasion of the canvass incident to an election in Durham county, he rose one morning at three o'clock, took a horse, and rode out at that early hour, galloped through a wide district, obtained the votes of the Liberal-ly disposed, and came home to breakfast. As he rode up the hill to the house, his tired horse stumbled and fell, and threw him over its head. Several of his ribs were broken, and he was a good deal bruised. He said not a word to his wife, but ate his breakfast, mounted a fresh horse, and rode off for the rest of the day to canvass another part of the county." After his appointment to the Commissionership he abstained from active participation in political strife, but to the end of his days he remained in sympathy with the friends of his early manhood—a steady and consistent Whig.

In 1814, Mr. Grey married Hannah Annett, daughter of Mr. Ralph Annett, of The Fence, near Alnwick. By her he had a dutiful and talented family, most of whom survived him. The best known of them are George Annett Grey of Milfield Hill, a J.P. and D.L. for Northumberland, an assistant Inclosure Commissioner, and, like his father, a man of "light and leading" in practical agriculture; Charles Grey Grey, who succeeded to the management of the Greenwich Hospital Estates; and Mrs. Josephine E. Butler, an ardent social reformer, and the author of her father's "Memoir"—a delightful book which every true Northumbrian reads with mingled pride and pleasure.

Mr. Grey will always be remembered as a benefactor to the British farmer. The better part of his life was spent in the endeavour to increase and multiply the fruits of the earth. He was a striking type of that robust race of Englishmen, of which the north-eastern district has been prolific. Possessed of an excellent constitution, and a

powerful and vigorous frame, he was capable of undergoing great fatigue, and his life was spared beyond the proverbially allotted term. The great monetary panic of 1857, when the Northumberland and Durham District Bank closed its doors, was a great blow to him. Being a large shareholder in that unfortunate concern, in the management of which he had had implicit faith, he felt the catastrophe keenly; but, nevertheless, he held up to the last, like the sturdy Northumbrian yeoman that he was. He died at Lipwood House, on the 22nd of January, 1868, aged 83 years.

A full-sized portrait of himself, by Patton, was presented to Mr. Grey at the time of his removal from Dilston. It was afterwards exhibited in London, and then placed in the new hall at Hexham.

## Greys of Backworth,

RALPH, RALPH WILLIAM, AND SIR CHARLES EDWARD.

THE estate of Backworth, in the parish of Earsdon, which, previous to the dissolution of the Monasteries, was parcel of the lands belonging to the Prior and Canons of Tynemouth, was acquired, in the early part of the seventeenth century, by Ralph Grey, a Newcastle merchant. It is said that the family of which Ralph Grey was the head descended from the Greys of Horton Castle. Be that as it may, he was a wealthy and influential inhabitant of the town, assisting to build up its industries, and taking part in its municipal government at the time when Francis Gray of a preceding memoir was preaching at St. Andrew's and teaching at the Royal Free Grammar School. Cuthbert Gray, father of the author of the "Chorographia," was his cousin. Sir Lionel Maddison, whose sculptured monument, surviving the destruction and restoration of two centuries, is one of the principal adornments of St. Nicholas' Cathedral, was his brother-in-law. Dr. Jenison, the Puritan divine, and Robert Bewicke, the first Puritan Mayor of Newcastle, were his uncles. By these, and other ties of marriage and consanguinity, he was related to half the leading families of the town and neighbourhood. When, in the municipal year 1628-29, his uncle Bewicke occupied the Mayoralty for the first time, he filled the office of Sheriff. Later on, when his uncle was Mayor again, and the Scots

were preparing for the skirmish at Newburn, he had the honour of being reported to the king as "a crafty Puritan" himself, and of being summoned, with his distinguished relative, the chief magistrate, to answer for his conduct before the Privy Council. Whatsoever his views may have been, he ceased to obtrude them after civil war had broken out. No reference to him occurs in the local annals of the Commonwealth. He lived in the peace and quietude of retirement till after the Restoration, and dying on the 30th May, 1666, at the venerable age of eighty-two, was buried in his parish church of All Saints, leaving Backworth and all his property in Newcastle to Ralph, his son and heir.

Ralph Grey (2) was elected Sheriff of Newcastle the year after his father's decease, and in 1671 he was promoted to the higher position of chief magistrate. With his death, which occurred on the 5th of December, 1676, the connection of the Greys with the higher offices of the municipality of Newcastle came to an end. He was buried at St. Nicholas', and when, on the 23rd of November, 1699, his son and successor was laid beside him, it was as "Ralph Grey, of Backworth, in the county of Northumberland, gentleman," that his interment was recorded, indicating that the family of Grey had followed the example of many other Newcastle merchants and settled down among the county gentry.

Passing over intermediate inheritors of the estate, we find Backworth, at the end of last century, in the possession of Ralph William Grey (1). This spirited descendant of the old Newcastle merchant married Elizabeth, daughter of Charles Brandling, of Gosforth, one of the representatives of Newcastle in Parliament. He erected the present mansion—Backworth House—where he maintained a large establishment, and, like his neighbours at Seaton Delaval, and his wife's relatives at Gosforth, exercised a lordly hospitality. In his turn he served the office of High Sheriff of Northumberland, and, dying on the 18th July, 1812, at the age of sixty-seven, left, among other issue, two sons, Ralph William, his heir, and Charles Edward, of whom more presently.

Ralph William Grey (2) succeeded, in due course, to the patrimonial estate, and to a dispute respecting the right to work the coal lying beneath it. This coal had been claimed by Hugh, second Duke of Northumberland, as Lord of the Manor of Tynemouth, of which Backworth is a copyhold township. Ralph William Grey (1) had disputed the Duke's title; the case had

gone to the July Assizes, 1809, and the Duke had been non-suited.

A few years after Ralph William Grey (2) came into possession a company was formed to work the Backworth coal; without any formal authority from the Duke, but expressing an intention to run the risk, they commenced operations. Mr. Grey brought an action against the Duke, and the dispute was brought to an end by the purchase of the estate and its inclusion within the wide-spreading possessions of the house of Percy. It is stated that the purchase-money was £95,000. Mr. Grey removed for a time to Acton House, near Felton, and from thence to Doncaster, where he died in 1822, at the comparatively early age of forty-two years.

The vendor of Backworth and his brother, Charles Edward Grey, had married sisters—daughters of the Rev. Sir Samuel Jervoise-Clarke, of Idsworth Park, Hants. After the decease of the former, his widow, who had borne him a son, married John Abel Smith, M.P. Application being made to the Court of Chancery on behalf of the infant heir of the Greys for a settlement of landed estate in view of his attaining his majority, the Court authorised the purchase of the fine estate of Chipchase, on North Tyne, then in the market through the misfortunes of its owners, the Reeds. When he arrived at the age of manhood, young Mr. Grey entered into possession of his new home, and became the Ralph William Grey, of Chipchase Castle, who, in our own time, filled a prominent position in Parliament and the Civil Service. He was M.P. for Tynemouth from 1847 to 1852; Secretary of the Poor Law Board in 1851-52; M.P. for Liskeard from 1854 to 1859, and a Commissioner of Customs from 1859 to his death in 1869.

Charles Edward Grey, brother of the vendor of Backworth, and uncle of the owner of Chipchase, had a distinguished career in the public service. Born in 1785, he matriculated at University College, Oxon, May 15th, 1802; graduated B.A. there in 1806, and M.A. at Oriel College (of which he subsequently became a Fellow) in 1810; having midway between won the prize of the year for an essay on "Hereditary Rank." Called to the Bar at Lincoln's Inn in 1811, he practised as a barrister till 1817, when he received his first public appointment—that of a Commissioner in Bankruptcy. Three years later he obtained a judgeship in the Supreme Court at Madras, and having received the honour of knighthood, married and sailed for India. His judicial functions at Madras were discharged with so

much dignity and ability, that in 1825 he was raised to the more exalted position of Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Bengal at Calcutta, relinquished, twenty-six years before, by another eminent North-Countryman—Sir Robert Chambers, of Newcastle. This post of honour he resigned upon being appointed, in 1835, a Commissioner for the Affairs of Lower Canada, with the added dignity of a Privy Councillor. His mission there accomplished, he returned to England in 1837, and receiving the reward of his services—the Grand Cross of the Royal Hanoverian Guelphic Order—became Sir Charles Edward Grey, G.C.H.

At the general election, occasioned by the death of King William IV., Sir Charles was solicited by the Liberal electors of Tynemouth to oppose the retiring member for that borough, Mr. George Frederick Young, and he accepted the nomination. On the hustings the show of hands was in his favour; but he was defeated at the poll after a close struggle—the numbers being, for Young, 269, and for himself, 253. Allegations that the seat had been won by bribery and corruption were freely made and as warmly resented. But upon a petition being presented against the return, Mr. Young refused to contest the matter, and on the 24th of February, 1838, the House of Commons declared Sir Charles duly elected. He took his seat accordingly, voted steadily with his party, and paid attention to local requirements. Before long, however, he discovered that Parliamentary life was not to his taste. Severe judicial training had disqualified him from enjoying the fiery atmosphere of debate, and the rancorous rivalry of party politics. When, therefore, in the summer of 1841, the Melbourne Administration was tottering to its fall, he sought and obtained more congenial employment. On the eve of the dissolution of Parliament, he was appointed Governor of the Windward Islands—Barbadoes, Trinidad, St. Vincent, St. Lucia, and Tobago. Over those flourishing dependencies of the Crown he ruled for five years, and then obtained promotion to the Governorship of Jamaica. There, however, his good fortune deserted him. He drifted into dissensions with the Colonial Legislature, so deep and so wide that in May, 1853, he left the colony and retired into private life. On the 1st of June, 1865, he died.

# Richard Grey,

AUTHOR OF "MEMORIA TECHNICA."

"THE learned, ingenious, and reverend doctor," Richard Grey, was the son of John Grey, a Newcastle barber. His mother was a Lambert, sister of Fenwick Lambert, who kept an inn in the town. He was born on the 6th of April, 1696, and after receiving his education at the Royal Free Grammar School, was entered at Lincoln College, Oxford, where he matriculated in 1712, took the degree of B.A. on the 15th of May, 1716, and that of M.A. on the 16th of January, 1718-19. He was ordained deacon on the following May Day, and priest on the 10th of April in the succeeding year. Lord Crewe, bishop of Durham, appointed him his chaplain and secretary, and gave him, in 1722, the rectory of Hinton-in-the-Hedges, near Brackley, in Northamptonshire—an agricultural parish with a net income of £343. The bishop likewise obtained for him, in 1725, from Lord Willoughby de Broke, the rectory of Kimcote, near Lutterworth, in the county of Leicester, yielding, with the hamlet of Cotes-de-Val, and part of Walton, a net income of £566. In 1731 he obtained from his University the degree of D.D. by diploma, and the following year was incorporated at Cambridge. In 1746, he was chosen to be official and commissary of the archdeaconry of Leicester, in which capacity he had charge of the spiritual jurisdiction in that part of the diocese of Lincoln which was so far distant from the Episcopal See that the chancellor could not call the people to the bishop's principal consistory court without putting them to inconvenience. Lastly, in 1757, he was appointed prebendary of St. Paul's and archdeacon of Bedford.

Though he had his hands pretty full of ministerial and judicial work, Mr. Grey found leisure hours wherein to apply himself to such literary labours as suited his temperament and taste. In 1730, besides a visitation sermon, published at Oxford, he gave to the world a "New Method of Artificial Memory," under the title of "Memoria Technica," a work which was so well received that it went through various editions during his lifetime, and has been many times republished. In the same year he issued a "System of Ecclesiastical Law, for the use of young students designed for holy

orders." It was a clever octavo abridgment of Bishop Gibson's "Codex Juris Ecclesiastici Anglicani," published in 1713, in two folio volumes, in which the erudite author may be said to have codified the laws, temporal and spiritual, of the Church of England, as then in force, with the acumen and industry of a Gratian. In 1732, Dr. Grey printed an assize sermon, called "The Great Tribunal"; and in 1736, he was the author of an anonymous pamphlet, under the title of "The Miserable and Distracted State of Religion in England, upon the Downfall of the Church of England." The same year saw another of his visitation sermons issue from the Oxford press.

"A New and Easy Method of Learning Hebrew without Points" came from his pen in 1738, followed by paradigms of the conjugations—"Paradigmata Verborum." "The Book of Job" came next (1742); in this he adopted the translation of Schultens, and the then novel metrical arrangement of Hare. "The Last Words of David," divided according to the metre on the same principle, appeared in 1749. Shortly after the appearance of Bishop Warburton's great work, "The Divine Legation of Moses," Dr Grey entered the lists against its redoubtable author in a well-reasoned pamphlet, but Warburton treated him as a schoolmaster might treat a pupil who had ventured to clamour against his authority. A second edition of his "New Method of Learning Hebrew," accommodated to the use of schools, came out in 1751. A number of occasional sermons, preached and published by him, may still be picked up on old book-stalls, or bound together in volumes of miscellaneous tracts.

Dr. Grey married Joyce, youngest daughter of the Rev. John Thicknesse, of Brazenose College, Oxford, and by her had three daughters, the eldest of whom married the Rev. Philip Lloyd, Dean of Norwich. One of Dr. Grey's sisters married Thomas Burdus, counsellor-at-law, Newcastle; another married John White, the printer and publisher of the *Newcastle Courant*.

Dr. Grey died on the 28th February, 1771, aged seventy-eight years. He was buried in Hinton parish churchyard, as was likewise his widow, who survived him twenty-three years, and died at the age of eighty-nine.

The doctor's "Memoria Technica" was at one time a very popular book, and the method he recommended has since been in part adopted by several writers and lecturers on mnemonics. It consisted

in expressing numbers by artificial words, and in making such a change in the ending of the name of a person, place, or thing, without altering the beginning of it, as should readily suggest the object sought, at the same time that the beginning of the word, being perceived, should be the leading and prompting syllable to the ending of it, so changed.

It remains to add that Dr. Grey was not only a man of great learning and undoubted piety, but also of a liberal and tolerant spirit, as his correspondence with Dr. Doddridge and other Non-conformists shows.

## Robert Grey,

### A NOTABLE ECCLESIASTIC.

SIR RALPH GREY, of Horton and Chillingham, father of William, Lord Grey of Wark (see page 342), had, by a second marriage, a son named Robert, who, entering into holy orders, rose to a position of eminence in the diocese of Durham. He was born about the year 1610, educated partly at Northallerton, and partly by Amor Oxley, schoolmaster in Northumberland, and afterwards head-master of the Royal Free Grammar School, Newcastle. From Oxley's care the youth proceeded to Christ's College, Cambridge, where he finished his scholastic course, and probably took his arts degrees. His father, dying in 1623, left him the estate of Little Langton-upon-Swale, in Yorkshire, and upon the decease of his mother, in 1635, he came into possession of other property.

At the outbreak of the Civil War, Robert Grey attached himself to the Royalist side of the quarrel, and thus, while his half-brothers, Lord Grey of Wark and John Grey of Bamborough, were assisting to fight the battles of Parliament, he and another brother were helping to maintain the authority of the king. In 1644 he was one of a party of cavaliers, several of them belonging to Northumberland and Durham, who were besieged in the little stronghold of Millum Castle, Cumberland, the property of Ferdinando Huddleston, who had married one of his half-sisters. Later on he was arrested for delinquency, the charges against him being that he had enlisted men to serve under his brother, Colonel Grey (slain at Newark), had communicated "by means of a Northern woman" with the king's

garrison, spent three days in the camp of Prince Rupert on Bellerby Moor with his brother and Colonel Clavering, ridden among his brother's troop into Northumberland, bestowed 40s. upon Royalist soldiers at Durham as he passed through the city, etc., etc. Pleading the Act of General Pardon and consenting to take the oath of engagement "to be true and faithful to the Commonwealth of England, as the same is now established without a king, or House of Lords," he obtained the removal of a sequestration of his estate, and was allowed, though not without subsequent questioning, to enjoy his own again. Morton, Bishop of Durham, stripped of the revenues of the see, and living retired as tutor in the family of Sir Henry Yelverton, at Easton Mauduit, Northamptonshire, collated him, in March, 1652, to the rectory of Bishopwearmouth, and in May following conferred upon him the eighth stall in Durham Cathedral. While the Commonwealth lasted, these were empty preferments; but at the restoration of the monarchy, created D.D. by mandamus, he entered into beneficial occupation of the rectory and the stall, and fulfilled the duties belonging thereto till his death. He was found dead in his study on the 9th of July, 1704, aged ninety-four years.

Dr. Grey was the churchman whom Raine (as quoted on page 339) describes as living, like a second Bernard Gilpin, a life of the most disinterested liberality and the most unfeigned piety, and dying the death of a saint. This high-toned estimate of his character is founded upon a collection of anecdotes and incidents which Spearman, the antiquary, contemplating a biography of his hero, gathered together, and left, with many other projects of a similar nature, incomplete. The following are interesting excerpts from Spearman's MSS.:—

"Bishop Crewe pressed Dr. Grey and Dr. Morton [prebend of the sixth stall] to read King James's declaration for a Dispensing Power in their parish churches, which they declining, and arguing against it, he angrily told Dr. Grey his age made him doat, he had forgott his learning. The good old doctor briskly replied he had forgott more learning than his Lordship ever had. 'Well,' said the Bishop, 'I'll forgive and reverence you, but cannot pardon that blockhead Morton, whom I raised from nothing.' They thereupon tooke their leave of the Bishop, who, with great civility, waited upon them towards the gate, and ye porter opening ye wickett, or posterne only, ye Bishop said, 'Sirrah, why don't you open ye great gates?' 'No,'

says ye Reverend Dr. Grey, 'my Lord, wee'le leave ye *broad way* to yr Lordship, ye *strait way* will serve us.'

"In King James' reigne, riding on horseback from his Rectory at Bpp. Wearmouth to Durham, Mr. J. Lamb, a popish Justice of Peace, a busy, active, and fierce man for that party (as all renegades are violent, and being raised from being a coachman to Mr. Challoner's family), overtook ye Doctor, sneered at him, and told him he wondered he would ride on so fine a palfrey when his Saviour was content to ride upon a colt, the foal of an asse; the Doctor replied, ''Tis true, sir, but the King has made so many asses Justices of the Peace he has not left me one to ride upon.'

"The Dr. had a considerable patrimoniall estate, the revenues whereof, together with those of his ecclesiastical preferments, he annually disposed to charitys; and sold above £150 per annum of his lands to pay his brother's detts (to which he was in no wise obliged), and paid his widow a considerable annuity during life; contributed by yearly pensions to the maintenance and preferment of many persons who called him kinsman, tho' at so great distance as coud hardly be made out the relacion; insisted strongly on his rights and tyths, but where the partys were poor he took the tyth in kind, but generally restored it with as much mony as the value; and if he retened it, gave 'em double the value—1s. or 18d. for a hen, 2s. 6d. or 3s. for a pig, etc.; and when his rents or dividend became due, he calculated and drew up an account of his annuall pensions, and what he might necessarily disburse in his housekeeping, servants' wages, daily and accidental charitys, he reserved only, and laid by annually, £5 as a fund for his funerall or unforseen accidents, and then putting each proportion in distinct purses or papers, went about privately distributing his pensions and charitys, and with thankfulness told his old servant, Mr. Clarke, he had put out his money to interest upon the best security, and feared not thieves, having faithfully discharged his trust till the next rent day.

"He was learned and well read in the Fathers and Councels; modest and grave, temperate, yet hospitable; constantly resided at his Rectory or prebendall house by turnes, and daily performed his office to the laste weeke of his life, but when he was driven out of all in the civill wars, when he sold other parts of his estate for the service of King Cha. the 1st, and maintenance of himselfe and many loyall cavaleirs, and other charitable uses. I cannot omitt one instance of his charity. As he was going from his house to church

many poor attended, as they daily used to do, his going out. His Curate, Mr. Broughton, going before him, chid them for being so troublesome and said he wondered at their impudence, when, to his knowledge, the Dr. had given them all money the day before, and bid them begone. The Dr. observing his Curate angry, and being a little deafe, asked his Curate what was the matter. Mr. Broughton replied that he was angry that the same people he had liberally given mony to yesterday came again and would never be satisfied till they gott all he had. 'How now, good Mr. Broughton, are you angry at the poor, and daily read the Lord's Prayer? Doe you aske of God your daily bread, which he gives you plentifully, and will you grudge giveing a share of it to the poor, or can you be angry at their asking a daily supply for their necessitys? I hope you are a better man.' And thereupon called back the poor, gave mony to each of them, and bid them come daily to his door, and go to church, and he would releive them, and said he did not find himselfe a jott the poorer for what he gave them.

"Another day, as he came out of his gate, a poor salter's horse fell down under his load and died, and the man lamenting his losse, and having a family to maintaine, the Dr. ordered his servant to give him his old padd; which much rejoyced the poor man. And about a month after the Dr. mett the poor man with two horses loaden with salt, and not the old pad. 'How now, friend,' says the Dr., 'what's become of my pad?' 'Truly, Sir, I exchanged him for these two horses, and had money to boot. Your's was too good for the worke, and required better keeping than I could afford; I hope you are not angry?' 'No, I am pleased,' says the Dr.; 'my horse has made two horses. You can do more than I can do; thou can increase and multiply, which I never attempted. God increase thy store. Be honest and prosper;' and gave him 5s. and parted.

"Dr. Morton and Dr. Smith, in altering their prebendall houses at Durham (between which stood Dr. Grey's), incroached a little upon his; the one got a closett, and the other a piece of ground from the good old man, who immediately complained to the Body, and said he was crucified between two thieves, and expected they would cause these two gentl. to do him and his successors justice, for he had so many demands made upon him by the needy that he could not expend the money in the law which he had appropriated to better uses."

Dr. Grey died a bachelor, and intestate. Administration of his

effects was granted to Ralph Lord Grey, Governor of Barbadoes, Henry Neville of Billingbear, and Edward Bedingfeld of Chillingham Castle. What was left of his patrimony yielded £130 per annum, and there was found in his study £300 wrapped up in papers, containing £5 each, which he had laid aside for funeral expenses and legacies. He had given away everything else in charity.

# William Gray,

AUTHOR OF THE "CHOROGRAPHIA."

A FEW years ago it would not have been easy to write a biographical sketch of the first historian of Newcastle, for local history afforded but slender clue to his identity. From a signature attached to an annotated edition of his book, owned by the late Lady Northbourne, it was known that the initials "W. G." indicated William Gray; and from the fact that the volume had been in the possession of her ladyship's ancestors, the Ellisons of Hebburn, for many generations, it was suspected that he might have been connected by ties of business or relationship with that ancient local family. From evidence afforded by the book itself it was believed that he was a native of the town, and that he had been engaged in some commercial enterprise which the outbreak of civil war had frustrated. And that was all. Bourne, the next historian of Newcastle, knew nothing, or, if he did, he wrote nothing, about his predecessor. Brand dismissed him in a couple of lines. Subsequent historians quoted him and passed him by. Neither Sir Cuthbert Sharp, who made local registers a special study, nor the two Richardsons, whose voluminous collections of local genealogy form a chaotic mass in the archives of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, were able to identify him. So he rested, named, but unknown, till the year 1884, when the Registry of Wills at Durham—that vast treasure-house of the dead—yielded up the secret of his life. A copy of a will made in 1656 by one William Gray, of Newcastle, was discovered there, and, upon examination, it proved to be that of the historian. Further investigation enabled local antiquaries to collect together details of his birth and parentage, family connections, business relationships, and final ending, and to embody them in papers

contributed to the eleventh volume of the "Archæologia Æliana." Since then it has been easy to write about the earliest historian of Newcastle.

William Gray was the first-born child of a marriage which, on the 9th of December, 1600, was solemnised in St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, between Cuthbert Gray, merchant adventurer, son of John Gray, draper, and Elizabeth, daughter of Alderman William Huntley. In the church where his parents had been united, on the 21st of September, 1601, he was baptised, his sponsors being "Mr. Willm. Huntley, marchant and Alderman; Willm. Gray, draper; and the wife of Robert Ellison, marchant, or in her place Margaret Gray, Widow, being grandmother."

Cuthbert Gray, the father, carried on his business of a merchant in the Side, and, like other mercantile adventurers of the period, dealt in an infinite variety of commodities. The household books of Lord William Howard, the "Belted Will" of history, show that he supplied the family of that nobleman at Naworth with claret and coal-shovels, hops and hats, lint and lemons, muscadine and malaga, shoes and sprats, oil, sack, and vinegar. They show further that he was largely interested in coal-mining adventures round about Newcastle, in some of which Lord William was his landlord. When he died, carried off in the prime of life towards the end of April, 1623, he left a flourishing business and much property behind him. He had houses, lands, and mills outside Pandon Gate; two "mansions" in the Side; five burgages in Hillgate, Gateshead; a share with his wife's relations of pits at Dunstle and elsewhere, and an interest in mines at Newbiggen (near the Cowgate), East Denton, Higham Dykes (Ponteland), Newham near Whalton, Whitbie (or Fitbaw) Moor, in the Manor of Kenton, and Bellasis near Stannington. He was a shipowner, too, holding three-sixteenths of the *Diligence*, a twelfth of the *Unity*, and an eighteenth of the *Mary Susan*, all of Ipswich; a quarter of the *Prudence*, and six keels. And besides his own mills outside Pandon, he had a lease of a mill in Painter Heugh, while at his house in the Side was a miscellaneous stock-in-trade, with plate, linen, and ample household gear.

Eleven children had been born to Cuthbert and Elizabeth Gray, of whom nine were living at the date of their father's decease. William, the eldest, had attained the age of manhood, the rest were minors. He, no doubt, assisted his widowed mother to manage the diversified undertakings in which the father had been engaged.

Both their names appear in the "Howard Household Book" for 1634 as rendering to the Howard family services which indicate a business relationship, while the name of the widow is entered in the Naworth rent roll of the same year as tenant of the coal-mines of which her husband had been lessee. Between them they brought up the younger branches of the family in affluence. Besides William, there was only one son, named John, and he appears to have died early, for local history contains no trace of him, and in the parish registers he cannot be identified. Five of the daughters made good marriages. Margaret became the wife of Robert Proctor, and their son, named William after his uncle, was possibly the William Proctor who was Sheriff of Newcastle in 1684-85. Ellinor married Robert Harle, merchant. Elizabeth was united on the 29th March, 1635, to Robert Ellison, M.P. for Newcastle during the Commonwealth. A few months later Rebecca became the wife of William, brother of Sir Lionel Maddison, while Deborah married, January 1641-42, Robert Ile, merchant and apothecary.

How long the mother of William Gray lived to assist him in the affairs of the family cannot be accurately ascertained. In the "Archæologia," before mentioned, it is assumed that she died in 1636, although note is taken of an entry in the Journals of the House of Commons which favours a suspicion that she was living in November, 1644. Since that paper was written the suspicion that she lived longer than the year 1636 has been strengthened. In a deed which, through the kindness of Mr. F. W. Dendy, has been presented to the writer by Mr. George Handyside, William Gray, conveying to George Bulman, in December, 1643, some of the family property at Gateshead, inserts his mother's name in a covenant for peaceable enjoyment, and this could hardly have occurred if the old lady had been dead nine years. But, be that as it may, there came a time when neither the abilities of William Gray, nor the experience of his mother, if she lived so long, were able to stem the torrent of misfortune which overwhelmed the commerce of Tyneside. Civil war broke out; Newcastle became the theatre of military operations, which crippled local industry, and, for some time, practically suspended the coal trade. William Gray's collieries were shut up; commodities for the shop in the Side were unprocurable; nothing was left to him but houses and land, the revenues of which were precarious and uncertain. These, bearing their share of military impositions, he was able to retain, for we find him in July, 1647,

making an agreement with the Corporation to permit the conveyance of water from a conduit upon his property in Pandon Bank to Sandgate, and receiving as recompense a part of the waste there called the King's Dykes. The change from a position of opulence to comparative poverty weighed heavily upon him. For consolation he turned his thoughts to literature, seeking to drown his sorrows by writing a book. And what more suitable subject for a book than that which lay nearest to his heart—the history and deplorable condition of his native town? Printed by Stephen Bulkley, and dedicated to the burgesses and good men of Newcastle, the volume—a modest quarto of thirty-four pages—was issued in 1649, with the title—

CHOROGRAPHIA,
OR
A SVRVEY
OF
NEVVCASTLE
UPON TINE.

*The Estate of this Country under the Romans.*
*The Building of the famous Wall of the* Picts, *by the* Romans.
*The Ancient Town of* Pandon.
*A briefe Description* of the Town, Walls, Wards, Churches, Religious Houses, Streets, Markets, Fairs, River *and* Commodities; *with the* Suburbs.
*The Ancient and present Government of the Town.*

AS ALSO

A Relation of the County of *Northumberland*, which was the Bulwark for *England*, against the Inrodes of the *Scots*. Their many Castles and Towers. Their ancient Families and Names. Of the Tenure in Cornage. Of Cheviot-Hills. Of Tinedale and Reedsdale, with the Inhabitants.

*Potestas omnium ad* Cæsarem *pertinet, proprietas ad singulos.*

*Newcastle*, Printed by S. B. 1649.

Addressing himself "To the Candid Reader," the author devotes a couple of pages to an explanation of the motives which induced him to become a writer of local history:—

"I have adventured to Write of the Antiquity of this Town and Country, which by Reading and Experience, I have gathered out of the Ruine of Antiquity; that those Monuments which these late Warrs have obliterated and ruin'd may be left to Posterity, for *Tempus edax rerum.* I find a great difficulty in my undertakings, because the Records of this Country are but few, and confused, being so often Infested by the *Scots* and *Danes*, who consumed and fired all before them, wheresoever they came. Questionlesse many brave men have lived in this Town and Country, many memorable Acts of Chivalry have been atchieved; but they are all buried in oblivion. I hope the *Courteous Reader* will pardon the Faults committed herein. . . . I have begun the Work, I hope some of my Fellow Burgesses will Finish what I have begun; to the everlasting Memory of this famous Town."

Then turning upon the friends and neighbours who had criticised his efforts—in manuscript, it may be presumed—he proceeds to the end:—

"Some Cretiques have presumed to Correct and Blame me (with their indigested Zeale, and unknown Enthusiastique knowledge, of Chimæra's, in their Giddy Pericraniums) for Fables and Errours; as the Priest, that found it Written of St. *Paul, Demissus est per sportam*, mended his book, and made it *demissus est per portam*, because *Sporta* was an hard Word, and out of his Reading. But *ne sutor ultra crepidam*, let no Man professe that he knows not. Its true, He that Writes, resembleth a Man Acting his Part upon a Theator or Stage, where the Spectators have their Eyes fixing upon him, all observing his Gesture and Words, if he fail in either, presently he is Censured and Condemned. Lastly, we live in an Age, that Mechanicks will presume to Step into *Moses* Chaire and become Politians to contradict and controle whatsoever is acted and done according to the Laws Divine and Humane. One thing I desire of these Phantastiques, *Carpere vel noli mea, vel ede tua, Vale.*

"W. G."

An original copy of the "Chorographia" is now worth its weight in gold, but there are many reprints of it. One of them appears in the third volume of the "Harleian Miscellany," 1745. The Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, shortly after its formation in 1813, reprinted the book, and the Rev. John Hodgson read a paper the same year on the interleaved additions which the author had made

to the copy in the possession of the Ellison family. William Garrett issued it, in 1818, as one of the publications of the Newcastle Typographical Society. In 1884 Joseph Crawhall and Andrew Reid, republished it with such of the author's additions as they found in the Rev. John Hodgson's paper.

Some time after the publication of his book William Gray appears to have made a family arrangement with his brother-in-law, Robert Ellison, M.P. for Newcastle. The nature of that arrangement is not clearly expressed, but it is open to conjecture that his property, rescued from the wreck and ruin of civil war, passed into the hands of Mr. Ellison, upon conditions which relieved the historian from the cares of business, and enabled him to spend his declining years in his old home in the Side, which the Ellisons occupied. This we gather from his will, dated December 8th, 1656, seventeen years before he died. In that document he states that he has been "very much engaged and beholden" to his brother-in-law and sister "upon all occasions and straights whatsoever," and had found "much comfort and contentment in dwelling and cohabiting with them." He, therefore, bequeaths to Mr. Ellison his house in the Side "now in the tenure or occupation of the said Robert Ellison, or his assigns," another house in the same street, lands and houses in Pandon, and outside Pandon Gate, and all other his "lands, tenements, and hereditaments in any place whatsoever, within the Nation and Commonwealth of England." The full text of the will is printed in volume xi. of the "Archæologia Æliana," before quoted, and as he made no other, there seems to be good reason for the supposition that it formed the basis of an understanding with the hospitable brother-in-law. The inventory of his goods and chattels favours this view, for, apart from his purse, apparel, and library, he had barely £15 worth of household gear, and most of it was in two rooms—"his owne chamber" and "the next chamber."

William Gray died in February, 1673-74, aged 72, and was buried among his ancestors in the great church under the shadow of which he was born and baptised, and lived his troubled life. The register of burials at St. Nicholas' records his interment in the following brief line—

"Feb. 7, 1673. Wm. Gray, mchant., bur."

There were other William Grays in Newcastle about this time, but it cannot be doubted that the entry denotes the burial of the historian, for it was in that same month of February that his

inventory was drawn up, and that Robert Ellison proved his will. There is also a corroborative note in the books of the Merchants' Company, to the drapers' branch of which powerful fraternity, like his father and grandfather, he belonged—

"1673. William Gray, draper, ceases."

No portrait of the author of the "Chorographia" is known to exist, but, if we may judge from his handwriting, he was a man of firmness and resolution. Three of his autographs have been preserved, and clearness and boldness of outline are the characteristics of all of them. One of them is written in the Ellison volume; the others are in the possession of the present writer. These latter are attached to two deeds—(1) dated 1643, the conveyance to Bulman before mentioned; (2) dated 1659-60, the marriage settlement of his niece, Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Ellison, and her affianced husband, William Fenwick, of Stanton. When the nuptial agreement was signed, he was approaching his sixtieth year. The intended bride was reared under his own rooftree, and it must have been a happy moment when he handled the "gray goose quill," and wrote at the head of his relatives and friends, witnesses to the compact, the bold and legible signature—

## George Grieve,

POLITICAL AGITATOR.

A FAMILY named Grieve flourished in Alnwick for upwards of a century, and produced two or three notable men in the public life of that town. Ralph Grieve, the first of them whose name is recorded in local annals, occurs as entering the fellowship of merchants at Alnwick in 1667. He was an attorney, also, for there is a note of him in Tate's "History of Alnwick," preparing a conveyance of land to the Town Chamberlains. Later in life he made himself obnoxious to the governing body—the Four-and-Twenty—by opposing some of their schemes, which he deemed to be harmful or corrupt. For

example, in 1694, there was a poll over the election of a curate for the parish church. The Rev. Mr. Forster was the candidate supported by the older members of the Four-and-Twenty; the Rev. George Duncan was championed by Ralph Grieve. The vote would have been a drawn one had some additional freemen not been allowed to take part in it, for while Grieve had eleven members at his back, the opposite party had twenty-two altogether. When the election was completed all these voted that Grieve should be expelled for his "misdemeanours, abuses, and ill-behaviour to the town." But their favourite, the Rev. Mr. Forster, foreseeing that the situation would be an uneasy one, did not accept the curacy, and the other candidate, Mr. George Duncan, consequently became minister, and "a dogmatic cynical man he was," according to Tate's account, "with little kindly regard for those who differed from him." Eighteen years afterwards Ralph Grieve made his submission to the Four-and-Twenty, and was re-admitted as a member on paying a fine of sixpence.

Ralph Grieve was succeeded by his son Richard, also an attorney, who inherited, or acquired otherwise, the estates of Swarland and Swansfield, houses in Alnwick, and St. Thomas's lands, formerly belonging to Alnwick Abbey. Richard Grieve went into politics, and, like his father, did not please the local Sanhedrim. In 1748, when John Fenwick, M.P., died, Charles Lord Ossulston and Lancelot Allgood (already described under the head of "Allgood") fought for the seat. Richard Grieve was the chief election agent of Lord Ossulston; the Four-and-Twenty, or the majority of them, were supporters of Mr. Allgood. Early in the canvass, these worthies met to devise means of securing Allgood's election. Suspecting, according to their own account, that several persons intended to vote who were not legally qualified, they ordered five of their number to view the freeholds of such disputed persons, and estimate their value, and to report thereon. At the same time they threatened to disfranchise any free men who should vote without being duly qualified by law, and they determined that Mr. Allgood's party should have the sole use of the Town Hall and the rooms adjoining during the election. These measures, however, were not carried unanimously, only fourteen names being signed to the order. Richard Grieve was at the meeting, and had the daring to tell the fourteen that he would mob them and take the Town Hall by force. The Four-and-Twenty accord-

ingly prepared for war, but though they strengthened their defences by procuring a cross-bar for the Tolbooth, Grieve carried his threat into effect, and on the morning of the election, at the head of a party of Ossulston's friends, armed with bludgeons, attacked Allgood's party, and after a desperate struggle and some bloodshed drove them out of the Town Hall. The Sheriff, at the close of the poll, returned a majority of twenty-six for Lord Ossulston, but the opposite party petitioned, and Mr. Allgood was declared duly elected. Two days after the election the Four-and-Twenty met, and declaring that Richard Grieve's conduct had been "partial and villainous, and in defiance of all ties both human and divine," so as to render him unfit to be a member of society, they disfranchised him, declared his seat in the Common Council vacant, and ordered a suit to be entered against him, "touching the want of repairs at the Far Moor House Farm," which he occupied as a tenant. Then, having struck down the nobler quarry, they stooped to humbler game, and dismissed the Waits, or privileged minstrels, whose business it was to parade and play by night in the streets about Christmas and New Year times, and to attend at weddings and feasts. These poor men were dismissed because one of them had had the audacity to vote for Ossulston.

George Grieve, a younger son of Richard Grieve, born at Alnwick, on the 9th of March, 1748, inherited part of the Alnwick property left by his father, and lived for some time at Swansfield. Brought up in the advanced politics of his family, he distinguished himself at an early age by the advocacy of extreme views in public policy and local administration. At the Parliamentary contest for the county in 1774, although only twenty-six years of age, he was one of the leading personages. The freeholders were willing enough that Algernon Percy, eldest son of the Duke of Northumberland, should be one of their representatives, but they claimed the privilege of choosing the other, and they were indignant when, contrary to arrangements, Sir John Delaval, who had, while in Parliament, supported the Duke's views, was brought forward in conjunction with Lord Percy. At a county meeting held at Morpeth on July 26th, 1774, George Grieve was the principal orator, and he boldly charged the chiefs of the opposite party with broken faith and illegal interference. By a large majority, Sir William Middleton and William Fenwick were declared fit representatives of the county. So spoke the popular voice; but both parties went to the poll, and for thirteen days Alnwick was the scene of wild contention, which

resulted in the election of Percy and Middleton, Sir John Delaval polling within sixteen of Sir William Middleton, and Fenwick being at the bottom. So exciting was the struggle that, for the first time in the history of Northumbrian electioneering, there was published—

"A Complete Collection of All the Papers which have Appeared from the Different Parties in the Present Contest for Members for the County of Northumberland. Newcastle: Printed in the Year 1774."

This collection, of 143 octavo pages, with a poll-book of 48 pages attached, issued by Thomas Slack of the *Chronicle*, and edited by George Grieve, forms a respectable and amusing volume. Thomas Saint of the *Courant*, too, published an edition of the poll-book in quarto, and as he distinguished the votes for Percy and Delaval by an asterisk (*), and those for Middleton and Fenwick by a dash (—), Grieve turned poet on the occasion, and as appears by a MS. in the writer's possession, delivered himself of the following verses:—

"To please Sir John, and grace his cause,
Poor servile Tommy Noddy,
With visage pert, and lanthorn jaws,
Would sell both soul and body.

To court his favour, and the great,
With *stars* their votes he matches;
Whilst those who Middleton would seat,
He only marks by *scratches*.

Yet, tho' to prove his paltry spleen,
This silly reptile dares;
Sir John has felt their *scratches* keen,
Which made him curse his *stars*."

When George Grieve applied for his freedom in 1769, the wrath of the Four-and-Twenty against the father had not yet grown cool, for he was refused admission to the freelege, on the plea that Richard was disfranchised upwards of twenty years before. But George Grieve was not inclined to sit quiet under what he considered to be an injustice, so he sought legal redress. The Four-and-Twenty took the opinion of counsel on the matter, and that was unfavourable to their proceeding, but nevertheless they determined to go on. The decision of the court was against them, and they had to pay, besides their own expenses £104 7s. 3d., the taxed costs of their opponent, and to enable them to do so they were obliged to borrow £200 more.

Some years before the election there had been a dispute between the Duke of Northumberland and the Four-and-Twenty respecting a right of common. Collingwood Forster, the Duke's agent, had been the means of effecting a compromise, and the Four-and-Twenty had rewarded him by giving to him and his heirs three acres and twelve perches of land, part of Alnwick Moor, which was thenceforward known as Forster's Close. This land was enjoyed by Forster and his descendants for sixteen years, but when George Grieve took up his freedom in 1772, after he had gained his case, and rode the boundary of the moor on St. Mark's Day, he, along with other young freemen, broke gaps in the close and rode round it as parcel of the common. The fence, indeed, still remained, and George was far from satisfied to let it do so. So on the 21st of October, 1778, he invited the freemen to meet him in the Town Hall, and it was then resolved to remove the fence entirely. Accordingly, on the following day, George Grieve, aided by numbers of the freemen, effectually pulled it down, and restored Forster's Close to the common.

Falling into pecuniary difficulties, George Grieve sold his share of the Alnwick lands, and went abroad, about the year 1780. He had been a great admirer of John Wilkes, and a strenuous asserter of the principle of civil and religious liberty, as subsequently formulated by the founders of the "Friends of the People." Disgusted with the turn which public affairs took, and firmly persuaded that Britain was in a hopeless decline, he found his way across the Atlantic, where the thirteen British-American provinces had declared themselves "free, sovereign, and independent." Here he became a citizen of the United States, and formed an acquaintance with Franklin, Jefferson, Paine, and other apostles of Freedom, who held opinions similar to his own. After a residence of some years in America, where he seems to have, at least partly, supported himself by literary work, he returned to Europe, sent, it is said, on a mission to Holland, and about 1783 found his way to Paris. France was then in the premonitory throes of revolution, and Grieve found a field in Paris for the exercise of his abilities such as he could not have found anywhere else. He became a member of the Jacobin Club; he was on intimate terms with Marat, whom he had possibly met at Newcastle; and he held friendly intercourse with Robespierre, Couthon, and St. Just, the three chief actors in the Reign of Terror. One of George Grieve's first acts during the Revolution was to attack Madame du Barry, the mistress of Louis XV., who, from the date of

her formal presentation at Court in 1769, till the death of her royal paramour in 1774, was the veritable queen-regnant of France. Grieve found her at Louveciennes, and wormed out of her Hindoo servant a great many of her secrets, which he afterwards used to procure her arrest. According to the *Edinburgh Review*, Grieve escorted the municipality to the bar of the Convention on the 1st of July, 1793, denounced the lady and obtained authority to apprehend her, but a petition from the villagers, who had profited by her residence, procured her release. Thereupon Grieve issued a pamphlet describing her luxurious life, and holding her up to odium as a conspirator. He signed himself "Defender of the brave sansculottes of Louveciennes, friend of Franklin and Marat, factious (*factieux*) and anarchist of the first water, and disorganiser of despotism for twenty years in both hemispheres." In September Grieve secured a fresh warrant against her, and singularly enough rode part of the way to Paris in the hackney carriage with her. The inhabitants again petitioned for her liberation, but this time in vain. Grieve superintended the search for jewels concealed in dung-heaps, and got up the case against her. His manuscripts, still preserved in the National Archives, are in irreproachable French. Not merely did he collect evidence, but he was himself a witness, and had it not been for his relentless persecution it seems likely that she would have been left unmolested.

"Grieve was to have dined with Marat on the very day of his assassination, and he unwarrantably denounced the Jacobin ex-priest Roux as Charlotte Corday's accomplice, on the ground of having met him at Marat's house and seen him 'look furious'; but this denunciation had no effect. He is said, however, to have boasted that he had brought seventeen persons to the guillotine. Five months after Robespierre's fall he was arrested at Amiens and taken to Verseilles, where twenty-two depositions were given against him, but on unknown grounds the prosecution was stopped."

Flying from France, Grieve made his way back to America, and in 1796 was residing in Virginia, where he seems to have employed part of his time in translating into English the "Travels in North America" of the Marquis de Chastellux, but which, unknown to him, had already been done into English, in 1787, by one John Kent. It has been said that he "came over to England in order to assist Jack the Painter in firing the arsenals of his native country"; but this is a calumny, involving a manifest anachronism; for Jack was

hung in chains at Portsmouth Dock gate on the 10th of March, 1778, which was about two years before Grieve left England for France.

A scholar and a man of talent, holding a respectable station in society, and held in esteem by many of the gentry of Northumberland, Mr. Grieve is said to have been once proposed as Sheriff for London or Middlesex. That he was an earnest, uncompromising political agitator is perfectly true; but there is no reliable evidence to show that he was anything more. After a residence of a year or two in America, he came back to Europe, and though there is some uncertainty as to his movements, he is said to have settled definitely in Brussels, where he continued to reside till the day of his death, some time in the year 1809.

# Timothy Hackworth,

LOCOMOTIVE ENGINEER AND LOCAL PREACHER.

"The steam engine . . . is the king of machines, and a permanent realisation of the genii of eastern fable, whose supernatural powers were occasionally at the command of man."—DR. ARNOTT.

THREE natives of Tyneside, born in adjoining parishes, with less than eight years' interval separating the oldest from the youngest of them, were the chief instruments in creating a social and commercial revolution to which the history of mankind offers no parallel. Whatsoever may be their respective claims to priority of invention or utility of design, whatsoever opinion may be formed as to the degree in which each of them contributed to the general result, these three industrial heroes—William Hedley, George Stephenson, and Timothy Hackworth—undoubtedly solved amongst them a problem that had lingered long in the lap of experiment and expectation; they demonstrated the practical and profitable adaptation of the power of steam to locomotion, and gave us our present railway system.

Timothy Hackworth was born at Wylam, where his father, John Hackworth, was foreman of the colliery blacksmiths, on the 22nd December, 1786. He received his education, such as it was, at the village school, and, at the age of fourteen, was apprenticed to the owners of the colliery to learn his father's trade, and to follow a calling in which his progenitors had distinguished themselves for many generations. Two years after he had entered upon his indentures the father died, and upon Timothy devolved the care of providing for his mother and the family. He was a studious and painstaking lad, whose devotion to his work and his home secured the goodwill of his fellow-workmen, attracted the sympathy of his neighbours, and, above all, won the confidence of his employers. As soon as his apprenticeship expired, in 1807, the colliery authorities rewarded his diligence, intelligence, and skill, by raising him to his father's post of foreman smith.

While Timothy Hackworth was serving under indentures, colliery managers were speculating upon the probabilities of using steam as a motive-power in the haulage of coal. Christopher Blackett, the

owner, and William Hedley, the viewer, of Wylam Colliery, took a lively and intelligent interest in the matter. So early as 1805 a locomotive engine had been made to Mr. Blackett's order at Whinfield's Foundry in Gateshead. It was a failure, but Mr. Blackett was not discouraged. Taking up the wooden rails of his waggonway and replacing them by cast-iron plates, he made Wylam Colliery the theatre of interesting experiments. Mr. Hedley had proved to him, by repeated trials, that the law of gravitation was the true basis of locomotion—in other words, that smooth wheels would work upon smooth rails by pressure of the weight above them. In 1812,

Mr. Blackett directed that Hackworth and his smiths, assisted by Thomas Waters, a Gateshead ironfounder, should build a locomotive from Mr. Hedley's design. This engine, constructed with a cast-iron boiler, a single cylinder, a fly-wheel, and a straight fire-tube, was tried in February, 1813, and proved defective. Another engine was put in hand, and Hackworth, helped by Jonathan Forster, the colliery enginewright, succeeded to admiration. Wrought-iron was used for the boiler, the fire-tube was made to return to the chimney, which was placed at the same end of the boiler as the furnace, and, thus equipped, the engine drew eight loaded coal waggons after it, at the rate of four miles an hour. The victory was won. Mr. Hedley had

demonstrated the soundness of his ideas; Hackworth had brought them into effective operation; the era of steam locomotion had begun.

While these experiments were in progress Timothy Hackworth had received serious impressions on the subject of religion. In a list of candidates for confirmation at Ovingham in 1801, now in the possession of Mr. Ralph Nelson, of Bishop Auckland, his name appears, but at the beginning of 1811 he united himself to the Methodist body, and soon afterwards, having developed considerable gifts of speaking and exhorting, his name was entered in the Circuit Plan as a local preacher. Fidelity to his religious convictions severed the tie which bound him to Wylam Colliery. One Sunday, in 1815, as we read in Lawson's "Wesleyan Local Preachers," he was passing the pit to fulfil a preaching appointment, when a fellow-workman accosted him with, "Where's thee gannin'?" Hackworth answered, "I am going to preach." "Is thee not gannin' to de this wark?" "I have other work than that to do to-day." "Weel, if thoo'll not, somebody else will, and thoo'll lose thee job." "Lose, or not lose, I shall not break the Sabbath," rejoined Hackworth, and passed on to his engagement. The man's prediction proved to be accurate. The owner of Wylam Colliery, or his representative, discharged a most faithful servant because he refused to work on a Sunday.

Dismissed from Wylam, Mr. Hackworth obtained the foremanship of the smiths at Walbottle Colliery, and there he remained till 1824. In the meantime George Stephenson, improving upon the Wylam experiments, had established a great reputation as a railway pioneer, and had his hands full of business. At the date just mentioned he was undertaking a survey for the Liverpool and Manchester Railway, and required a competent man to superintend, during his absence, the manufactory of steam engines which he had opened in Newcastle. He applied to the agent of Walbottle Colliery for the loan of Timothy Hackworth, and the latter, nothing loth, accepted the position. So well did he manage the concern that Stephenson offered him strong inducements—half his own share in the manufactory, it is said—to remain. For reasons of his own, Hackworth declined, refused at the same time an offer to accompany an exploring expedition to the gold and silver mines of Venezuela, New Granada, and Trinidad, and determined to start in business for himself.

His arrangements for commencing to build engines were approaching completion when he received, through Mr. Stephenson's recommendation, an offer of the post of resident engineer to the Stockton and Darlington Railway Company. This was an office worthy of his acceptance, and he closed with the offer. In the books of the Company, under date May 13th, 1825, is the following record of his appointment:—"John Dixon reports that he has arranged with Timothy Hackworth to come and settle on the line, particularly to have the superintendence of the permanent and locomotive engines. The preliminary arrangement as regards salary is £150 per annum, the Company to find a house, and pay for his house rent and fire."

At Darlington, Timothy Hackworth began a system of laborious research and rigorous investigation into the principles of locomotive mechanism and their adaptation to the requirements of traffic, which made the Stockton and Darlington line famous in the history of railway enterprise. Five miles of the railway consisted of inclined planes, worked with stationary engines, and to the safe and effectual arrangement of these planes he devoted in the first instance the greater part of his time and energies. He designed double-acting drums for the Brusselton Incline, and so fixed a drum upon the Etherley Incline that it worked the coal-waggons, up and down a long bank and a short bank, with a minimum of strain upon the engine. Among other of his devices were the discharge-hook by which the ropes could be detached from waggons in motion, the drag-frame attached to last carriages in ascending inclines, with the object of arresting precipitate descent in case of accident, and the switch, fixed a short distance from the top of inclines, by which waggons could be thrown off the line if they happen to run over the bank head.

But his greatest achievement on the Stockton and Darlington line was the construction of an engine on a new principle, "the boldest step in mechanical construction ever concentrated in a single effort." The locomotives in use upon the line worked so badly that the directors contemplated the use of fixed engines over the whole of their mileage. Hackworth expressed confidence in his own ability to build a locomotive that would travel with greater speed, draw a heavier load, and consume less fuel than the imperfect specimens which the Company were running. Permission was granted, and he constructed, in 1827, the engine celebrated in railway history as the "Royal George." In this engine, departing from the usual plan of

having two upright cylinders working on different shafts, Hackworth inverted his cylinders, and, placing them on opposite sides of the boiler, applied their connecting-rods to actuate the same axle-tree. At the same time, in lieu of the straight flue employed in Blenkinsop's and Stephenson's engines, he adopted the return fire-tube which was used by Trevethick and Hedley; and by throwing the escaping steam into the chimney through a narrow orifice, he greatly augmented the force of the steam blast, and consequently the rapidity of combustion in the furnace. Finally, he placed the engine upon six wheels, all coupled, which yielded an increase of adhesion upon the rails in every state of the weather. The "Royal George" was "the first of a new type of engine, and the nearest approach to the modern locomotive of any that had yet been built."

Although the superiority of locomotive over stationary engines was practically demonstrated by the construction of Hackworth's masterpiece, the question of their relative utility continued to be debated with considerable vigour. The Liverpool and Manchester Company were not satisfied with their locomotives, and they appointed a deputation of engineers to visit the North of England and inspect the engines at work there. The report of the deputation being unfavourable to the locomotive, Mr. Robert Stephenson applied to Hackworth for arguments in its favour. He informed him that the deputation "state it positively as their opinion that a locomotive engine of ten horse-power will not convey more than ten tons, exclusive of the waggons, at the rate of ten miles an hour in winter time, and in summer the same engine will take 13½ tons." And he added, "Let me have your general opinion as to the locomotive engine system. Is it as convenient as any other? Would you consider 13½ tons in summer and ten tons in winter a fair performance for a good locomotive engine?" To which request Hackworth sent the following reply:—

"The statement that a complete locomotive will take but 10 tons at 10 miles an hour is quite at variance with facts. Four of our waggons, laden for depôts, frequently take from 12 to 13 tons of coals exclusive of the waggons. Our engines never take less than 16 laden waggons in winter, and in summer from 20 to 24 and 32 laden, and can maintain a speed of five miles an hour. Engines thus loaded have frequently travelled at nine miles an hour, sometimes more. I am verily convinced that a swift engine, upon a well-conditioned railway will combine profit and simplicity, and will

afford such facility as has not hitherto been known. I am well satisfied that an engine, of the weight you mention, will convey, on a level, in winter, 30 tons of goods 10 miles per hour, exclusive of carriages, and 40 tons in summer exclusive of carriages. . . . I hear the Liverpool company have concluded to use fixed engines. Some will look on this with surprise; but, as you can well afford it, it is all for the good of the science and of the trade to try both plans. Do not discompose yourself, my dear sir; if you express your manly, firm, decided opinion, you have done your part as their adviser; and if it happen to be read some day in the newspapers 'Whereas the Liverpool and Manchester Railway has been strangled by ropes,' we shall not accuse you of guilt in being accessory either before or after the fact."

In the celebrated trial of locomotives upon the Liverpool and Manchester Railway in 1829, Hackworth entered the "Sanspareil," an engine built upon the same principle as the "Royal George," but it broke down, and the prize of £500 was awarded to the "Rocket," built by George and Robert Stephenson. The "Sanspareil" is described as "a marvel of mechanism, considering the conditions under which it was made." It was sold to the Bolton Railway Company, after it had done some service elsewhere, and gave great satisfaction.

In another competition, which was opened the same year by his employers, Hackworth was more successful. The Stockton and Darlington Company offered 150 and 75 guineas respectively for the best and second best plans, sections, and estimates for staiths, machinery, etc., to be used in the shipment of coals at Middlesbrough, and he obtained the first prize. Other remarkable achievements in locomotive engineering followed. A new engine, the "Globe," with which he opened the branch line from Stockton to Middlesbrough, showed a marked improvement, and still further ingenuity was displayed in the "Majestic," "Lord Brougham," "William IV.," etc. In some of these engines Hackworth introduced a number of small copper tubes, by which the area of heating surface was increased; in others these tubes were made to return, with the object of still further augmenting the heating surface; in all of them he shortened the stroke, and made the whole structure more compact, and more easy to manipulate.

When Mr. Hackworth had given to the Stockton and Darlington line nine years of service as engineer and locomotive manager, the

conditions of his engagement were changed. He had won the entire confidence of the directors, and in 1834 they placed their machinery and workshops at his disposal, and contracted with him for the entire haulage of the line. The arrangement lasted till 1840, when he erected the Soho Engine Works, Shildon, and commenced business on his own account. At the Jubilee celebration of the Stockton and Darlington line, September 27th, 1875, two of the engines which he built for the Company on the eve of his departure to his own establishment, the "Auckland" and the "Dart," were exhibited. Although thirty-six years had passed away since they left his hands, they were described as still capable of service, and one of them, the "Dart," as actually running in daily use.

To Timothy Hackworth, not the locomotive engine alone, but the whole system of colliery haulage is indebted for many ingenious contrivances. Improvements equally as effective as those which he introduced into the working of inclined planes, he brought into operation among winding engines and general mining machinery. He had a great fancy for the rotary engine, and in 1836 patented one. About the more economical and effective smelting of iron, too, he had original ideas, but his active labours with the locomotive did not afford him the necessary time to elaborate them.

Throughout his life, Mr. Hackworth retained his connection as a Methodist class leader and local preacher. "Naturally endowed with great moral courage and fortitude of mind," writes one who knew him, "he possessed a fluency and happiness of expression, with a thread of delicate humour and anecdote pervading his discourses, which charmed all who listened to his artless eloquence. He loved retirement, and preferred the joys of private life to worldly honours, which caused him, though a public character, not to be universally known. Constitutionally healthy and robust, his life was one of great activity, both mental and physical; every moment was pressed into service."

In this happy state of mind and body he continued till his death, which occurred after a few days' illness, on the 7th of July, 1850, in the sixty-fourth year of his age.

# William Anthony Hails,

## A POLEMICAL SCHOOLMASTER.

THE self-taught genius who bore the name of William Anthony Hails, and was known to our forefathers at the beginning of the century as one of the keenest controversialists in the North of England, was born in Newcastle on the 24th of May, 1766. His father was a working shipwright, a man of good sense and simple manners; his mother was a woman of great natural ability, though of delicate constitution; his godfather was a clergyman—the Rev. Emanuel Potter, lecturer at St. Thomas's Chapel, Bridge End, and afterwards Vicar of Tynemouth. A crippled arm and an obstinate internal disorder kept him at home at the time when other boys were receiving their preliminary education, and it was not until he reached his eleventh year that he was able to attend school. Meanwhile, his mother taught him his letters, and his father gave him some instruction in writing and arithmetic, so that when the time arrived for him to begin school life he could read, write, and sum, though imperfectly. He was making satisfactory progress in repairing these defects of his childhood when his mother died (June, 1778), and he was taken to Howdon Dock, where his father was employed in the construction of the *Syren* frigate of twenty-four guns. A brief term of schooling at Wallsend ended his educational course, and in his sixteenth year he was bound apprentice to the Dock Company to learn his father's trade of a shipwright.

Young Hails had obtained at school a smattering of geometry, algebra, trigonometry, etc., and now he went deeper into those subjects, adding the study of hydrography and nautical astronomy, with the object of following in manhood the life of a seaman. These recreations led him into natural history, and the pursuit of that branch of knowledge induced him to attempt drawings of the subjects illustrated in ornithology, entomology, and botany. Handling the adze and the auger was not favourable to delicacy of touch; absence of verbal instruction was not conducive to accuracy of detail and colouring; yet, considering the source from which they came, his drawings of plants, flowers, and birds, and especially of lepidopterous insects, were remarkable for boldness and fidelity.

His father, who had been a school-fellow and companion of Charles Hutton, the mathematician, encouraged him in his studies, and gave him such pecuniary aids to improvement as could be spared from the scanty family income. Before he had attained his nineteenth year he was considered to be a sort of local prodigy.

About this time young Hails came under the influence of the Methodist revival. His only sister joined the denomination, and he became assiduous in his attendance at their services. Under the guidance of the Wesleyan preachers he commenced a serious study of the Scriptures, and while so engaged it happened that a converted

Jew was announced to preach in Newcastle. He walked up from Wallsend to the Groat Market Presbyterian Chapel to hear him, and that journey was the turning-point of his life. The preacher quoted Hebrew, and gave to a passage in the Psalms a translation differing from the authorised version. Thereupon the Wallsend apprentice became fired with a passion to learn Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, so that he might read the sacred writings in the original, and compare them with the versions of the early Church. With the aid of old grammars and lexicons, supplemented later on by a borrowed copy of Athias's Hebrew Bible, he managed to acquire a

knowledge of these three languages—knowledge which, improved in after years, enabled him to exchange the drudgery of his occupation for lighter toil, and to become a man of mark in Newcastle.

At the expiration of his apprenticeship, Mr. Hails, abandoning his early idea of becoming a navigator, removed from Howdon to South Shields, married, and settled down to work in the shipyards. Marriage did not interfere with his studies; on the contrary, the responsibilities which it entailed nerved him to higher endeavour. Having formed a resolution of obtaining a clerkship in some commercial house, he cultivated a clear and legible handwriting, and made himself acquainted with approved systems of bookkeeping. But, although his undoubted genius brought him friends and admirers, it did not enable him to realise his wishes. It was not until the summer of 1798 that he saw his way to utilise the knowledge he had acquired as a means of earning his daily bread. The post of writing-master in a Newcastle boarding-school became vacant; through the influence of the French teacher in the establishment—one of the numerous exiles who found shelter in this country from the fury of the Revolution—he obtained it, and, returning to his native town, began life anew as a schoolmaster.

It was a common practice in those days for teachers of special subjects in boarding-schools to supplement their incomes by private tuition. In this way they formed connections which generally led to school-keeping enterprises on their own account. Mr. Hails followed the usual course, and in due time the opportunity of opening a school of his own came to him. A schoolroom, which had been erected by his father's friend, Dr. Charles Hutton, wanted a tenant. Mr. Hails took it, his friends gave him a fair start, and thenceforward, for many years, Hails's School, No. 11, Westgate Street, held its place among the educational establishments of Newcastle.

Being thus comfortably launched upon an entirely new career, he turned his thoughts to authorship. He began to contribute to periodical literature, and in 1806 printed a volume of poetry with the title of—

"Nugæ Poeticæ. Consisting of a Serio-comic Poem on the Pursuits of Mankind: With several small Original Pieces on Various Subjects. By W. A. Hails, Writing-Master, and Teacher of various Branches of the Mathematics. 'Ex urbe Nazaretha potest aliquid boni esse? Dicit ei Philippus, veni et vide—*John.*' Gateshead: Printed and Sold by J. Marshall: Sold also by the Booksellers in Newcastle and its Vicinity; and by Longman, Hurst, Rees, and Orme, London. Price Three Shillings." 8vo, 88 pp.

Later in the same year he issued—

"An Inquiry concerning the Invention of the Life Boat, including Remarks on Mr. Greathead's Report of the Evidence and other Proceedings in Parliament respecting it: With a Description of the Boat, Principles of the Construction, etc. To which are added Authentic Documents, never before Published, which effectually set aside Mr. Greathead's Claim to the Invention." 8vo. Gateshead: J. Marshall, 1806.

The following year he published a rhapsodical pamphlet of 24 pages, entitled "A Voice from the Ocean: The Ruins of Tyre to the Inhabitants of Great Britain," and in 1809 a tract with a title in Hebrew, forming No. 6 of the series issued by the Society for Promoting Christianity among the Jews. Meanwhile, with increasing opportunities for research at his command, he resumed his study of Biblical languages, and taught himself to read the Arabic and Syriac versions of the Scriptures, and the Samaritan Codex of the Pentateuch. His knowledge of Hebrew and cognate Oriental languages brought him under the notice of the Rev. Abraham John Valpy, editor of the "Delphin Latin Classics," and conductor of *Valpy's Classical Journal.* Through the influence of this accomplished scholar he was induced to contribute to the *Journal* a number of letters on Biblical criticism. The series began with a critique upon Dr. Adam Clarke's interpretation of the curse pronounced upon the serpent in the third chapter of Genesis, and was followed by letters on Mr. Bellamy's mistakes in Hebrew translation, Dr. G. S. Clarke's revival of Jewish interpretations of prophecies relating to the Messiah, Sir William Drummond's dissertation upon Genesis xlix., and Mr. Collit's defence of Mr. Bellamy's criticisms. The learning which Mr. Hails displayed in these contributions, the tenacity with which he maintained his views, and the dogmatic style in which he expressed himself, excited surprise in the world of letters. It seemed incredible that so much erudition and self-confidence could emanate from a man who had missed even the ordinary schooling of an artisan, who had worked the greater part of his life as a journeyman shipwright, had received little or no private tuition, and had never been more than a few miles away from his native river.

Having flushed his pen in religious controversy, Mr. Hails entered the field against all sorts of combatants. If anybody ventured to question the accuracy of the accepted translation of the Scriptures, suggested preferable readings of obscure passages therein, or expounded heterodox views of Evangelical doctrine, he was ready

with volleys of Hebrew and Greek to defend the authorised version and maintain the rigid accuracy of his own orthodoxy. In 1813 he commenced an attack upon the Unitarians, to which body, under the ministry of the Rev. William Turner, most of the leaders of thought and action in Newcastle belonged. He opened fire with a pamphlet of 84 pages, bearing the title of

"The Pre-existence and Deity of the Messiah Defended on the Indubitable Evidence of the Prophets and Apostles, in answer to a Socinian Pamphlet entitled 'A Short Statement of the Scripture Doctrine of the Unity of God, etc.'" Newcastle: J. Marshall, Old Flesh Market.

The "Socinian Pamphlet" had been written by a Unitarian minister named Campbell, who, venturing to defend his position against Mr. Hails's strictures, was answered in a still larger tractate, extending to 130 pages, entitled

"Socinianism Unscriptural; Being an Examination of Mr. Campbell's attempt to explode the Scripture Doctrine of Human Depravity, the Atonement, etc." Newcastle: J. Marshall, 1813.

Religious disputations seem to have been a favourite recreation in Newcastle at the beginning of the present century, and in order that the outside public might participate in the enjoyment, the disputants resorted to pamphleteering. There was a notable local dispute in 1817 between two Antinomian preachers, the Rev. Mr. Briggs and the Rev. Mr. Jamieson. Into the controversy a sarcastic writer, using the *nom de plume* of "Timothy Search-Truth," obtruded himself. As this gentleman enunciated advanced, not to say heterodox, views upon the burning question of everlasting punishment, Mr. Hails set to work to reply to him. Thirty-six pages of trenchant criticism were levelled at Timothy, with a title-page headed—

"The Scorner Reproved, or an Examination of Timothy Search-Truth's Strictures on the Controversy between Mess. Briggs and Jamieson." Newcastle: J. Marshall, 1817.

The following year Mr. Hails returned to his attack upon Unitarianism in the form of

"A Letter to the Rev. Wm. Turner, Occasioned by the Publication of Two Discourses Preached at the 6th Annual Meeting of the Association of Scottish Unitarian Christians at Glasgow." Newcastle: J. Marshall, etc., 1818.

Mr. Turner was busy at this time with his seventeenth yearly series of lectures at the Literary and Philosophical Society, and as he

took no notice of the "Letter," Mr. Hails fired a parting arrow from his ever-strung bow, quitting the field with

"The Claim of Christianity to the Respect of Mankind, or Unitarian Principles Investigated. Together with Remarks on Mr. Tyrrwhit's two Tracts, republished by the Unitarian Tract Society of Newcastle, in a Second Letter to the Rev. Wm. Turner." Newcastle: J. Marshall, etc., 1819.

In 1820, Mr. Hails wrote several letters to the *Congregational Magazine* in defence of Dr. Kennicott's translations of certain passages in the Old Testament, which had been attacked by a critic in the *Eclectic Review*. Later on, he contributed similar articles to the *Jewish Expositor* and other periodicals, and in 1827 published, through the Newcastle Religious Tract Society, a sermon on "The First Commandment." The last and greatest effort of his pen was a volume of four hundred pages in reply to Volney's "Ruin of Empires." Of this elaborate work Bishop Barrington is said to have written in terms of commendation, describing the author as "the best Hebrew scholar in the North of England," while a reviewer in the *Newcastle Magazine* remarked that it might with propriety have been entitled "The Ruin of Volney's Ruins," for a more complete refutation of the French philosopher had never been offered to the public.

Although tending towards Calvinism in his religious views, Mr. Hails associated himself throughout his life with the Methodist denomination, believing, as he expressed it, that the Wesleyan system was "admirably calculated to maintain and spread true religion in the land." He was for many years a class-leader and local preacher in that body, and secretary of the "Newcastle Benevolent Society for Visiting and Relieving the Sick and Distressed Poor"—an institution which, although undenominational in its character, was chiefly supported by Methodist people. Those who knew him described him as "somewhat angular in his mental formation," and of a "retiring and distant disposition," with a stiff air of independence in his manners which disqualified him for courting public favour, and permitted less able but more obsequious persons to overtop him in his profession."

Mr. Hails died in his house in Blenheim Street, Newcastle, on the 30th August, 1845, at the good old age of 79 years.

# Christopher and Robert Hall,

BAPTIST MINISTERS.

THE village of Black Heddon, three miles north of Stamfordham, was the birthplace of two brothers—Christopher and Robert Hall, who, in the latter part of last century, filled prominent positions as preachers in the rising denomination of Baptists. The elder of them, Christopher Hall, after a successful ministerial career in the North of England, rose to eminence in the Nonconformist pulpits of the metropolis; the other brother, Robert, became the father of a Baptist divine whose intellectual powers placed him in the first rank of pulpit orators, and whose popularity in his day resembled that of Spurgeon in our own time—the Rev. Robert Hall, of Leicester and Bristol. If for no other purpose than that of showing the Northumbrian descent of one of the greatest Dissenting preachers of his time, a sketch of the career of the brothers Hall must be included in our series.

Christopher Hall, born in 1724, and Robert Hall, born four years later, were the sons, by a second marriage, of a respectable farmer, whose ancestors had lived at Black Heddon and cultivated the same land for several generations. Their father died in 1739, and their mother, marrying again, carried on the farm, and brought up her family in the "godly, righteous, and sober life" of the Presbyterian denomination at Stamfordham. When Christopher was approaching the age of manhood, the Rev. Isaac Garner, assistant minister to the Baptist churches at Hamsterley, Rowley, and Hindley, visited Stamfordham with the object of establishing a congregation there. In this design he succeeded. Christopher Hall was one of the young men who were attracted to the Baptist place of worship, and in time he became a steady attender at the services.

Adopting Baptist views, and displaying considerable mental capacity, with an inclination towards the ministry, young Hall was invited to stay with Mr. Garner at Hamsterley, in order that he might receive instruction, and prepare for future usefulness. In August, 1745, he accepted the call, was baptised, and, under Mr. Garner's tuition, commenced to exercise his gifts in public. For some time he preached at Juniper Dye House, near Hexham, the

residence of Mr. William Angus, one of the wide-spreading Baptist family of that name. He also assisted Mr. Garner to build up the congregation at Stamfordham, and to supply the spiritual needs of his co-religionists at Styford, Prudhoe, Horsley, and other villages scattered up and down the valley of the Tyne. In 1747 he married Mr. Angus's sister Catharine, and removed to Wigton as assistant to the aged minister of the Baptists in the adjoining villages of Broughton and Oulton.

At Wigton, influenced by a Scottish preacher, the Rev. David Fernie, who had succeeded him as co-worker with Mr. Garner, he imbibed high Calvinistic doctrines. These proved unacceptable to the majority of his hearers, and in April, 1753, he accepted an invitation to become the minister of a Baptist community which he had himself gathered together at Whitehaven. There he remained till 1760, when he removed to Harvey Lane Chapel, Leicester, in which, at a later date, officiated for twenty years his more celebrated nephew, Robert Hall. The following summer he went to Rye, in Sussex, and after a brief stay there was appointed to the spiritual oversight of a congregation at Luton, in Bedfordshire. To Luton Baptists he preached for six years, and then was called to London as successor to eccentric John Allen, author of "A Compendious Descant of the Auto-genial and Theanthropos Glories of Christ," etc., who had worn out the patience of his flock in Boar's Yard, Petticoat Lane, and was coming down to Newcastle to take charge of the church assembling in the old meeting-house in Tuthill Stairs.

Mr. Hall took charge of the church in Petticoat Lane on the 3rd October, 1769. His ministrations were attended with such success that about three years afterwards the congregation removed to a larger meeting-house in Glasshouse Yard, Aldersgate Street. Two years later, they erected a place of worship for themselves in Crown Alley, Moorfields, and continued there till Christmas, 1783, when, the site being required by the municipal authorities, they migrated to Hope Street, Spitalfields. Here Mr. Hall continued to preach till his death. On the 17th August, 1786, his useful and laborious life came to an end, and his remains were buried in the great Nonconformist Necropolis at Bunhill Fields.

Robert Hall, younger son of the Black Heddon farmer, did not at first follow his brother into the Baptist community. Living with an uncle at Kirkley, he remained for some time faithful to the

Presbyterian principles in which his mother had trained him. A friendship which he had formed with two young men, named James Rutherford and William Peden, pupils of his minister, confirmed him in his faith. Neither his brother nor Mr. Garner were able to convince him that baptism was an ordinance for believers alone, and that immersion was the only scriptural mode of administering it. When the brother had removed to Wigton, and his successor, Mr. Fernie, had begun to disseminate hyper-Calvinistic doctrine among the Baptist congregations of the district, Robert Hall and his two friends determined to meet that fervent champion of supralapsarian dogma, and convince him that the doctrines which he expounded were unscriptural, and therefore wrong. On a Saturday night in 1751 they proceeded to Juniper Dye House, where Mr. Fernie was to hold forth on the morrow, and commenced the battle. For two full hours the wordy contest raged, and after a brief truce for supper, it broke out again. "Never," writes the Rev. David Douglas, in his "History of the Baptist Churches in the North of England," "did the forefathers of these three Scots and the young Northumbrian, commanded by a Douglas or a Percy in the bloody Border strife of Chevy Chase or Otterburn, combat more bravely than did these youthful redoubted champions, on the classic ground of Hexhamshire, fight the determined but bloodless battle of Pædo and Anti-Pædobaptism."

The result to the three young men was disastrous. Fernie, who had been a Presbyterian himself, was armed at all points, and carried everything before him. "Without waiting for the sermon next day, the three chagrined students would not remain in the house, but returned that night, late as it was, to their homes. They had been silenced, but not convinced; they read, and frequently met to compare notes for another engagement," but the battle never came off. Robert Hall determined to renew the contest alone. "He read the Scriptures carefully, and every book on the subject he could lay his hands on. Imagining, however, in his own mind, the possible replies of Mr. Fernie to each of his arguments, his mind faltered and his heart began to fail him." The result was that instead of returning to Juniper Dye House to combat the preacher, he went there on the 5th of January, 1752, to be baptised by immersion, "and thus laid the foundation for the connection of one of the best men, one of the greatest pulpit orators, and one of the most beautiful and efficient writers of the English language in modern

times, the justly celebrated Robert Hall, his son, with the Baptist denomination."

Within the year, Rutherford and Peden followed their friend's example. Rutherford was baptised by Mr. Fernie at Juniper Dye House, or rather in the river Tyne adjoining, and after assisting for a time at Tuthill Stairs meeting-house, Newcastle, obtained ministerial appointments, first at Dublin, then at Warwick, where, in 1761, he died. Peden, admitted in like manner to a trial of his preaching gifts at Tuthill Stairs, was placed in charge of a congregation at Sunderland, and died in that town shortly afterwards.

Robert Hall, married the year before his baptism to Jane Catcheside, settled at Arnsby, in Leicestershire, and there, on the 2nd of May, 1764, his famous son Robert, the youngest of fourteen children, was born. At Arnsby he remained for nearly forty years, his ministry closing only with his death, which occurred on the 13th of March, 1791.

## George Hall,

### BISHOP OF DROMORE.

WHILE the brothers Christopher and Robert Hall were running their ministerial course in the Baptist denomination, two brothers, bearing the same patronymic, but baptised by the Christian names of William and George, were making their way as clergymen of the Church of England. They were the sons of the Rev. Mark Hall, perpetual curate of Earsdon, their mother being a sister of unfortunate Dr. John Brown, Vicar of Newcastle. One of their sisters lived in after years with the Vicar, and kept his house; another married Mr. Smith of Whitchester, near Haltwhistle, whose daughter became the wife of Taylor Gibson of Newcastle, druggist.

William Hall, born in 1740, was educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A., and in due time became a Fellow. At the age of twenty-three he obtained an appointment as sub-master of Morpeth Grammar School, under Humphrey Holden, M.A. The following year a vacancy occurred in the Royal Free Grammar School of Newcastle, an institution that was then at the height of its efficiency and popularity, governed by the great head-master Hugh Moises, and attended by a promising pupil, John Scott,

the future Lord Chancellor. One of the under-ushers had resigned his office, and Mr. Hall, seeking for the berth as an advance upon his position at Morpeth, was appointed. Two years later, on the 15th December, 1766, a few months after John Scott had left for Oxford, he succeeded to the higher post of usher, and that position he occupied for fifteen years. During part of that time he obtained local preferment. He was an unsuccessful candidate for the head-mastership of Morpeth School in April, 1772, but in December following he was appointed sole afternoon lecturer at the Chapel of St. Thomas, Bridge End, Newcastle, and, soon afterwards, preacher at St. Anne's. In 1781 he was elected head-master of Haydon Bridge Grammar School, where he died, June 4th, 1803. He is described as a man of great acuteness and learning, the friend and companion of his uncle, Vicar Brown, who bequeathed to him his books and manuscripts, and author, or editor of a pamphlet "On the Neglect of Public Worship, in a Letter to a Young Gentleman," published in Newcastle in 1776.

George Hall, brother of William, was educated by the Rev. Hugh Moises at the old school in the Spital, but instead of proceeding to Cambridge, as his brother had done, he went over to Ireland, and became an assistant in Dr. Darby's school at Loughall. After a time he entered himself as a student in Trinity College, Dublin, and having established, whilst an undergraduate, considerable reputation as a scientific and classical scholar, he was unanimously elected a fellow in 1777, when, for the first time, he appeared as a candidate. From that period, during the twenty-three years that he continued in college, his correct knowledge and exact fulfilment of his academic duties were conspicuous. As a tutor he was not more remarkable for the talents and learning displayed in his lectures, than for the kindness and parental solicitude with which he watched over the interests of his pupils, and the zeal which he manifested for their improvement in literature, in morals, and in religion. In the year 1800 he accepted a benefice in Tyrone, whence, six years later, he was called to assume the high office of Provost of Trinity, with the degree of Doctor of Divinity. For that position he was eminently qualified. Ranking among the most eminent scholars, both in polite literature and science, and skilled in every branch of theological learning, he was qualified to direct any department in the extensive range of academic instruction. Acquainted with the principal languages of modern Europe, and conversant with the

writings of the most celebrated authors, possessing a correct and delicate taste for the fine arts, and an unaffected vivacity of manners, he exhibited a rare instance of the union of severe science with elegant attainments, and commanded in turn the respect, the esteem, and the affection of those with whom he associated. All this, and much more of the same character, may be read in Mackenzie's "History of Newcastle."

Before Mr. Hall went to Tyrone, the rector of the parish in which his brother William had obtained his first situation as usher, the Rev. Frederick Ekins, of Morpeth, received an offer of the bishopric of Dromore. He declined it, but was allowed to make a bargain by which Dr. Percy became bishop, and Mr. Ekins became Dean of Carlisle. Dr. Percy occupied the episcopal chair for nearly twenty years, and when he died, in September, 1811, the see was conferred upon Dr. Hall. He was consecrated on the 17th November in that year, but, taking cold during the ceremony, died on the morning of the following Saturday, "leaving to the world an affecting proof of the frailty of that tenure by which earthly happiness and earthly honours are held."

## Thomas Young Hall,

MINING ENGINEER.

A WELL-KNOWN figure in Newcastle thirty years ago was Thomas Young Hall, mining engineer, inventor, colliery proprietor, and author of innumerable papers and reports upon various branches of mining industry. He was a son of James Hall, engineer at Wallsend Colliery under the Buddles, and, in later life, mining agent for owners of various royalties to the west of Newcastle. Born at Greenside, near Ryton, on the 25th of October, 1802, his childhood was one of hardship, if not of privation. After a few months' instruction by an old woman who kept the village school, he was sent down the pit to earn his living. Working in the pits he continued till he approached the age of manhood. Then the great John Buddle began to take an interest in him; his father, too, evinced a disposition to entrust him with more responsible duties; between them they trained him to the work of a practical viewer. When he

was twenty-two years of age he had a choice of situations—an underviewership in the Marquis of Bute's Welsh collieries, or the same position at North Hetton. He chose the latter, and at North Hetton T. Y. Hall commenced the serious business of life.

After four years' active experience in colliery management at Hetton, Mr. Hall transferred his services to Mr. Jonathan Backhouse, owner of Black Boy and other collieries adjoining. Mr. Backhouse, finding out his abilities, summoned him to new and

more important duties. Railway enterprise had opened out fresh possibilities to the coal trade, and Mr. Hall was instructed to report upon sites for new collieries, and accessible places for shipment of their produce. He reported favourably upon Coxhoe, Shadforth, Sherburn, and other partly-developed districts, as suitable for colliery extension, and Jarrow Slake, Hartlepool, and Redcar as convenient shipping places. Shortly afterwards, his proposals relative to Hartlepool assumed definite shape. A scheme was drawn up, an Act of Parliament obtained, and Mr. Hall became one of

the first directors of a company which brought to the old port of Hartlepool many years' prosperity.

In the latter part of 1832, Mr. Hall, in addition to his duties at Mr. Backhouse's pits, assumed the position of mining engineer and agent to the South Hetton Coal Company, and it was here that he introduced a series of marvellous improvements—known in coal-mining history as the tub, cage, and guide-rod systems. Before his time mining produce in the North of England was brought to the surface in wicker baskets called corves. Originally constructed to hold about 3 cwt. of coal, they had doubled in size and capacity, and were both ugly and inconvenient. They were high, and could not be filled without difficulty; they were fragile, and could not be emptied without danger to themselves and their contents. During their transference from the workings to the top of the shaft they were constantly broken and rendered incapable of holding the required quantity. Hence arose innumerable disputes, frequently ending in strikes, and consequent loss to all parties. There was, moreover, a large expenditure every year for the maintenance of the corving shops and the corvers, and the more extensive were the operations of a colliery the greater did this expense become. The manner in which the pitmen were lowered and raised in the shaft also was exceedingly dangerous. The general practice was for a couple of men to sit each with a leg in the loop of the chain, and frequently five or six boys clinging to the rope, one above another, their lives depending upon their capability of holding on while the rope traversed a distance of 1,500 or 1,600 feet, and their agility in successfully springing off when the rope came to bank. Altogether the method of bringing up both coal and men was insecure and unsatisfactory in the highest degree.

Mr. Hall saw all these defects, and set about devising remedies. Abolishing the use of corves, he supplied the hewers with oblong tubs, mounted upon wheels, and of shallow depth, to admit of rapid filling. At the bottom of the shaft he emptied the contents of four of them—about a ton and a quarter—into a large iron tub, which was drawn to the surface. The big tub was found to be inconvenient, but Mr. Hall's ingenuity overcame the difficulty. He abolished it as he had abolished the corves, and brought the small tubs direct to the surface in a framework of iron, which he called a cage. This was an immense improvement, saving both time and labour. Still something was wanting. The cage in its upward journey

occasionally stuck fast; its ironwork, colliding with the side of the shaft, bent, twisted, or broke. One Mr. Curr, of Sheffield, had invented a sort of guide-rod to facilitate ascent and descent in coal-pits. Mr. Hall heard of it, adopted the principle, and after that his cages slid up and down with ease and safety. South Hetton Colliery became famous through these marvellous experiments. Everybody went to see the new system, and everybody came away delighted. Within a few years every pit of importance contained its guides, its cages, its bogie-wheeled tubs. The immense saving to the coal trade which resulted from these improvements has never been fully estimated. Mr. Hall himself, in papers contributed to the North of England Institute of Mining Engineers, put it down at not less than 1s. 6d. upon every ton of coal raised in the Great Northern coal-field.

Mr. Hall left Hetton in 1836, and, entering into partnership with Mr. Buddle, and Mr. A. Langhorne Potter, of Newcastle, re-commenced working the Rector of Ryton's Glebe and Stella Freehold Collieries, which had lain dormant for nearly a century. By personally superintending the working operations, he made the speculation a successful one. Later on the partners acquired the adjoining collieries of Townley Main and Whitefield, which, owing to family disputes, had lain idle for six or seven years, and shortly afterwards, by leasing the royalties in Crawcrook township, Messrs. Hall, Buddle, and Potter—known in the trade as the Stella Coal Company—became possessed of the privilege of working the whole of the coal in the parish of Ryton.

In the year 1839, certain mines near Richmond, in the State of Virginia, fired, and between sixty and seventy persons lost their lives. Various ineffectual attempts were made to restore the ventilation, and the managing owner, Colonel Heth, was sent over to England to negotiate a sale of the property. Robert Stephenson, whom he consulted, recommended him to obtain a valuation of the coal and ironstone by competent English engineers, and nominated T. Y. Hall and Frank Forster as suitable for the work. Messrs. Hall and Forster accordingly went over to America. They ascertained that the mines contained most valuable beds of coal, but that the workings were filled with gas, and the task of clearing them was one of the greatest difficulty and danger. Several engineers had abandoned the work in despair. Mr. Hall had seen a great deal of practice in clearing foul workings, and, in company of a miner whom he had

taken out with him, he descended the shaft and commenced operations. In a month he had restored the ventilation and brought the mines into a satisfactory condition. On his return to England, his report was so favourable that the entire concern was purchased by an English company for £50,000. His services were rewarded by shares of the value of £10,000, and he was appointed resident superintendent and manager for five years at a salary of £2,000 a year. Negotiations were set on foot to enable the English company to hold property in America, and, in consequence of delays in obtaining a charter, he crossed the Atlantic no less than fourteen times in three years.

After his American experience, Mr. Hall settled down in Newcastle as a coal-owner and consulting engineer. To provide occupation for a particularly active mind, he carried on a bleaching mill at Ovingham, which had been for a long time in the hands of Mr. Newton, whose daughter his father married; patented inventions, dabbled in farming, and indulged in authorship.

Among the various inventions that he put forth were an adjustable coal screen, two or three improved safety-lamps, a method of consuming smoke, a gauge for steam boilers, and a whistle for communicating between the drivers of railway trains. His efforts in authorship were devoted to the "Transactions" of the North of England Institute of Mining Engineers, of which body he was one of the founders. In those "Transactions" the following papers, bearing his name, appear:—

"On the Safety Lamp for the use of Coal-mines." 1853. 16 pp.

"On Improvements in Colliery Workings and Further Observations on Safety Lamps." 1853. 12 pp.

"On Penetrating Dangerous Gases." 1853. 6 pp.

"A Treatise on the Extent and Probable Duration of the Northern Coal-Field." 1854. 168 pp.

"On the Coal Measures of Styria, in the Austrian Dominions." 1855. 64 pp.

"Statistical Notes on the Coal and Iron Production of the United States of America." 1856. 16 pp.

"Notes on the Production and Consumption of Coal in France." 1858. 112 pp.

"On the Rivers, Ports, and Harbours of the Great Northern Coal-Field." 1860. 48 pp.

"On Signals, Trains, and Vehicles on Land and Water." 1861.

During the later years of his life, freed from the anxieties and responsibilities of business, Mr. Hall devoted the greater part of

his time to the entertainment of his friends. Whenever distinguished strangers visited Newcastle to see its manufacturing establishments and the surrounding collieries and ironworks, they generally brought an introduction to Mr. Hall in their pockets. On such occasions Mr. Hall's hospitality and courtesy knew no bounds. His house, his time, his knowledge, were unreservedly placed at the service of the visitors. To foreigners imperfectly acquainted with the English language he was particularly attentive. Having travelled much and experienced the difficulties which beset persons unable to converse in the language of the places they visit, he was most careful to have everything explained, and to see, moreover, that his visitors perfectly understood the explanations. By this means he obtained a wide-spread reputation. Hundreds of mining adventurers in various parts of the world knew "T. Y." Hall, though not one in a hundred, perhaps, knew the names which those familiar initials covered. One of his treasures was an envelope addressed to "T. Wyhall, Esq., Newcastle, England," which, posted in Germany, reached its destination without delay or inquiry.

In politics Mr. Hall was a Liberal of the Earl Grey type; in religion, he was a Churchman. But neither his political nor his religious convictions were very strong, and he never obtruded them in conversation, or took part in discussions respecting them. For what is termed public life he had no taste, and could never be induced to become a candidate for election to municipal or other local office. He had a similar aversion to matrimony, and died unmarried on the 3rd February, 1870.

By his will he devoted a sum of money to found a scholarship in the Newcastle College of Physical Science. The scholarship is of the annual value of £20, includes remission of two-thirds of the class fees, and is tenable for three years.

# Samuel Hammond,

## AN EMINENT PURITAN DIVINE.

AMONG the notable preachers that came to Newcastle during the Commonwealth, Dr. Samuel Hammond occupies a conspicuous place. Calamy, in the "Nonconformist's Memorial," states that he was born

at York, and educated at King's College, Cambridge, where he was servitor to Dr. Collins, Regius Professor of Divinity, "who heartily loved a wit, and could not endure a dull genius about him." By the Earl of Manchester's interest he obtained a fellowship in Magdalen College, and had many pupils, several of whom were afterwards of great repute both in Church and State. "He began to preach in the neighbouring church of St. Giles, with such pious zeal, pungency, and Christian experience, that his ministry was attended by persons from all parts of the town, and from the most distant colleges; and it was crowned with the conversions of some scores (Mr. Stancliff says some hundreds) of scholars. It was the general opinion that there was not a more convincing and successful minister in Cambridge, from the time of Mr. William Perkins, than he was. He was drawn from hence by Sir Arthur Haselrigge, with whom he went chaplain into the North. There he was, at first, minister at Bishop's-Waremouth, and from thence was invited by the members of Dr. Jennison's church at St. Nicholas's, in Newcastle, to assist the Dr., who was disabled, with a design to chuse him pastor upon the Dr.'s decease. But he, for some reasons, not chusing that, continued only lecturer there till some time after the Restoration."

The biographer of Ambrose Barnes tells us that "Mr. Hammond was a butcher's son of York, but raised the meanness of his birth by the eminency of his qualifications, having lived long in the University of Cambridge. Afterwards he was colleague with Mr. Weld of Gateside, adjoining to Newcastle. He married Mr. Justice Ogle's daughter of Eglingham, a person of pious memory."

These extracts, from two Puritan authorities, show the position which Mr. Hammond occupied up to the time of his arrival in Newcastle, and reveal the tie which afterwards bound him to the North of England—his marriage with a Northumbrian lady.

Bishopwearmouth Rectory, vacant during the Civil War by the flight or ejection of Christopher Sherwood, had been bestowed upon a Puritan Master of Arts named William Johnson. Mr. Hammond was Johnson's successor, and he appears to have entered into possession of the living in the summer of 1651, for, on the 19th of August in that year—the rectors being lords of the manor—he held his court there. His stay at Bishopwearmouth was brief. Dr. Jenison, who had been recalled from exile and appointed Vicar of Newcastle by resolution of the House of Commons on the 5th December, 1644, was in weak health, and the congregation of St. Nicholas', as Calamy

correctly states, invited Mr. Hammond to transfer his services from the Wear to the Tyne. Willingly he accepted the invitation. He was ready, he wrote, "with all cheerefullnesse to imbrace the call," and "to serve God and the towne in that great worke," finding himself and the people "much in the hearts of one another." He must have left Bishopwearmouth soon after the Christmas of 1651, for, on the 8th of March following, his name is attached to the letter which the ministers of Newcastle wrote to Cromwell, complaining of Arminian and Socinian doctrines, promulgated in the town by Captain Everard, of the garrison. On the 5th of November, 1652 (Dr. Jenison died the day following), the Corporation of Newcastle appointed him to preach at Nicholas' Church ("St." omitted) on Sunday forenoons, and all other solemn days, as occasion required, and to lecture on Thursday forenoons. It had been intended that he should succeed Dr. Jenison as vicar, but the Corporation had not the gift of the vicarage, and although they applied for a grant of it, their wishes do not appear to have been gratified. There was no "vicar" of Newcastle after Dr. Jenison's death till the Restoration. Mr. Hammond held the position of chief pastor, at a salary of £150 per annum—£10 more than Dr. Jenison received—with Cuthbert Sydenham at £100 and William Durant at £80 a year as afternoon lecturers.

About the time of his appointment at St. Nicholas', an event occurred which brought Mr. Hammond into considerable prominence. One Thomas Ramsay arrived in Newcastle from Hamburg, and assuming the name of Joseph Ben Israel, and the character of a converted Rabbi, imposed upon Mr. Tillam, preacher to a congregation of Baptists at Hexham. The Baptists were a new denomination, and their conversion and baptism of a man who professed to know eight languages, and to be a Jew of the tribe of Judah, made some noise. Mr. Tillam published a twelve-page tract on the subject, entitled—

"The Converted Jew; or, the Substance of the Declaration and Confession, which was made in the Publique Meeting-House at Hexham, the 4 Moneth, the 5 Day, 1653. By Joseph Ben Israel. Printed at Gateside, by S. B." Sub-title —"The Counterfeit Jew."

Certain circumstances, the details of which may be read in Longstaffe's appendix to the "Memoirs of Ambrose Barnes," led Mr. Hammond and his colleagues in the Newcastle ministry to suspect that "Ben Israel" was a cheat. Taking active measures to investigate his history, they were able to prove, and at length made him

confess, his imposture. Thereupon Mr. Hammond, with Mr. Weld, the Puritan minister at Gateshead Church, issued a pamphlet dedicated "To the Right Worshipfull Henry Dawson, Esq., Major, the Aldermen, Sheriff, and the common Councell of Newcastle-upon-Tine," with the long-drawn title of—

"A False Jew; or A Wonderfull Discovery of a Scot, Baptized at London for a Christian, Circumcised at Rome to act a Jew, re-baptized at Hexham for a Believer, but found out at Newcastle to be a Cheat. Being a true Relation of the Detecting of one Thomas Ramsey, born of Scotch parents at London, sent lately from Rome by a speciall Unction and Benediction of the Pope; who landed at Newcastle, under the name of Thomas Horsley, but immediately gave himselfe out for a Jew by the name of Rabbi Joseph Ben Israel, Mant. Hebr., soon after baptized at Hexham, by Mr. Tillam, and by a speciall providence of God, found out by the Magistrates and Ministers of Newcastle upon Tine to be an Impostour and Emissary of Rome, and since sent up to the General and Councell of State to be further enquired into. Printed for William London, Bookseller in Newcastle, 1653."

Having thrown this bombshell into the ranks of the Baptists, Mr. Hammond assisted his fellow-ministers to heave a missile at another rising sect—that of the Quakers. In a pamphlet dated 1653, and reissued the following year, with the title of "The Perfect Pharisee, etc.," the Newcastle preachers, and Mr. Weld, of Gateshead, attacked the doctrines of the Quakers, "from their own words and writings," with "full proofs of their asserting of those doctrines," and "arguments for the discovery of their unsoundness." While the excitement created by the publication of these tractates was at its height, on the 24th of February, 1653-54, Mr. Hammond received from the Corporation the appointment of Master of the Mary Magdalen Hospital, in succession to his colleague at St. Nicholas'—Cuthbert Sydenham. Before it died away, Sydenham, who had retired to London, "to gain health, and print some of his books," was suddenly called to his reward, and the thoughts of his coadjutors in Newcastle were diverted from Baptists and Quakers into a new channel. Collecting together seven of his sermons, and prefixing a portrait of the dead preacher, they issued in 1654—

"Hypocrisie Discovered in its Nature and Workings. Delivered in Several Sermons By That faithfull Minister of the Gospell, Mr. Cuthbert Sidenham, Late Teacher to a Church of Christ in Newcastle-upon-Tyne."

An "Epistle Dedicatory" to Sir Arthur Haslerigg, Governor of Newcastle, with which the volume opens, is signed by "Tho. Weld, Sam. Hamond, Tho. Trurin, Wil. Durant." In that same year

Mr. Hammond suffered a family bereavement. The register of burials at St. Nicholas', under date July 17th, records the interment of "Jane, dau. of Samuell Hamon, preacher." Two years later death again entered his household. "1656, Oct. 9, Samuell, son of Samuell Hamon, preacher of God's word," is the entry of a second burial at St. Nicholas'.

"Afterwards he [Mr. Hammond] was colleague with Mr. Weld, of Gateside, adjoyning Newcastle," writes the biographer of Ambrose Barnes in the extract quoted on page 427. No confirmation of that statement appears in local history, and it has generally been supposed that by "colleague" the biographer meant contemporary, or co-worker, though on the other side of the water. But a manuscript copied by Brand the historian, and printed on page 134 of the present volume, indicates that Mr. Hammond had some kind of charge over a congregation at Gateshead, although his friend Mr. Weld was chief pastor there, and he himself was at the head of the preachers in Newcastle. Mr. Hammond, we know, was of the "Congregational Judgment"; Mr. Weld, probably, was of the Presbyterian party, and there being, for the time, some jealousy between the two, the Congregationalists at Gateshead may have placed themselves under the care of Mr. Hammond, the leader of their section in the adjoining community of Newcastle.

On the 15th of May, 1657, the Lord Protector granted letters patent for founding and endowing a college at Durham out of the wreck of the bishopric, and among the first visitors of the college, ninety in number, were local ministers in the following order:—Samuel Hammond, Newcastle; Thomas Weld, Gateshead; William Cole and William Durant, Newcastle; Richard Gilpin, Greystock; Thomas Trewren, Ovingham; Richard Prideaux, Newcastle; and Henry Leaver, Brancepeth. These, and their colleagues, were to hold office for two years only, but out of their number a body of eleven "constant" visitors was nominated, and among them were Hammond, Leaver, and Trewren. In each list precedence among the clerical members is given to Mr. Hammond, who was evidently regarded as the chief minister in the bishopric.

Little more remains to be written. Within three years of the founding of Durham College king and bishop returned to their inheritance, and the reign of the Puritans came to an end. There is a record in the books of the municipality of Newcastle that on the 24th March, 1657-58, Mr. Hammond and the rest of the ministers

moved the Common Council to petition the Lord Protector to change the market-day from Saturday to Friday, "for that it is a greate profanation to the Lord's Day to be kept on the Saturday," and that the Corporation ordered a petition to be sent "accordingly." After that, for some time at least, silence. "When Mr. Hammond, upon the Restoration, was questioned by Bishop Cosin about his orders, he had nothing to plead but either a university or college licence." What became of him between the Restoration and the passing of the Act of Uniformity in 1662 is not recorded. Durant, as we know, was "silenced" midway between the two events; Hammond probably remained at St. Nicholas' as lecturer, having John Knightbridge—appointed in March, 1657-58—as his colleague, and, it may be, chief minister, till the Act of Uniformity drove them both away. Mr. Davenport, Bishop Cosin's chaplain, writing to Sancroft on the 15th July, 1662, reports that the bishop "suspended Mr. Knightbridge, at Newcastle, because he refused to say prayers, and so the living is sequestred," a remark which indicates that Knightbridge was in possession of the living. "Mr. Hammond," he adds, "desired he might leave without suspension." Now, the Act of Uniformity, passed on the 19th of May, was not to come into operation till St. Bartholomew's Day, the 24th of August; but, "some of the Nonconformists quitted their stations in the church before the 24th of August, as Mr. Baxter and others, who did it with an intent to let all the ministers over England know their resolution beforehand." Mr. Hammond, therefore, was one of those who followed Baxter's example.

Leaving Newcastle, Mr. Hammond went to Hamburg, invited by a society of merchants to be their preacher in that city. A Bible belonging to him, long preserved at Bishopwearmouth, contains a few MS. notes of his departure:—"I came from N. Castle July 14, 1662, and set saile for Hamburg the 16th, 1662, and arrived, through the good hand of God upon me, July 24, 1662. My wife and children set saile the 30th of August, and arrived through the same providence at Hambrough Sep. 5, 1662." Even there he was not free from persecution. "We here at Hamburgh," wrote a correspondent of Ambrose Barnes, "are called with you to be partakers of the sufferings of Christ. Mr. Hammond, at the malitious instigation of some among us, is, by the magistracy, forbid to preach even in his own house." Calamy explains how this prohibition was brought about. The merchants, who had invited Mr. Hammond

over, desired a new charter, but "lord chancellor Hyde would by no means pass it till Mr. Hammond, who would not use the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England, was dismissed." From Hamburg he went to Stockholm, and from thence to Dantzic. But England was the place of his desires, and thither he returned in 1665, and took up his abode at Hackney, among some merchants with whom he had been abroad, and there he preached occasionally, in his own and other families, and there he died in the year 1666.

After Mr. Hammond's death, his wife and children appear to have returned to their native county. By his will he appointed Ambrose Barnes one of his trustees, and that sturdy Puritan, taking charge of the family, apprenticed the three sons of his old pastor to Newcastle merchants. Joseph, "son of Mr. Samuel Hammond, of Newcastle, clerk, deceased," was bound, May 2, 1670, to William Johnson, merchant and mercer, who had been Mayor in 1653 and 1654; Samuel (February 2, 1671-72) and Thomas (October 1, 1678) were apprenticed to Robert Johnson, merchant and boothman, who had filled the office of Sheriff in 1653. Samuel Hammond, merchant, was buried at St. Nicholas', April 1st, 1686; of the rest of the family there is no record.

## Edmund Hannay,

### THE BLYTH SHIPBUILDER.

CLAIMING to be descended from the ancient family of Hannay of Sorbie, in Galloway—to one of whose members, Hannay of Mochrum, Charles I., in 1629, granted a Nova Scotia baronetcy—the Hannays of Blyth traced their immediate ancestry to the banks of the Tweed. This appears from a letter dated the 20th of October, 1731, addressed to "The Hon. The Lady Anna Hannay, of Kingsmuir, at Harraton, in Kingsmuir," by Captain William Hannay, who was afterwards her adopted heir:—"I confess, Madam, I came out of my native country very young. I was born at Kelso, in the south of Scotland, at which place was an estate formerly belonging to our family, but now in the hands of His Grace the Duke of Roxburgh, and, as I am told, unjustly detained. Our family lived at Kelso a great many years, and now I think there is none left except three brothers and one sister,

my father being by misfortune obliged to move into Northumberland, and there dyed about two years agoe at 89 years of age. His name was William, and my grandfather's name was David; my grandmother was of the family of the Grays. This, Madam, is all the account I can give at present of my family and self, except that they were always remarkable for their great honesty and other virtues the name were always endowed with. Madam, I have been since 14 years of age from my father, struggling with the world for a living."

The writer of this letter, then forty-two years of age, was "Commander of the *New Granada* Frigat," and had married, in 1712, at All Hallows', Barking, Mary Hathaway of Rotherhithe. Lady Kingsmuir, whose title was probably that of courtesy only, was the sister and heiress of Robert Hannay of Kingsmuir, and the childless widow of John Erskine of Dun, a captain in the Earl of Orkney's regiment, who died in Brabant. Five years after the preceding letter was written, Lady Anna Hannay entailed her real estate at Anstruther upon the writer and his issue male, with remainder, not to his brothers, but to another line of the Hannay family. Her letters to Captain Hannay, with whom she frequently corresponded, are very quaint and interesting. In one of them, complaining that she had been much oppressed by the heritors about Kingsmuir, and had resorted to the Courts at Edinburgh for "justice and despatch," she adds, "I hope I shall have it, but our law is very litigious." In 1732 she acknowledges a present from Captain Hannay of "six bottles of Tokay Hungary wine, and two half-pounds of pico bohea tea"; and she states that "The best of our quality in this kingdom [of Fife] has both drunk of your fine wine and tea, and we have been very merry with it, and drunk your health and your Lady's very heartily; such wine as this comes seldom to this kingdom, so it is to be prized. Such a thing the ladies are fond to taste, because they have heard of it but never see it. A Lady of very great quality told me she had been at the greatest entertainments in Scotland, but never tasted Tokay wine."

Edmund Hannay, the shipbuilder, was a son of David Hannay of Bothal, elder brother of Captain William Hannay of "the *New Granada* Frigat." The marriage of his father and mother is recorded in the Bothal Register thus:—"1715, Oct. 13, David Hannay of Bothal and Mary Bell of Wellheads married. That day the Rebels entered and lodged in Morpeth." Edmund was a younger son of this marriage, born about 1727, and serving his

time, it is said, to a shipbuilder at Leith. Wallace, in the "History of Blyth," tells an apocryphal story about his return from Leith during the rebellion of 1745, when he would be about eighteen years of age, his being mistaken for a Scotch rebel, and having to secrete himself in the ruins of Bothal Castle. Then the story proceeds to describe how, venturing out of his concealment, "he encountered Justice Watson of North Seaton, who supposing him to be a fugitive rebel, made an attempt to apprehend him." But "Hannay fled across the river; the Justice, who was mounted on a pony, in attempting to follow him stuck fast in the mud. The Justice shouted to the fugitive to stop and help him out of the river. Hannay, seeing his pursuer incapable of following him, ceased to flee, and, after some parley, ventured to return and help to extricate the horseman." This act, according to Wallace, "won the good opinion of Watson, who became his friend," set him to work to build a boat, and being pleased with the result, employed him to build a sloop.

Dismissing this story as "local gossip," with perhaps a thin substratum of truth to rest upon, we find from the Custom House books that, in 1750, Edmund Hannay, at the age of twenty-three, settled at Blyth as a shipbuilder. He was the first to carry on the business at that place, and, writes Wallace:—"The vessels he built were highly prized, their sea-going qualities were excellent, the materials out of which they were constructed were of the best description, and the workmanship was attended to with the utmost care. One man did all the caulking, another drove all the tree-nails, and marvellous were the tales about the length of time some of his crack ships went without needing to be pumped; in some cases as much as seven years elapsed before they required caulking." Prospering in business as a shipbuilder, he became a shipowner, and in 1780 purchased the estate of Malvin Close, in Cowpen, but continued to reside in the large three-storied, many-windowed house near the Custom-house at Blyth, facing river and sea, and there died in February, 1800, aged 73. He survived his wife and two sons, and left two daughters and co-heiresses, the elder of whom, Mary, "a fine-mannered woman and an excellent musician," became in 1782 the second wife of Edward Watts, of South Blyth. Margaret, the other daughter, who succeeded to her father's personalty, was wife of Robert Jobling, of Newton Hall, near Bywell, J.P. and D.L., and became mother to John Cresswell Jobling, of Newton Hall, sometime chairman of the Hexham bench

of magistrates, and of Robert Jobling, Captain H.E.I.C.S., afterwards shipping-master at Newcastle.

In 1674, John Watts, of Newbiggin, yeoman, was owner of a burgage in Warkworth, in the possession of which he was succeeded by his son, Robert Watts. The latter, in 1732, settled the same upon the marriage of his son Robert Watts the younger. Edward Watts, who married Miss Hannay, was a son of this marriage. He too had a good reputation as a shipbuilder and shipowner, and was a man of substance. Among the Delaval papers is a cancelled bond of John, Lord Delaval, dated 1798, for £4000, to secure £2000 at 5 per cent., to "Mr. Edwd. Watts, gent., of Blythe." Of the numerous issue which he had by two marriages, all died childless save Edmund, who was baptised in 1784, and succeeded to the real estate of his maternal grandfather, Hannay. He, in 1805, married Alice, eldest daughter of Richard Hodgson, of Plessy and Cowpen. Their fifth son, Thomas Hodgson Watts, was by the generosity of his mother's sister, Mrs. Appleby, educated for the medical profession, and after studying in London, Paris, and Padua, and taking a degree at Vienna, and his M.D. at Edinburgh, settled in practice at Manchester, where he immediately took a leading position. He was physician to the Ardwick and Ancoats Dispensary, to the Manchester Royal Infirmary, to the Fever Hospital, and to Cheadle Lunatic Asylum, and in 1848 took part in the founding of the Chatham Street School of Medicine at Manchester, now merged in the Victoria University. Linguist and scientist of high repute, with a special knowledge and experience in diseases of the chest, he died unmarried in 1881.

Dr. Watts' eldest brother, Edmund Hannay Watts (1), succeeded to the Malvin Close estate, and married Sarah, youngest daughter of Edward Adshead, of Staley, in Cheshire. The eldest son of this marriage is Edmund Hannay Watts (2), of Devonhirst, Chiswick, J.P., head of the great shipping firm of Watts, Ward, & Company, a member of the committee of Lloyds, an extensive coal-owner in the South Wales coal-field, and father of Edmund Hannay Watts (3), J.P. for Monmouthshire, County Councillor for Newport, Major in the South Wales Borderer Volunteers, and a Fellow of the Royal Geographical Society.

# Albany Hancock,

NATURALIST.

AT the date of "The Great Flood" in the Tyne—the flood of 1771, a saddler and hardwareman named Thomas Hancock occupied a shop at the north end of Tyne Bridge; "opposite Tyne Bridge end," as the first Directory of Newcastle (1778) puts it. He had married a lady named Baker, whose mother was of the family of Henzell, widely known, with those of Tyzack and Tittery, as descended from Huguenot refugees who brought the art of glass-making to the Tyne. Thomas Hancock had, by this marriage, two sons, John and Henry. John, the elder of the two, was educated at Redmire, in Yorkshire, under the Rev. T. Heslop, and, on leaving school, joined his father in business. He had obtained in the glorious valley which Redmire adorns, a love of Nature, and a spirit of investigation that the cares of his father's shop could not suppress. When business was slack, he was in the habit of making, with two or three like-minded companions, trips on foot into various parts of these Northern Counties, spending the day in searching for plants, and insects, and especially shells. What they gathered, Hancock set in order and arranged, and in a few years he had amassed a considerable collection, in which sea-shells predominated. He possessed one of the best microscopes of the day, and made excellent use of it. He died at the comparatively early age of forty-three, in September, 1812, leaving a widow and six children, the eldest being eight years of age. Mrs. Hancock carefully treasured the collections and library of her husband, and to her training was no doubt due the love for natural history studies which marked the tastes of most of her children. The eldest son of the family was named, after his father, Thomas; to the second son was given the name of Albany; the third son was baptised by the name of John. Thomas and John continued the business at the Bridge End, and Albany was articled to Thomas Chater, solicitor.

Albany, second son, and third child of John Hancock, was born on Christmas Eve, 1806, in the family house at the Bridge End. So writes his friend and fellow-investigator, Dr. Embleton, from whose appreciative Memoir in the fifth volume of the "Natural History

Transactions of Northumberland and Durham" the facts of this biography are taken. His preliminary education was conducted by the Misses Prowitt, daughters of a Nonconformist minister; his later studies were superintended by the eminent mathematician, Henry Atkinson. After serving his articles with Mr. Chater he went to a London office for the usual training, and was admitted an attorney. Returning to Newcastle in 1830, he opened an office over the shop of his friend Joshua Alder, in the Side. There for two years he waited for clients; but the charms of Natural History proved too strong for him, and he closed his office and left the legal profession for ever.

From about 1835 to 1840, Albany Hancock turned his attention to modelling in clay and in plaster, and succeeded in making one or two very fair busts. He also designed and painted fruit, fish and flowers, thus cultivating and improving his natural faculties and tastes, and unwittingly preparing for his future work. Following the example of their father, the brothers John, Thomas, and Albany Hancock, in conjunction with their friends, Joshua Alder, the Burnetts, William Hutton (joint author with Professor Lindley, of "The Fossil Flora"), William Robertson, R. B. Bowman, and John Thornhill, botanists; and W. C. Hewitson (author of "The Eggs of

British Birds," etc.), visited the district of Tyneside and surrounding localities, making collections of natural objects. These were the chief men who, with Bewick and his predecessors, gained for Newcastle its reputation for the successful prosecution of Natural History.

From 1842 to 1864, assisted by his friend Alder, he was engaged in the study of conchology, and in the discovery of various new genera and species of Nudibranchiate Mollusca of the Northumberland Coast and other parts of the British Isles, and in the delineation and description of their external characters. Up to 1844, they had discovered and described two new genera and thirty-one new species, though in the time of Linnæus only six species were known. In 1843, in the "Annals of Natural History," they published "Observations on the Development of the Nudibranchiate Mollusks, with Remarks on their Structure." About the time of the appearance of that article, a change occurred in the direction of Albany's thoughts and studies, which had great influence on his future scientific career, and conduced to make him so distinguished an anatomist in Malacology that he was afterwards justly regarded as the highest authority in this department of science. "He had become convinced that valuable for classification as are the external characters and the habits of animals, when carefully observed, it is absolutely necessary to investigate and understand their internal structure also, in order to form a correct idea of their physiology, and of their proper arrangement according to their natural affinities." Having no family ties, for he never married, he was able to devote the whole of his time to the investigation. In 1844, with the assistance of his biographer, Dr. Embleton, he began the dissection of the Nudibranchiate Mollusks with *Eolis papillosa*, and during the next ten years he issued, in conjunction with Joshua Alder, the celebrated "Monograph of the British Nudibranchiate Mollusca, with Figures of the Species." This work, published by the Ray Society, soon gained for its authors a more than European reputation. "The description of external characters and the classification were the joint work of Alder and Hancock; but most of the drawings of the species, and the whole of those of the anatomy, were by Hancock alone. The beauty of the drawings and the delicacy of their colouring it would be difficult to surpass, and the anatomical details are represented with a perfect fidelity to nature. Albany rapidly surmounted the difficulties attendant on the delicate dissection of

microscopically minute parts, in which the breath, even, has to be held and regulated, and the hand educated in the execution of the smallest possible movements; and he readily gained an acquaintance with the principles and details of Comparative Anatomy."

Albany Hancock was one of the founders of the Tyneside Naturalists' Field Club in 1846, and he contributed several important papers to the "Transactions." A valuable essay from his pen appeared in the "Philosophical Transactions" in 1858, under the title of "The Organisation of the Brachiopoda," which proved that its author was an enlightened naturalist, a philosophical anatomist, and an accomplished artist. In the same year the Royal Society, in appreciation of the high value of his works, awarded him its gold medal, an honour conferred upon very few. In 1863, with the assistance of Mr. Alder, he classified and described, in the "Transactions of the Zoological Society," a collection of Indian Nudibranchiata, sent by Mr. Walter Elliott. With Mr. Howse he contributed valuable papers on the "Fossil Remains of the Marl-slate of Durham"; and with Thomas Atthey various descriptions of the fossil fauna of the Northumberland Coal-Field.

At the time of his death Mr. Alder had been engaged for years in the preparation of an "Illustrated Catalogue of the British Tunicata," to be published by the British Museum; and it was almost ready for publication when he received intimation that funds were no longer at the disposal of the trustees. In this emergency, Mr. Alder communicated with Mr. Hancock, suggesting that he should work out the anatomy and physiology as he had done with the Nudibranchiata, by which means the monograph would be more thorough and comprehensive than was at first contemplated. Mr. Hancock at once laid aside other duties, and undertook the onerous task. The Ray Society was consulted, and expressed its willingness to publish the work, but the death of Mr. Alder in 1867 deprived his coadjutor of his valuable assistance. Up to the autumn of 1873, Mr. Hancock had completed a little over two-thirds of the book, when failing health overtook him, and to his deep regret he was compelled to relinquish his task within two years of the time when he expected to be able to bring it to a conclusion. On the 24th of October, 1873, he quietly breathed his last, and was buried in Jesmond Cemetery.

Albany Hancock corresponded with Darwin, Owen, Huxley,

Hooker, Sharpey, Forbes, Phillips, Allman, Busk, and several other distinguished naturalists of Great Britain; Cohen, of Breslau; Suess, of Vienna; Kelaart, of Ceylon; Agassiz, of America; Lacaze-Duthiers, of Paris; Lovén, of Stockholm; Bergh, of Copenhagen, etc. He was elected in 1845 a corresponding member of the Manchester Natural History Society; in 1862, a Fellow of the Linnæan Society; in 1865, a member of the Imperial Zoologico-Botanical Society of Vienna; and in 1869, a correspondent of the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia. Yet "he never betrayed the least vanity at being thus distinguished, but bore his honours meekly, and never alluded to his success. His diplomas were carefully put away, so as not to attract attention. But still he had a natural gratification in knowing that he had not worked in vain to extend the boundaries of human knowledge, and that his labours were appreciated by those who alone were competent to estimate their value. He was kind and sympathising towards the oppressed, and instances are not wanting in which his sympathy for his friends in misfortune or domestic affliction acted as balm to the wounded heart. There was benevolence in his smile and in his tear, and his conduct was marked throughout by purity and uprightness."

Appended to Dr. Embleton's Memoir is a list of seventy-four books and papers written by this eminent naturalist, or produced in collaboration with others.

## John Hancock,

ORNITHOLOGIST.

JOHN, third son of Thomas, and younger brother of Albany Hancock, was born at his father's house facing Tyne Bridge, Newcastle, on the 24th of February, 1808. He accompanied Albany to the schools of the Misses Prowitt, and Henry Atkinson, and, after his education was completed, joined his elder brother Thomas at the Bridge End shop. Dr. Embleton, whose loving Memoir of him appropriately forms the opening paper of volume xi. of the "Natural History Transactions of Northumberland and Durham," relates that after a time, finding business irksome, he entered into an arrangement with Thomas by which he was set free to follow the bent of his mind.

From his earliest years John Hancock showed a remarkable fondness for birds. After his father's death, when the family were residing at Bensham, he and his sister Mary hunted through the fields and hedgerows for birds, insects, and flowers, and during summer trips to Tynemouth wandered together about the banks and sandhills for insects and plants that were new to them. In similar pursuits his youth was spent. After a storm, or during the seasons of bird migration, it was no uncommon thing for him to leave home at three in the morning, walk to the seaside to observe the

Mr John Hancock.

forms and study the habits of his feathered friends, and perhaps secure a specimen for his collection. He became one of a little band of naturalists who used to meet every Wednesday evening at each other's houses to discuss their discoveries and ventilate their theories, and who, in summer-time, made frequent excursions to places in the neighbourhood where the objects of their study were to be found. By degrees his mother's house became a museum; his treasures, and those of his brother Albany, not only filled the room which was at first assigned to them, but overflowed into almost every other apartment. Frequent visits to the workshop of

R. R. Wingate, a celebrated bird-stuffer in Strawberry Place, Newcastle, enabled him to acquire the art of taxidermy, and thus he was able to mount his bird specimens with his own hands, and enrich the family museum with accurate representations of plumage, attitude, and habit.

In 1833 John Hancock accompanied his friend, W. C. Hewitson, on an expedition to Norway, under circumstances which will be found more fully described in the biography of his companion a few pages further on. In 1845 he went with the same friend on a tour in Switzerland. The result of these journeys was extensive collections of bird-skins, shells, plants, and lepidoptera, which served not only to add to their own treasures, but to enrich the Newcastle Natural History Museum.

At the Great Exhibition of All Nations, held in London in 1851, Mr. Hancock contributed a series of stuffed birds, three of which were illustrative of Falconry. They were highly admired by naturalists, artists, and the public as a signal advance upon all previous specimens of bird-stuffing, a combination of scientific accuracy with artistic feeling. The Rev. T. W. Robertson, of Brighton, in one of his lectures declared that although he had spent days in watching birds, and visited all the great museums of Europe, he had never seen the reproduction of life till he saw these. "They were vitalised, not by the feeling of the mere bird-stuffer, but of the poet who had sympathised with Nature, felt the life of birds as something kindred with his own, and inspired with their sympathy, and labouring to utter it, had thus re-created life, as it were, within the very grasp of death."

John Hancock was one of the original members of the Tyneside Naturalists' Field Club, founded in 1846, and afterwards became a member and a vice-president of the Natural History Society of Northumberland, etc. On the death of Albany Hancock it was proposed to set up a memorial of his life and labours, and John suggested that a new Museum in Newcastle would be the most appropriate form for such a memorial. The old Museum in Westgate Road had served its purpose in former days, but was too cramped and inconvenient for the treasures that the Hancocks and their friends had accumulated. The proposed memorial to Albany did not however make further progress, and in 1879 his brother set about providing one upon an independent basis. In that year the house and grounds to the north of the Barras Bridge,

known as St. James's, came into the market; Colonel Joicey purchased them, and John Hancock's personal influence raised the rest of the money required to erect a Museum worthy of the town. As soon as the building was ready to receive them he presented to it his entire collections of British birds, skins, eggs, and nests, and the magnificent groups under glass shades and cases which now fill the central room of the edifice. At the meeting of the British Association in Newcastle in 1889, Professor Flower could scarcely find words to express his sense of the excellence and value of the Museum as an educational institution, its chief attractions being due, as he observed, to the fact that Newcastle possessed "an artist who, by a proper application of taxidermy, can show that an animal may be converted into a real life-like representation of the original, perfect in form, proportions, and attitude, and almost, if not quite, as valuable for conveying information as the living creature itself."

In the early days of their manhood Albany and John Hancock had in contemplation the publication of a quarto book on British Birds, with plates. This project was dropped because John found that they had not stuffed birds enough to enable them to complete it. Both of them were for some years engaged in drawing objects in Natural History, modelling in clay and casting in plaster. John Hancock modelled, among other objects, the two eagles which surmount the pillars at the entrance of the Museum. He also tried his hand at wood-engraving, and not without success; an impression from one of his blocks, showing a gorged Iceland Falcon, illustrates the title-page of one of the Museum Handbooks—the "Guide to the Central Room, the Hancock Bird Room."

His love of Nature gave to John Hancock a remarkable taste for landscape gardening. How many of his friends he assisted to beautify their surroundings by judicious planting of trees, shrubs, and flowers will never be known. His reputation in this matter stood so high that when, in 1868, it was proposed to improve the dreary waste of Newcastle's "bleak Northumbrian moor," it was to John Hancock that the promoters turned for assistance. He prepared a plan, utilising the Leazes and the Bull Park for ornamental planting, appropriating thirty acres to the east for a plantation, placing a belt of trees, a hundred feet wide on each side of the North Road, forming other plantations towards Kenton, and making a sheltered drive round the Moor fully six miles in circuit. The

scheme was too great for the Corporation of Newcastle to undertake at that time; but portions of it have since been realised.

Mr. Hancock, unlike in this respect his brother Albany, who wrote and worked with equal facility, was rather a worker than a writer. Attached to Dr. Embleton's Memoir is a list, compiled by Mr. Wright of the Museum, of the papers which bear his name as author. They are twenty-one in number, and all of them were contributed to the "Annals of Natural History," the "Transactions of the Tyneside Naturalists' Field Club," or the "Natural History Transactions of Northumberland, Durham, and Newcastle." The largest and best of them is the "Catalogue of the Birds of Northumberland and Durham," which forms of itself volume vi. of the Natural History Society's series.

Under the will of his life-long friend, W. C. Hewitson, Mr. Hancock became the owner of a charming residence at Oatlands in Surrey, where, during the rest of his life, he and his sister spent the months of summer. Like his brother Albany, he was never married; his sister Mary, the faithful companion of his childhood, was his housekeeper, and she outlived him. He died at his Newcastle residence, 4 St. Mary's Terrace, on the 11th of October, 1890, and was buried in Jesmond Cemetery.

Upon the magnificent building at the Barras Bridge, deeply cut into the stone, are the words "The Hancock Museum," and within the vestibule is a massive slab recording the services of the brothers Hancock to Natural History—fit introduction to the edifice which forms their everlasting memorial.

## Jonathan Harle,

PHYSICIAN AND DIVINE.

THE name of Harle occurs at an early period in the history of Northumberland and the annals of Newcastle and Gateshead. William, "clerk of Herle" (Kirkharle), appears in 1284; William, son of William de Herle, a few years later; while in 1327, the year of Edward III.'s accession, Sir William de Herle, knight, "one of the great lights and worthies of Northumberland," was Lord Chief-Justice of the Common Pleas. In Newcastle, at the close of the fourteenth century, we meet with John Harle, "burgess." Thomas Harle held a tenure in Usworth under the Nuns of St. Bartholomew

at the Dissolution. Richard Harle witnessed the will of a master of St. Edmund's Hospital, Gateshead, in 1579. Leonard Harle commanded the *Hopewell*, of Newcastle, in 1587. George and James Harle were Newcastle merchants during the reign of James I. Robert Harle, merchant, married to Ellinor, sister of William Gray, author of the "Chorographia," died at the siege of Newcastle in 1644, and Edward Harle, son of Robert, was a legatee in his uncle William Gray's will. To continue the list would be a tedious operation; the race of Harle is still with us, and shows no signs of dying out.

Whether Jonathan Harle, the subject of this memoir, belonged to the local family of that name, or whether, as has been asserted, he was descended from a branch of it that had settled in the East Riding of Yorkshire, cannot now be ascertained. Whencesoever his family came, he was undoubtedly born in Newcastle, and although the exact date of his birth is unknown, there is good reason for assigning it to the years 1669 or 1670. It is pretty certain, too, that his parents were Puritans, for when he was seven years old they sent him to Hull to be educated by Mr. Pell, a famous teacher there, whose very name is redolent of North-country Nonconformity. With Mr. Pell he stayed for ten years. During that time he made uncommon progress in his studies. Evincing an aptitude for languages, he became a prodigy of classical learning. Mr. Pell, it is recorded, was so proud of his pupil that when his education was completed, and the time came for his departure to Newcastle, "he wept over him." Others shared the feeling; some Latin verses which the youth had written made him a general favourite, and "for a long time they hung in the school, as an honour both to the master and the scholar."

Before he left Hull Mr. Pell's pupil had formed a desire to become a Nonconformist minister. The famous Dr. Richard Gilpin, resigning his cure of souls at Greystock, and refusing the bishopric of Carlisle, was at this time settled in Newcastle as the pastor of a dissenting congregation. Upon his ministrations young Harle became an attentive and sympathetic attendant. Placing himself under the doctor's care, he began to study for the pulpit. In due time he commenced to teach and exhort, and his efforts in this direction were so acceptable that, at a comparatively early age, he was admitted a probationer. Upon Dr. Gilpin's recommendation he went into Lincolnshire as a licentiate, and took temporary charge of

a congregation of Puritans at Brigg, in that county. With the experience gained there he returned to Newcastle, and, having accepted the ministry of a Presbyterian church at Morpeth, was ordained on the 21st of February, 1693. Dr. Gilpin, who was present at the trial services, states that his young friend and pupil managed the questions exceedingly well, and to the great satisfaction of the ministers who ordained him.

Although various circumstances point in that direction, there is no absolute proof of identity between Mr. Pell, Harle's teacher at Hull, and the Rev. William Pell, "one of the most learned men in England," who, the year after Mr. Harle's ordination, came to Newcastle as assistant to Dr. Gilpin. Gilpin's Pell, ejected minister of Stainton-le-Street, leaving the county of Durham, after suffering imprisonment for Nonconformity, about the year 1674, "followed the example of so many of his brethren, and practised physic in North Yorkshire," went from thence across the Humber into Lincolnshire, and, in 1687, became a Nonconformist preacher at Boston, where he remained till he came to Newcastle. Eleven or twelve years of his life, therefore, were spent in North Yorkshire, and it may well be that during that interval he kept school as well as practised physic. Calamy, however, asserts that he could not be induced "to teach academical learning," because of "his university oath on becoming M.A." Should Calamy have been mistaken in this statement, it becomes easy to understand why Mr. Harle went so far away as Brigg, within fifty miles of Boston, to serve his probation, and why Mr. Pell, the year after Mr. Harle's ordination, came to Newcastle to assist Dr. Gilpin. It is certainly pleasant to suppose that it was the strong friendship which master and pupil contracted at Hull that led the latter into Lincolnshire and brought the former into Northumberland.

On the 10th of September, 1693, Mr. Harle received a call from the dissenting congregation assembling in Pottergate, Alnwick. He accepted it, and continued to preach on alternate Sundays at Morpeth and Alnwick till he was relieved of the former charge by his relative and biographer, the Rev. John Horsley, author of the "Britannia Romana." Soon after his settlement in Alnwick he married. His wife was Mary, daughter of Thomas Ledgard, of Newcastle. Not, however, of Thomas Ledgard the alderman and Mayor, as some biographers have supposed, but of the alderman's son. Thomas Ledgard, the Mayor, died in 1673, leaving no

surviving daughter named Mary. Thomas Ledgard, the younger, who married Anne Bonner, and inherited from his father a part of Elswick Colliery and the estate of the Red Barns in the eastern suburbs of Newcastle, died four years later, leaving two children—Robert and Mary—both of whom were well provided for. It must have been this Mary Ledgard, left fatherless in early childhood, that became the wife of the young preacher at Alnwick.

Like Dr. Gilpin and many of his brethren in the Nonconformist ministry, Mr. Harle entered upon the study of physic. In this branch of learning he made such proficiency that, in 1710, he obtained from the College of Physicians at Edinburgh a certificate that he was qualified for a degree, and on the 28th December of that year the University of Edinburgh conferred upon him the degree of M.D. As a physician, Dr. Harle was "highly esteemed, and consulted by persons of all persuasions; yet, though he practised nearly forty years, so singularly unselfish was he, that he would not accept of remuneration from his patients. After he obtained his degree, his friends pressed him for the sake of his family to take fees from those who were willing and able to give them; but he would not alter the resolution he had formed of making medicine and everything subservient to his nobler design of doing good to immortal souls."

Dr. Harle was a man of studious habits, and acquired great learning. Not only was he well acquainted with Latin, Greek, and Hebrew, but he had also a knowledge of the French, Italian, and Spanish languages. Some portion, too, he had imbibed of the antiquarian tastes of his illustrious relative, Horsley, with whom and with other literary friends he kept up an extensive correspondence. According to Horsley, his letters were much valued, for they contained something that was new and entertaining, and often a great number and variety of beautiful thoughts that were diverting and instructive. In early life he published "A Discourse of Infant Baptism by way of Dialogue," than which, conjectures Horsley, "there is no book extant of so small a compass in which the controversy is handled with more judgment and clearness." He also composed a number of hymns and metrical psalms, but these he did not venture to give to the public. Shortly before he died he published an octavo of 179 pages entitled "An Historical Essay on the State of Physick in the Old and New Testament, and the Apocryphal Interval, With a Particular Account of the Cases

mentioned in Scripture, and Observations upon them. To which is added a Discourse concerning the Duty of consulting a Physician in Sickness." London, 1729.

From constitutional infirmity, Dr. Harle could not at any time drink fermented liquors, yet gout and gravel were, to use his own words, "the rack and torture" of his life. Towards the close of 1729 he was stricken down by an attack of gout in the head and stomach, more severe than usual. The day before Christmas he died, and a week later he was buried near the scene of his thirty-six years' ministrations. Horsley wrote his epitaph in flowing Latin, and preached his funeral sermon, which latter, with some notes of his life, two of his sermons, and specimens of his psalms and hymns, he afterwards published. The psalms and hymns are of little merit; but the sermons—textual discourses made up of a number of divisions and subdivisions—contain many judicious observations and exhortations, evincing great knowledge of the Scriptures; and although the style of them is somewhat quaint, and the sentences are often long, tedious, and occasionally involved, the meaning is generally clear enough, and some passages are vigorous and impressive. So writes Tate, the Alnwick historian, from whose narrative, based upon Horsley's, may be quoted the following description of the doctor's personal appearance and character:—

"A middle-sized, fat man, with little activity and briskness, but with a countenance very comely and pleasant, and a soul much more so. He was a learned man, an able and faithful minister, a skilful physician, a kind friend, and an affectionate husband and father. He adorned the doctrines he taught, not more by his integrity, which was 'a rich jewel set in the midst of a great many others, and so shining with a redoubled lustre,' than by his meekness and benevolence, his candour and moderation, and by the cheerfulness and even pleasantry of his conversation."

Dr. Harle left a widow, three sons, and a daughter. One of his sons, the Rev. Jonathan Harle, succeeded him at Alnwick meeting-house, and although the appointment led to a secession and the formation of a new congregation (Sion Chapel), he continued to occupy his father's pulpit till his decease in 1743. Another son, Joseph, settled as a grocer in the town, and was buried there in 1765. The widow lived to a great age—about ninety years—and died in December, 1766.

# William Lockey Harle,

LAWYER AND RADICAL REFORMER.

WILLIAM LOCKEY HARLE, the son of an Excise officer at Stockton-on-Tees, was born in the city of York in 1801. He received his early education at Stockton, where he was a schoolfellow of the late James Clephan, and finished it under the care of the Rev. Thomas Waite, curate of Seaham. Intended for the profession of the law, he served his articles with Mr. John Adamson, the antiquary, in Newcastle. During his clerkship he taught in the Sunday-school of St. Anne's Church, New Road, and was an active member of the Literary and Philosophical Society, where he distinguished himself by a remarkable speech in favour of the introduction of the Waverley Novels. When his articles expired he went to London to undergo the usual period of service in a metropolitan lawyer's office, and while there studied at London University, and in 1833 was admitted an attorney.

In a series of sketches of local celebrities, entitled "Public Men of the North," which appeared in a short-lived Newcastle paper—the *Northern Examiner*—and were afterwards reprinted, Mr. Harle's early career in Newcastle is described by a friendly hand as follows:—

"When he returned to the North to begin life in earnest—active, energetic, zealous—he was determined to breast the surges of life. He was diligent, eloquent, vigorous, and courteous. He lectured at the Newcastle Mechanics' Institute; he read papers at the Literary and Philosophical Society; he pleaded at Petty Sessions, and in the local courts. He was an ardent Liberal, and the advocate of progress. His speeches in the early days were imaginative, and his manner occasionally somewhat heated. He adopted for the most part the principles of the first Lord Durham. He supported Municipal Reform in 1835, and his speech in favour of Lord John Russell's Municipal Bill was considered so effective that it was printed separately and sold in the streets. Desirous of popular influence, he never flattered the people. When the Chartists sought the destruction or decapitation of Lord Palmerston, under the leadership of Mr. Urquhart, Mr. Harle stood alone in the Guildhall and

exposed the folly of the demagogues of the day. When the same persons opposed Free Trade and the repeal of the Corn Laws, Mr. Harle, in the teeth of violent majorities in the Guildhall, supported cheap bread, and did his utmost to popularise unrestricted commerce.

"Mr. Harle became a member of the Newcastle Town Council in 1841. In that body he was active, zealous, and energetic. His speeches on the Coal Duty, the Team Valley Railway, the Tyne Conservancy Bill as promoted by the people of Shields, and the purchase of the Gas Works in Newcastle by the Corporation,

were considered the four best speeches delivered by one man in the Newcastle Council. Mr. Harle continued in the Council twelve years. In November, 1853, the municipal constituency in Newcastle was more than doubled by the introduction of tenement voters. His triennial period of service expired in that month. Two or three shopkeepers entertained some petty, unmeaning personal dislike to Mr. Harle. He covered them with ridicule in one of the best speeches he ever delivered, and declined to canvass. . . . Mr. Harle's experiment did not succeed."

For three years Mr. Harle remained outside the Council Chamber, and then, in May, 1857, his old ward of St. Nicholas re-elected him.

In the November following the constituency again proved fickle, and he was defeated. At the elections in November, 1858, he contested All Saints' East Ward, which was perhaps the most memorable and exciting municipal election that ever occurred in Newcastle. Great numbers of personations were proved against his opponent, and the result was that Mr. Harle gained the seat and retained it till he was elected an alderman in 1868. In November, 1860, he was appointed one of the representatives of the Council in the River Tyne Commission, a position which he occupied continuously down to the time of his death. In 1864-65, during the Mayoralty of Colonel Perkins, he held the office of Sheriff of the town, and had the satisfaction of declaring his friend Joseph Cowen, senior, duly elected one of the representatives of Newcastle in Parliament. He was also for many years clerk to the Durham County Justices at Gateshead, and for some time Deputy-Recorder of Newcastle.

In his youth Mr. Harle contributed copiously to periodical literature, and at all times wrote with a facile pen upon current controversies in Tyneside newspapers. Specimens of his crisp and sparkling style adorn the biography of Sir Cresswell Cresswell in the first, and that of John Forster in the present, volume. Several pamphlets issued from his pen, the best known of which are—

"A Letter to the Freemen of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, on the Present State of the Representation of that Borough in the House of Commons." 8vo. Newcastle: Emerson Charnley, 1843.

"An Argument on the Inutility of the Distinction between Barrister and Attorney, addressed to the Lord Chancellor." 8vo. London, 1851.

"The Stephenson Memorial. A Lecture Delivered in the Lecture Room, Nelson Street, on Friday evening, the 18th of March, 1859." 8vo. *Newcastle Journal* Office, 1859.

He was also the author of a remarkable book of xvii.-411 pages, entitled—

"A Career in the Commons: Or Letters to a Young Member of Parliament on the Conduct and Principles necessary to constitute him an Enlightened and Efficient Representative." 8vo. London, 1850,

in which he sketched what he conceived to be "the course in Parliament of a representative entertaining progressive views, and liberal or popular principles."

Alderman Harle's reputation in the North of England is based upon his oratorical abilities, and his extraordinary gifts in debate and

controversy. The writer before quoted states that his memory was "most accurate and retentive," enabling him to give "the day, the place, the occasion, fifteen or twenty years ago, when a man uttered a glaring absurdity," and thus to raise the grim spectres of an opponent's former wild vagaries. "In a forensic argument, in a crowded assembly, in a learned institution, and after dinner," he was "fluent, graceful, often humorous, and at times pathetic"; but in debate "his memory, fluency, animal spirits, and force of language" came to the aid of his oratory, and made him a most formidable antagonist.

Alderman Harle died, at his residence in Victoria Square, Newcastle, on the 18th of January, 1878, leaving by his marriage with a granddaughter of Cuthbert, commonly called Sir Cuthbert, Heron, three sons, of whom the eldest, Claxton William Harle, succeeded his father in the clerkship to the Durham County Justices, and has several times filled the office of Under Sheriff of Newcastle.

## George Harris,

UNITARIAN MINISTER.

ONE of the oldest Nonconformist congregations in Newcastle—that which worships in the Church of the Divine Unity—has had the merit, or the good fortune, of attracting to its pastorate several men of exceptional ability, learning, and influence. Already in this series of biographies three of them have found a place—Benjamin Bennet, author of the "Irenicum"; William Durant, the ejected lecturer of St. Nicholas' and All Saints'; and Dr. Richard Gilpin, quondam rector of Greystock, and bishop-designate of Carlisle.

It is a noteworthy circumstance that in the pastoral roll of this congregation there is not to be found a single name of local origin. Every one of the ministers, from the illustrious physician who practically founded the church to the gifted lecturer who at present occupies its pulpit, has come hither from beyond the Tyne. Bennet belonged to Leicestershire; Durant's origin is attributed to Devonshire; Gilpin came from a famous Cumberland family; Turner was a Yorkshireman.

George Harris, who is said to have been a blood descendant of Oliver Cromwell, was a native of Kent. At Maidstone, in that

county, where his father officiated as a Unitarian minister for forty years, he was born in May, 1794. His education was superintended by his father, who, knowing how precarious was the income and the standing of a heterodox preacher, contemplated bringing him up to a commercial life. Accordingly, at the age of fourteen, he was sent into a business office to learn bookkeeping and to qualify himself for a mercantile career. The choice of his parents, however, was not his. He wanted to be a Unitarian minister, and the time came when his desires could not be repressed. Reluctantly yielding to

his wishes, his father removed him from the clerkship, gave him some little college preparation at the University of Glasgow, and set him out, in his eighteenth year, as a lay preacher. After he had worked his probationary period in the capacity of Missionary of the Lancashire and Cheshire Unitarian Christian Association, the congregation worshipping in Renshaw Street, Liverpool, gave him his first settlement as a pastor. His next appointment was at Bolton in Lancashire, and, in 1825, he entered upon what proved to be a long pastorate in Scotland.

While at Bolton, Mr. Harris had developed gifts of oratory, both

in the pulpit and on the platform, which foreshadowed a successful ministry. A friendly rivalry for the possession of him sprang up between London and Glasgow. The congregation in London was wealthy and strong; the Unitarian cause in Scotland was struggling and weak. In his college days, and upon divers occasions afterwards, Mr. Harris had been to the Clyde, and seen, from his standpoint, the nakedness of the land. The fighting instinct of the Cromwells being strong within him, he had convinced himself that, better than ease and opulence in London, was the turning of Scotchmen from what he conceived to be the darkness of Calvinism, into the light of doctrines for the promulgation of which Calvin burned Servetus. He, therefore, accepted the call from the Clyde and settled at Glasgow.

Throwing himself with great earnestness and fervour into a bold and aggressive propaganda, Mr. Harris soon had his hands full of work. Favoured by a robust constitution and a powerful frame, he laboured incessantly; with untiring voice and unceasing pen he promulgated his doctrines far and wide. Champion of an unpopular faith, among a rigidly orthodox people, his mission excited storms of controversy, and out of these he drew friends and adherents. Congregations were established at Girvan, Paisley, Tillicoultry, and Aberdeen. A second cause was built up in Glasgow, and the denomination was reconstructed and consolidated in Edinburgh. Considering the active life that he led, now here, now there, preaching, lecturing, and speaking in all parts of Scotland, his literary work at this time was remarkable. Before he left Bolton he had written five or six controversial pamphlets, but, across the Border, sermon and discourse, tract and pamphlet, followed each other in rapid succession. Soon after his settlement in Glasgow, he started, and month after month for many years he edited, a magazine—*The Christian Pilot and Pioneer*. Before he left he had written and published at least twenty booklets and pamphlets; a few of them simple congregational discourses and addresses, but others substantial treatises defending his teachings from the attacks of clerical critics and adversaries.

The Unitarian congregation in Newcastle, of which, in 1845, Mr. Harris was invited to take the pastoral charge, represented for the most part the intellectual and literary life of the town. Among its members were James Losh, barrister, and afterwards County Court judge; Hugh Lee Pattinson, the famous chemist; James Hodgson

and his brother Thomas, proprietors of the *Newcastle Chronicle;* James Clephan, editor of the *Gateshead Observer;* W. A. Mitchell, proprietor and editor of the *Tyne Mercury;* Alderman Thomas Bell, of the firm of Losh, Wilson, & Bell, and his partners, W. S. Losh and Thomas Wilson, author of "The Pitman's Pay"; Emerson Charnley, councillor and bookseller; George Burnett, lead manufacturer; John Buddle, the great mining engineer; Mark Lambert, the engraver, and his son, Mark William; William Garrett, bookseller; Dr. Thomas M. Greenhow, brother-in-law of Harriet Martineau; Thomas Swinburne, solicitor, and clerk to the magistrates of Gateshead; Andrew Tinwell, mathematician; John Thornhill, librarian of the Literary and Philosophical Society; William Mather, afterwards the millionaire; George Brown, teacher of navigation; Russell Blackbird, shipbroker; T. K. Fife, surgeon; John and James Selkirk, reporters and printers; and Alderman Weatherley. These were stars of magnitude; with them were associated lesser lights, by whose aid the worshippers in Hanover Square Chapel formed a conspicuous constellation in the literary firmament of Tyneside.

Mr. Harris came from Scotland with a great reputation as a fighting preacher, but in Newcastle his polemical gifts found little scope for exercise. William Turner's amiable disposition and genial fellowship had created a tolerance of heterodoxy, which no one desired to weaken or impugn. Mr. Harris, undisturbed in the domain of controversial theology, applied himself to more pressing and more practical issues. He had taken part in Scottish struggles for civil and religious liberty, and now, with more time at his disposal, he was able to devote his energies to the work of political improvement, religious freedom, educational progress, and social reform. Though his church and its agencies were his first care, his voice was heard in lecture-halls, and upon public platforms, whenever oppression and tyranny could be effectively assailed, and wherever the forces of ignorance and sin could be baffled, weakened, or turned aside. In company with Dr. White, he undertook a mission among the lowest slums of Newcastle, and wrote an earnest appeal for sanitary improvement and the better housing of the poor. With the aid of self-sacrificing friends he gathered into the school-room attached to his church young men and women of the worst class, taught them to read and write, encouraged them to be truthful and honest, and tried to lure them from the paths of error and vice. In promoting Ragged Schools and Reformatories, and encouraging

habits of temperance and thrift, he was indefatigable. That which William Turner had been among the cultured inhabitants of Tyneside, that was George Harris among the poor and lowly—guide, counsellor, and friend.

The vigorous pen which Mr. Harris had so stoutly wielded on the other side of the Border, in defence of his faith and its adherents, was diverted upon Tyneside to more genial uses. For the most part it was employed in the composition of sermons setting forth the beauty, the happiness, and the consolations of the religious life, and in the preparation of historical discourses in which the origin, development, and continuance of what are called unorthodox churches were expounded and justified. One of these latter series, tracing the history of his own congregation from its beginnings under Gilpin and Durant, formed the basis of the valuable papers contributed to the *Newcastle Weekly Chronicle*, under the title of "Early Nonconformity in Newcastle," by the late James Clephan.

Shortly after his arrival in Newcastle, Mr. Harris was impressed with the inconvenient situation and surroundings of the place in which he ministered. It had been erected in 1726, since when the town had extended north, east, and west, and members of the congregation, removing further and further into ever-widening suburbs, found Hanover Square difficult of access, and the chapel deficient in accommodation. Mr. Harris devoted himself to the task of erecting a building that should realise modern ideas of comfort in public worship, and be easily accessible to the greater part of his flock. His efforts were successful. A site in New Bridge Street was obtained, and at Easter, 1854, the beautiful edifice in that thoroughfare, known as the Church of the Divine Unity, one of Mr. John Dobson's happiest efforts, was opened for public worship. This was Mr. Harris's crowning work; in accomplishing it he attained to the high-water mark of his career. Thenceforward the tide of his life began to ebb. He had overtaxed his strength, and although he did not actually break down, he never recovered that vigorous health which had carried him through the strain and struggle of an exceptionally long, active, and laborious ministry. He preached his first sermon in the autumn of 1812; he delivered his last message on Sunday, December 18th, 1859. The following Saturday, the day before Christmas, he died, and a few days later he was buried in Jesmond Cemetery.

# Robert Harrison,

"BEAU" AND "PHILOSOPHER."

AT the beginning of the eighteenth century, the brethren of the Trinity House of Newcastle, adding to their already capacious buildings in the Broad Chare, erected a free school and provided a master for the instruction of their children and apprentices in writing, arithmetic, mathematics, and the theory of navigation. The sum set apart for the master of the school was not extravagant. Sixteen pounds a year, with a free house and coals, was all that that important functionary received in the early years of the institution, and even in later times the salary never exceeded £80 per annum. There was, however, a privilege accorded to him of teaching twenty scholars, exclusive of those belonging to the fraternity, and of retaining for his own benefit the fees which the parents paid for his services. Modest as the stipend was, it sufficed to attract mathematicians of good repute. Several men of high attainments filled the post, and made what they could out of their supplementary labours. One of the most celebrated among them was Robert Harrison, who obtained the appointment, at an annual salary of £20, about the year 1756.

The picturesque village of Yarm, on the Yorkshire side of the Tees, near Stockton, is supposed to have been the place where, in 1717, Mr. Harrison first saw the light. At what school he received his early education, and by whom he was trained in youth, are not known. Having married Miss Anne Hett, of Darlington, he began life as one of the numerous tribe of lawyers that, for many generations, superintending the conveyancing, the pleading, and other legal procedure in South Durham and North Yorkshire, made Yarm their place of business and their home. Early in his career as an attorney, he discovered that success did not always await upon ability and learning. A sound scholar and a good mathematician, he found, or fancied, that he had mistaken his vocation. The loss of a suit in which he was interested determined him to abandon a calling that gave to himself and his clients little satisfaction.

From the practice of the law Mr. Harrison turned to the studies of his youth. Already famed for his skill in mathematics, he renewed his acquaintance with the classics, and acquired a competent know-

ledge of one or more of the Oriental tongues. Possessing these qualifications for teaching, he came to Newcastle, and obtaining the mastership of the Navigation School of the Trinity House, entered upon a remarkably successful career. Availing himself of his privileges, he added to his emoluments by preparing youths for the army, the navy, and the legal profession. Being a stately, dignified, and well-dressed man, he received the name of "Beau" Harrison—a distinction which probably tended to his advantage, for he obtained pupils from among the best families in the district. Such, after they

ROBERT HARRISON.

left Mr. Moises' care at the Grammar School, became the two sons of William Scott, the hostman, known in after years as Lords Stowell and Eldon. It is said that when the elder of the brothers was appointed Camden Professor of History at Oxford, he consulted his old teacher in the Broad Chare, and obtained assistance from him in arranging his first course of lectures. These lectures were attended by "the largest concourse of academics ever known." Dr. Parr states that they "captivated the young and interested the old," were "argumentative without formality, and brilliant without gaudiness,"

uniting "the happiest selection of topics with the most luminous arrangement of matter."

When he had acquired a competence, Mr. Harrison retired to Durham, and occupied the rest of his life in literary recreation among friends like-minded. One of his most attached correspondents was George Allan, the wealthy antiquary, of Darlington, editor and printer of the Allan Tracts; one of his closest companions was Joseph Ritson, the accomplished poetical critic and ballad collector. Mr. Allan took him on a visit to Edinburgh in 1781, and introduced him to the leading *literati* of the Scottish metropolis; Ritson was accustomed to stay with him for days together. His manner of life at Durham was undoubtedly eccentric. When he went out he wore a dark blue coat without a collar, and a triangular hat, and carried a cane surmounted by a large amber head. His bearing was lofty, not to say pompous; his carriage that of a doctor, or a University don. In the later years of his life he suffered his beard to grow. This extraordinary innovation upon the fashion of the day, which prescribed a shaven chin and a "mutton-chop" whisker as one of the marks of civilisation and respectability, exposed him to ridicule and misrepresentation. For that he cared nothing; gloried in it, probably. He even took his pipe to a newsroom or coffee-house, of which he was a member, and when the indulgence was prohibited by the management, he resigned, writing opposite his name in the roll of membership the words "Vanished in smoke."

Mr. George Allan, M.P., son of the antiquary, describes his father's friend as follows:—

"Mr. Harrison possessed more general learning than any man I ever heard of. He was acquainted with almost every known language; and his memory was so acute that, in alluding to any passage in a classical author, or book of history, or of mathematical science, he could direct me in his library, which was very extensive, to any particular edition, and mention what page to turn to. He was a profound mathematician; and I have no doubt but Mr. Maseres, the present Cursitor Baron of the Exchequer, with whom he corresponded, as well as Dr. Hutton, of Woolwich, would bear ample testimony of it. He resigned his situation at Newcastle many years ago, and lived during the remainder of his life at Durham, where I constantly spent six weeks during my vacations from college, and indeed enjoyed his society till within a few days of his death.

"During his last visit here [Blackwell Grange, near Darlington],

which was in June, 1802, he was sitting in my library, when I introduced, but not in any particular manner, a gentleman who had seen much of the world. When the gentleman went away in the evening, on attending him to his carriage, he said, 'Mr. Allan, when I was first introduced, I thought you possessed one of the most extraordinary pieces of library furniture I could have imagined, either of ancient or modern times; but, since dinner, I find in Mr. Harrison, if it were permanent, you would possess an ample library, if you had not a single book in the house.' On the day before he died, which was on a Sunday if I am not misinformed, he required a young lady sitting by his bed to read the service of the day. When she began the first lesson, he stopped her, and said it was not the proper lesson of the day; and, on referring to the calendar, she found she had made a mistake.

"In an account of his death, which appeared in a periodical publication, it was said he had let his beard grow for many years through an affected imitation of the representation of our Saviour; but there is no ground whatever for that similitude. The real fact is this:—He had been accustomed to shave himself, and that operation he performed, after having lathered his face, as he walked up and down his book-room, with a book in one hand and a razor in the other, seldom looking at a glass. About the age of seventy-eight his hand began to shake, and he employed a barber. This fellow often interrupted him when busy with his books, and often, for two or three days together, did not attend at all. I was with him one morning when he was anxious to walk with me to Bishop Cosin's library in Durham, and, his patience in waiting for the tonsor being exhausted, he said suddenly, 'Let us walk, and my beard may grow on.' He permitted his beard to grow after that time, and often exulted in the comfort he said he had experienced in having dismissed the shaver.

"Mr. Harrison, in his middle age, was a very fine, dignified-looking man. His profile, indeed, bore a strong resemblance of the coins of Oliver Cromwell, but his visage exhibited the portraiture of a most comprehensive mind, not the least tinctured with latent cunning or studied hypocrisy, much less with any other of the evil attributes of the Protector.

"He was generally known in Durham and Newcastle by the denomination of Philosopher Harrison, a name which he probably derived from having, in conjunction with Mr. Isaac Thompson, given

lectures on Natural and Experimental Philosophy. The ignorant people supposed him to be a magician; some said he was an atheist; others asserted that at least he was not a Christian; but from the manner of treating me when a young man at his house, not merely receiving lessons of morality, but of practical Christian faith, in the examples of himself and wife, who was a worthy woman, during the time I was reading with him Horace, Homer, Plutarch, and Aristotle, and books on the application of algebra to geometry, as well as assurance of it a short time before his death, I am convinced that a better and more firmly believing Christian never breathed. His morning dress was a full green damask night-gown; and he constantly wore a close coif of black silk on his head, such as the serjeants formerly wore."

After the death of his wife, in June, 1799, aged 82, Mr. Harrison lived in great seclusion, accessible only to his most intimate neighbours, and rarely venturing upon a visit to any but his attached friend Mr. Allan. He was at Blackwell Grange for the last time in June, 1802. On the 29th of October following he died, aged 85, and on the 2nd November he was buried beside his wife in Darlington Churchyard.

## William Harvey,

WOOD ENGRAVER.

"THE public baths of this town," wrote the Rev. John Baillie in his "Impartial History of Newcastle," dated 1801, "are very pleasantly situated without the Westgate. They were built a few years ago by the late eminent physician, Dr. Hall. They consist of medicated vapour baths—hot, tepid, or of Buxton temperature, together with enclosed cold baths for ladies and gentlemen; also, a large open, or swimming bath, where young gentlemen acquire this necessary and useful art, free from the danger of those fatal accidents which too frequently happen in large rivers or deep ponds. The situation is peculiarly inviting; it encloses a large area, elegantly laid out with gravel walks, bordered with a variety of fragrant flowers, the whole being surrounded and intersected with lines of ornamental shrubbery." There is a picture of them at the bottom of the plan prefixed to vol. i. of Brand's "History of Newcastle."

At the institution thus glowingly described, known to the present generation as Bath House, Bath Lane, William Harvey was born. His father, William Harvey, the keeper of the baths, gave him a good education, and at the age of fourteen, having shown a remarkable aptitude for drawing, he was bound apprentice for seven years to Thomas Bewick, the engraver. Bewick, then at the height of his reputation, took a great liking to the lad, for he was clever, industrious, and painstaking, eager to be taught, and quick to learn. Such was his progress that, shortly after his entry into the famous

William Harvey

workshop overlooking St. Nicholas' Churchyard, he was advanced from the drudgery of engraving invoice heads, bar bills, shop cards, and coal certificates, to the higher branches of his calling. Bewick entrusted to him and a fellow-apprentice, William Temple, the engraving of the cuts for Æsop's Fables, drawings for which had been made, some years before, by an early pupil—Robert Johnson. Johnson's drawings were in water-colour, very small and beautiful, and young Harvey, being an excellent draughtsman, was employed to re-draw them on the block, ready for his own burin, and the tools of his master and his fellow-pupil. Both the drawing and the

cutting were well done, as Bewick, in his "Autobiography," cheerfully acknowledges.

Encouraged by his master's approval, young Harvey produced designs of his own. One of them, a vignette for the title-page of "Cheviot: A Poetical Fragment," by R. W. (the first of the tracts issued by the Newcastle Typographical Society), is described as extremely beautiful, both in design and execution, the trees and the foliage being, in particular, excellently represented. So pleased was Bewick with his pupil's proficiency, that in the fifth year of his apprenticeship, on the eve of the New Year, 1815, he presented him with a copy of the "British Birds," supplementing it next day with the following letter of sound and sensible advice:—

"GATESHEAD, *1st January*, 1815.

"DEAR WILLIAM,—I sent you last night the History of British Birds, which I beg your acceptance of as a New Year's gift, and also as a token of my respect. Don't trouble yourself about thanking me for them; but, instead of doing so, let those books put you in mind of the duties you have to perform through life. Look at them (as long as they last) on every New Year's Day, and at the same time resolve, with the help of the all-wise, but unknowable God, to conduct yourself on every occasion as becomes a good man. Be a good son, a good brother (and when the time comes) a good husband, a good father, and a good member of society. Peace of mind will then follow you like a shadow; and when your mind grows rich in integrity, you will fear the frowns of no man, and only smile at the plots and conspiracies which it is probable will be laid against you by envy, hatred, and malice. "THOMAS BEWICK.

"To William Harvey, jun., Westgate."

At the expiration of his apprenticeship, in 1817, William Harvey, finding that Newcastle could not support another engraver while Bewick lived and worked, went to London. He had a double purpose to serve in migrating to the metropolis; he went thither not only to push his fortunes, but to complete his art education. With a view to obtain a thorough knowledge of correct principles of drawing, he placed himself under the tuition of B. R. Haydon, the historical painter. With the object of learning true anatomical expression, he attended the lectures of Sir Charles Bell, foremost man of his day in the field of anatomical and physiological discovery. At Haydon's studio he worked with the Landseers, Lance, and

others; maintaining himself meanwhile by furnishing designs for the engravers, and labouring hard with the burin on his own account. Haydon, who painted on a colossal scale, drew his Newcastle pupil for a time into the cultivation of a similar style of engraving. One of the first things by which Mr. Harvey distinguished himself in London was the production of a huge cut of Haydon's picture, the "Death of Dentatus." This engraving, published in 1821, was fifteen inches high, by eleven inches and a quarter wide, and was composed of seven different pieces. Chatto, in the "History of Wood Engraving," 1838, describes it as one of the most elaborately engraved woodcuts, for a large subject, that had ever appeared, though scarcely a successful specimen of the art, being rather an attempt to rival copperplate engraving. W. J. Linton, admitting that the cut was faulty in style, and too much in imitation of copperplate, writes of it as "the most daring, and, in some respects, the most successful engraving ever attempted in wood." With the criticism which this specimen of his powers elicited, Mr. Harvey was satisfied, and did not attempt to imitate his teacher in colossal productions again. Book illustrations of the ordinary size were henceforth the sole object of his care. Among other things he drew and engraved vignettes and tail-pieces for Dr. Henderson's "History of Ancient and Modern Wines," published in 1824, and with these cuts, which may be considered to have formed the groundwork of his fame as a designer, his practice as an engraver practically came to an end. He had been seven years in London, had established a high reputation for drawing on the wood, and during the remainder of his life he devoted himself exclusively to designing pictures for copperplate and wood engravers to execute.

To enumerate all the books that were wholly illustrated by William Harvey in his long career would occupy considerable space. For forty years his pencil was actively at work upon almost every conceivable subject that could enter into book illustration and embellishment. The pictures in most of the beautiful books which issued from the press of that untiring pioneer in cheap literature, Charles Knight, were of his designing; among them those of "The Land We Live In," the "Book of Common Prayer," the "Pictorial Shakespeare," the "Pilgrim's Progress," and the "Arabian Nights' Entertainments." The "Arabian Nights" is the book upon which Harvey's fame as a true artist mainly rests. "In the combination of the most luxuriant

fancy, with the strictest accuracy of costume, the splendour and grace of Oriental life were never more happily presented than in the hundreds of designs in these three volumes." Other delightful specimens of his talents are to be found in a series of designs for illustrated editions of White's "Natural History of Selborne," Thomson's "Seasons," and Milton's "Poetical Works."

In his youth Mr. Harvey had been "Bewick's favourite pupil"; in his old age he became, like his master, one of the fathers of his profession. Outliving the friends and companions of his boyhood, his visits to Newcastle, in the later years of his life, were few and far between, but he cherished kindly remembrance of his birthplace, and was at all times ready to assist with friendly counsel and cheerful encouragement struggling artists and men of letters who sought his advice from the banks of the Tyne. At his house in the beautiful town of Richmond, amidst the finest scenery of the Thames valley, he enjoyed the friendship of men distinguished in art and literature, who were attracted not more by his genius than by his unpretentious bearing and amiable character. At the date of his death, January 13th, 1866, he was the only survivor of Bewick's pupils—the last link which connected the prolific book illustration of to-day with the sparse and rude embellishments of literature in the previous century.

A writer in the *Newcastle Chronicle*, describing Mr. Harvey's funeral in Richmond Cemetery, states that amongst the group of mourners were the three brothers Dalziel, Newcastle men; Birket Foster, a Shields man; and Mason Jackson, likewise from the North —all eminent in the art of which the dead draughtsman had been so bright an ornament. There were also grouped round the grave the veteran bibliophile, Charles Knight, Tom Hood, and other gentlemen, all either proficients or connoisseurs in the profession which he had loved so well, and laboured so hard and so successfully to elevate.

In St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, is a tablet bearing the following inscription:—

"In memory of William Harvey, an artist of great and original talent, who, like his first instructor, Thomas Bewick, enhanced the pictorial interest of works of the press by his skill as a designer, and by his development of the resources of wood engraving. Some of his friends, affectionately appreciating his amiable character, have united to raise this monument of his worth and their regard. He was born at Newcastle-on-Tyne, July 13, 1796. He died at Richmond in Surrey, January 13, 1866."

# Thomas Haswell,

SCHOOLMASTER AND MUSICIAN.

In the year that Louis XVI. was beheaded, and about the date that England declared war against his executioners, a Shields seaman, named George Haswell, married, enjoyed a brief honeymoon of twenty-four hours, and then signed articles for a voyage to Riga. The vessel to which he engaged himself proceeded to sea, completed her passage, discharged her coals, took in her homeward cargo, and, when all was ready, sailed for the Tyne. To the Tyne, in due course, she came, but George Haswell did not arrive with her. The good ship had been overhauled in the North Sea by the frigate *Lezard*, and he, with others of the crew, had been "pressed" into the navy. There was something unusual about this particular impressment—so unusual indeed that an inquiry was held, which ended in the captain of the *Lezard* being superseded by the gallant, and afterwards heroic, Rodney. Punishment of the captain did not, however, procure the liberation of the impressed seamen. George Haswell served his Majesty for three years before he saw his bride again. At the end of that time, a free man once more, he obtained one of the sham protections commonly used among seamen in those days, and, contriving to escape the attentions of the "press-gang" during the remainder of the war, settled down in the harbour town of his birth as a foy-boatman.

From the married life thus rudely disturbed, and unexpectedly renewed, came Thomas Haswell, the public-spirited citizen of North Shields, whose familiar features are represented in the accompanying portrait, and whose remarkable career is briefly described in what follows from a biographical work written by his son, Mr. George H. Haswell, managing director of the great firm of Tangyes, Birmingham.

One of a numerous family born to the industrious seafarer, he first saw the light in 1807. At the age of eight he was sent to learn the little that was taught in North Shields Royal Jubilee School—one of a series of similar institutions that in various parts of the kingdom had been opened, four years before, to celebrate the fiftieth anniver-

sary of the reign of George III. What that little was the subject of it has left upon record:—

"I could read the Bible very well for a boy of my years, which, indeed, was all that was then deemed necessary to constitute a scholar. Nothing else had been attempted; no writing, no arithmetic, no grammar, no geography had I ever heard of. But about this time the two first were added—the three subjects being driven forward

THOMAS HASWELL.

at a pretty rapid rate, followed closely by—not a Manx cat, but one with the orthodox nine tails, which seemed to have discovered the long-sought perpetual motion, for it never ceased during school hours, but indeed it made itself evident to all our five senses, and we could see, feel, hear, taste, and even smell it from morning till night. Writing was taught to beginners on sand; wooden styles taking the place of pens, and a 'smoother' being used by the monitor to efface the efforts of the learner. Advanced pupils had ruled slates, but

writing paper was never seen. Only the four simple rules of arithmetic were taught. On one occasion [at an anniversary meeting], I remember, after some chapters of the Bible had been read we showed our writing on slate, which was very good indeed, and then proceeded to work sums in the simple rules. So quickly and correctly were these worked, that some of the company openly expressed alarm, and the chairman was obliged to explain to the assembly that these boys were to be advanced no further, and that, in fact, they were on the point of leaving school, having finished their education."

When Thomas Haswell was eleven years old he was taken from school and set to work—first as helper to his father on the river, then to grind glasses with a maker of "watch crystals," next as errand boy to a grocer, and at length, when fifteen years of age, as apprentice, for six years, to a master painter. The little knowledge which he had acquired in the "Royal Jubilee" excited a thirst for more, and the means of obtaining it in the usual way being withdrawn, he began to educate himself. A passion for music sprang up; to gratify and cultivate it he joined the choir of Christ Church, where he had the advantage of studying thorough bass and counterpoint under a fine specimen of the old-fashioned choirmaster, Thomas Oxley. Mr. Oxley possessed a magnificent voice, had a thorough knowledge of music, and was so devoted to his art that he held his choir practices at six o'clock in the morning! Young Haswell made rapid progress under Oxley's tuition, and at the age of sixteen joined a military band, of which, shortly afterwards, he was made the leader. Up to that time scarcely anything beyond a plain quick-step or slow march was attempted by bands of this class; but he, not content with such a limited *repertoire*, arranged standard glees and choruses from the oratorios for his players. The new departure led to his becoming leader of a fine band in South Shields, which gave a weekly performance of classical music scored by himself. Before long he acquired, without any tuition, a complete knowledge of the pianoforte and organ. Nor were graver studies neglected. All the time that could be spared from his trade and his music was devoted to mental improvement. He had formed the idea that his real life's work was to be found in teaching; he was determined to bring to that work, when the time arrived for it, a well-stored mind; and he realised his object.

With the aid of one or two other men of "light and leading," Mr. Haswell carried on for some years a series of high-class subscription

concerts in the harbour towns. These brought him in contact with the best of local society; while his wide range of reading in philosophy and science secured for him the friendship of most of the cultured men in the district. By them he was encouraged to test his fitness for teaching—to make an essay in the position to which he aspired. Entering the Westoe Lane National School, South Shields, as a pupil teacher, and having acquired the method adopted in such institutions, he accepted the mastership of Trinity Church School in that town. Here an excellent prospect appeared to be opening out before him, and it did open out, though not exactly in the way that he and his friends expected. For, instead of remaining in the southern harbour town to win his laurels, he was enabled to re-cross the water and win them in the place of his nativity. In 1839, soon after he had taken charge of the Trinity lads, the head-mastership of his old school, the "Royal Jubilee," fell vacant; he became a candidate, carried all before him, and was elected over the heads of thirty competitors. Thus, in the thirty-second year of his age, twenty-one years after he had left the Royal Jubilee a half-educated scholar, he re-entered its walls as chief master.

Mr. Haswell found his old school, with only forty pupils, in a deplorable condition. The system of teaching had but little changed since he spent his two and a half years of drudgery within its uninviting walls. The same dull stereotyped plan prevailed—weary copying of monotonous platitudes upon rickety slates, listless reading of dull monitions from repellent lesson books, objectless iteration of sums in the four simple rules of arithmetic. As fast as he dared, and his private means would allow, Mr. Haswell changed all this. In the first year of his mastership he introduced the study and practice of vocal music; the boys being taught to read at sight both from staff notation and from a sol-fa system. His knowledge of painting enabled him, as the next improvement, to project upon the walls, in oils, the two terrestrial hemispheres, eight feet in diameter—a novelty which gave vividness and force to lessons in geography, and long afterwards earned for the "Jubilees" a reputation among ship captains as "tartars" at geographical cross-examination. Free-hand drawing in chalk upon blackboards was introduced, followed by geometry and projection, and as instruments for this latter study were wanting, and recourse to the school funds for such a purpose, or indeed for any other of a similar character, were not to be thought of, Mr. Haswell devised wooden compasses and other homely

appliances, which, although neither too handy nor too elegant, served his purpose. A pair of twelve-inch globes, purchased with his own money, increased the interest and effectiveness of his geographical teaching, and enabled him to give lessons in elementary astronomy and navigation. A set of magnetic bars made by himself, and a plate electric machine presented by a friend, were the means of introducing the study of electricity; a second-hand air-pump bought at Newcastle rendered possible a course of instruction in pneumatics. Elementary chemistry was introduced and taught to the Jubilee lads long before a really effective text-book on the subject had made its appearance. Land surveying, a branch of study that naturally arose out of lessons in geometry, was practised systematically. The whole school would be taken for a walk into the country, where, by arrangement with some farmer, a field would be surveyed with staff and chain; at the same time, with a magnifying-glass, the structure of some common insect, or the beauty of some simple wild flower, would be exhibited and explained. Nor were athletic exercises forgotten. At regular intervals the boys, about 200 in number, were marched to Tynemouth to bathe and to swim, or be taught to swim, in the sea. At all times games of strength and skill were encouraged, and although the master superintended them and joined in them, he never obtruded his authority unnecessarily, but allowed his lads to play as boys love to play—in their own way. Thus there grew up between him and his pupils, poor, ill-fed, and ill-clad as many of them were, an affectionate regard, a mutual pride, and a generous confidence that lightened the task of the one and eased the toil of the other. In after years, old boys filling useful stations in life acknowledged their obligations in friendly correspondence, gifts to the old school, and other tokens of grateful remembrance. Numbers of them taking to the sea, rose from forecastle to cabin, and commanded great ships in great waters. "Elfin," in the *Newcastle Daily Chronicle* some years ago, recorded a gathering of ship captains icebound in the Baltic, who, dining together on Christmas Day, and recounting the exploits of youth, discovered that each of them had been a scholar at the "Jubilee," and had received his first lesson in navigation from Mr. Haswell.

In the second year of his mastership, Mr. Haswell married a lady of musical taste and culture—Miss Matilda Preston Armstrong, and with her assistance was able to develop his musical genius side by side with his school duties. Absorbing as these duties were, he

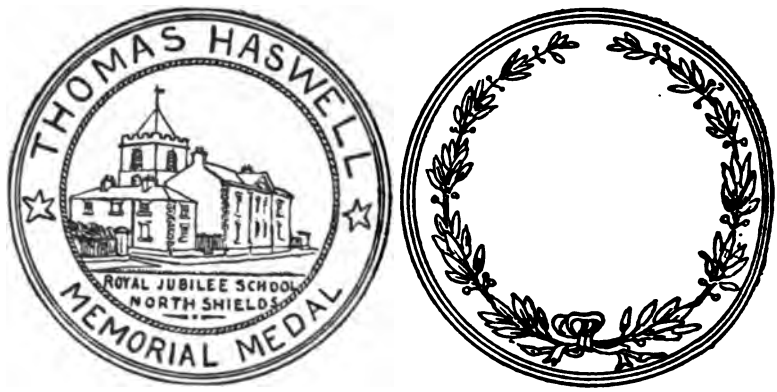
managed to instruct private pupils in music, to organise concerts and entertainments, and, in 1851 or 1852, to undertake the duties of organist at the parish church of North Shields, with all its responsibilities of choir training, choir practice, and frequent service. He found time also to compose music for his choir, and melodies for the poetical inspirations of his friends. "Tynemouth Abbey," a beautiful air which he set to words by Mr. John Stobbs, is known all over the North-Country. One of his melodies, wedded to verses written by Mr. J. S. Edington for the opening of North Shields Mechanics' Institute, is strangely suggestive of the gem in Gounod's "Redemption," published years afterwards, both compositions being founded upon an identical bass. Another air, "Welcome to the Hungarian Exiles," gave life to other stirring lines by Mr. Edington, while "The Life Brigade" performed the same service for a song by Dr. Spence Watson. The theory of music was his favourite study; the practice of it his chief delight. That he had penetrated deeply into the subject is shown by the following passage from the preface to a profound work on "Musical Intervals and Temperament" (now a University text-book), written by his friend W. S. B. Woolhouse, F.R.A.S., the eminent mathematician and astronomer:—"The publication of the first edition of this essay was originally prompted by the suggestions of an old and highly esteemed friend, Mr. Thomas Haswell, of North Shields, who always took great interest in musical disquisitions, and was a diligent inquirer into everything appertaining to them."

During the early years of its existence, the "Royal Jubilee," supported by voluntary subscriptions, had been a free school. Later on a penny a week was charged. But after the Education Act was passed subscriptions fell off, and it became necessary to obtain a Government grant and place the institution under Government inspection. Mr. Haswell rose to the occasion. Such was his devotion to his work that, at sixty-three years of age, submitting to the ordeal of a formal examination, he obtained a piece of parchment certifying that he was competent to conduct a school, in which he had already trained from four to five thousand boys for the battle of life! In 1880 the school was taken over by the School Board, and in December, 1886, having the year before sustained an irreparable loss by the death of his wife, he retired from his post. Verging upon fourscore years, he had been, for the most part of half a century, in active service, and the Education Depart-

ment, mindful of his long and arduous labours, assigned to him a small retiring pension. It was a considerate act, which the recipient appreciated. Unfortunately he did not live long to enjoy it. On the 8th December, 1889, his eighty-second birthday, he passed away, his last words being the formula with which he had closed the Jubilee School every day for nearly fifty years—"Slates away, boys!"

On the 9th of December, 1890, a portrait of the good old "Master" was unveiled in the Public Library of North Shields, and a memorial medal, depicted in the engraving, was presented to the dux of the school. The portrait bears the following inscription:—

"The Memorial Portrait of Thomas Haswell was placed here by his late pupils, friends, and admirers, in recognition of his many social qualities, and his long services in his native town in the cause of education. A.D. 1890."




THE THOMAS HASWELL MEMORIAL MEDAL.

# Sir Arthur Hazlerigg,

PARLIAMENTARY GOVERNOR OF NEWCASTLE.

"This family traces from Rodger de Hezilrigge, one of the knights in the invading army of William the Conqueror, and it ranks amongst the most ancient gentry in the kingdom."—BURKE.

THE family of Hazlerigg, or Heselrige, is found, a century and a half after the Conquest, in possession of valuable estates in the county of Northumberland. It held the fertile manors of Brunton and Fawdon, in the parish of Gosforth, and of Weetslade, which lies to the northward, a little beyond Gosforth boundary. By virtue of these possessions William de Hesilrigg was sent to represent Northumberland in two successive Parliaments of Edward II. For some or all of these estates, in July, 1323, when the muster-roll was called over in Newcastle, Simon de Heselrige answered to his name, and, for the same reason, in the later Parliaments of Edward III., and the first of Richard II., another William de Hesilrigg represented the county. A great-grandson of Simon, Thomas de Hesilrigg, widened the family connection by a fortunate marriage. Towards the close of the fourteenth century he was united to Isabel, co-heir of Sir Roger de Heron, Knight, by Margaret, daughter of Sir Ralph Hastings, and through this alliance he acquired the fine estate of Nosely, in the county of Leicester, which has been ever since the family seat. From their union descended, in the seventh generation, Sir Thomas Hazelrigg, of Nosely and Brunton, created a baronet in July, 1622. Sir Thomas died in January, 1629, leaving, as his heir, his son Arthur, whose career is now to be recorded.

Sir Arthur Hazlerigg, succeeding to the title and estates at his father's decease, was living the life of a country gentleman at Nosely when that fatal contention began between Charles I. and his subjects which ended in civil war. Party spirit, engendered and fostered by the struggle, ran so high that every man of position in the kingdom was, as it were, compelled to takes sides in the quarrel. Sir Arthur cast in his lot with the rising party in the State who were determined to check the king's tendencies towards absolute sovereignty, to uphold the privileges of Parliament, and to maintain the rights and liberties of the subject. His neighbours, the freeholders

of Leicestershire, sympathising with his opinions, returned him as one of their representatives to the first Parliament that assembled after his father's death. Charles had been governing the realm without consulting either Lords or Commons for ten years, and Sir Arthur Hazlerigg entered the House of Commons as a member of that assembly which, hastily summoned in the spring of 1640, and as hastily dissolved three weeks afterwards, is distinguished in English history as the "Short Parliament." To the "Long Parliament," which met in November of that year, he was re-elected, and from that date his public life may be said to run.

Sir Arthur Haylerigg.

As soon as the House settled down to business, Sir Arthur Hazlerigg began to take a leading part in its proceedings, acting uniformly with the Northern men, and identifying himself generally with the party led by Hampden and Pym. On the third day of the session he was placed upon an important committee—that of Elections, Returns, and Privileges. Within a few months he had made his mark by bringing in bills for the attainder of the Earl of Strafford, and for vesting the command of the militia in officers chosen by Parliament, supporting at the same time with much ardour and persistency Sir Edward Deering's Bill for the extirpation of Episcopacy.

In little more than a year his name was blazing all over the kingdom as that of a patriot, if not of a martyr.

So active had been Sir Arthur Hazlerigg's opposition to the Royal will that the king ordered him and five others to be put upon their trial for treason. On the 3rd of January, 1641-42, the House of Lords was startled by the sudden appearance in their midst of Herbert, the Attorney-General, who presented "articles of high treason and other misdemeanours" against Lord Kimbolton, a peer, and Denzil Hollis, Sir Arthur Hazlerigg, John Pym, John Hampden, and William Strode, members of the House of Commons. Shortly afterwards the Commons were agitated by the entrance of the Sergeant-at-Arms, who, in the name of the king, demanded the arrest of the five members. The demand was not complied with, but next morning the accused attended in their places and defended themselves from the vague accusations brought against them. Pym declared that if to be resolute in the defence of Parliament, the liberties of the subject, and the reformed religion, was to be a traitor, then he might be guilty of treason, but not otherwise. Sir Arthur followed Pym, maintaining that one of the worst kinds of treason, or of attempts to subvert the fundamental laws, was anything in the nature of a hostile attack aimed against the privileges of Parliament, declaring that his acts, and those of the gentlemen with him, had been in perfect accordance upon every occasion with votes and resolutions of that House, and asserting that the charge of promoting tumults and insurrection was utterly groundless.

The Commons thereupon took a bold step; they ordered the apprehension of the Royal emissaries who had seized and sealed up papers belonging to the five members, and, declaring the articles of high treason to be a "scandalous paper," desired the House of Lords to assist in bringing the authors of it to condign punishment. While they were deliberating, word was brought to the House that the king was on his way with a strong retinue to apprehend Sir Arthur Hazlerigg and the other members within their own precincts. Then followed a hurried debate as to whether the accused should withdraw or wait the king's arrival. Pym, Hollis, and Hampden were for retiring; Hazlerigg and Strode for remaining. "It was a question," as Sir Arthur related afterwards, "if we should be gone; but the debate was shortened, and it was thought fit for us in discretion to withdraw. Away we went. The king immediately came in, and was in the House before we got to the water." What followed,

Rushworth, who was clerk's assistant, sitting at the table near the Speaker, has told us in his "Historical Collections":—

"The doors of the House of Commons being thrown open, his Majesty entered the House, and as he passed up towards the Chair, he cast his eye on the Right-hand near the Bar of the House where Mr. Pym used to sit, but his Majesty not seeing him there (knowing him well) went up to the chair and said, 'By your leave (Mr. Speaker) I will borrow your Chair a little.' Whereupon the Speaker came out of the Chair, and his Majesty stept up into it; after he had stood in the Chair a while, casting his Eye upon the Members as they stood up uncovered, but could not discern any of the five Members to be there. Then his Majesty made this speech:—'Gentlemen, I am sorry for this occasion of coming unto you. Yesterday, I sent a Serjeant at Arms upon a very Important occasion to apprehend some that by my command were accused of High Treason, whereunto I did expect Obedience, and not a Message. . . . Therefore, I am come to tell you that I must have them wheresoever I find them. Well, since I see all the Birds are Flown, I do expect from you that you shall send them unto me, as soon as they return hither. But I assure you, in the word of a King, I never did intend any Force, but shall proceed against them in a legal and fair way, for I never meant any other.'

"When the King was looking about the House, the Speaker standing below by the Chair, his Majesty ask'd him whether any of these persons were in the House? Whether he saw any of them? and where they were? To which the Speaker, falling on his Knee, thus Answered:—'May it please your Majesty, I have neither Eyes to see, nor Tongue to speak in this place, but as the House is pleased to direct me, whose Servant I am here, and humbly beg your Majesty's Pardon that I cannot give any other answer than this to what your Majesty is pleased to demand of me.'"

The birds had flown indeed, and the king's pursuit of them into the City, where they were concealed, was as abortive as his intrusion into the House of Commons. Within a week, soured and disappointed, his Majesty quitted Whitehall, to which place he never returned till he was led through it to the scaffold. A few days after his departure, Sir Arthur Hazlerigg and his colleagues, leaving the City in a gaily decorated barge, returned to the House "with such multitudes as had far more of a triumph than guard; and the seamen made fleets of boats, all armed with muskets and murdering

pieces, which gave volleys all the way they went." The whole House, with the Speaker, rose to receive them, and while Sir Arthur, with Hampden, Hollis, and Strode, remained silent and uncovered, Pym tendered thanks.

Thenceforward Sir Arthur Hazlerigg resumed his accustomed place. It is scarcely possible to open the Journals of the House of Commons at this period without encountering his name as member of a committee, reporter of conferences with the House of Lords, teller for the Ayes or the Noes, or as acting in some equally useful and important capacity. The position which he occupied in the debates a quotation from D'Ewes's diary conveniently illustrates:—

"When some spoke to the case [one of privilege] and mistook it, and the Speaker would have informed them of the case how it stood, Sir A. Haselrig spake to the order of the House, and said that the Speaker ought not to stand up and interrupt any other member of the House when he was speaking. Whereupon the Speaker stood up and answered Sir Arthur Haselrig that he had not stood up to interrupt any member, but only to inform such as should speak of the truth of the case. But Sir A. H., not satisfied therewith, stood up again, saying he would speak to the order of the House, and under colour thereof endeavoured to reply to the Speaker, and to get said over again the same thing, which made me interrupt him, though I much respected him."

Thus he continued till the failure of negotiations with the king at Oxford, in the early part of 1643, sent him into the field as a combatant. Parliament gave him the command of five hundred horse, and directed him to join Sir William Waller's troops in the West of England. His horsemen Clarendon describes as "so completely armed that they were called by the other side the Regiment of Lobsters, because of their bright Iron shells with which they were covered, being perfect Cuirassiers; and were the first seen so armed on either side, and the first that made any impression upon the King's Horse; who, being unarmed, were not able to bear a shock with them; besides that, they were secure from hurts of the sword, which were almost the only weapons the other were furnished with." The first battle in which he was engaged was that of Lansdown, near Bath, fought on the 5th of July, where his cuirassiers did good service, but neither side reaped much advantage. A week later he was in the fight at Roundway Down, near Devizes, where his horse, galloping up the hill, charged the Royal troops disadvantageously, and after

a sharp conflict, in which he received many wounds, was put to a disorderly retreat.

As soon as he recovered, Sir Arthur returned to his parliamentary duties, and on the 22nd of September he subscribed the Covenant. His soldiers, remaining with the army, distinguished themselves in several skirmishes, particularly at those of Alton and Alresford. Occasionally Sir Arthur joined them, and took his share in the fighting. He was so engaged at Winchester, where the Royal troops were put to flight, and at the retreat from Dennington Castle, near Newbury, wherein he and the Earl of Manchester did not figure so creditably. Parliament, appreciating his zeal and activity, voted him in December, 1644, "an estate in hands of the value of £2,000 per annum, in acknowledgment of his many great and faithful services to the kingdom," and, three years later, he was appointed Governor of Newcastle.

To the people of Tyneside, Sir Arthur Hazlerigg was no stranger, and they received him with open arms. The burgesses of Newcastle presented him with a silver basin and ewer, and in due time admitted him to the freedom of the town. Nor was their confidence in him misplaced. He was a resolute and capable man, and his government of Newcastle, to which was afterwards added Tynemouth, Berwick, and Carlisle, was characterised by firmness, prudence, and tact. A few months after his appointment he put down a general rising of the king's friends in the North under Marmaduke Langdale. A little later, when the troops at Tynemouth, seduced by his deputy, Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Lilburn, declared for the king, he stormed the castle, put the garrison to the sword, and, cutting off Lilburn's head, placed it upon a pole as a warning to like offenders. For this service he was appointed one of the Council of State, and received a special vote of thanks from the House of Commons. Ralph Gardiner, in "England's Grievance Discovered," represents him as standing between the Corporation of Newcastle and the victims of their commercial exclusiveness; and as expending £1,000 of public money in rye, for the relief of the poor, when a local monopolist had bought up all the grain he could lay his hands upon. In July, 1650, when Cromwell came through Newcastle, marching to the victory of Dunbar, Sir Arthur was his host. "Sumptuously" and "with much gallantry" he entertained the Captain-General of the Parliamentary forces, and the latter, reciprocating the "acknowledgments of love" with which he had been received, reported to him, in a series of oft-

quoted letters, the "exceeding mercies" that attended his progress beyond the Border. Later on, joining Cromwell in Edinburgh, he shared in the feastings and rejoicings there, and "at their going away the castle saluted them with many great guns, and vollies of small shot, and divers lords convoyed them out of the city."

While he was Governor of Newcastle, Sir Arthur added to his Northern possessions large portions of the confiscated lands belonging to the dissolved see of Durham. He acquired, among other estates, the rich manors of Bishop Auckland, Wolsingham, and Easingwold. So extensive indeed were his acquisitions of ecclesiastical land in the Palatinate that he was nicknamed by his adversaries Bishop of Durham. Nor did his dealings with the property of local Royalists, as one of the Commissioners for Sequestered Estates, escape criticism. Courageous John Hedworth, of Harraton, vented his feelings against him in "The Oppressed Man's Outcry," a remarkable epistle, which may be read in Richardson's "Reprints of Rare Tracts." To that most pungent attack some friend of Sir Arthur's published an equally pungent reply, entitled "Musgrave Muzzled, or the Traducer Gagged; Being a Just Vindication of the Rt. Honble. Sir Arthur Haselrigg. Newcastle: S. B. 1650." Into the quarrel turbulent John Lilburn intruded himself, and, as usual, met with discomfiture. A petition which he, and one Josiah Primat, a London leather-seller, circulated, accusing Sir Arthur and the Commissioners of wholesale confiscation and jobbery, was investigated by the House of Commons, voted to be "false, malicious, and scandalous," and ordered to be burnt by the common hangman.

While the Long Parliament lasted, Sir Arthur Hazlerigg worked in harmony with the leaders of his party. But when, in 1653, Cromwell forcibly dissolved the House of Commons, a breach of the friendship which had for so long existed between these two great men occurred—a breach which was never properly healed. Sir Arthur resented Cromwell's violence as an infringement of the freedom and privilege of Parliament; Cromwell retaliated by omitting Sir Arthur from that political assembly of his own choosing which is known in history as the "Godly, or Barebones Parliament." At the election which followed the break up of Barebones's select convention Sir Arthur was chosen to represent Newcastle; but, so far as the Journals afford evidence, he took no part whatsoever in the proceedings of the House. He was returned again in 1656, though for what constituency does not appear. Upon this occasion, Cromwell imposed

upon members a new qualification—a certificate of approval from the Council of State. Against this further infringement of the freedom of election and the rights of the elected, Sir Arthur Hazlerigg and ninety-seven other members signed a most vigorous remonstrance. His name appears first in the list of signatories to the protest, the tone of which is highly sarcastic and terribly severe. But he took his seat, nevertheless, and his name appears in the Journals as prominently as before.

When the House of Peers was abolished, Cromwell nominated Sir Arthur Hazlerigg to be a member of an Upper Chamber which was to supersede the Lords, but Sir Arthur declined the honour. He did not approve of a division of parliamentary authority, and, according to Whitlock, he and his friends created difficulties which brought the affairs of the nation to a standstill. In January, 1658, the Upper House sent a message to the House of Commons, and the latter, acting under Sir Arthur's inspiration, put off the answer to it again and again—"Sir Arthur Hazlerigg and some others, not allowing the House of Lords, fomenting, by their dissatisfied spirits, a difference betwixt the two houses." This condition of things continued till Cromwell, seeing no sign of returning harmony, dissolved both chambers. After his death, in September of that year, a new Parliament assembled under the protectorate of Richard Cromwell, and again Sir Arthur proved refractory. "Haslerigg and Henry Nevil and their flock were a great cause of disturbance," writes Whitlock, "labouring to overthrow Government by a Protector and two Houses, and pretending to have a free Commonwealth." The discussions that they raised threw Parliament into "great heats," and eventually offended the army, which was then rapidly becoming master of the situation and arbiter of the nation's destiny. For Sir Arthur procured the dismissal of Lambert, Fleetwood, and other old officers, who had led the forces of Parliament to victory, and placed the entire control of the army in the hands of himself and six colleagues of his own party. General discontent of the troops followed this rash and ill-judged movement. Something like a mutiny occurred at Portsmouth. Sir Arthur was sent there with officers named Walton and Morley to put down the disturbance, and succeeded. As soon as it was over, on the 29th December, 1659, "Sir Arthur Haselrigge, Walton, and Morley came into the House in their riding habits, and Haselrigge was very jocund and high. The House ordered thanks to be given them for their good services

at Portsmouth." Within a few weeks afterwards Monk came through Newcastle, marching southward with his Coldstream Guards, and the Commonwealth was tottering to its fall.

Monk, a wary tactician, feeling every step of his ground, conferred and coquetted alternately with both the great parties in the State. While the Puritans noted his attentions to Royalist leaders, the Royalists regarded him with suspicion, because, according to Clarendon, "he was thought to have most familiarity and to converse most freely with Sir Arthur Haslerig, who was irreconcilable to Monarchy, and looked upon as the chief of that Republican Party which desired not to preserve any face of Government in the Church, or Uniformity in the publick Exercise of Religion." The fears of the Royalists were groundless. Sir Arthur Hazlerigg had no influence over the General, and he soon found that even his hold upon the House of Commons was slipping from his grasp. In little more than twelve months after he had received the thanks of the House for his conduct at Portsmouth—viz., on the 6th March, 1660, in the restored Long Parliament, an information was laid against him by the Council of State, and the day following the charges were openly read in his presence. Standing up in his place, he denied the truth of the accusations, and that was his last appearance in the scene of his triumphs. After the Restoration, he was excepted, as regarded liberty and property, from the Act of Indemnity and committed to the Tower. There, on the 8th of January 1661-62, he died. A diary kept by a Spanish merchant contains the entry:—"1661 [62], Jan. 8, Sr. Arthur Haslerrigg, that Colerick Rebell, Dyed in ye Tower," and among the State Papers is an order, dated January 12th following, for the delivery of the corpse to his son.

Sir Arthur Hazlerigg was twice married, his second wife being a sister of Robert Greville, Lord Broke, the Parliamentary General. One of his daughters was that persistent Nonconformist, Kate, wife of Philip Babington, whose body found a resting-place in the garden at Alnham, as described in the *Monthly Chronicle*, vol. i. p. 375, where, also, a curious sketch of Sir Arthur on a playing card appears. His successor in the title was his son Sir Thomas, married to the daughter and co-heir of George Fenwick of Brinkburn. Sir Thomas was able to satisfy the king that he was a loyal subject, and about two years after his father's death the estates, or the greater part of them, were restored to him. The Northumbrian manors of Fawdon and Brunton were among the lands so restored, and they

remained in possession of the family until 1768, when, by order of the Court of Chancery, they were sold, reserving only the coal royalties, which the family still own.

The portrait of Sir Arthur is from a most rare print (in the collection of Mr. John Wilson, of Archbold House, Newcastle), cut by Robert Grave, from an original painting in the possession of the Hazlerigg family, and published in London by Molteno in 1824.

## John Headlam,

ARCHDEACON OF RICHMOND.

WITHIN living memory the name of Headlam was a name to conjure by in the North of England. One of those who bore it, Alderman Headlam, of Newcastle, was for half a century at the head of his profession as a physician, and leader of the Whig party in Tyneside politics; his brother was Archdeacon of Richmond and rector of Wycliffe; his nephew was a representative of Newcastle in Parliament; his son was for many years postmaster of the town. Yet at the present day not a single person bearing this time-honoured cognomen is to be found upon Tyneside. Like that of Brandling, Fife, and Doubleday, once so popular and powerful, the name has dropped out of our public life, and is only to be found in the records of the past. Such are the transitions and fluctuations of human greatness and worldly aggrandisement!

Early in local history the Headlams appear. Henry Headlam was vicar of Newcastle in 1386. Thomas Headlam witnessed, in 1421, a deed by which John Dolphanby endowed the chantry of St. John in the church of Gateshead. Thomas Headlam (possibly the same person) was Sheriff of Newcastle in the municipal year 1444-45, and an exporter of wool, on board the good ship *Peter*, of Newcastle, in 1450. Whether the modern family claimed descent from these old-time worthies it were profitless to inquire. It is enough to know that in the latter half of last century the representative of the family upon the Tyne was Thomas Emerson Headlam, a shipbuilder from Stockton, whose yard was at the South Shore, and whose residence was near the Tolbooth, Gateshead; that he died in October, 1821, at the great age of ninety-six years; and that he was the

father of the archdeacon and the alderman, and the progenitor of all the Headlams with whom local history makes us acquainted.

John Headlam, son of the shipbuilder, was born at Gateshead in 1769, and educated at the Royal Free Grammar School of Newcastle by Hugh Moises. Obtaining one of the Crewe exhibitions, valued at about £30 a year, he matriculated at Lincoln College, Oxford, April 1st, 1786, and took his art degrees—B.A. in 1790, and M.A. two years later. He was ordained to the curacy of Stannington, the vicar of which place had preferment in Staffordshire, and was non-resident; but his father having purchased for him the next presentation to the rectory of Wycliffe, on the south side of the Tees, near Barnard Castle, he removed thither in 1793. He was for some time Deputy-Commissary of the Archdeaconry of Richmond, and in that capacity held visitations, and delivered charges to the clergy, at first of the Yorkshire Deaneries, and afterwards of the Western Deaneries also. Bishop Blomfield, in 1826, made him Archdeacon of Richmond, restoring the title and dignity to the individual who performed the archidiaconal duties. After the formation of the new diocese of Ripon in 1846, he was appointed Chancellor. Besides these strictly professional engagements, he did good service as an active magistrate, and was for several years chairman of the Quarter-sessions for the North Riding. He died May 4th, 1854, in his eighty-fifth year, and was buried in Wycliffe Churchyard.

Archdeacon Headlam married, June 10th, 1806, Maria Wilson Morley, a descendant, as appears in Foster's "Noble and Gentle Families," of Edward I. He was the author of the following sermons and charges:—

"Justification by Faith." A Sermon preached at the Primary Visitation of the Bishop of Chester, 1804.

"Religion and Government peculiarly Beneficial to the Poor." Assize Sermon, York, 1813.

"Attachment to the Established Forms of our Civil and Ecclesiastical Constitution Recommended." Assize Sermon, York, 1813.

"The Religious Education of the Poor Recommended." A Sermon Preached at Gateshead, 1814.

"The Reciprocal Duties of Rich and Poor, and the Beneficial Effects of the English Poor Laws Considered." A Sermon preached to the Gateshead Friendly Society, 1820.

"Charges to the Clergy," etc., 1822 and 1827.

"Observations on Church Rates, Church Endowments, Commutation of Tithes, and Church Reform." A Charge, etc. 1833.

"Observations on the Present State of the Law respecting Church Rates." A Charge, etc. 1837.

Although the Archdeacon was scarcely a "Man of Mark 'twixt Tyne and Tweed," the foregoing biography, derived for the most part from the Rev. E. Hussey Adamson's "Scholæ Novocastrensis Alumni," forms an appropriate introduction to that of his brother, Alderman Headlam, of Newcastle.

## Thomas Emerson Headlam (1).

### A WHIG LEADER.

THOMAS EMERSON HEADLAM, the alderman—Dr. Headlam, as he was more familiarly called—was born at Gateshead on the 4th of June, 1777, and, like his brother, the archdeacon, received his early education at the Royal Free Grammar School of Newcastle. In due time, being designed for the profession of medicine, he was withdrawn from Mr. Moises's care, and sent to Edinburgh University. At that famous abode of genius and culture he made the acquaintance of Jeffreys, Brougham, Cockburn, and other students (fellow-members of the far-famed Speculative Society), who in after-life filled high positions, and did the State good service. Taking his degree in the year 1800, he commenced to practise at Durham, but, being appointed one of the physicians to the Infirmary, upon the resignation in 1804 of Dr. John Clark, founder of the Dispensary, he removed to Newcastle.

Settling down to a steady and progressive practice, Dr. Headlam took up his freedom of the Shipwrights' Company, and interested himself in local politics and public affairs. At the election of 1820, when the friends of the Scott family brought forward a son of the future Lord Stowell to oppose the retiring members, he went on the hustings, and proposed the re-election of Sir Matthew White Ridley. Upon that occasion he announced his political principles to be those of a moderate reformer. Amidst "loud cheers of applause" he expressed a hope that, in the approaching Parliament, the movement for Constitutional Reform—a movement which he believed was "called for by the general voice of the country"—would be supported "upon principles consistent with the peace, tranquillity, and safety of the nation." From that time he devoted himself to the promotion of the interests of the Whig party. Throughout the great

struggle for Reform he was a staunch supporter of Earl Grey, and although displaying neither the enthusiasm of Fife, nor the sarcasm of Attwood, and lacking both the fire of Larkin and the eloquence of Philipson, he was able by his tact, culture, and social position to render effectual service to the agitation.

The position that he had taken up in politics kept Dr. Headlam outside the close preserves of the old Corporation of Newcastle. But, as soon as the Municipal Reform Act had opened the doors of the Council to the ratepayers at large, he was nominated a councillor for North St. Andrew's Ward, and returned at the top

of the poll. At the first meeting of the newly-constituted body he gained the highest place but one amongst the elected aldermen, and, taking his seat in the Council Chamber, began to exercise an influence, potent in character and prompt in action, upon municipal affairs. Working generally with Fife, Losh, Doubleday, and the Reformers in the Council, he assisted to maintain the supremacy of his party in the higher departments of corporate office. The writer of the "Corporation Annual" (1836), dedicated to him as "T. E. H., Esq., Leader of the Clique," makes it appear that the maintenance of his party in power was the mainspring of

Dr. Headlam's municipal career, and the doctor undoubtedly laid himself open to the charge. In a speech "of some length" he supported the motion by which the Mayor under the old *régime*, Mr. J. Lionel Hood, a Tory, although in only the fourth month of his office when the new Act came into operation, was ejected from his seat and replaced by Mr. Charles John Bigge, a Whig. He also it was who, the following year, moved and carried the election of Mr. Joseph Lamb, the second Whig Mayor. And it was he who, for the third Mayoralty in the new Corporation, allowed himself to be nominated. The British Association was coming to Newcastle; a man of culture was needed to represent the town worthily, and Dr. Headlam was chosen unanimously. Mr. Bigge proposed him in terms of eulogy, which the assembled Council not only endorsed, but with "loud applause" approved. Thus:—"If talents, education, integrity, and straightforward consistency are still valued, as I trust they ever will be valued among public men, then I may safely say, without disparagement to any one now here, that we cannot find an individual who combines these qualities in a greater degree, who possesses the confidence of his fellow-townsmen, and who is more worthy of any honour that can be conferred upon him by those fellow-townsmen than my friend Alderman Headlam. His life of active and useful benevolence, passed entirely among us, his consistent advocacy of everything calculated to promote the welfare of the town, and of all classes of its inhabitants, and, generally, the high respect in which his character is held among men of all parties, fully entitle him to favourable consideration on our part; while, at the same time, every act of his public life points him out as one whose conduct affords the surest pledge that he will continue to support those principles of local government, based on popular representation, and public responsibility, which form the basis of our recently-acquired charter of civic independence."

The part which Dr. Headlam played in the Chartist disturbances of 1839, in conjunction with his friend and successor in the Mayoralty, Mr. Fife, are well known, and need not be repeated. In common with the Mayor he suffered a loss of popularity with the Radical section of the Liberal party; but what he lost in that direction he gained from the supporters of law and order. Among the members of his own profession he was so popular, that in June, 1844, when all the passions engendered by conflict had long passed away, they presented Mrs. Headlam (Isabella,

daughter of Sir William Loraine, of Kirkharle) with a portrait of him painted by Carrick—a portrait that, being engraved, had a large sale among the doctor's fellow-townsmen, and is still to be found in the houses of political friends and admirers.

Dr. Headlam's success as Mayor during the visit of the British Association led to his re-appointment in 1845, when it was known that, the following summer, the Royal Agricultural Society of England would hold its annual show in Newcastle. Upon occasions such as these the doctor was seen at his best. Stately and dignified in appearance, and withal learned, courteous, and hospitable, he realised to the full the popular conception of a chief magistrate. Strangers were impressed by his courtly manners, while the people of Newcastle, of whatever creed or politics, were proud of a Mayor who entertained high notions of the dignity of his office, held his own among *savants* from afar, and was admitted into the select circles of the county families. The sympathetic feeling which his demeanour as head of the municipality excited among his fellow-townsmen found expression at the close of his second term of office. By public subscription, to which men of all shades of political opinion contributed, a full-length portrait of the doctor, clad in his robes as Mayor, was painted and hung in the Commercial Exchange on the Sandhill. There it remained until, a few years ago, the Corporation added it to the collection of local worthies whose once familiar features look down upon those of their successors in the Council Chamber. From this painting our portrait has been copied.

The introduction of the doctor's nephew and namesake as a candidate for the representation of Newcastle in 1847, his triumphant return, and long retention of the seat, are described in subsequent pages. At that time, and for a few years afterwards, Dr. Headlam was the most prominent figure in the public life of Newcastle. President of the Medical School in connection with the University of Durham, acknowledged head of his profession, and leader of his party, his political and social influence resembled that which aforetime had been exercised by the Blacketts and the Ridleys. Reverses of fortune, to which no act of his contributed, cast a shadow over the evening of his life. Proud and reserved, he bore them with the dignity which characterised the brighter days of his youth and prime. Once in his declining years an opportunity arose by which his quondam political associates might have retrieved

his fortunes, and crowned themselves with honour in the process. The mastership of the Mary Magdalene Hospital fell vacant. Dr. Headlam would have filled the post with credit to himself and to them. But, in spite of appeals and protests, they passed over their venerable and learned fellow-townsman, and appointed a stranger!

No word of complaint, no sign of resentment, at the shocking ingratitude of his old colleagues came from Dr. Headlam. He absented himself from the Council Chamber while the controversy raged, but as soon as it was over he resumed his round of duty, and took his share in municipal work. In 1862 he accompanied to Cambridge the Newcastle deputation which invited the British Association to revisit the Tyne, and before that second visit had taken place, in his eighty-seventh year, he led a deputation to London to invite the Royal Agricultural Society to hold another exhibition in Newcastle. He was in his place at the meeting of the Town Council on the 3rd of February, 1864, and moved that loyal and congratulatory addresses should be presented to the Queen, and the Prince of Wales, "upon the auspicious birth of a son who might at some future day ascend the throne of these realms." That was his last public appearance. A fortnight later, on the 18th of the month, he died, and on the 24th his remains were honoured by a public funeral.

During the greater part of his life, Alderman Headlam was at the head of his profession in Newcastle—the first or leading physician of the town. When the battle of the Medical Colleges broke out, in 1851, he joined the majority, and assisted to found the College of Medicine which identified itself with the University of Durham. From its inauguration he was president, and, for one session at least, assisted the teaching staff as a lecturer on the "Principles and Practice of Surgery." When the doctors, healing themselves and their discords, re-united their educational forces in 1857, after six years' competition, Dr. Headlam, who had received, in 1852, the honorary degree of M.D. from the University of Durham, was elected President of the United College, and so remained till his death. Outside of medicine, civic life, and politics he did not usually venture, but he was for five years president, and for many years a vice-president, of the Newcastle Literary and Philosophical Society.

# Thomas Emerson Headlam (2),

M.P. FOR NEWCASTLE.

ARCHDEACON HEADLAM had a family of six sons and five daughters. The eldest son, born on the 20th June, 1813, and named after his grandfather and uncle, Thomas Emerson, was sent to Shrewsbury School to receive his preliminary education. From thence he proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, where, in 1836, Bishop Colenso's year, he was sixteenth wrangler. When he left college, being intended for the law, he was entered as a student at the Inner Temple, and the same year that he took his M.A. degree (1839) he was called to the Bar.

Following the example of his uncle, the alderman, young Mr. Headlam took a keen interest in politics; following him also in political preferences, he allied himself to the party that having given the country the Reform Bill, looked to the new electorate to assist them in accomplishing still further reforms. It is too much to suppose that at this early stage of his career he entertained the idea of becoming a candidate for the borough of Newcastle. But it is a fact that the Whig party, flushed by their victories in the Reformed Council of 1836, had made up their minds to obtain as speedily as possible a monopoly of the Parliamentary as well as the municipal representation of the town, and that young men of good local family connections were the only candidates likely to fulfil their expectations. They had attempted to effect their purpose in 1837, with Mr. Charles John Bigge as second candidate, and failed; the retiring members, William Ord and John Hodgson Hinde, being re-elected. At the next election, in 1841, they were not prepared for a contest; but in the summer of 1847, when Parliament was dying a natural death, the opportunity came. Alderman Headlam had introduced his nephew to the party leaders; he was considered to be an exceptionally strong candidate; and with him they determined to fight. Parliament was not expected to break up till the end of July, yet on the 5th of that month Mr. Headlam issued an address to the constituency, and entered upon a vigorous personal canvass. Averring that he had come forward in accordance with the wishes of a "large and influential body of electors," he explained his views as follows:—

"My political opinions are what are usually called Liberal. I came to a strong conviction in favour of the repeal of the Corn Laws considerably before the time when such sentiments were generally prevalent. I watched the progress of opinion on the subject of Free Trade with great interest, and it would afford me the highest pleasure to take a public part, as well in the defence of what has been already effected, as also in the further application of the same principles throughout our commercial system. I consider the exercise of political rights to be elevating to the character of those who possess

T. E. Headlam.

them, and as the spirit of independence and the advantages of education increase, I look forward to the gradual extension of such privileges."

For some reason or other Mr. Hodgson Hinde declined to fight for his party in this contest, and the gauntlet thrown down by the Whigs was taken up by his brother, Richard Hodgson, one of the members for Berwick. Exchanging candidates after a contest has begun is akin to swopping horses in mid-stream, and the usual result followed. Mr. Headlam carried everything before him. On the

day of nomination Mr. Ord and he won the show of hands; on the day of election they headed the poll. When the declaration was made by the returning officer, jubilant Whigs read the official figures with noisy demonstrations—Ord, 2,196; Headlam, 2,068; Hodgson, 1,680. Mr. Headlam had accomplished the feat which his party had so long desired. He had enabled them to oust the Tories from the political representation of Newcastle, and to win both seats for themselves. They were proud of their work and of him.

With the Whigs the representation of Newcastle remained unbroken for eighteen years. During that time six elections occurred, and in five out of the six efforts were made to break down their supremacy. But all in vain. Whether the opponent were Tory or Radical, the Whigs held their own. And although changes did occur by the substitution of one Whig for another, yet during seven-and-twenty years Mr. Headlam retained his seat. At the election in 1852, William Henry Watson, leader of the Northern Circuit and afterwards judge, entered the contest, and was defeated by John Fenwick Burgoyne Blackett. Peter Carstairs was equally unsuccessful in 1857; Peter Alfred Taylor, William Cuthbert, and Peter Carstairs were easily beaten in 1859. It was not until 1865, when Joseph Cowen, the elder, wrested the second seat from Somerset Beaumont, that the strength of the Whig party in Newcastle was seriously shaken, and it was not until February, 1874, when Mr. Headlam himself suffered defeat, that their predominancy in local politics was completely broken up.

The impartial biographer, recording merely facts and dates, indulges in neither personal nor political criticism. It is enough in this place to state that Mr. Headlam's political career, if not brilliant, was respectable. He took in hand the question of mortmain, obtaining, in 1852, the appointment of a Select Committee to inquire into the matter; and was chiefly instrumental in procuring the adoption of the Charitable Trusts Act, by which the law relating to pious uses was placed upon a better foundation. He accepted office in the Liberal Government which came into power in 1859 and lasted till 1866, his post being that of Judge-Advocate-General. He was at the same time sworn a Privy Councillor. Lord Chancellor Cranworth had bestowed upon him, in 1852, the silk gown of a Queen's Counsel; but having soon afterwards received the valuable appointment of Chancellor of the Dioceses of Durham and

Ripon, he gradually ceased to follow his profession at the Chancery bar. While in active practice, he edited a supplement to one of Daniel's Chancery text-books, and published a work on the Charitable Trusts Act.

Upon his defeat in Newcastle, Mr. Headlam retired to his estate at Gilmonby, near Barnard Castle, and devoted himself to the discharge of his duties as a magistrate of the county of Durham and the North Riding of Yorkshire. The loss of his seat, which he had occupied uninterruptedly in six Parliaments, told upon his health. Ordered abroad in the winter of 1875, he proceeded as far as Calais, and there, on the 3rd December, he died.

Mr. Headlam married, August 1st, 1854, Ellen Percival, daughter of Major Thomas Von Straubenzee, R.A., of Bedale. He left no issue, but the branch of the family to which he belonged is worthily represented by his brothers—Morley, now of Gilmonby; Arthur William, vicar of St. Oswald's, Durham; and Francis John, stipendiary magistrate at Manchester.

## George Whitfield Hearn,

PROFESSOR OF MATHEMATICS.

BROCKIE's "Folks of Shields," a rare work, although published no further back than 1857, contains a short biography of the gifted Northumbrian whose name was George Whitfield Hearn, written by Dr. J. P. Dodd.

From Dr. Dodd's narrative it appears that Mr. Hearn was born at North Shields in 1812, and educated at the Grammar School of Witton-le-Wear, under the tuition of the Rev. Mr. Newby. The mathematical master in the school at that time was William Mawson, an eminent scholar, who predicted that his pupil's career would be one of remarkable success, and who tried his best to secure the fulfilment of his prediction. Before he was twenty the pupil had begun to contribute to some of the leading periodicals that discussed mathematical questions, and his solutions were distinguished by clearness and originality of view, as well as by elaborate and elegant modes of investigation. It was at first intended to put him to the law, and for that purpose he spent the prescribed term of years in a lawyer's office. His natural bias for mathematical studies continued

so strong, however, as to induce his father to send him to Cambridge —the focus of the mathematical talent of this country. At Cambridge he distinguished himself in his favourite study, and, in 1839, was Sixth Wrangler—a position which, Dr. Dodd considers, was inadequate to his acquirements. His merits were recognised afterwards by his appointment to a professorship in the Royal Military College at Sandhurst.

Besides his contributions to the periodicals of the day, Mr. Hearn published a work entitled "Researches on Curves and Surfaces of the Second Order," and contributed two elaborate papers to the "Transactions" of the Royal Society. These latter were communicated to the Society by Sir J. F. W. Herschell, who entertained the highest opinion of the Professor's genius and attainments. His writings are described as being in the highest degree logical and perspicuous, for "he wrote as he thought, luminously and convincingly," possessing "the happy art of communicating knowledge —a faculty rarer, perhaps, and probably of more value, than genius itself."

Mr. Hearn died at his father's house, in Northumberland Square, North Shields, December 12th, 1851, in the thirty-ninth year of his age.

## Robert Hebborn,

MAYOR OF NEWCASTLE AND M.P.

ROBERT HEBBORN, or Hibburn, makes his first appearance in Newcastle history as one of the representatives of the town in the seventh Parliament of Henry IV.—a Parliament which, assembling at Westminster in March, 1405-6, passed an Act for freedom of election, but refused supplies to the king, and was kept sitting till it complied. So far as appears in the records he had not up to that time held any official position in the municipality. He may have been, and probably was, one of the Hebborns, lords of Hebborn, in North Northumberland, where they had a castle and lands that are now included in the estate of Chillingham. In any case he was a wealthy and independent burgess, the friend and contemporary of the munificent Roger Thornton, and connected by marriage with the Strothers, the Ogles, and other county families of distinction—a burgess who, residing upon his own property, a mansion in the

Close, took a very active interest in municipal affairs, and was able to be of service to the town, without passing through the minor offices of the corporate body.

Robert Hebborn was a witness for his fellow-townsmen in one of the stages of that great dispute, which extended over many generations, between the burgesses and the bishops of Durham respecting the jurisdiction of the See over the river Tyne. In the summer of 1410, the bishop pleaded in Chancery that, from time immemorial, he and his predecessors had held the liberty of the bishopric within the Tyne and the Tees to the middle parts of those rivers, with the exception of the middle part of Tyne Bridge, and that, in 1383, the municipality of Newcastle built a tower upon his part of the bridge, and removed his boundary stones, pretending that the bridge belonged to the town, and was held of the king by payment of the fee farm rent. During the proceedings, the bishop offered that, if the Mayor and eleven other burgesses would swear singly and specially that his temporal jurisdiction extended to any certain place on the bridge, and that beyond that place his authority never had run, he would, during his life, refrain from exercising his rights there. Robert Hebborn was one of the burgesses who accepted the bishop's offer, and in 1412 he was sworn to the following statement:—"I say by mine oath, that the franchise and temporal jurisdiction of St. Cuthbert of Durham, and of Thomas, bishop of the church of St. Cuthbert of Durham, and of his predecessors, sometime bishops of the same church, extends him out of the town of Gateshead towards the town of the Newcastle, in the highway that lies over the bridge to a place that is called Jargonhole, and no further on the same bridge in the way towards the town of the Newcastle from the aforesaid town of Gateshead. And that the predecessors of the same bishop, nor their ministers in their name, have no further rightfully used temporal jurisdiction on the same bridge."

The Court did not consider the oaths of Hebborn and his fellows sufficient; judgment was given against the town, and in 1416, the bishop, "with all his chivalry," took possession of the tower.

While the cause was pending Robert Hebborn accepted the Mayoralty of Newcastle. He was elected at Michaelmas, 1414, and died during his year of office. On the day after Sir Thomas Grey, of Wark, was tried at Southampton and condemned under circumstances immortalised by Shakespeare in the second act of "Henry V.," Hebborn made his last will and testament. The document has

been preserved, and, as an interesting example of a pre-Reformation will, may be quoted at length :—

"I, Robert Hebborn, Mayor of the town of Newcastle-on-Tyne, sick in body, but sound in mind, considering the deceitfulness of this world, the imminent peril of death, and that here we have no abiding city, but seek the future, on Friday, the 3rd day of August, in the year of our Lord 1415, at the said town of Newcastle, make my will in this manner :—First, I leave my soul to God, blessed Mary, and all the saints, and my body to be buried in the church of All Saints, in the said town, before the altar of the chantry of St. John the Evangelist. I give and bequeath to Agnes my wife all that capital messuage, my burgage, with its appurtenances, lying in the said town of Newcastle, in the street called the Close, bounded on the west by the tenement of Robert Clifford, to have and to hold, etc., for her life, and after her death to Thomas, my son and heir, and his heirs and assigns for ever. I give and bequeath to Robert, my son, all my lands, and tenements, or burgages outside the gate of Sandgate, within the precincts and suburbs of the said town, with remainder to my son Thomas. I give and bequeath to Roger, my son, all lands and tenements in the said town which I hold in fee from the Master and Brethren of Wall Knoll, above the Quayside, or below Pandon, with remainder to my son Thomas. I will that all my moveable goods, after full payment of my debts, shall be divided so that one part shall remain to my executors, to be distributed as they shall see fit, for the good of my soul; another part to the said Agnes, my wife, and the third part to my sons, their legacies notwithstanding. I give and bequeath to my daughter Margaret, 40 marks, provided always that she marry by the advice and counsel of my executors, etc. Residue to Agnes, my wife, and Thomas, my son, to distribute for the good of my soul. Executors —Agnes, my wife, Thomas my son, and Richard Dalton."

Thomas Hebborn, the son and heir, was a legatee under the will of Sir Robert Ogle a short time before his father's death, and two years after that event he obtained a dispensation from the Bishop of Durham to marry Isabel, relict of William Strother, "the parties being too nearly related to go together lawfully without such a licence." Another member of the family, Ralph Hebborn, of Hebborn, granted to the Trinity Brethren of Newcastle, in 1492, the site of their present house, which at that time bore the name of Robert Hebborn's friend and executor—"Dalton" Place.

# Hugh of Hecham,

BAILIFF, MAYOR, AND M.P.

HUGH OF HECHAM was a man of authority in Newcastle during the long reign of Edward III. He was one of the four bailiffs of the town—the youngest of them apparently—in the municipal years 1322-23, 1325-26, 1326-27, and from 1329 to 1334, when he was appointed a representative of the town in Parliament. The following year he was elected Mayor, an office which he filled for the second time in the year 1338-39. One of the same name occurs a little earlier in local history. At an inquisition taken in the eleventh year of Edward I. (1282-83) complaint was made that this Hugh of Hecham had been digging his land so near the house of Thomas Carliol, in Newcastle, as to jeopardise the foundations. It is possible that Hugh the digger was the father of Hugh the bailiff and M.P. He can hardly have been the same person, for Hugh the bailiff lived till 1355—seventy-three years after the inquisition, and if he were the peccant burgess who offended Thomas Carliol he must have been either a very youthful digger at the date of the inquiry, or a very old man at the date of his decease.

The historical interest attaching to Hugh of Hecham is derived from the probability that he was one of the early pioneers of the coal trade between the Tyne and the Thames. He was undoubtedly a coal-owner in Newcastle. That fact is proved by a deed dated 1330, in which the prior and brethren of Tynemouth demised to Adam Colewell, for 100s. per annum, a colliery at Elswick, called the Hay or High Grove, with this addendum:—"Mem. That another new colliery, which Hugh Hecham once held in the west field of Elswick, has been leased to the said Adam Colewell for a payment of six marks, the year to begin when he obtains coal." It is probable that in addition to his speculations on the Tyne, he carried on the business of a lime-burner in London, and that the burning of lime being one of the few purposes to which mineral fuel could be put at that early period of its utilisation, he supplied his kilns there with Newcastle coal. These conjectures are fairly derivable from a petition which the inhabitants of Tower Ward presented to John of Grantham, the Mayor of London, in 1329. The petitioners com-

plained that "Hugh de Hecham, lymbrenner, caused all who were of his trade to make oath, that whereas people used heretofore to have one sack of lime for one penny, or at the rate of 3s. 6d. per hundred, at this time when sea-coal was selling at forty pence per quarter, now one is not to have of the said Hugh any sack of lime for less than 1½d. or 2d., or else at the rate of 5s. or 6s. the hundred, either from him or from any other of his trade by reason of his great conspiracy, seeing that, at present, the value of sea-coal for this year is no more than 16d. the quarter. And further, the said Hugh de Hecham has forbidden and hindered, by his great menaces, the workers of lime at Grenehithe, who heretofore used to bring lime from that place to London to sell, to such a degree that they dare not come with their wares, as heretofore they used to do. And if any one of them does come to London with lime, as a forestaller he embraces such person, and so makes his own sale, as before stated, to the great damage of the city."

The result of this petition was an order, made in the Guildhall of London, fixing the price of burnt lime, which order, Hugh of Hecham disregarding, and being brought before the court and found guilty by jurors, was deprived of his freedom and sent to prison.

In the year that Hugh of Hecham was elected member of Parliament, Edward III. came to Newcastle, and received, in the church of the Black Friars, the homage and fealty of Edward Baliol, and the surrender of Berwick, Roxburgh, Jedburgh, Edinburgh, and other Scottish towns. During this visit he granted to Hecham, for fifteen years, at a rental of 60s. per annum, "all that messuage, with its belongings upon the Nesse, in Berwick, which was Peter Kymbrigham's, and a messuage adjoining Bradthurghgang in the same town, which belonged to Randolph of Stamford, both Peter and Randolph being rebels," upon further condition that he kept the property in good repair, and saw that it was inhabited, either by himself or other Englishmen.

The year following, in the month of August, the king, reciting information that he had received of the wicked intentions of the Scots, issued a mandate to the Mayor, bailiffs, and the community of Newcastle, ordering all the townsmen capable of bearing arms to be in readiness, fully equipped for war, under penalty of forfeiting life and members, lands and tenements, etc., and appointing Hecham, with two others, to lead them, so arrayed, to John Lisle of Woodburn, and the leaders of the expedition. A similar mandate, dated

May 29th, 1337, commanded Hecham to co-operate with John Dathie, of Newcastle, and Richard Hasleden, of Hartlepool, in impressing ships and men for the capture of vessels from Flanders, and other places, proceeding to the help of the Scots.

At his death, in 1355, Hugh of Hecham held in capite of the Bishop of Durham, by fealty and six marks rent, the manor of Choppington, with three messuages, and a hundred and twenty acres of land, and four of meadow in Netherton. What other property he had acquired is not stated. Sufficient material has been culled from ancient records to show that he was a man of resolution and enterprise, of substance and position, who enjoyed the confidence of his sovereign, and received the highest honours which his fellow-townsmen could bestow.

## Anthony Hedley,

ANTIQUARY AND COLLECTOR.

THE Rev. Anthony Hedley, of Chesterholme, was one of the fortunate local antiquaries who enjoyed the personal friendship, and secured the affectionate regard, of the Rev. John Hodgson, the amiable and learned historian of Northumberland. To Mr. Hodgson's classic pen, North-Country biographers are indebted for many admirable sketches of local worthies whose public services might otherwise have received but scanty recognition, or have been altogether forgotten. Mr. Hedley's intimate association with the historian placed him among the persons so honoured. Blending topographical description with biographical detail, Mr. Hodgson preserved the memory of his friend and co-worker in a charming narrative. It is too long to quote in full, but an abridgment may serve, for it would be a profanation to entirely re-write a biography so admirably expressed, and so happily put together:—

"Chesterholme stands in the Chineley-burn, just below the junction of the Craig-lough and Brook-burns, in a lovely and sequestered spot. It is a sweet picture of mosaic work, enlaid upon an emerald gem; a cottage in the Abbotsford style, upon one of those charming green holms or meadows bordering upon a river, which, in Northumberland, are generally called haughs. The Rev. A. Hedley, who built it in 1832, and resided in it from 1833 to the time of his death,

January 17th, 1835, was a friend of the Great Talisman of Historical Romance [Sir Walter Scott]. The heath, and pillar-crowned head of Borcum, rises above it on the south-east. On the west a steep, green bank, encompassed with the ruins of Vindolana, closes the prospect. Two woody dells branch off in different directions to the north, through rising pasture grounds, which hem the border of the sky. On the south, the united mountain stream of Craig-lough and Brook-burns, gliding for a short distance through a narrow channel of dove-coloured marble, is suddenly thrown aside by a high sandstone cliff, dappled with lichens, and overhung with variegated woods. All this enchanted bowl has its sides as chastely ornamented with works of Nature and design as the shield of Achilles was with the devices of Art. It is indeed like the bowls which Virgil speaks of—crisp with carved figures, 'Orpheus in the midst, and the woods following him.' In the sunny garden here, fragments of the pillars of antient Roman temples, taken from the adjoining ruins of Vindolana, are entwined with roses or climbing plants. From one door you look down a covered passage upon the tree-fringed sides, and the rocky channel of Chineley-burn, where you have hazel and heckberry, and alder, and broad plane trees, and the undying sound of waters, the sides of the passage formed of altars and bas-reliefs, and its cordon of broad stones moulded in front, on the upper surface pierced with luis-holes, which once surmounted the walls and gateways of Vindolana.

"The Hedleys formed one of the principal clans of the franchise of Redesdale. So early as 1340, William de Hedley occurs as security for paying to the Crown the ninths of 'Ellesden,' which is the largest of the three parishes that form the principality of Redesdale. Eighteen Hedleys appeared at the muster on Abberwick Moor in April, 1538, as 'able with horse and harness, and all with spears'; and a very slight inspection of the schedule of the 'rents of assize of freeholders' in that district will serve to show how widely they were settled over it.

"Mr. Hedley was the son of Edward Hedley, of Hopefoot, in the valley of the Otter, about two miles north of the village of Otterburn, where he was born, March 29th, 1777. His grandfather, Anthony Hedley, of Hopefoot, married Mary, granddaughter of Thomas Brown, a young brother of Lancelot Brown, of Ravenscleugh, which Lancelot was grandfather of Lancelot Brown, the landscape gardener. His mother, Elizabeth, too, belonged to a very old

Redesdale family of the name of Forster, and from her he inherited an estate upon the lovely plain,

> 'Where Rede upon his margin sees
> Sweet Woodburn's cottages and trees;'

and where, with the warm-hearted benevolence with which his character was thoroughly embued, he, her only son and child, founded a school in 1817.

"Mr. Hedley's father removed from Hopefoot to Gunnerton, in the parish of Chollerton, where he was residing in 1798; and there, as in Redesdale, his son had a rich opportunity of indulging his passion for tales of Border raids, hot-trod, and perilous deeds. The rudiments of his education he received from the Rev. Mr. Hutton, curate of Felton, from which place he went to the University of Glasgow, and thence to Edinburgh, in the Album of which University his name appears as a student in Latin and Greek, in the sessions of 1795 and 1796.

"From Edinburgh he went to Longleat, as tutor in the family of the Marquis of Bath, and in the magnificent scenery designed by his relative, the 'Great Magician Brown,' he imbibed so strong a passion for ornamental gardening, that his ardent and romantic mind continued to indulge and delight in it to the last moments of his life. He married a Miss Staveley, and soon after that he entered into holy orders as curate of St. John Lee, near Hexham. To the perpetual curacy of the ancient priory church of this latter place he was presented by Mrs. Beaumont in 1809, in which year his wife died, leaving him a daughter, Elizabeth, who died in 1820. In 1811 he married the eldest daughter of Robert Barrow, Esq., of Hexham, by whom he had three daughters—Mary, Margaret Jane, and Elizabeth.

"In 1813, he resigned the laborious cure of Hexham, and in the following year accepted the stipendiary curacy of Whelpington, under the Rev. Charles Gardner, then resident on his rectory of Stoke Hammond, in Buckinghamshire. Whelpington, however, had not charms to fix upon it the affection of a mind like Hedley's. It was far from literary society, and twenty-two miles from its post town. His ardent endeavours to improve it seemed unsuccessful. The unquiet monotony in which the village had for centuries been in undisturbed enjoyment, was not by any magic of refinement to be hushed into sudden repose. From the jar of this he occasionally

fled to the society of distant friends. Edinburgh, and the lakes and mountains of Cumberland and Scotland were scenes he loved to visit. Once, while the track of war was still fresh in the Netherlands, he made a tour in that country, Holland, and France. But in 1819, just as the winter began to set in, he resigned Whelpington, and went to reside in Newcastle. From Newcastle he removed to a very airy and agreeable residence at Bensham, in the parish of Gateshead, in the duties of which he was frequently employed. He was twice a candidate for the lectureship of John's, Newcastle, but notions imbibed among his early friends, the writers of the *Edinburgh Review*, prevented his success.

"On the appointment of the Rev. T. H. Scott, rector of Whitfield, to the archdeaconry of Australasia, he was judiciously selected to fill the cure of that parish during the archdeacon's absence. Here the duties of his church and the parochial schools received unwearied attention. But he also found time, as in other situations, for reading extensively, much correspondence, keeping the gardens of the rectory, etc., in all the beauty and trimness of a suburban villa, and also for a time conferred considerable benefit on the neighbourhood by his assiduity in improving the highways of the parish. Unfortunately, his residence here was not destined to be long. The archdeacon in New Holland sighed to return to the quiet of Whitfield. On the intimation of this feeling to Mr. Hedley, he determined to commence for himself a residence close to the ruins of Vindolana, of which he had become proprietor in 1814. A half-ruined cottage, a spreading oak, and some broad plane trees, stood near the site he selected for his intended dwelling. The cottage and its suite of offices were built in 1832, and occupied by their owner in the following year.

"Besides obtaining by the sides of the walls of the station nearly the whole of the facing stones for his house, ready squared, he opened two extensive thermæ, and discovered several large and interesting altars, and inscribed stones, many coins, carvings, and various implements and utensils belonging to the Roman age. He had for several years been making researches here, and after he came to reside upon the spot, attended personally to the improvement of the adjoining grounds by draining. In this useful employment he had workmen engaged in January, 1835, when one of them, on the 8th of that month, came to his house to tell him that he had come to a curious vase, which he had partially broken, but was anxious should receive no further injury in raising from its antient bed. For

some days he had been confined to the house by a cold; but anxiety to recover the vase led him to the spot, and he stood so long in the damp and rain as to bring on an accession of his disorder, which terminated his life in the evening of January 17th. His remains were interred at the east end of the beautiful and sequestered chapel yard of Beltingham."

During his residence in Newcastle, Mr. Hedley was an active member of the Council of the local Society of Antiquaries, a member of the Literary and Philosophical Society, a manager of the Savings Bank, and a supporter of several charitable institutions. He contributed to Mr. Hodgson's great work—the "History of Northumberland"—extracts from the parish registers of Alston, Kirkhaugh, Haydon Bridge, Warkworth, and Eglingham, and various historical scraps which the learned author wove into his narrative.

He assisted Eneas Mackenzie, also, in the two separate editions of his history of the county, corresponded, upon antiquarian subjects, with Sir Walter Scott, and was an occasional contributor to the pages of the *Newcastle Magazine*, edited by William Andrew Mitchell. In the old series of the "Archæologia Æliana" appear the following papers from his pen:—

"An Account of a Sepulchral Inscription, discovered at Little Chesters, in the County of Northumberland."

"An Essay towards Ascertaining the Etymology of the Names of Places in the County of Northumberland."

"An Account of some Roman Shoes lately discovered at Whitley Castle, Northumberland."

One of Mr. Hodgson's elaborate contributions to the "Archæologia Æliana" takes the form of a letter to his friend:—"Observations on the Roman Station of Housesteads, and on some Mithraic Antiquities discovered there, in a Letter from the Rev. John Hodgson, Secretary, to the Rev. A. Hedley, of Newcastle-upon-Tyne."

Having imbibed Whig politics during his career as a student in Edinburgh, Mr. Hedley was throughout his life an ardent supporter of the Liberal party. At the great election of 1826 he plumped for Lord Howick, and in that of 1832 he voted for Mr. Beaumont and Mr. Ord. His enthusiastic advocacy of civil and religious liberty is said to have hindered his preferment, for "although his merits, both as a clergyman and a man, were well-known in influential quarters, and

voluntary offers of patronage were made to him by the late Chancellor, he pursued too plain and unostentatious a path of duty to reap the benefits which forward and aspiring minds so frequently strive for and obtain."

# Thomas Hedley,

ALDERMAN OF NEWCASTLE.

"He that hath knowledge spareth his words, and a man of understanding is of an excellent spirit."—SOLOMON.

IN the *Newcastle Chronicle* of the 30th of April, 1774, appeared the following announcement of marriage:—

"Last week was married, at Elsdon, Mr. Thomas Hedley, an opulent farmer in that neighbourhood, to Miss Molly Donkin, of Tosson, near Rothbury."

The lady who was thus happily united to the husband of her choice was one of the daughters of William Donkin, farmer, of Tosson, who, when he was married to Eleanor Shotton in June, 1750, entertained his friends and neighbours to the number of 550 with the music of five-and-twenty fiddlers and pipers, fed them with 120 quarters of lamb, 44 of veal, and 20 of mutton, a large quantity of beef, a dozen hams, and a suitable number of chickens, and regaled them with 8 half ankers of brandy made into punch, 12 dozen of cider, a great many gallons of wine, and 90 bushels of malt made into beer. So, at least, states Sykes, copying, no doubt, a newspaper paragraph into his "Local Records" of Northumberland and Durham, etc.

The Hedleys were an old, and formed a somewhat numerous family among the hills and dales which surround the village of Elsdon. In the early parish registers of that place their christenings, marriages, and burials abound. Thomas, "the opulent farmer," occupied the homestead of Wool Law, in the valley of the Rede, near Rochester. He was a "man of mark," in his day, known throughout Redesdale and Coquetdale, and far beyond, as "The Little King of Wool Law."

He is said to be one of the well-known convivial group of farmers depicted by Bewick in the woodcut which adorns Roxby's "Lay

of the Reedwater Minstrel," and he certainly figures in the poem itself:—

> " Of Deadwood stor'd wi' *black* and *gray*
> The Minstrel he shall sing,
> Of brave Sir John o' the Cleugh-brae,
> And Woollaw's *little king*."

To this verse is attached an explanatory note that "Woollaw's little king" is "a title held not 'by the grace of God' in the sense of the legitimates, but richly deserved if benevolence, honour, honesty, hospitality, and friendliness be kingly attributes. If '*Nobilitas sola set atque unica virtus*' be a true maxim, then does the king of Woollaw's title need no champion to defend it."

One of the sons of the union between Thomas Hedley and Miss Donkin, Anthony by name, married a daughter of another old Elsdon family—the Armorers. Anthony Hedley, and Sarah Armorer his wife, were the parents of Thomas Hedley, whose name heads this page, and of Edward Armorer Hedley, a Justice of the Peace for Newcastle.

Thomas Hedley was born at Harnham on the 22nd of April, 1809, and after serving for a short time in a wharfinger's office on Newcastle Quayside, entered the employment of Messrs. John Greene & Sons, grocers, tallow chandlers, and wine merchants, Gateshead.

While at Messrs. Greene's he distinguished himself by earnest application to business and by diligent study of figures and finance, which, joined to industry and thrift, he considered to be indispensable qualifications for a commercial career. To assist him in his studies he became an active member of Gateshead Mechanics' Institute, which, under the fostering care of William Lockey Harle, the Clephans, C. F. Springmann, W. H. Brockett, William Kell, and Henry Brady, was achieving great things for the young men of that borough, and in 1838 he was elected a member of its Committee of Management. A few years later he entered into partnership with the firm in the establishment of a soap manufactory on the New Road, Newcastle, and eventually acquired the business, which he carried on under the designation of Thomas Hedley & Company.

Soon after his transference to Newcastle Mr. Hedley began to take an interest in public life. Commencing with parochial administration he qualified himself for higher functions, and at the municipal

elections in November, 1853, he was elected a representative of East All Saints' Ward in Newcastle Town Council. His business habits and remarkable aptitude for finance gave him weight and influence in the Council, and in November, 1861, he was elected Sheriff.

To the higher dignity of Mayor he was appointed in 1863. His year of office was marked by the visit of the Royal Agricultural Society to Newcastle, and his admirable arrangements for their reception contributed greatly to the success of the gathering. During his Mayoralty he was placed upon the Commission of the Peace for the borough, and in 1866, on the death of Mr. John Carr, he was elected an alderman. For many years he was chairman of the Corporation Finance Committee, and of the Visiting Justices, under whose control is placed the management of the Borough Lunatic Asylum at Gosforth. On the formation of a Local Board of Health at Gosforth, in 1872, he was appointed chairman, and so remained till the destruction by fire of his residence (Coxlodge Hall) in that parish, in 1877, sent him back to Newcastle.

The commercial undertakings with which Alderman Hedley identified himself were varied, wide-spreading, and almost invariably successful. He was chairman of the Newcastle and Gateshead Gas Company, the Solway Hematite Company, and the Tyne Steam Shipping Company; a director of the Consett Iron Company and of the North-Eastern Banking Company.

Alderman Hedley married Mary Chicken of Gateshead (who predeceased him), and had a family of one son and several daughters. The son, Mr. Armorer Hedley, of Mayfield, Gosforth, carries on the business in the New Road in conjunction with his uncle, Mr. Edward Armorer Hedley, J.P.; one of the daughters, Maria, married Mr. James Leathart, J.P., of Breckon Dene, Gateshead, managing director of the firm of Messrs. Locke, Blackett & Co.; another, Margaret, is the wife of Sir Jacob Wilson, of Chillingham, the eminent agriculturist.

# William Hedley,

LOCOMOTIVE ENGINEER AND INVENTOR.

"Had William Hedley's engineering skill and carefully-made experiments not been available at Wylam, George Stephenson would have remained an ordinary engine tenter, and the introduction of railways would have been long delayed."—MINING JOURNAL.

UNDER the headings of "Blenkinsop" and "Hackworth," much has appeared in this series of biographies respecting the adaptation of steam to haulage. Something has been said, too, about the part which William Hedley, of Wylam, played in the evolution of railway locomotion—a part so distinct and important that, if all that is claimed for him be well-founded, he was the man who "gave the locomotive its life and power, and made the work of other men possible." It now remains to describe the man himself, and to amplify the story of his achievements.

William Hedley was born at Newburn, on the 13th of July, 1779, and educated in the adjoining village of Wylam by one of those accomplished teachers of mathematics for which, at that date, and for long after, the county of Northumberland was famed. Soon after he arrived at manhood, Mr. Christopher Blackett, the owner of Wylam Colliery, noting his abilities, selected him to fill the responsible office of viewer of that important undertaking. At the time of his appointment, rapid development in the coal trade, and the increased cost of horses and provender occasioned by wars on the Continent, were turning men's minds to the subject of mechanical haulage. Wylam coals were drawn from the colliery to Lemington, a distance of five miles, in one-horse waggons upon a wooden waggonway, and the question awaiting solution was how to dispense with horse traction, and find an economical, and at the same time effectual, substitute.

The first improvement in the direction of economy at Wylam was the use of cast-iron plate rails in lieu of wood—a change which enabled one horse to draw two waggons. By the time that this improvement was completed, great things were reported about travelling engines which Trevethick was making in South Wales. Mr. Blackett ordered one. It was put together at Whinfield's foundry,

Gateshead, and there it remained. For when it was completed Mr. Blackett saw that it could not be successfully employed upon his waggonway, and he left it alone. Then came Blenkinsop to the North with his iron horse, and that did not promise much better results. And so, although everybody who studied the subject knew that horse traction was doomed, and felt certain that steam was to become the motive power of the future, no one had hit upon the method of making steam commercially available as a substitute for horse-flesh.

*W. Hedley.*

William Hedley, acquainted with all that was being done, joined the ever-increasing band of experimenters who were trying to solve the problem. He had convinced himself that smooth wheels could be made to run upon smooth rails without the intervention of chains, cog-wheels, or rack work, the weight of the engine alone giving sufficient adhesion, and with the aid of Timothy Hackworth, foreman of the colliery smiths, he proceeded to put his ideas to a practical test. How he made the discovery, tried it, and proved its accuracy may be told in his own words:—"In October, 1812, I had the direction

of Wylam Colliery; at that period I was requested by the proprietor to undertake the construction of a locomotive engine. Amongst the many obstacles to locomotion at that period was the idea entertained by practical men, and acted upon—viz., that an engine would only draw after it on a level road, a weight equal to its own. To obviate this, Trevethick and Vivian proposed to make the wheels rough and uneven, etc. Mr. Blenkinsop, in 1811, effected the locomotion by a toothed or rack rail; in December, 1812, W. & E. Chapman, by means of a chain; and in May, 1813, Mr. Brunton, of Butterley, by movable legs. I was, however, forcibly impressed with the idea, which was strengthened by some small preliminary experiments, that the weight of an engine was sufficient for the purpose of enabling it to draw a train of loaded waggons. To determine this important point, I had a carriage constructed; this carriage was placed upon the railroad, and loaded with different parcels of iron, the weight of which had previously been ascertained; two, four, six, etc., loaded coal waggons were attached to it, the carriage itself was moved by the application of men at the four handles; and in order that the men might not touch the ground, a stage was suspended from the carriage at each handle for them to stand upon. I ascertained the proportion between the weight of the experimental carriage and the coal waggons at that point when the wheels of the carriage would surge or turn round without advancing it. The weight of the carriage, and the number of waggons also, were repeatedly varied, but with the same relative result. This experiment, which was on a large scale, was decisive of the fact that the friction of the wheels of an engine carriage upon the rails was sufficient to enable it to draw a train of loaded coal waggons. [Details of the engine follow.] The engine was placed upon four wheels, and went well; a short time after it commenced it regularly drew eight loaded coal waggons after it, at the rate of from four to five miles per hour on Wylam railroad, which was in a very bad state. . . . I do not wish to detract one iota from the celebrity to which Mr. Stephenson is entitled; he has done much for the locomotive engine; but by referring to Mr. [Nicholas] Wood's book on railroads, which, as respects Mr. Stephenson's exertions, may be considered good authority, it appears that a locomotive engine was not constructed by Mr. S. before 25th July, 1814. Long before this period the use of horses on the Wylam railroad was superseded by the locomotive engines, and a large annual sum in the course of being saved to the colliery from the

reduced charge in conveying the coals. My patent bears date 13th March, 1813."

The original engine, or rather the first successful engine—for the original was only an experiment—which Mr. Hedley constructed to Mr. Blackett's order, ran upon the Wylam waggonway from 1813 down to the year 1862. It was known far and wide as "Puffing Billy," and for a long time was one of the lions of the district.

Dr. Smiles, in the "Life of Stephenson," tells a story of a stranger, who, proceeding one dark evening along the High Street Road, near Wylam, saw "Billy" puffing and snorting its painful and laborious way up from Newburn. He had never heard of the new engine, and was almost frightened out of his senses at its approach. An uncouth monster it must have looked, coming flaming on in the dark, working its piston up and down like a huge arm, snorting out blasts of steam from either nostril, and throwing out fire and smoke as it panted along. No wonder that he rushed terrified through the hedge, fled across the fields, and called out to the first person he met that he had just encountered "a terrible deevil on the High Street Road."

Visitors to South Kensington Museum may see a battered, rusty, and somewhat angular piece of mechanism standing in one of the Machinery Courts, and learn from the catalogue that that is the identical locomotive that frightened the stranger—the "Puffing Billy" of Wylam, with which Mr. Hedley successfully demonstrated the important fact that the adhesion of smooth wheels upon smooth rails was sufficient to produce progressive motion.

While he resided in the neighbourhood of Newcastle Mr. Hedley was a member of the Literary and Philosophical Society, and contributed to the interesting discussions on scientific and mechanical matters which, at that time, were a leading feature in the society's meetings. "At these meetings every scientific discovery of importance was brought forward; at them the battle of the lamps was fiercely fought, and the famous 'Geordy' was first exhibited; Thomas Bewick illustrated some of the papers read; William Hedley discoursed upon railways when their modern meaning was all unknown." In 1822 he performed a signal service to the export coal trade of the Tyne. There was a great strike of keelmen upon the river, involving widespread dislocation of local industry, for the sailors joined the strikers, and practically stopped the trade. It is upon record that Mr. Hedley, taking one of his Wylam locomotives off its

wheels, placing it on board a keel, with temporary paddles attached, and, using the combination as a steam-tug to take coal-laden craft down to the ships, dispensed with the services of keelmen altogether.

Before the strike occurred he had acquired a considerable interest in shipping, and a few months after it was ended, in the year 1824, he took Crow Trees Colliery, near Durham, and became a coal-owner. Two years later he leased Callerton Colliery, and, ceasing his connection with Mr. Blackett, went to Callerton to reside. At that place he brought into operation a scheme for utilising both ends of the colliery pumping beam, and had the satisfaction of seeing his plan generally adopted.

About this time Mr. Hedley interested himself in the construction of a railway to connect the South Durham coal-field with the river Tees, commencing at Sim Pasture, on the Stockton and Darlington line, and terminating at Haverton Hill, near Port Clarence. The expectations that had been formed of the utility of the Clarence line in developing the coal trade of the district were not realised. For three years the only traffic on the line came from Mr. Hedley's collieries, and eventually it was absorbed into the Stockton and Darlington system.

Embarking still further in coal-mining speculations, Mr. Hedley in 1828 leased the royalty of South Moor, near Lanchester, and, in 1832, that of Coxhoe or West Hetton. This latter, with Crow Trees, he sold, a few years afterwards, and, for the rest of his life, devoted himself to the development of South Moor, with the adjoining collieries of Holmside and Craghead. He resided at Burnhopside Hall, near his pits, and there, on the 9th of January, 1843, in the sixty-third year of his age, he died. Shortly before his death he purchased the estate of Newton, near Stocksfield.

Mr. Hedley was the father of three or four notable sons. Oswald Dodd Hedley, the eldest, wrote a spirited book maintaining his father's claims to recognition as a railway pioneer, entitled "Who Invented the Locomotive Engine?"; Thomas Hedley, the second son, founded the Bishopric of Newcastle; George Hedley, the third son, an active Justice of the Peace for the county of Durham and the borough of Newcastle; and William Hedley, the fourth son, also a magistrate for the county of Durham, erected the handsome church which adorns his native village of Wylam. The eldest son, O. D. Hedley, left issue; the other three died at a great age unmarried.

# William Hewatson, or Hewson,

A BRILLIANT ANATOMIST.

"God gives to every man
The virtue, temper, understanding, taste,
That lifts him into life, and lets him fall
Just in the niche he was ordained to fill."
—COWPER.

WHILE the last century was still young, a surgeon apothecary named Hewatson, marrying a member of the local family of Heron, commenced to practise his profession in the place of his wife's nativity—the fine old town of Hexham. Beautiful for situation as Hexham is, claiming through its fertile soil and lavish wealth of vegetation to be the garden of Northumberland, one might have supposed that it could afford but little scope for the exercise of a calling which usually derives its chief support from wholly different surroundings. But rich endowment of Nature's gifts, while it may mitigate, does not exempt localities from all the ills which flesh is heir to. Hexham at that time was the seat of important manufacturing industries. Hexham leather, Hexham gloves, and Hexham hats were known far and wide, and to the artisans and their families who produced these far-famed articles the services of the surgeon and the drugs of the apothecary were as needful as elsewhere. From among them, and the out-lying cultivators of the soil, Mr. Hewatson, skilful, genial, and popular, gathered together an increasing number of friends and patients, and gradually built up a successful and profitable practice.

William Hewatson, one of eleven children born to the surgeon apothecary at Hexham, first saw the light on the 14th November, 1739. From an early age he exhibited a precocity of talent and an aptitude for study which encouraged his father to give him a special training in his own profession. The Royal Free Grammar School of Hexham was at that time in charge of the Rev. Abraham Brown, a teacher of repute, curate of Whitley, or St. Helen's Chapel—a hamlet about four miles to the south, between Rowley Burn and the Devil's Water. Under his care the boy was placed, with results creditable to both teacher and pupil. When the period of schooling came to an end the boy's father took him in charge, and taught him

at home the rudiments of surgery and chemistry. These acquired, he was bound apprentice to his father's friend, Mr. Richard Lambert, a scion of the old stock of the Lamberts of Newbrough, who was making his way as a surgeon in Newcastle.

Just before young Hewatson entered upon his indentures Mr. Lambert had started a great scheme of benevolence in the town; he had formed, in a Gallowgate house, the nucleus of a medical charity which, soon afterwards, developed into a noble institution—the Newcastle General Infirmary. By the time the pupil joined his master, the fine new building at the Forth Banks, in which the

William Hewson, F.R.S.

Infirmary, with various additions and improvements, has ever since been located, was open for the reception of patients, and all the advantages of study and practice which such an institution offered to intelligent and aspiring youth were his. Turning his opportunities to good account, young Mr. Hewatson attained remarkable proficiency in surgery, and gave promise of a highly successful career. When his apprenticeship ended, in 1759, he proceeded to London to walk the hospitals, attend lectures, and enlarge his experience in a wider field of study.

Mr. Lambert's reputation as a surgeon extended beyond the limits of the Northern Counties. His pupil, therefore, found no

difficulty in obtaining introductions to the leading practitioners of the metropolis. Entering as a student at Guy's and St. Thomas's Hospitals, he attended the lectures of Dr. Colin Mackenzie on midwifery, Dr. Hugh Smith on physics, and Dr. William Hunter on anatomy. Dr. Hunter, perceiving his genius, took him by the hand, and admitted him to terms of intimacy. He lodged for a time with the doctor's brother and partner, John, afterwards the famous Dr. John Hunter, founder of the Museum that bears his name, and, in the opinion of medical writers, the greatest man that ever practised surgery. So highly did these distinguished brothers estimate Mr. Hewatson's skill, that when, in 1761, John Hunter's health broke down, and he accepted the position of staff surgeon in the expedition to Belleisle, they entrusted to the young anatomist from Hexham, then only twenty-two years of age, the instruction of his fellow-pupils in the dissecting-room. Thus he gained money at an age when most students in surgery are spending it. About this time he made a change in the spelling of his patronymic. Londoners, fond of elisions, contracted "Hewatson" into "Hewson," and accustomed to hear himself continually so named, he adopted the contraction, and was known for the rest of his life as William Hewson.

Upon the return of the forces from Belleisle Mr. Hewson, desirous of still further enlarging his sphere of knowledge, came North, and entered himself for an academical session at the University of Edinburgh. He carried with him letters of introduction from Dr. Hunter and Sir John Pringle to the eminent professors there, Munro, Cullen, and Gregory, by whom he was cordially received and warmly welcomed. He studied there till the winter of 1762, when he returned to London, to settle down with his friends the Hunters, and the brilliant society by which they were surrounded. Dr. William Hunter, admitting him to a partnership, made him joint lecturer on anatomy with himself—a high honour for a young man of, at most, four-and-twenty years. Their anatomical school was in Lichfield Street, where Mr. Hewson lived, and where he took some of the pupils to board with him.

During the summer of 1765, Mr. Hewson visited France, and, returning through Flanders and Holland, arrived in time for the autumnal lectures. Three years later he went to the Sussex coast to make experiments upon fish, the result of which he embodied in a series of papers contributed to the "Transactions" of the Royal Society. For these he was rewarded with the blue riband

of science—a fellowship of the Society, and the Copley medal. The date of his election was March 8th, 1770. To his recommendatory certificate eleven signatures were affixed, among them being those of Sir John Pringle, William Hunter, and Benjamin Franklin, the American philosopher. These honours achieved, he married. The lady of his choice was Miss Mary Stevenson, daughter of the lady with whom Dr. Franklin resided during the fifteen years of his abode in London. After his marriage, which took place on the 10th of July, 1770, he took a house near Dr. Hunter, and they continued the lectures together during the winter of 1771. The following year the partnership was dissolved, and Mr. Hewson began to lecture upon his own account. He commenced in Craven Street, Strand, where he had erected a suitable place for his demonstrations, adjoining a house which he intended for the future residence of his family. Before he began his course of anatomy, he gave a lecture, to which he invited many men of science, on the uses of the spleen and thymus.

Working independently, Mr. Hewson achieved a great reputation. "In viewing the situation of our associate at this period," wrote Dr. Lettsom, "the most gratifying prospects presented themselves, where genius and industry were rewarded with success, and domestic amities with felicity. The theatre in which he delivered his lectures and expounded his doctrines was crowded with men of science, as well as with pupils, to listen to a youth grown sage by experimental researches." Side by side with his anatomical expositions, he maintained a surgical practice; and though this was subsidiary to his public demonstrations, it assisted him on the road to fortune. Upon that road he was rapidly moving, when an accident deprived the country of his services. An injury received in dissection brought on a violent fever, from which he died on the 1st of May, 1774, in the thirty-fifth year of his age. He was buried at the church of St. Martin-in-the-Fields.

Mr. Hewson's early death, at the very outset of what promised to be a most brilliant career, was the subject of general regret. Benjamin Franklin, who since his marriage had been one of his most familiar friends, writing of the sad event to another friend, gave expression to the feeling of sorrow which ran through all ranks of the profession, and was shared by various grades of London society:—"Our family here is in great distress; poor Mrs. Hewson has lost her husband, and Mrs. Stevenson her son-in-law. . . . He was an excellent young

man, ingenious, industrious, useful, and beloved by all that knew him. He was just established in a profitable, growing business, with the best prospect of bringing up his young family advantageously. They were a happy couple. All their schemes of life are now overthrown."

The surgeon apothecary at Hexham did not live to see his son's rapid rise in London, nor to mourn his premature decease. In 1767, before he had reached his prime, he was called away. One by one his children departed, some to early graves, others to distant spheres of usefulness beyond his immediate control. A daughter, married to Magnus Falconar, a youth of great promise as an anatomist, was bereaved by a death even more premature than that of her brother. By about the close of the century the name of Hewatson had disappeared from Hexham. A Rev. John Hewetson, who, in 1823, held Schoolmaster Brown's cure of Whitley, or St. Helen's, was, it is presumed, no connection of the family.

Mrs. Hewson, widow of the great anatomist, left with two sons, and a daughter born three months after her husband's decease, continued on terms of affectionate intimacy with her friend, Dr. Franklin, for the rest of her life. On the death of her mother, in January, 1783, he wrote to her from Passy:—"In looking forward, twenty-five years seem a long period, but in looking back how short! Could you imagine that it is now full a quarter of a century since we were first acquainted? It was in 1757. During the greatest part of the time I lived in the house with my dear deceased friend, your mother; of course you and I conversed with each other much and often. It is to all our honours that, in all that time, we never had among us the smallest misunderstanding. Our friendship has been all clear sunshine, without the least cloud in its hemisphere. Let me conclude by saying to you, what I have had too frequent occasion to say to my other remaining old friends—the fewer we become, the more let us love one another."

The winter of 1783-84 Mrs. Hewson passed with Franklin at Passy, and when he returned to America she accompanied him. In her youth he had superintended her studies, and now, in maturer age, he addressed to her some of his best letters on philosophical subjects. Under his advice and care she brought up her three children, first at Philadelphia, in which city she lived till 1792, two years after her friend and benefactor's death, and afterwards at Bristol, in Pennsylvania, where she died on the 14th of October,

1795. William Hewson, her eldest son, died at Vera Cruz in 1805; Thomas Tickell Hewson, the second son, rose to eminence in his father's profession, and became president of the Royal College of Physicians in Philadelphia.

A collection of Mr. Hewson's writings forms the volume of the Sydenham Society for 1846, edited, with a memoir and notes, by George Gulliver, F.R.S. A complete list of them is as follows:—

"The Operation of Paracentesis Thoracis, proposed for Air in the Chest, with some Remarks on the Emphysema, and on Wounds of the Lungs in General." In "Medical Obs. and Inquiries," vol. iii., 1767.

"An Account of the Lymphatic System in Birds." "Phil. Trans.," vol. lviii., 1768.

"An Account of the Lymphatic System in Amphibious Animals." "Phil. Trans.," vol. lix., 1769.

"An Account of the Lymphatic System in Fish." The same.

"Experiments on the Blood, with some Remarks on its Morbid Appearances." "Phil. Trans.," vol. lx., 1770.

"On the Degree of Heat which Coagulates the Lymph, and the Serum of the Blood; with an Inquiry into the Causes of the Inflammatory Crust, or Size, as it is called." The same.

"Further Remarks on the Properties of the Coagulable Lymph, on the Stopping of Hæmorrhages, and on the Effects of Cold upon the Blood." The same.

"On the Figure and Composition of the Red Particles of the Blood, commonly called the Red Globules." "Phil. Trans.," vol. lxiii., 1773.

"An Experimental Inquiry into the Properties of the Blood, with some Remarks on its Morbid Appearances, and an Appendix relating to the Discovery of the Lymphatic System in Birds," etc., etc. 12mo. T. Cadell, Strand, London, 1771. Two later editions, 8vo, 1772 and 1780.

"Experimental Inquiries, Part the Second, containing a Description of the Lymphatic System in the Human Subject, and in Other Animals. Illustrated." 8vo. Johnson, London, 1774.

"Experimental Inquiries, Part the Third containing a Description of the Red Particles," etc., etc. Edited by Magnus Falconar, Surgeon and Teacher of Anatomy. 8vo. T. Longman, London, 1777.

"A Letter from the late Mr. William Hewson, F.R.S., to Dr. John Havgarth." "Med. and Phil. Commentaries," vol. iii., 1775.

The position which Mr. Hewson occupied as an anatomist and demonstrator is described by the editor of the "Biographia Medica" as extraordinary. His name was frequently coupled with that of Harvey, from his knowledge of the circulation of the blood. He was honoured with the friendship of many distinguished characters. Sir John Pringle showed him singular marks of regard. Dr. Hahn, professor of physic in the University of Leyden, prefixed some

anecdotes of him to a Latin translation of his works, published in that city. These anecdotes were procured by Dr. Simmons from the widow, who testified that "a better son and husband or fonder father than Mr. Hewson never existed." She describes him, further, as slender in form, above the middle stature, with a good and pleasing countenance, expressive of the gentleness and sagacity of his mind; possessing ambition that was free from ostentation, exhibiting prudence without meanness, and covetous rather of fame than of fortune.

Respecting Hewson's position in literature and science, Mr. Gulliver, in the memoir prefixed to the Sydenham Society's volume, writes admiringly. His work on the blood is described as a model of experiments nicely devised, well executed, and clearly told; often original, ever instructive; a happy combination of precision and simplicity. His observations were more exact and complete than any that had before been made on the red corpuscles. He was the first to examine accurately the fluid of the lymphatic system, of the thymus, and of the vessels which run into it from the veins at the lower part of the neck. His investigations concerning the use of the glands without regular excretory ducts first indicated a rational method of research into this important and recondite branch of physiology, and his doctrine of central particles, so long looked upon as visionary, was a step far in advance of the age in which he lived. If his works are not weighty and comprehensive enough to place him in the first rank of physiologists, he is certainly entitled to the most exalted rank in the second, and to a high station among eminent British worthies.

## William Chapman Hewitson,

NATURALIST.

ECCENTRIC Michael Doubleday, of Alnwick, dying in February, 1797, as noted on page 109 of the present volume, made a characteristic will. A nephew of his, named Middleton Hewitson, had lent him £500, under circumstances which excited his gratitude, and, although he had never seen them, he bequeathed to Hewitson's three sons, Middleton, Henry, and Joshua, £10,000 each. At the sale of his estates the Hewitsons invested their legacies in the testator's property.

Middleton Hewitson (2) acquired the abbey and abbey lands of Alnwick, which, soon after the purchase, he sold to the Duke of Northumberland for £17,000. Henry Hewitson, his brother, sold his portion to the Duke in like manner, and lived for the rest of his life at Seaton Burn and Cullercoats. Joshua Hewitson, the third son, retained his part of the estate—Heckley, etc.—and resided upon it till his death, many years afterwards.

With the proceeds of the sale of the abbey lands, Middleton Hewitson (2) bought houses and land in Newcastle. In the early part of the present century he is found living in his own house at the top of Percy Street, facing the Haymarket—the house which, a few years ago, was converted into a circus, and is now known as "The People's Palace." Round about it were spacious gardens, bordered by shrubberies and plantations; and extending behind, and attached to it, was a piece of pasture land, which is now covered by the crescent, terrace, square, and street which bear the name of St. Thomas. In this capacious mansion he brought up a family of five sons and a daughter.

William Chapman Hewitson, the second son of Middleton Hewitson (2), was born at the house in Percy Street on the 9th January, 1806, about six months before Mr. John Bruce established, upon the adjoining property, his far-famed academy. His early education was begun at Kirkby Stephen, and completed at York, in which city he was articled to Mr. John Tuke, land surveyor. About the end of the year 1828 or beginning of 1829, he returned to Newcastle to follow his profession. In Ihler's Directory of the town for 1833, he is entered as "Hewitson, Wm. C., land surveyor, 32, Collingwood Street." It was not, however, in the surveying of land, and the superintendence of landed estate, that Mr. Hewitson was destined to distinguish himself. Favoured by fortune, he was able to emancipate himself from the drudgery of his profession, and to devote himself to research in the boundless, and, at that time, but scantily-explored field of Natural History.

The genial pen of a brother naturalist, Dr. Embleton, accomplished for Mr. Hewitson the same labour of love that it has since performed for the brothers Hancock. To his authoritative record, with its accompanying portrait, we turn for information, and find, tersely stated and happily expressed, great part of that which follows.

In boyhood Mr. Hewitson had developed a taste for the study and acquisition of natural objects. His companions were young men

like-minded—Albany and John Hancock, Joshua Alder, George Wailes, George Clayton Atkinson, R. B. Bowman, John Thornhill, and William Hutton. They found an apt instructor, guide, and friend in Richard R. Wingate, ornithologist and bird-stuffer, who, living in Strawberry Place, not far from Mr. Hewitson's paternal roof, named their specimens and mounted their captures. Emulous of Mr. Wingate's acquisitions, Mr. Hewitson, while serving his indentures at York, lost no opportunity of enlarging his collections of birds and increasing his specimens of insects. His captures of British

coleoptera and lepidoptera, even at that time, attracted attention. Stephens's "Illustrations of British Entomology," begun in 1828, contains his name as that of an authority, and exhibits him as a persevering and highly successful collector.

Upon his return from York, Mr. Hewitson and his fellow-students projected the formation of a society for the study of Natural History in connection with the Newcastle Literary and Philosophical Society. On the 19th of August, 1829, they held a general meeting, and the Natural History Society of Northumberland, Durham, and Newcastle-on-Tyne was established, with N. J. Winch and William Hutton as

joint secretaries, Mr. Hewitson as a member of the committee and honorary curator of the entomological department.

In 1831 he commenced the publication, in parts, under the title of "British Oology," of an extensive work illustrating the eggs of British birds—a work which ran into three editions, and formed a not unworthy sequel to the Land and Water Birds of his illustrious fellow-townsman, Thomas Bewick. For the purposes of this publication he visited the Shetland Islands in 1832, and returned laden with treasure. The following year he went with his friends, John Hancock and Benjamin Johnson, to Norway. This expedition was undertaken with the twofold object of gathering plants and collecting birds and insects, and particularly to observe the breeding places of some of those birds which regularly migrate from that country to this during the winter months. The novelty and boldness of the enterprise excited general interest, for at that time few Englishmen had visited Norway, and facilities for travel and accommodation were few and primitive. The travellers started from the Tyne in a Scotch brig on the 6th May, and arrived at Trondheim seven days later. The first part of their journey thence was accomplished on foot, with a cart to carry their stores and collections. Travelling northward and obtaining a boat, they went as far as Rodoe Island, situated within the Arctic circle, and therefore in the land of the midnight sun. At times they encountered serious difficulties, and endured severe privations. Occasionally they were compelled to live upon the birds they shot. Once, owing to tempestuous weather, they remained for twenty-four hours upon a lonely island without food. Their labour was repaid by a rich harvest of experience, and a fine collection of interesting natural objects, some of which were entirely unknown in England. With these they landed at Leith in August, and returned safely home. Both Mr. Hewitson and Mr. Hancock kept diaries of the expedition. Mr. Hewitson wrote out his, had it illustrated from his own sketches by T. M. Richardson, jun., and made use of it in a lecture to the Natural History Society, and in notes upon the ornithology of Norway contributed to the second volume of Jardine's *Magazine of Zoology*.

In 1840 Mr. Hewitson removed from Newcastle to Bristol, where he had been engaged in surveying for the railway between Bristol and Exeter. The death of his uncle, Henry Hewitson, of Seaton Burn, on the 19th March, 1843, rendered him independent of his calling, and, taking up his residence at Hampstead, near London, he

devoted himself to scientific research and investigation. The following year (December 7th, 1844), his other uncle, Joshua Hewitson, of Heckley, died, leaving him heir to all his possessions; and within six months (April 22nd, 1845) he lost his father. He was now a wealthy man, able to indulge freely his passion for Natural History at home and abroad. The summer following his father's decease, with his old friend John Hancock for his companion, he went on a naturalist's expedition to Switzerland and the Alps, whence he obtained, by capture or purchase, a fine series of diurnal lepidoptera, and materials for a paper upon them which he contributed to the *Zoologist*. Thenceforward the study of the character of these insects, British and foreign, became an absorbing pursuit. By untiring industry and unsparing expenditure, he gathered together specimens of these beautiful creatures from all parts of the world, the distinctive features of which, with considerable literary ability, and remarkable skill in drawing, he described in books, and delineated in papers contributed to natural history periodicals. Professor Alfred Newton, writing of the work which Mr. Hewitson accomplished during his long and useful life, makes an emphatic note of "that wonderful collection of diurnal lepidoptera and those works in illustration of that group, with which his name will be always associated, and by which it will probably be most widely known."

Finding his residence at Hampstead inconvenient, Mr. Hewitson purchased, in 1848, a portion of Oatlands Park, Surrey, at one time a seat of the Duke of York. Upon one of the most commanding sites in this fine property, having a view up the Thames Valley as far as Windsor Castle, an old Newcastle friend, Mr. John Dobson, the architect, designed for him a charming house, while the grounds surrounding it, sloping to Broadwater, were laid out with admirable taste by himself and his still older friend, Mr. John Hancock. In this delightful retreat Mr. Hewitson lived and laboured for thirty years, and there he died, on the 28th May, 1878, aged 72 years.

Mr. Hewitson had outlived his brothers and sisters; his married life had been cut short by death within a year of its beginning; he had no near kith or kin, and he determined to devote his wealth to charitable and scientific purposes. His will, made a couple of months before his decease, contained bequests of £10,000 to Newcastle Infirmary, £3,000 to the Natural History Society of Northumberland, Durham, and Newcastle-on-Tyne, and about £20,000 in legacies to fifty-eight of his friends, some of them naturalists. The estate of

Oatlands he bequeathed to his life-long friend, Mr. John Hancock. He left to the British Museum his collection of butterflies, on condition that it should be called "The Hewitson Collection," and be kept in the same cabinets, and in the same order and arrangement for twenty-one years, coupled with a wish, though not an absolute condition, that it should so remain for a further period of twenty-one years. If these terms were not accepted the entire collection was to be given to the Newcastle Museum. Certain of his pictures he bequeathed to the National Gallery, and all his books on natural history (except Gould's "Birds," which he gave to Mr. John Hancock) he left to the Natural History Society in Newcastle.

Mr. Hewitson's published works are the following:—

"British Oology, being Illustrations of the Eggs of British Birds." 2 vols., 8vo, 1831-38; 2nd edition, 1843-44, the title being changed to "Coloured Illustrations of the Eggs," etc.; 3rd edition, 1856.

"Doubleday's Genera of Butterflies." Illustrations by W. C. Hewitson. 2 vols., 4to, 1846-52.

"Illustrations of Exotic Butterflies." 5 vols., 4to, 1852-77.

"Specimen of a Catalogue of Lycænidæ in the British Museum, containing 8 plates of Ogyris and Amblypoda," 1862.

"Descriptions of some New Species of Lycænidæ," 1868.

"Illustrations of Diurnal Lepidoptera," 4to, 1868.

"Equatorial Lepidoptera, collected by Mr. Buckley," 1869-76.

"Bolivian Butterflies, collected by Mr. Buckley," 1874.

The papers which he contributed to the *Entomological Magazine*, *Jardine's Magazine of Zoology and Botany*, the *Zoologist*, and the "Transactions" of the Zoological, Entomological, and Linnæan Societies number twenty-nine. Industriously culled from all these sources by Mr. Joseph Wright, keeper of the Newcastle Museum, their titles alone fill two pages of Dr. Embleton's memoir.

# John Hodgson Hinde,

POLITICIAN, ANTIQUARY, AND HISTORIAN.

THE Hodgsons of Northumberland are an ancient family, domiciled on the banks of the Tyne from the middle of the fifteenth century. They begin with William Hodgson, who was Sheriff of Newcastle in the municipal year 1475-76. He is followed in the public life of Newcastle by Richard Hodgson, Sheriff in 1549-50, and Mayor in

1555-56, 1566-67, and 1580-81. This Richard Hodgson founded a county family, having purchased from John Baxter, in 1562, the Manor of North Hebburn, which remained in the possession of his descendants till about the year 1650, when it was sold to the Ellisons.

A member of this family, John Hodgson of Newcastle, linen-draper, bought from Ralph Jenison, about the year 1720, the lordship of Elswick, and dying there on the 4th of November, 1749, was buried in the yard attached to the Meeting-House of the Society of Friends, in Pilgrim Street, Newcastle. He was succeeded by his son, John Hodgson (2), who sold the mining royalties beneath the estate—800 acres—and in turn was followed by his son, John Hodgson (3), born in 1774. It was the third John Hodgson, of Elswick, who, at the beginning of the present century, pulled down the old residence of the Jenisons and his predecessors, together with the dilapidated village of Elswick, and upon the site thus cleared erected the present mansion of Elswick Hall, from designs by John Stokoe, a Newcastle architect. He married, in 1803, Sarah, daughter of Richard Huntley, of Fryerside, Durham, and had three sons—all of whom, inheriting property, in after-life assumed other names—viz., John Hodgson (4), who, in accordance with the will of Miss Elizabeth Archer Hind, of Stelling Hall and Ovington, became, in 1836, John Hodgson-Hinde; Thomas, who, under the same will, took the name of Thomas Hodgson-Archer-Hind; Richard, who, in 1870, assumed his maternal name of Huntley. The father, John Hodgson (3), Major of the Newcastle Loyal Associated Volunteer Infantry, a corps of 1200 men, died July 12th, 1820, aged forty-five, and was buried at St. Nicholas', Newcastle, where a mural monument preserves his memory and that of his widow, who died at Stelling Hall, June 25th, 1858, aged seventy-six.

John Hodgson Hinde was born on the 30th of July, 1806. From about his eighth year he was educated under the care of the Rev. James Birkett, of Ovingham, thence proceeded to Durham School, and finally to Trinity College, Cambridge. Arriving at the age of manhood he came into possession of the Elswick Estate, and began to take an active interest in public affairs. Under circumstances described on page 151 of the present volume, he was suddenly, at the age of twenty-three, invited to become a candidate for the representation of Newcastle in Parliament, in opposition to Sir Matthew White Ridley and Cuthbert Ellison, the retiring members. On the 2nd of June, 1830, a deputation of free burgesses marched off to Elswick

House, accompanied by a band of music, and presented him with a requisition which, expressing the opinion of those who signed it "that the Representation of the Town in Parliament should be open and uninfluenced by Family Connexions, that the Representatives should be Men easy of Access to every Burgess, and devoted to the Interests of the Place which they represent," called upon him as "a Gentleman whose Character, Attainments, and Public Spirit" rendered him "in every respect suitable for the Representation of a Free People in Parliament" to offer himself as a candidate, and pledging themselves to give him their support. The next day he issued his address, promising to apply himself to the correction of abuses, and keep a watchful eye over Government expenditure, and declaring that, although "no friend to a hasty or violent Reform in Parliament," he would gladly support any proposition tending to a moderate and gradual improvement in the representation, and, at the same time, being "altogether hostile to our present commercial system," would promote "such measures as are likely to afford relief to the distress under which the country at present labours."

Then commenced the war of songs, broadsides, squibs, and caricatures. Among these, printed on blue or yellow paper (Mr. Hodgson's colours), the young candidate made a gallant show.

Here is the chorus of one of the songs :—

"Hurrah for the Gold and the Blue,
Hurrah for the Gold and the Blue;
It's good to be found in a fair honest cause,
And that cause is the Gold and the Blue."

And here is an extract from another :—

"He's a man well respected by every soul,
And soon you'll see that by the state of the Poll;
So fill up your glasses, we'll make the Tyne ring,
With huzza for Hodgson! and God save the King!"

Lastly comes a parody of a Scotch song :—

"Lang may they strive to wage the war,
Bonnie Laddie, Elswick Laddie,
Against our Rights and Elswick's Star,
My bonnie Laddie, Elswick Laddie.

Fill, fill your cups, up to the brim,
Bonnie Laddie, Elswick Laddie,
And staunchly pledge your words to him,
Our bonnie Laddie, Elswick Laddie."

Dozens of songs like these, hundreds of posters, and even a periodical, *The Newcastle Candidate*, were issued, a severe contest being expected; but at the last moment Mr. Ellison declined to go to the poll, and Mr. Hodgson, nominated by Alderman Reed and seconded by Sanderson Ilderton, was elected as Sir Matthew White Ridley's colleague. Great was the exultation of his friends and supporters; to commemorate the event they struck off a medal bearing an excellent likeness of their youthful representative.

At the election in the following year he and Sir Matthew were returned without opposition, and in 1832, at the first election after the Reform Bill, though opposed by Charles Attwood, he was again victorious. But in 1835 there were four candidates—Sir Matthew,

John Hodgson, William Ord, and James Aytoun—and Mr. Ord and Sir Matthew were successful, Mr. Hodgson polling only 1,257 votes against 1,844 for Ord and 1,509 for Ridley. To console him for his defeat, his friends presented him with two massive pieces of plate, and pledged themselves to renewed exertions on his behalf at the first opportunity. The opportunity came in July of the following year through the death of Sir Matthew White Ridley and Mr. Hodgson regained his seat, beating Christopher Blackett by forty-eight votes. Taking the name of Hodgson Hinde immediately thereafter, he continued to represent Newcastle till 1847. At the election in that year he declined to contest the borough against the combined influence of the Whigs under Ord and Headlam, and his brother Richard taking up the candidature, was defeated.

About the time of his first election Mr. Hodgson Hinde took a leading part in the formation of the great thoroughfare which bisected his estate—the Scotswood Road—with its elegant suspension bridge across the Tyne. He it was who, at the opening of the bridge, on the 12th of April, 1831, made the presentation to the architect described on page 327 of this volume, and who, in 1835, as vice-chairman of the North Shields Railway Company, laid the foundation-stones of the Ouseburn and Willington Viaducts (see page 329). Towards the close of his life he associated himself with the promotion of another bridge across the Tyne—that of Redheugh, and became chairman of the company formed to complete it. He served the county for many years as a Justice of the Peace and Deputy-Lieutenant, and in 1849 was High Sheriff.

While in London, attending to his Parliamentary duties, Mr. Hodgson Hinde rendered great service to local history by searching the Archives of the State for documents bearing upon the government, commerce, and public life of Newcastle and Northumberland. These documents he caused to be copied, and was thus able to assist in his historical labours the Rev. John Hodgson, who, in the preface to one of the volumes of his "History of Northumberland," thanked him for "the unremitting and intelligent zeal" with which, at his own expense, he had procured materials for that work. After his withdrawal from Parliament he devoted himself more assiduously than before to investigations into the history and antiquities of his native county. He wrote the preface (70 pages) to a volume published, in 1847, by the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, of which he was a prominent member, and for many years vice-president. In 1858 the Society issued, in quarto (400 pages), an introductory volume to Hodgson's "History," which Mr. Hodgson-Hinde had written—a work of great research and erudition, containing, as the title-page explains, the "General History of the County, State of the District under the Romans, the Saxon and Danish Kings of Northumberland. the Official Earldom. With a Narrative of Events connected with the County from the Norman Conquest to the Accession of the House of Hanover." He also edited, for the Surtees Society, Part 1 of "Symeonis Dunelmensis Opera et Collectanea"—the works of Symeon, a monk of Durham during the close of the eleventh and early part of the twelfth centuries. To this work, published in 1868, he contributed a preface of over seventy pages. He intended to have printed the MSS. of the Rev. John Horsley and Ralph

Spearman, relating to Northumberland history, but declining years prevented him from proceeding further than Part 1, which he issued privately among his friends and members of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries.

Mr. Hodgson-Hinde married, January 31st, 1833, Isabella, eldest daughter and co-heiress of Anthony Compton of Carham Hall; his brother, Richard, married Catherine Moneypenny, her sister. They both died without male issue—Mr. Hodgson-Hinde on the 25th of November, 1869, and Mr. Hodgson-Huntley on the 22nd of December, 1879. The latter, born in 1812, was a very active politician in the Conservative interest. He sat for Berwick from 1837 to 1847, and for Tynemouth from 1861 to 1865, was a J.P. and D.L. for Northumberland, for many years chairman of the North British Railway Company, and in 1877 served the office of High Sheriff of the county. He left issue, a daughter, Katherine Edith Isabella, who married, in 1862, Thomas Thornhill, M.P., of Riddlesworth in Norfolk.

Besides issuing the separate works named in preceding paragraphs, Mr. Hodgson-Hinde contributed extensively to historical literature through the medium of learned societies, and he left behind him a number of valuable MSS. which now, in the library of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, await the services of a competent editor. The following is a list of his contributions, and of the publications in which they appear:—

*Archæologia Æliana. Old Series.*

Vol. iv.

"Bremetenracum: On the site of Bremetenracum in the Notitia, and Bremetonacum in the Itinerary, and on the bearing of this question on Horsley's theory of Secondary Stations 'per lineam Valli,' with some speculations as to the sites of other Stations in the Notitia and Itinerary."

"An Examination of Horsley's Allocation of the Miscellaneous Notitia Stations in the North of England."

"Castle Rents anciently payable to the Castle of Newcastle."

"The Belgic Tribes in Britain."

*Archæologia Æliana. New Series.*

Vol. i.

"Account of the Cornage of the County of Northumberland, Rendered at the Exchequer, in the 49th year of Henry III., by Robert de Lisle, Sheriff."

"The Rental for the Earl of Westmerland's Lordship of Bywell in 1526."

"The Manor of Bearl." In Bywell St. Andrew's Parish.

Vol. iii.

"Letters from Philip de Ulecote."

"On the Original Site and Progressive Extension of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, with an Estimate of its Population at various Periods." With Map.

"On the Early Municipal History of Newcastle."

"Documents Relating to Religious Foundations in Northumberland."

"Pro Mercatoribus Novi Castri Super Tynam, de Anno 29 Henrico VI."

"The Old North Road."

Vol. iv.

"Public Amusements in Newcastle."

Vol. vi.

"Sheriffs of Northumberland."

"Notes on the Rev. John Horsley."

"On Early Printing in Newcastle."

*Proceedings of the Archæological Institute.*

"On the State of Newcastle and Gateshead During the Saxon Period, Ad-Murum, Wallknowle, Pandon: Munecaceastre, or Monkchester: Ad-Capræ-Caput, Goat's-Head or Gateshead." Newcastle Meeting, 1852.

"On the Trade of Newcastle Previous to the Reign of Henry III., with a View of its Relative Importance as compared with other Towns and the General Commerce of the Kingdom." Newcastle Meeting, 1852.

"On the Condition of Lothian Previous to its Annexation to Scotland." Edinburgh Meeting, 1856.

"On the Early History of Cumberland." Carlisle Meeting, 1859.

*Journal of the British Archæological Association.*

"On the Progress of the Roman Arms in Britain, with Special Reference to the Position of the Northern Frontiers at Different Periods." Durham Meeting, 1865.

# Robert Hindmarsh,

ONE OF THE FOUNDERS OF THE "NEW CHURCH."

AMONG the converts which the Rev. John Wesley made in one of his visits to Northumberland was a member of an old family of tanners, long resident in Alnwick, named James Hindmarsh. Being a man of considerable ability, Mr. Hindmarsh was able to render good service to the great founder of Methodism in gathering together, under the shadow of Alnwick Castle, an active and zealous body of worshippers. Among the leading spirits of the little flock he held a useful and prominent place. After a time, his ardour cooled. Becoming a publican, first at the Castle Inn, Alnwick, and

then at a similar house in Dunbar, he gradually fell away from the Methodist society, and either resigned or was deprived of the privileges of its communion. Both his innkeeping enterprises proved unsuccessful. After his failure at Dunbar, he returned to his native town, and, under the depressing influences of commercial disaster, sought consolation among the friends he had forsaken. Mr. Wesley, satisfied with his proofs of repentance, and convinced of his competency to teach and preach, appointed him governor of Kingswood School, near Bath, and admitted him into the ministry. Later in life, under circumstances to be explained presently, he was captivated by the theological views of Emanuel Swedenborg, and became the first recognised preacher of the doctrines of the New

Robert Hindmarsh.

Church in this country. In that profession he passed the remainder of his days, and died about the year 1812.

Robert Hindmarsh, son of James, was born at Alnwick on the 8th of November, 1759. He was educated at Kingswood School, where he acquired some degree of proficiency in Latin and Greek, and in various branches of philosophy and science. It is probable that his father intended him for the Wesleyan ministry; but the youth showed no bias in that direction. The business towards which his choice inclined was that of a letterpress printer. He was accordingly bound apprentice to a printer in London, and left home for the metropolis in the latter part of the year 1773. Having received a religious training, he avoided the temptations which beset young men in

London, and, being of a studious and meditative turn of mind, used his spare time in acquiring knowledge. When he was nineteen years of age, a treatise on Heaven and Hell, translated into English from the Latin of Swedenborg by the Rev. Thomas Hartley, a Church of England clergyman, was being printed in an office with which his master had some business connection. He obtained the book, was attracted by it, and, being able to read Latin, obtained other works by the same author, and avowed himself a disciple.

At that time the theological works of Swedenborg were known to but few persons in this country, and those few were for the most part clergymen. For some months Mr. Hindmarsh pursued his studies alone. At length he was joined by three or four thoughtful men, and the result of their cogitations was a determination to make the writings of the Swedish philosopher familiar to the English people. In December, 1783, he and his associates inserted an advertisement in the newspapers, inviting the readers and admirers of Swedenborg's teachings to meet at the London Coffee-House, in Ludgate Hill. Five persons assembled—Mr. Hindmarsh; J. A. Tulk, a man of fortune; Peter Provo and William Spence, London surgeons; and William Bonington, a Clerkenwell clock-casemaker. These gentlemen agreed to hold meetings for reading and mutual instruction, at chambers in the Temple, and in a short time their number increased to about thirty.

Gradually extending their aims into propaganda, they began to translate and print some of the smaller publications of Swedenborg; but this work being undertaken on a more extended scale at Manchester, through the instrumentality of the Rev. Mr. Clowes, rector of St. John's Church in that city, they turned their thoughts to another and bolder line of action. Led by Mr. Hindmarsh, who was by this time married, and in a prosperous way of business as a printer, a minority of the little band that met in the Temple decided upon founding a new denomination, and acquiring a building wherein the doctrines which they had received from Swedenborg might be openly taught. In January, 1788, a chapel in Great Eastcheap was publicly dedicated to their use, Mr. Hindmarsh's father, who had been converted from Methodism to the new light, officiating as preacher. About this time, prompted by Mr. Hindmarsh, the first ordination of ministers in the denomination took place. The Rev. S. Noble, in a funeral sermon preached at Mr. Hindmarsh's decease, informs us that in this solemn function

it was considered advisable to resort to apostolical usage. "As the ordination of ministers in the first Christian church commenced with the twelve apostles, so the ministry of the New Church must commence from a like independent origin. Accordingly, a form for the commencement of a new ministry was proposed by Mr. Hindmarsh, deduced from the known laws of divine order in regard to such a subject. In the administration of the ordinance, he was chosen by lot to perform the chief part; and the ministers thus first ordained were his father and the late Rev. Samuel Smith, who likewise had been a travelling preacher in Mr. Wesley's connection. From this commencement of a ministry, all succeeding ordinations in the New Church have proceeded; and this commencement of public preaching, as an example, has been the origin of all congregations of the New Church in this kingdom."

A fluent speaker and a ready writer, Mr. Hindmarsh laboured incessantly to strengthen the neoteric organisation upon which, he believed, the true church of the future must lay its foundations. He compiled a service book for the use of congregations, entitled "The Liturgy for the New Church," and started a monthly periodical, *The New Magazine of Knowledge concerning Heaven and Hell*, a title which was afterwards shortened to that of *New Jerusalem Journal*. The greater part of this periodical, which ran for three years, he wrote himself. Next he engaged in a controversy with the famous Dr. Priestley. Upon the occasion of the inauguration of a place of worship for the new sect at Birmingham in 1791, the Doctor published a spirited attack upon their doctrines, in the form of "Letters to the Members of the New Jerusalem Church." To this Mr. Hindmarsh replied in an octavo volume, imitative as to title—"Letters to Dr. Priestley in Defence of the New Church"—a book which is considered by Swedenborgians as a standard work in polemic theology.

About the beginning of the present century Mr. Hindmarsh, having made money in his trade as a printer, commenced the business of a stockbroker. In that profession he was the victim of a swindle, by which he lost a considerable part of his fortune. Retiring altogether from business, in 1810, he removed to Manchester, and there, having all his time at his disposal, he began to preach. Three years later a chapel was built for him at Salford. It was denominated "The New Jerusalem Temple," was opened by himself on Sunday, September 19th, 1813, and dedicated to "the

Worship of the Lord Jesus Christ as the only God." In that temple, to gradually increasing congregations, he ministered for thirteen years, being "ever active in the duties of his office, and rendering valuable service to the now rising New Church both as a most effective missionary, and a stationary preacher." His missionary work, it may be noted, was of an arduous and exacting character. Wherever a few people professed themselves interested in Swedenborgian teachings Mr. Hindmarsh was ready to meet them, taking long journeys, at a time when facilities for travelling were none of the best, to form a society or establish the nucleus of a congregation. With this object he went, in the year 1816, to Scotland. Returning through his native county, he paid a visit to his relatives at Alnwick, and strengthened the weak knees of a few adherents and sympathisers, who had been struggling to maintain a semblance of congregational unity in Newcastle. The historian of the New Jerusalem Church in Newcastle records the visit to Tyneside with evident pride and satisfaction:—"The appearance amongst them of a man to whose indefatigable zeal the progress of the church in general was so much indebted, was calculated still further to enhance their anticipations and promote their now increasing reputation. A crowded auditory assembled in the Turk's Head Long Room, to hear him discourse upon the verities of the New Jerusalem. The volubility of his speech, the novelty of his subjects, and the logical dexterity of his arguments, drew from the enemies of the doctrines, not only the acknowledgment of ingenuity, but also the expression of wonder and approbation."

In 1826, being then in his sixty-seventh year, Mr. Hindmarsh relinquished his regular pulpit ministrations, and retiring once more into private life, employed himself in useful literary labour. His published works, besides those which have been enumerated in the course of the narrative, are the following:—

"A Seal upon the Lips of Unitarians, Trinitarians, and all others who refuse to acknowledge the Sole, Supreme, and Exclusive Divinity of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ." 1814.

"A Compendium of the Chief Doctrines of the True Christian Religion." 1816.

"A Key to the Spiritual Signification of Numbers, Weights, and Measures, in the Holy Word." 1820.

"A Vindication of the Character and Writings of the Honourable Emanuel Swedenborg, against the Slanders and Misrepresentations of the Rev. J. G. Pike, of Derby." 1821.

"An Essay on the Resurrection of the Lord." 1833.
"The Lamb Slain from the Foundation of the World." 1833.

Mr. Hindmarsh died at Gravesend, at the house of his daughter, on the 2nd of January, 1835, in the seventy-sixth year of his age.

It may be proper to notice in this connection another gifted member of the Alnwick family of Hindmarsh—Isabella, daughter of William Hindmarsh, tanner. This young lady was born on the 13th of November, 1798, and from an early age distinguished herself in poetic composition. When she was twenty years old she published a volume of 254 pages, entitled "The Cave of Hoonga, a Hongaen Tradition, in Two Cantos, and Other Poems," several of the latter having been written when she was fifteen. Most of her pieces are tinctured with melancholy, a characteristic which, in the preface to the book, she explains and defends. "Whom the gods love die young." Miss Hindmarsh was called away on the 5th December, 1823, aged twenty-five.

## John Hodgson,

HISTORIAN AND ANTIQUARY.

Two most interesting volumes from the pen of the Rev. James Raine, M.A., historian of North Durham, contain "A Memoir of the Rev. John Hodgson, M.A., F.R.S.L., F.S.A.N., Vicar of Hartburn, and author of a 'History of Northumberland.'" From that authentic source of information the following narrative is condensed.

John Hodgson was the eldest of ten children born to Isaac Hodgson of Swindale, in the parish of Shap, Westmorland, stone mason and slater, and his wife, Elizabeth, daughter of William Rawes, of West Sleddale, in the same parish. He first saw the light at Swindale, on the 4th of November, 1779, and was baptised at Shap nine days afterwards. When he was eight months old his parents removed, a mile or two further down the Lowther Burn, to Rosgill, where his father's ancestors had previously resided, and there he was sent to a school kept by a relation, a Mrs. Jackson, till he became, in his seventh year, a pupil at Bampton Grammar School under a celebrated head-master, the Rev. John Bowstead. When he was nineteen he received an offer from the Rev. J. Dacre Carlyle—afterwards Vicar of Newcastle—to accompany him as

secretary in an expedition he was about to make with Lord Elgin, Ambassador to the Ottoman Court. He had an ardent wish to go, but for some unexplained reason contented himself with the post of schoolmaster at Matterdale, in Cumberland. After he had been there a few months the mastership of another village school, that of Stainton, in the parish of Dacre, was offered to him, and he accepted it. He was teaching at Stainton when, in the beginning of 1801, upon the recommendation of his maternal cousin, the Rev. William Rawes, M.A., master of Witton-le-Wear school, he was appointed to the mastership of the school at Sedgefield.

Shortly after his settlement at Sedgefield a proposal was made to him, the acceptance of which might have changed the whole tenor of his life. Mr. Fishwick, of Newcastle (see page 293), finding that he had acquired a competent knowledge of geology, offered him £300 a year to become a director of the newly-established Lemington Iron Works. He refused it, although the salary was nearly ten times his income from the school, on the ground that he wished to pursue a literary rather than a mercantile life. He had, in fact, at that time put himself in communication with the publishers of the "Beauties of England and Wales," with a view to securing an engagement as compiler of the volume relating to the county of Durham; and he was seriously contemplating the possibility of entering the Church. During the following year (1802) he obtained a title for holy orders, and went up for examination, but failed to satisfy Dr. Burgess, the examiner. The disappointment, added to the worry of teaching, affected his health, and soon after Christmas, 1803, he left Sedgefield for Lanchester school, where the duties were lighter, and where he hoped to obtain a curacy. Nor were his hopes disappointed. Before many months had elapsed he obtained a nomination to the cure of Esh and Satley to be held in conjunction with his school. Submitting himself to a new examiner, Dr. Carlyle, the amiable and learned cleric who had desired his services in the East, he passed triumphantly. Armed with letters dimissory from the Bishop of Durham, he was admitted into the order of Deacons by the Bishop of Carlisle on the 3rd of June, 1804.

Taking up his residence at Lanchester, Mr. Hodgson found time to indulge in poetical recreations, and to study the remains of antiquity in which Lanchester abounds—remains which had excited the attention of Camden and Horsley, Gale and Stukeley, and other eminent archæologists, long before. While there he wrote a book of

poems, published afterwards, with the title of "Woodlands," by the Akenheads of Newcastle. In the summer of 1806 he was appointed curate of the large and growing parish of Gateshead, and two years later was preferred by Cuthbert Ellison, of Hebburn Hall, the patron, to the incumbency of Jarrow and Heworth.

This was a position entirely to Mr. Hodgson's liking. Lanchester had afforded him remains of Roman rule in Britain; Jarrow had them also, with the additional attraction of a monastical church dating from the seventh century. His clerical duties, as he understood and discharged them, left him but scanty opportunities for archæological investigation; but such as they were he utilised them, and thereby laid up a goodly store of facts and observations to be utilised hereafter. "On the 11th of January, 1810, Mr. Hodgson became a married man; the object of his choice was Jane Bridget, daughter of Mr. Richard Kell, a stone merchant residing at Heworth Shore, in his parish, and afterwards the affectionate mother of a numerous family, the sharer in her husband's joys and sorrows for thirty-five long years, and the very comfort of his life in his long afflictions before he was removed out of the world."

Married and settled, Mr. Hodgson began to develop the "literary rather than mercantile life," for which he had announced a preference when declining the Lemington directorship. He had been too late in offering when at Sedgefield to write an account of Durham for the "Beauties of England and Wales"; but now he engaged himself to compile the volume relating to Northumberland, to be followed by a similar volume on Westmorland. For this purpose he commenced a series of journeys through the northernmost English county, and made himself acquainted with its hills and dales, its antiquities, and its commercial resources. Meanwhile he printed another book of poems, "The Nativity of Jesus Christ," and sat to Nicholson, the Newcastle artist, for his portrait. In 1811 he tramped through Westmorland in search of materials for his book on that county, and the following year was re-editing for the Akenheads a Guide to Newcastle, when an event occurred in his parish which for a time turned his thoughts and energies into another channel.

On the 25th of May, 1812, an explosion occurred at Felling Colliery, which surpassed in its awful consequences all previous calamities of the kind in the district. Ninety-two men and boys perished, many of them members of Mr. Hodgson's own flock, and most of them personally known to him. On the 9th of August

when nearly all the bodies had been recovered, he preached a funeral sermon in Heworth Church, and to this sermon he prefixed a full account of the accident, and published it, accompanied with a plan of the mine and the mode of ventilation. Out of this disaster rose the Society for the Prevention of Accidents in Coal-Mines, and the development of the Safety Lamp. Sir Humphrey Davy came down to Newcastle and met Mr. Hodgson, who had been thinking, and writing, and making experiments long before. A voluminous correspondence followed. On two occasions, when submitting the results of his experiments to the Royal Society, Sir Humphrey acknowledged the assistance he had received from the incumbent of Heworth in proving and perfecting the lamp with which his name is identified.

Before the echoes of the Felling disaster had died away, Mr. Hodgson was engaged upon a subject more congenial to his mind than the burial in batches of his scorched and mangled parishioners. The Newcastle Society of Antiquaries was formed on the 6th of February, 1813, and he became one of its secretaries. At the second of its monthly meetings he read a long and interesting paper, "On the Study of Antiquities"; and during the remaining years which he spent at Heworth he contributed upwards of twenty papers to the Society's literature. Upon his removal from Tyneside, in 1823, he resigned the co-secretaryship and was placed upon the list of vice-presidents.

The great work of Mr. Hodgson's life—the "History of Northumberland"—probably originated in the researches he had made when compiling his historical narrative of the county for the "Beauties of England and Wales." In 1817 his plans began to assume definite shape, and in the latter part of the following year he commenced to print his first volume. It was a gigantic undertaking, and, upon the scale which he contemplated, impossible for any one man to complete. For, it must be remembered, "he wrote at a time when access to the public records was extremely difficult, and when many of the most important were rigorously withheld from the historical student; at a time when those records which could be consulted were dispersed in many various repositories, and when not only the representatives of our old historic families, but even corporations which were then by a misnomer called learned bodies, jealously guarded their historic papers, from the absurd fear that if they were used for a literary purpose some claim might be raised as to forgotten rights of property. Not only were these things so, but

the expense and difficulty of travelling made it impossible for any one who was not wealthy as well as enthusiastic to execute such a work in the thorough manner which the present day demands."

In May, 1819, Mr. Hodgson issued the first announcement of his intentions as follows:—

"In the Press, and will be Published with all convenient speed, a History of the County of Northumberland, in 6 vols. 4to, by the Rev. John Hodgson, of Jarrow, Sec. Antiq. Soc., Newcastle, etc.

"The first volume will contain the General History of the County, and separate Treatises on its Agriculture, Revenues, Mining, Geology, Natural History, etc.

"The second, third, and fourth volumes will be taken up with descriptions of the towns, villages, public buildings, and antiquities; with pedigrees of families of rank, the descent of property, and such other local matters as usually go under the denomination of Parochial History.

"The fifth and sixth volumes (the first of which is in the press) will consist of Ancient Records and Historical Papers relating to Northumberland and the English and Scottish Borders.

"The whole of the authorities, especially the large collection of ancient grants of property and franchises to individuals and corporate bodies, which will be given in the fifth and sixth volumes, will be printed in Doomsday types.

"Complete indexes will be given to each volume.

"The impression is limited to 300 copies—50 on royal, and 250 on demy paper."

The first volume was completed and issued at the close of 1820—first, that is, in the order of publication, for, if the author's design had been carried out, it would have formed the fifth volume of the series. It was a collection of Records and Historical Papers, containing such extracts as relate to Northumberland from the "Inquisitiones post Mortem" of Henry III. and the first three Edwards, the "Rotuli Hundredorum" (1275), the "Placita Quo Warranto" (1293), the "Testa de Nevil" (Edward I.), the "Taxatio Ecclesiastica Angliæ" (1291), a series of royal and private charters relating to Knaresdale and Haughton, a list of castles and towers in the county (1460), and other valuable documents necessary to the elucidation of North-Country history.

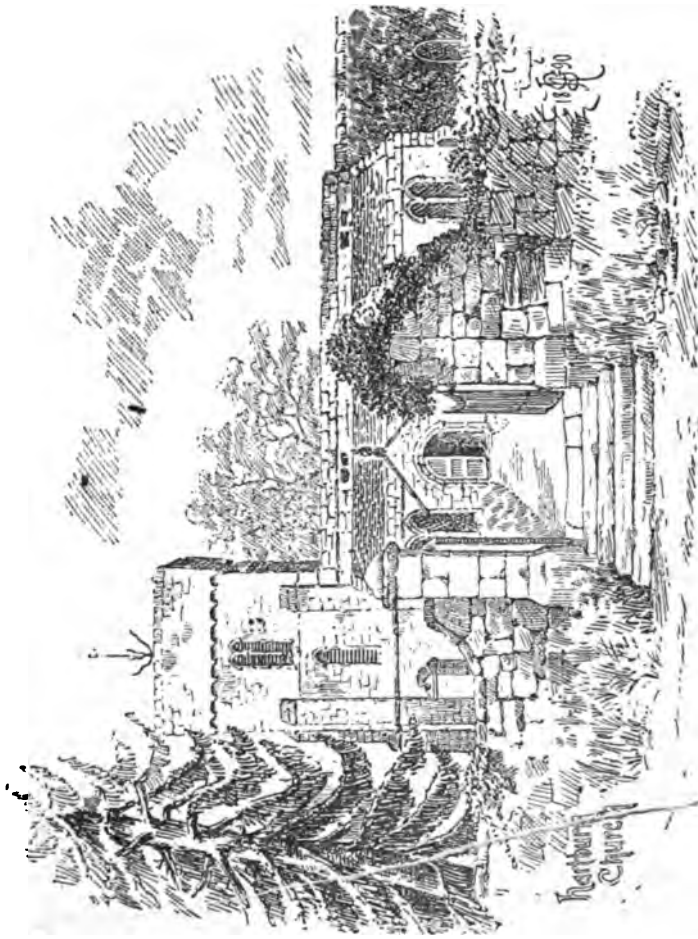
While preparing a second volume for the press, Mr. Hodgson was promoted to the living of Kirkwhelpington, on the banks of the Wansbeck. Here he found himself close to Sir John Swinburne, of Capheaton, and his artist brother, Edward Swinburne, both of whom were rendering him essential service in his historical labours, and not far from Sir John Trevelyan and his eldest son, afterwards Sir Walter Calverley Trevelyan, who were exhibiting an equal interest in

the great work he had undertaken. He took up his residence at Whelpington in 1823, and, as soon as he had fairly settled down, resumed his task. Dealing this time with parochial history, he issued, in 1827, as his second volume the real second volume of the series. It contained the history of the parishes of Elsdon, Corsenside, Whelpington, Kirkharle, Hartburn, Bolam, and Whalton, and a long preliminary account of the Franchise of Redesdale. The following year he was ready with a third issue—another batch of records, forming the sixth and concluding volume of the projected series. In 1832 a fourth instalment was issued—a volume of parochial history—being the third of the original design, and containing the parishes of Meldon, Mitford, Longhorsley, Morpeth, Bothal, Woodburn, and Stannington, with their chapelries of Hebburn, Ulgham, Newbiggin, Widdrington, and Horton. To it was prefixed a portrait of the author, engraved from a painting by Miss Mackreth—the result of a public subscription.

Mr. Hodgson was now past his fiftieth year. He had suffered much in health through the arduous nature of his task and severe family affliction, involving the loss of three of his nine children. "His 'History of Northumberland' had not met with the encouragement which he had reasonably expected. The copies which he had sold were not numerous, and for many of that few their purchasers had neglected to make due compensation. He had published a circular delicately alluding to this omission, but in many cases it had not been attended to, and again he was beginning to feel straitened in his means, a grievous addition to the other causes which were pressing so heavily upon his body and mind." In this state of things the adjoining vicarage of Hartburn, with an income superior to that of Whelpington, became vacant, and upon his application it was conferred upon him. He removed to Hartburn in the spring of 1834, and from thence issued a collection of early Pipe Rolls, forming a seventh, or rather, an extra, volume to the set originally contemplated.

It had by this time become evident to his friends that Mr. Hodgson would never be able to complete his great work. He was labouring with the utmost assiduity upon another volume of parochial history, including Alston, Kirkhaugh, Knaresdale, Lambley, Whitfield, Haltwhistle, and the Roman Wall, Warden, etc. But even when that was finished two-thirds of the county remained to be described, and the historian was at the end of his resources, mental

and physical. He managed to see the body of the book through the press, and in 1840, with the aid of Mr. Raine (minus the index, a prominent feature in the previous volumes), it was published. The rest of his life was spent chiefly in journeying from place to place in




search of health. On the morning of Thursday, the 12th of June, 1845, in the sixty-sixth year of his age, he passed away. His remains were interred on the Tuesday following beneath the eastern lancets of the chancel of Hartburn Church. Within the sacred edifice is

a monument recording his decease, and that of his widow and six of their nine children.

"In personal appearance," writes Mr. Raine, "Mr. Hodgson was above the middle size, tall and erect, at no period of his life stout in figure, but thin and spare, of a thoughtful countenance and a composed gait, with considerable bodily activity, but seldom under the appearance of excitement, doing his work, whatever it was, in a quiet and sedate way. . . . He seldom laughed aloud; even in his happiest moments his countenance had more in it of gravity than mirth; but his smile, in which he was not backward to indulge, was singularly captivating. . . . In his words he was hesitative and slow; such however was not the case when a subject was started in which he took a more than usual interest, and in which he was at home. He would then speak fluently, but still slowly, and his grave and earnest manner of expressing his sentiments seldom failed to command great attention. His attempts at speaking in public were generally failures, the simple circumstance of being obliged to rise operating upon his natural diffidence and acting as a bridle to his tongue. . . . A grave, serious man upon all ordinary occasions, he was doubly so when engaged in the work of his Master. His mode of reading was solemn and dignified, and his preaching remarkable for its earnestness and its adaptation to the understandings of those whom he was addressing."

The greater and most important part of Mr. Hodgson's literary work is comprised in the following list:—

"Poems written at Lanchester ['Woodlands,' 'Longovicum—a Vision,' and five Odes] by John Hodgson, clerk." 12mo. London, 1807.

"The Nativity of Jesus Christ, a Poem"; to which is added a "Sonnet to the Moon," and an "Ode" to his Mother on his twenty-sixth Birthday. Dedicated to Mrs. Isabella Ellison, of Hebburn Hall. 1810.

The "Northumberland" and "Westmorland" volumes in the "Beauties of England and Wales."

"The Picture of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, Being a Brief Historical and Descriptive Guide to the Principal Buildings, Streets, Public Institutions, Manufactures, Curiosities, etc., within that Town, and its neighbourhood for twelve miles round; and including an Account of the Roman Wall; and a detailed History of the Coal Trade; the whole illustrated by a Map of the various Coal-Mines on the Rivers Tyne and Wear, a Plan of Newcastle, and other Engravings." Newcastle: D. Akenhead & Sons, Sandhill. 1812.

"An Account of the Explosion which killed Ninety-two Persons in the Brandling Main Colliery at Felling, near Newcastle-upon-Tyne, on May 25th, 1812; with a Plan and Description of that Colliery; a brief statement of the Fund raised

for the Widows of the Sufferers; Suggestions for founding a Colliers' Hospital; and a Funeral Sermon on the Occasion." Newcastle: Edward Walker, 1813.

"Some Account of Gray's 'Chorographia,' with additions extracted from the Author's own Interleaved Copy." In First Annual Report of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries. 1813.

"Address to the Public" to accompany the first number of the *Durham County Advertiser*. 1814.

"The History of Northumberland." Six volumes, quarto, 1820-40, and, forming a seventh, a Volume of Pipe Rolls, issued in 1834.

*Papers in the "Archæologia Æliana." Old Series, 4to.*

Vol. i.

"On the Study of Antiquities."

"Some Account of a Set of Gold Beads presented to the Society by His Grace the Duke of Northumberland."

"An Inquiry into the Æra when brass was used in purposes to which Iron is now applied."

"An Inquiry into the Antiquity of an Ancient Entrenchment called Wardley, in the parish of Jarrow."

"Observations on an Ancient Aqueduct and certain Heaps of Iron Scoria in the parish of Lanchester."

"An Account of a Saxon Coin of Ecgfrith, King of Northumberland."

"An Account of an Inscription on Fallowfield Fell, in the County of Northumberland."

"An Account of an Inscription discovered at Walwick Chesters, in the County of Northumberland."

"Papers relative to a Plot in the North in 1663."

"Calendars of the Prisoners confined in the High Castle in Newcastle-on-Tyne at the Assizes in 1628 and 1629."

"Indentures between Sir Francis Brandling and Sir Thomas Swinburne in 1627, and Sir Thomas Swinburne and Thomas Carr, Esq., for delivering over the Gaol of Northumberland."

"Papers relating to the General History of the County of Durham in the time of Charles II."

"Some Account of an Ancient Plan of Tynemouth, in the County of Northumberland."

"Observations on the Roman Station of Housesteads, and on some Mithraic Antiquities discovered there."

"Some Notices respecting an Inscription on the Bell of Heworth Chapel."

Vol. ii.

"Observations on an Ancient Roman Road called Wrekendike, and particularly of that Branch of it which led from the mouth of the Tyne at South Shields to Lanchester, in the County of Durham."

"An Account of the Life and Writings of Richard Dawes, M.A., late Master of the Royal Grammar School, and the Hospital of St. Mary, Newcastle-on-Tyne."

"Account of an old Inscription at Lanercost in Cumberland."

"An Account of the Chartulary of Brinkburn, with some Notices respecting those of the Abbeys of Newminster and Alnwick, Lanercost and Shap."

"Explanatory Letters on Papers relative to the Murder of Lord Francis Russell, at Hexpath Gate Head, in the Middle Marches between England and Scotland."

"Note on a Rental of the Principality of Redesdale."

"Ancient Charters respecting Monastical and Lay Property in Cumberland, and other Counties in the North of England, from Originals in the possession of William John Charlton of Hesleyside, Esq."

"An Account of the Ancient ruined Chapel of East Shaftoe, in the parish of Hartburn, and County of Northumberland."

Vol. iii.

"Testamentary and other Evidences respecting Persons and Property in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, chiefly in the 15th Century."

*Contributions to the "Collectanea Topographica."*

"Collections respecting the Monastery of Jarrow." 1833.

"Charters respecting the Gospatric and other Northern Families." 1834.

"Charters respecting the Monastery of Finchale." 1834.

"On Newcastle Charters." 1836.

"Names of Pilgrims admitted into the English College at Rome." 1837.

*Articles in the "Gentleman's Magazine."*

"Descriptive Accounts of Copeland Castle, Bothal Castle, Warkworth Bridge, and Willimoteswick," in illustration of woodcuts from his "History of Northumberland," borrowed by the Editor. 1822.

"Scenery and Antiquities of Northumberland." 1833.

"On the Druidical Temple at Shap in Westmorland." 1833.

"On Inscriptions on Babylonian Bricks." 1833.

"On the Phrenology of the Middle Ages." 1833.

"On the Roman Station Vindolana." 1833.

"Account of a MS. containing Medical Receipts, etc., compiled chiefly in the reign of Queen Elizabeth." 1835.

"Memoir of the Rev. Anthony Hedley, of Chesterholme." 1835.

"A Letter in the Dialect of the Shetland Islands, with an explanatory column of English." 1836.

"On Roman Coins found at Borcum in Northumberland." 1837.

"An Account of a Roman Altar found at Hardriding in Northumberland." 1839.

"An Account of a Roman Altar at Stanhope, in the County of Durham." 1839.

"On a Roman Altar found at Olenacum, or Old Carlisle." 1842.

"On Roman Altars of Iron." 1842.

# James and Thomas Hodgson, and Solomon Hodgson their Father,

## THE HODGSONS OF THE "CHRONICLE."

THE Hodgsons of Newcastle, proprietors and editors, for seventy years or more, of the *Newcastle Chronicle*, were composed of three persons—Solomon Hodgson, and James and Thomas Hodgson, his sons. Solomon Hodgson was born in Cumberland in the latter part of the year 1760, or the beginning of 1761—three years before Thomas Slack, quitting his employment in the printing-office of Isaac Thompson and William Cuthbert, Newcastle, issued the first number of the *Chronicle*. In what parish Mr. Hodgson was born, at what school he was educated, and under what circumstances he came to Newcastle, are questions which local history does not enable us to answer. Not improbably he was apprenticed to Mr. Slack, to learn the business of a letterpress printer. That, however, is mere conjecture. The earliest fact recorded of his life in Newcastle is his marriage to Sarah, one of Mr. Slack's daughters; the next is his accession to his father-in-law's business. Mr. Slack died on the 13th of June, 1784, and Mr. Hodgson, then twenty-four years old, assumed the responsibilities of proprietor and editor of the paper.

The labour of conducting a weekly news-sheet of four pages, each 11½ inches wide and 17 inches deep, was not arduous. Mr. Hodgson was his own publisher, editor, reporter, and advertising agent, and he was able to combine with these duties the management of a printing and bookselling business, and an agency for patent medicines. Once a year he issued "The Newcastle Memorandum Book, or a Methodical Pocket Journal, Calculated to Answer the Immediate Purposes of Gentlemen and Tradesmen in all Parts of Great Britain, Respecting their Daily Transactions and other Occasional Business"—a publication that still survives, and, in the hands of Mr. Hodgson's successors, has reached its hundred and fortieth edition. The first two volumes of Hutchinson's "History of Durham" were printed and published by him; over the third he got into litigation with the author, details of which may be read in the preface to the volume. Friend and confidant of Thomas Bewick, he assisted in the compilation of the first issue of the artist's "General

History of Quadrupeds," and had a third share in the profits up to and including the third edition. He also published the first volume of Bewick's "History of British Birds," and compiled "The Hive of Ancient and Modern Literature: A Collection of Essays, Narratives, Allegories, and Instructive Compositions," which Bewick illustrated. Bailey and Culley's "Agricultural Survey of Northumberland," and various works of lesser merit, were issued from his press and sold at his shop in the Groat Market, along with "Cardiac and Nervous Tinctures," "Royal Anti-Scorbutic Drops," "Steer's Opodeldoc,"

*Thos Slack*

and the famous "Balsamic Elixir," prepared by "J. Robberds, Apothecary and Man Midwife in St. George's Fields, London."

Living in a period of great political and social change, Mr. Hodgson was an ardent and energetic reformer. In his capacity of Editor of the *Chronicle*, we are told, he uniformly advanced the genuine sentiments of his mind, uninfluenced by party, or any political society. Firmly attached to the principles of constitutional liberty, and actuated by the purest impulse of integrity and honour, he viewed with honest indignation the corruptions too prevalent in

society; possessing a spirit alive to every benevolent emotion, he feelingly lamented the miseries of war; and so long as he could do it consistently with personal safety, he exercised the privilege of declaring his sentiments on every important subject with a boldness and freedom becoming a Briton; but always without descending to licentiousness, or unbecoming personality. The trenchant and intrepid style in which he discussed public questions is illustrated in the following extracts from the *Chronicle* of December 31st, 1796:—

"The glorious victory of Mr. Tierney over the Ministerial candidate, Mr. Thellusson, for the borough of Southwark, ought to be recorded, not only as a most signal triumph over excessive influence and corruption, but as a kind of polar-star by which every independent candidate may, in future, regulate his conduct in opposition to all court interest, and lavish expenditure. So great a triumph has not been gained by the true friends of national representation since the Revolution in 1688; and we think that the accomplishment of so great an object ought to be celebrated by every friend of freedom between the Orkneys and Land's End. . . . One stern advocate for the rights of the people has shown us that we possess those rights, and in God's name let us *maintain* them. Let us not 'sell our birthrights for a mess of porridge'; but, like men who know we have a right to be represented in the senate, freely and virtually elect those most likely to express those sentiments we collectively entertain and avow.

"That benign Providence, before whom we with reverence and adoration prostrate ourselves, has at length thought fit to free the world from that scourge of the human race OUR GREAT AND GOOD ALLY, the EMPRESS OF RUSSIA, and that too at a moment when, it is said, she was preparing to sign a treaty with this country, binding herself to send (for a stipulated sum, to be advanced from the *overflowing* coffers of this country) *sixty thousand* of her liege subjects to attempt the restoration of despotism in France. Even the very germ of liberty is, in the eyes of tyranny, so noxious and offensive a weed, that its destruction seems cheaply bought by the sacrifice of millions of the lives of our fellow-beings; at least all '*regular governments*' now seem to think so. The death of the Empress, whose indefinable character puzzles mortal intelligence, from every visible appearance, seems calculated to effect the greatest revolution in the politics of Europe that we, even in the eventful period of our days, have witnessed. The great successor to this

murderous, rapacious monster appears to have commenced his reign with such acts of benignity as afford us every reason to hope that his will be a reign of mercy, reason, and humanity," etc.

Mr. Hodgson possessed that great qualification for a newspaper man in the last century—a retentive memory. He was able, like Dr. Johnson and "Memory" Woodfall, to carry away from a meeting the leading ideas expressed by several speakers, and reproduce them in the columns of his newspaper. At a great open-air gathering held at Morpeth in June, 1792, where an energetic speech of an hour and a half's duration was delivered by Mr. Charles,

Mrs Solomon Hodgson

afterwards Earl, Grey, in favour of a reform in the representation of the people, he was an attentive listener, and when the meeting had broken up, and Mr. Grey in his carriage had been drawn by the people out of the town, he came quietly home with a column and a half of the speech in his memory, and transferred it to the *Chronick* the week following.

In the intercourse of business Mr. Hodgson was free and affable; in private life, generous and charitable. His social disposition inclined him towards conviviality; his acquirements brought him the friendship of eminent men; his domestic relations were pure and

happy. When he died, in the height of his usefulness, on the 10th of April, 1800, aged only thirty-nine, his friends were able to write upon his tombstone, in the language of truth and justice:—

"Sacred to the memory of Solomon Hodgson. In times of unexampled difficulty, the honest and independent conductor of the *Newcastle Chronicle*. As he would not stoop to court the smile of any man, so neither did he fear any man's frown; but, through the medium of an uncorrupted press, delighted in disseminating the principles of rational liberty and eternal truth. Nor was he less esteemed in private life. In his affections, ever awake to the best sympathies of our nature, the manly vigour of his understanding found its equal only in the kindness of his heart."

Upon Solomon Hodgson's decease, the responsibility of carrying on his business and rearing a family of four or five children devolved upon his widow. Mrs. Hodgson was a woman of energy and resource. Brought up in the establishment, she knew its wants and capabilities, and she discharged the responsible duties which belonged to it with skill and intelligence. Six years before he died her husband had relinquished to John Bell the bookselling and stationery department of his business (conducted in the adjoining shop, facing Union Street), and confined himself to letterpress printing, and the publication of his newspaper. But Mrs. Hodgson, extending her connection, re-occupied the Union Street shop, and fitted up the united premises for increasing trade as a printer and publisher. One of her undertakings—showing wonderful enterprise for a provincial house—was the printing of the Bible, Old and New Testaments together, in Arabic, for the Rev. J. D. Carlyle, the learned and far-travelled vicar of Newcastle. This huge work, begun in 1803, helped to kill its reverend projector, and did not reach its final stage of publicity till 1811.

In the management of the *Chronicle*, Mrs. Hodgson was assisted by a well-known politician of his day, Mr. William Preston, author of "The Florist's Companion." Under this gentleman's care, the youthful Hodgsons, first Thomas, and afterwards James, were trained for literary and commercial life. Thomas Hodgson came of age in 1806, and at the close of the following year he assumed editorial control of the paper; James Hodgson attained his majority in 1814, and took charge of the financial department; while, residing upon the premises, the mother exercised an active supervision over the whole. The family circle remained unbroken till July, 1816, when a younger brother, Solomon Joseph, died at the age of

seventeen; a second bereavement came two years later, when Hannah, an elder sister, was taken away; on the 10th of September, 1822, Mrs. Hodgson herself died, of cholera, aged sixty-two.

Under the management of the two brothers—"T. and J. Hodgson," as the firm was denominated—the establishment in the Groat Market and Union Street attained still further development. Thomas Hodgson was a man of cultivated taste and literary skill; James Hodgson had a genius for figures and mercantile pursuits. Both of them held advanced opinions upon public questions—in politics, in religion, in social economy. They were strong supporters, as their father had been,

of Parliamentary reform; they were members, as their mother still was, of the Unitarian congregation which worshipped in Hanover Square Chapel, under the ministry of the Rev. William Turner. Working together, in harmony of thought and unity of action, they made the *Chronicle* the leading political organ between York and Edinburgh, and they built up a printing business which, whether we regard quality of workmanship or number of useful books issued, had for many years but few rivals in the North of England. From their press came the finest of the publications of the Newcastle Typographical Society; the early quartos of the "Archæologia Æliana":

the "Transactions" of the Natural History Society of Northumberland, Durham, and Newcastle; the "Proceedings" and "Lectures" of the Newcastle Literary and Philosophical Society; the famous book catalogues and other publications of Emerson Charnley; Sykes's "Local Records"; Brockett's "Glossary," and many others which the local book-collector handles lovingly, longing for more.

The beautiful specimens of the art of typography which issued from the firm of T. & J. Hodgson we owe to the fine taste of the elder brother. A practical printer himself, he devoted his leisure hours to the study of the history of printing, and to the various improvements that from time to time had been introduced into the type foundry and the composing-room, and into the machinery by which the labours of the type founder and the compositor are presented to the public. Availing himself of the facilities presented by the establishment of the Newcastle Typographical Society, Thomas Hodgson published—

"Biographical Memoirs of William Ged: Including a Particular Account of his Progress in the Art of Block Printing." 1819.

"An Historical Essay on the Origin of Printing. Translated from the French of M. de la Serna Santander." 1819.

"An Essay on the Origin and Progress of Stereotype Printing; Including a Description of the various Processes." 1820.

"Memoir on the Origin of Printing, addressed to John Topham by Ralph Willet." 1820.

In another department of study and research also, that of Roman antiquities, Thomas Hodgson distinguished himself. He was one of the founders of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, a constant attender at its meetings, and a contributor to its invaluable publication, the "Archæologia Æliana." Four learned and interesting papers from his pen appear in that well-filled storehouse of local history, namely:—

"Observations on the Altar and Inscription found at Tynemouth in the year 1781." 1821.

"Observations on some Roman Altars and Inscriptions, erected by a Cohort of the Tungri, and found at Castle Steeds, or Cambeck Fort in Cumberland." 1822.

"Observations on Five Roman Altars found in the Summer of 1844 at Rutchester, the ancient Vindobala, and the Fourth Station 'per lineam Valli.'" 1845.

"Account of a Roman Inscription found lately at Risingham." 1845.

In the later years of his life, Thomas Hodgson wrote a "History

of the Stations on the Roman Wall, with an account of the Memorials discovered in them," and prepared a new edition of Horsley's "Britannia Romana." The MSS. of these works, still in the possession of his descendants, have formed the subject of recent negotiations with his old friends, the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries. For many years he was an active member of the committee of the Newcastle Literary and Philosophical Society, taking a warm and laborious interest in its affairs, and originating the movement which led to the publication, in 1829, of a voluminous and systematically arranged catalogue of the Society's books. Failing health

Thomas Hodgson.

compelled him, in 1848, to relinquish his duties as editor of the *Chronicle*, and in January, 1850, the paper was sold to Messrs. Lambert, Bourne, & Langhorne. On the 5th of November following, he died, aged sixty-five, and was buried in Jesmond Cemetery.

Mr. John Latimer, who had held a responsible position in the old *Chronicle* office, publishing, in 1857, the "Local Records" which bear his name, described his old master's editorial life as one of great merit and success:—"His editorial labours were marked throughout that protracted period [40 years] by the kindliest feelings;

the asperity of party was unknown to him, and amidst all the excitement of political strife he maintained a high tone of gentlemanly feeling, and ever treated the opinions and feelings of others with courtesy and forbearance. Before retiring from public life he had the rare felicity, not only of witnessing the successful achievement of every one of the great questions which he had contended for during his political career, but of observing those reforms which he had so ably, sincerely, and constitutionally advocated, in full operation, with the almost unanimous concurrence of the English people."

While the elder brother, Thomas Hodgson, was pursuing his literary labours, the younger brother, James Hodgson, was making himself useful to his fellow-townsmen in various positions of public trust and confidence. He had helped, through the *Chronicle*, to fight the battle of Reform in Parliamentary representation, and when that struggle was over he allied himself with those who were labouring to effect similar reforms in municipal administration. At the first election under the Municipal Reform Act, being nominated a councillor for the ward of St. John's, he was placed at the head of the poll, overtopping even his friend and colleague, Emerson Charnley, who had been a reforming member of the old Corporation, and occupied a commanding position in the town. As soon as the Reformed Town Council met, he was elected an alderman.

Alderman Hodgson filled a leading position in the Council from the commencement. He was not an orator, like Fife and Philipson, but he made short, jerky speeches, full of common sense, seasoned by mother wit, and these, coupled with his undoubted skill in finance, and his sharp, decisive business habits, won the confidence of the Council. He was elected Mayor in November, 1841, upon which occasion, John Selkirk, reporter of the Council Proceedings, published an admirable sketch of him. Thus it reads:—"The character of no individual member of the Council has more distinctly developed itself than that of the worthy Mayor for 1841-42—Mr. James Hodgson. He has shown himself a ready supporter of Mr. Dunn's views of economy, and never, on any occasion, has he failed to protest against borrowing large sums of money—on the ground that the Corporation had not the means of paying them off. On this subject his ideas appear narrow, though his untiring assertion of them is doubtless well meant; and his mode of expressing his

opinions, though uncouth enough as to mere form, is sometimes very forcible. Generally speaking, Mr. Hodgson manifests a clear view of the pressure of any question which comes before him; and he *plumps out* (we know no more expressive words) whatever he thinks, careless whom he pleases or displeases, and callous to the laughter which his plain speaking may provoke. He possesses an excellent property as a chairman—that of keeping distinctly to the point. He is one of those men who carve out a way for themselves in spite of circumstances, and even, it may be said, in spite of themselves; for we believe that no man was ever more sincere than Mr. James Hodgson, now Mayor of Newcastle, when he stated that he was undesirous of official dignity. He would himself be the first to

laugh if we were to talk of *his* oratory. His speeches, and those of old Polonius, stand in perfect contrast; for they contain *much* matter and *no* art—and yet are always well worth reading."

On the day that Alderman Hodgson was elected Mayor the Prince of Wales was born, and the birth of an heir to the throne being an historical event of importance, the Corporation departed from the usual custom of sending their loyal address through a member of Parliament. They desired the Mayor to present it in person, and he went to the Court in proper form, and had the honour of kissing

hands. With this exception his year of office was quiet and uneventful. No burning question agitated the Council, and its members seem to have given themselves up to festive celebrations. Although a rigid economist in business, and in the administration of corporate funds and revenues, the Mayor opened his purse freely, giving no fewer than four grand dinners and two balls, one of the latter being the largest ever seen in the town, except that which Dr. Headlam gave in the "wise week" to the members of the British Association.

In 1844, upon the resignation of Alderman Dunn, Alderman Hodgson was appointed chairman of the Corporation Finance Committee. This was a position for which he was specially fitted, and he filled it with credit to himself and benefit to the town for nearly a quarter of a century. His annual budgets were models of perspicuity and precision, exhibiting a felicity of exposition and a minuteness of detail which left nothing doubtful, equivocal, or obscure. In the discussions to which they frequently gave rise—heated, and even rancorous, as they sometimes were—his grasp of the whole range of corporate finance became apparent, and he usually succeeded in convincing the majority of the Council that his views were sound, and that his proposals were prudent and wise. Upon one occasion he exemplified his own confidence in his financial policy by a notable act of self-sacrifice. His budget for 1851 contained a proposal to reduce to £750 the annual allowance which the Council made to its mayors. This was a piece of economy that did not meet with general approbation either within the Council or without. But the alderman persisted in forcing the proposition through. Firm in his views that the dignity of a chief magistrate was not necessarily associated with, or dependent upon, a lavish expenditure of public money, he accepted a nomination for a second occupancy of the office, and, being elected, proposed himself from the Mayor's chair, the motion which cut down his own allowance, and, in the face of three hostile amendments, procured its adoption.

During this second Mayoralty, Alderman Hodgson's firmness was called into requisition under trying circumstances. The election of Councillor John Blackwell, leading proprietor of the *Newcastle Courant*, to a vacancy in the bench of aldermen was disputed, under circumstances already explained in our sketch of Mr. Blackwell's career. Another councillor was appointed to the post,

but as Mr. Blackwell continued to attend the Council meetings, it became the duty of the Mayor to take action against him. For twenty years these two eminent citizens had conducted the two leading newspapers in the town; for fourteen years they had sat together in the Council chamber; and if they had not been intimate associates, their intercourse had always been sociable and friendly. The position which the Mayor occupied in the dispute was, therefore, painful and disagreeable. The Council would not accept the rejected alderman's vote, declined even to recognise the lawfulness of his attendance, and as he refused to retire, it fell to the Mayor to order his removal. How that duty was discharged we learn from the official report of the Council proceedings:—

The MAYOR: I think the best way would be to call in a police officer to remove Mr. Blackwell.

Mr. FORSTER: I move that Mr. Lockey Harle be authorised to turn him out. (Laughter.)

Mr. W. L. HARLE: I approve of the suggestion, but will not undertake the duty.

The TOWN CLERK (Mr. John Clayton): Perhaps Mr. Joseph Armstrong [Mr. Blackwell's partner], one of the most able-bodied members of the Council, should be authorised to turn Mr. Blackwell out. (Laughter.)

Mr. ARMSTRONG (to the Town Clerk): I suggest that you should do it, as you are more officially connected with it. (Laughter.)

The MAYOR: If Mr. Blackwell does not choose to retire, we must call in the sergeant-at-arms to give him into custody. (Much laughter.) Ring the bell for Mr. Redhead.

Mr. Redhead having appeared, and having been requested by the Mayor to remove Mr. Blackwell from the Council Chamber, slightly touched Mr. Blackwell on the shoulder, when that gentleman rose and said: "Then, Mr. Mayor, I retire under compulsion."

One leading event of Alderman Hodgson's second year of office was the visit of the Archæological Institute, and the subsequent publication by the Institute of two handsome volumes—"Memoirs, chiefly illustrative of the History and Antiquities of Northumberland," and "Feudal and Military Antiquities of Northumberland and the Scottish Borders, Illustrated by the Baronial Histories of Alnwick, Prudhoe, and Wark." The Mayor received the visitors with civic honours, and they, on their part, paid marked attention to the Mayor, whom they regarded, not merely as being, for the time, the town's foremost citizen, but as the brother of a deceased antiquary known to most of them by his writings and his archæological collections. The Government of Lord John Russell had,

a few months earlier, added the Mayor's name to the commission of the peace in the borough.

Alderman Hodgson's commercial and financial abilities enabled him to foresee the development of the railway system in this country. From an early period in his newspaper life he had advocated and supported the schemes which George Stephenson and his coadjutors were devising to extend that system in the North of England. He was a director of the old Newcastle and Berwick Railway Company, and when that Company amalgamated with the Newcastle and Darlington and Great North of England Companies, he joined the united directorate of the York, Newcastle, and Berwick line, now known as the North-Eastern. For many years the Company had two resident directors in Newcastle—Alderman Hodgson and Mr. W. Rutherford Hunter—and thereby kept themselves in constant touch with the great industries of Newcastle and the maritime commerce of the Tyne.

After his second mayoralty, Alderman Hodgson, freed from the cares of business by the sale of the *Chronicle* the year before, devoted himself entirely to the work of the Corporation Finance Committee and the North-Eastern Railway. So he continued till failing health involved a curtailment of his public duties. In 1864 his colleagues in the Town Council, recognising his long and arduous labours in financial administration, hung his portrait, painted by Wells, upon the walls of the Council chamber. Three years later he made his last appearance in that chamber. The occasion was the election, July 3rd, 1867, of Alderman Philipson to the Town Clerkship, in succession to the late Mr. John Clayton. In November of the same year he formally resigned his chairmanship of the Finance Committee, and on the 22nd of the following month he died, and was buried beside his brother in Jesmond Cemetery.

## Richard Wellington Hodgson,

SON OF THE HISTORIAN.

RICHARD WELLINGTON, second child and eldest son of the Rev. John Hodgson, historian of Northumberland, was born at Heworth in 1812. He was brought up under his father's care till he attained

the age of twelve, when he was sent to Stamfordham School, of which a relative of his mother, the Rev. John Rawes, was master. There are many touching references to him in Raine's "Life of Hodgson," showing that his father watched over him with tender solicitude, and that he was the object of many hopes and the subject of many prayers. When his schooling was completed, on the 16th of February, 1829, he joined the firm of Richard Kell & Co., quarry owners and grindstone manufacturers, at Heworth, in which business his maternal grandfather had left him a half share. In 1835 he married Isabella, daughter of George Straker, shipbuilder, shipowner, and timber merchant, and the offices of his firm being upon the Quayside, he took up his residence in Eldon Street, Newcastle. A few years later he removed to Gateshead, and about the year 1853 erected the beautiful mansion of North Dene, on the Durham Road in that borough, where his remaining years were spent.

Having filled some minor offices, as churchwarden, etc., Mr. Hodgson was sought by the electors of the South Ward of Gateshead, in 1851, to represent them in the Town Council. He consented, and although there were four candidates for two vacant seats, he was returned within one of the head of the poll. In November, 1855, he was appointed one of the two members representing Gateshead on the River Tyne Commission. On the 7th of January, 1856, he was elected an alderman of the borough in the place of the late Mr. Joseph Robson, and he twice filled the office of Mayor, namely, in 1854-55 and 1871-72.

A keen politician, Mr. Hodgson became a prominent member of the Liberal party in Gateshead at an early period of his career. He officiated on several occasions as chairman of the election committee for Sir William Hutt and Mr. Walter H. James (now Lord Northbourne), the successive representatives of the borough in the House of Commons. When the party organisation of the County of Durham was remodelled to meet changes introduced by reforms in the representation of the people, he was appointed president of the Gateshead section of the North Durham Liberal Registration Committee. Making no pretence to oratory, his political addresses were short and pithy rather than powerful or exhaustive; but as a worker in the cause, he had few equals in the district, his knowledge of the people being great and his assiduity untiring.

Outside of his own business, Mr. Hodgson was associated in the

management of several commercial undertakings of importance. He was a Director of the Tyne Steam Shipping Company, of Palmer's Shipbuilding and Iron Company, and of the North-Eastern Banking Company, and for many years co-manager of the Northern Maritime Insurance Company.

Through all his public and commercial engagements, Mr. Hodgson retained the interest in local literature and antiquarian investigation which he had imbibed in youth. In the old series of the official publication of the Society of Antiquaries—the "Archæologia Æliana" —are two papers of his, entitled—

"Abridgments in English and Latin of Fifteen Original Ancient Deeds respecting the Manor of Offerton, in the County of Durham."

"A Rental of the Antient Principality of Redesdale, copied from an Original Roll in the possession of William John Charlton, of Hesleyside."

Although he did not find time to contribute further to their "Proceedings," he remained a member of the Society down to the year of his decease, and being the custodian of his father's manuscripts and collections, freely placed his treasures at the disposal of his fellow-members, and of other recognised investigators into the early sources of local history. In his younger days he was anxious to compile an index to Raine's "History of North Durham," and proffered his services, but for some reason, which Mr. Raine does not explain, the offer was not accepted, and that valuable work—a perfect mine of ancient history relating to Northumberland and the Bishopric—remains practically a sealed book.

One very noticeable feature of Mr. Hodgson's character, derived, no doubt, from his gentle and benevolent father, was his extreme tenderness towards the young, the weak, and the suffering. Fond of horses, skilled in the pedigrees of the turf, not averse to healthy and manly sports, he was a determined opponent of all forms of cruelty, active or passive, to the brute creation. For some years he acted as honorary representative upon Tyneside of the Royal Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and when, in 1872, chiefly through his exertions, a flourishing branch of that Society was established in Newcastle, he became its president, and so continued during his life. One of the last public meetings he was able to attend was the annual gathering of the Branch in February, 1884, when, after speaking with more than usual energy and force, he declaimed the following lines, expressing his rule of life :—

"There lives a voice within me, a guest angel of my heart,
And its sweet lispings win me, till the tears a-trembling start;
Up evermore it springeth, like some magic melody,
And evermore it singeth this sweet song of songs to me—
This world is full of beauty, as other worlds above,
And if we did our duty, it might be full of love."

Mr. Hodgson died on the 26th of May, 1885; his widow, on the 10th of January, 1887. Their family consisted of four daughters and one son. The son, Mr. John George Hodgson, is a J.P. for the county of Durham, and an active member of the committee formed to complete the great work of his grandfather—the "History of Northumberland."

## Richard Holdsworth,

### A PERSECUTED ROYALIST.

JOHN MAGBRAY, vicar of Newcastle, a divine of the school of John Knox, died in November, 1584, and the following August, Richard Holdsworth, clerk, was appointed his successor. Mr. Holdsworth's previous career is not recorded, but he came to Newcastle with the reputation of "an eminent preacher," and he appears to have sustained the character assigned to him. He makes his appearance in local history at the beginning of 1589 as plaintiff in the ecclesiastical court of Durham against Roger Boston, administrator of the effects of Vicar Magbray, for dilapidations at the vicarage. Magbray had the cure of souls in Newcastle for fifteen years, and when Mr. Holdsworth entered into possession, he found the vicarage so much decayed, in small chamber and great chamber, hall and hay-barn, brew-house and bake-house, that it cost him five or six pounds to make the place tenantable. Afterwards we meet with him in the wills of the period (legatee of £3 from Alderman Robert Barker, of £10 from Alderman Roger Nicholson, and of 10s. from John March of Redworth), receiving his "quarterage" of £10 from the Corporation, and preaching the funeral sermon of Barbara, wife of Henry Mitford, a former Sheriff, Mayor, and M.P. He died in the beginning of September, 1596, and was buried within his church of St. Nicholas, leaving a wife and six children, a house in Pilgrim Street, and a very moderate personal estate. Among his bequests

was 40s. to his cousin, William Holdsworth, "a student at Cambridge" —the same student, probably, to whom, as "a poor scholar of Cambridge, being a kinsman of Mr. Richard Holdsworth, preacher," the Corporation of Newcastle gave "in reward," shortly after, a sum of £4; the same student who subsequently became a D.D., vicar of Tilbury, Essex, and author of "The Little Booke of Martyrs Preached in Three Sermons in the Christmas Holydayes."

Richard Holdsworth, youngest son of the vicar, to whose chequered career the foregoing paragraph forms an appropriate introduction, was born in the vicarage house, Newcastle, towards the end of 1590. His baptism is recorded in the registers of St. Nicholas', under date December 20th, in that year:—

"Richard, sonne to Mr. Richard Holdsworth, vicar of the towne of Newcastle, bap. Suerties—Mr. Robert Atkinson, Maior, Mr. Henry Bowes, gent., and Mrs. Jane Leyndy, gentlewoman."

Being barely six years old when his father died, Richard Holdsworth's upbringing was entrusted to the Rev. William Pearson, afternoon lecturer at St. Nicholas', who, on the 13th of May, 1599, was married at St. John's, to Elizabeth Holdsworth, the eldest of his three sisters. It is to be presumed that he was educated at the Royal Free Grammar School of Newcastle, refounded by the charter of Elizabeth in the year that his guardian and his sister were married, and removed soon afterwards, from the north side of St. Nicholas' Churchyard, to the Virgin Mary Hospital. Just before the reconstitution of the school Francis Burrows, the head-master, resigned, and the Corporation brought from Hull a learned pedagogue, named Robert Fowberry. Under Robert Fowberry, therefore, it is probable that young Holdsworth received the preliminary instruction which enabled him, in 1607, to proceed to St. John's College, Cambridge. His progress at Cambridge was rapid. Three years after his admission he took his bachelor's degree; three years later was chosen fellow of his college; in 1614 became Master of Arts; in 1617 was incorporated M.A. at Oxford; in 1620 was chosen one of the twelve preachers at Cambridge University. He was for a time tutor to Sir Symonds D'Ewes, afterwards the famous antiquary, and chaplain to Sir Henry Hobart, Lord Chief-Justice of the Common Pleas. His lordship presented him to a living in the West Riding of Yorkshire, which he exchanged for the rectory of Peter-le-Poor, Old Broad Street, London. His subsequent preferments in the Church

came to him as fast as his progress at college. What these were, and what manner of man Mr. Holdsworth was, Dr. Walker, in his "Sufferings of the Clergy," relates at great length. Thus, in London:—

"He became a most Noted Preacher, and was much Followed, more especially by the Puritans. And, indeed, he seems to have been the most Celebrated Preacher of his Time. Once, as he was Preaching at Mercers' Chapel, on the Acclamation made to Herod, the Auditory several times Hummed him in such a manner that he could not be Heard; insomuch that he was forced to call out to them more than once. 'I pray remember the Text.' Nor must it be omitted, that at another time, when he saw them throng in great Multitudes to Hear him Preach, he dismissed them with the Prayers and an Homily; endeavouring to perswade the Giddy People of those Times not to have Men's Persons in Admiration, and to Prefer the Publick Offices of the Church to the Private performances of any the Best Man whatsoever. Whilst he continued discharging the Offices of a most Faithful Pastor, at his Rectory of St. Peter's-Poor, the Great Sickness hapned in 1625; which, however, could not drive him from his Pastoral Charge: And during his Residence there likewise, he was chosen Divinity Reader at Gresham College; afterwards he was Elected to the Mastership of St. John's College in Cambridge; but Quitting it, he was chosen Master of Emanuel College in that University, and was (said Old Dr. Chadderton, who had Resigned that Mastership some time before, but was still living in the College) The only Master that ever he saw in that House; so excellently well did he discharge that Government, as he did afterwards the Office of Vice-Chancellor, which he several times underwent with Universal Approbation; particularly in the Beginning of the Troubles; at which time he was not suffered to continue out his Year, but forced to leave the University, and Retire, first into the Country, thence to London, where he lay concealed for some Time; and endeavouring to Retire from thence again, was seized and brought before the Parliament, who committed him Prisoner, first to Ely House, and afterwards (to encrease his Expences) to the Tower, where he was detained near Four Years at a vast Expence and Trouble. The Crimes at that Time alleg'd against him, were getting His Majesty's Declarations Printed, and Licensing the King's Books.

"About the same Time also that he was seized and Imprisoned,

he was Sequestered from his Mastership and Rectory of St. Peter's-Poor; having been likewise Plundered, as very many others of the London Ministers then were. After about four Years Imprisonment (as is before said) having procured very great Security, he obtained his Liberty, on Condition, not to go Twenty Miles out of London. Whilst he was thus Imprisoned, the University of Cambridge unanimously chose him to the Margaret Professorship, in the room of Dr. Ward, then Dead; the Title of which (and if I mistake not the Burthen too) they permitted him to Enjoy; but took care, by an Order of the House, dated in October 1643, that he should not be Admitted, nor receive any of the Profits, until he had satisfied the Justice of the Parliament.

"After this he was, as I apprehend, again possessed of his Living (at least his Pulpit) of St. Peters-Poor; but soon after the Parliament had voted no more Addresses to his Majesty, he was again seized, for Preaching a smart Sermon against that Resolution of the House; and by the Committee of Safety, once more Imprisoned: At which Time that Committee did him the great Honour to declare, that If he was permitted to Preach, he would undo all that they had done. But obtaining his Liberty again some time after, he continued to Preach as often as he could get a Pulpit.

"Whilst his Majesty was at Holdenby-House, he Requested that this excellent Doctor might be allowed to Attend him, among the other Divines whom he then sent for; but this was utterly denied: Yet he was afterwards permitted to wait on his Majesty at Hampton Court, where he conferred on him this Deanery [of Worcester], which he then accepted, notwithstanding he had some Years before refused the Bishoprick of Bristol. After this the King again desired that he might attend him at the Isle of White; but it was not granted. Not long after came on the Monstrous and most Damnable Murther of his Sacred Majesty, which so deeply affected this most Loyal and Excellent Person, that he never enjoy'd himself or his Health after; but by continued Prayers, Fastings, Tears and Grief, contracted a Black Jaundice, and other Disorders, which ended not but with his Life, in the August following that Bloody January.

"He died in the Fifty Eighth Year of his Age; and was a Man of a 'Comely Personage, of a convenient Stature, and a graceful Aspect; of a most holy Conversation, a sprightly Wit, and a transient Anger, but a perpetual Zeal. In a Word he was a Person of an unspotted Life, which he past over in a chast Celebacy; and was thereby

enabled to bequeath his Estate to Pious Uses, and his Books to his College.' I shall only add, That he was a Person of such great Modesty, that he never Published (himself) more than one Sermon; nor did he print that until his Majesty had no less than Three Times laid his Commands on him. But after his Death, his Praelectiones, and a Volume of his Sermons were also made Publick."

Enumerating the preferments that are detailed in Dr. Walker's quaint and interesting narrative, it is seen that a Newcastle boy, deprived of his father in childhood, and educated in his native town, rose to be an eminent professor and doctor of divinity, master of two colleges, vice-chancellor of Cambridge, Archdeacon of Huntingdon, and Dean of Worcester, and might have been, but for his modesty, Bishop of Bristol.

Dr. Holdsworth died on the 22nd August, 1649, a little more than six months after the execution of the king for whose cause he suffered. He was buried in his church of St. Peter-le-Poor, where a monument was erected to his memory, bearing a long Latin inscription, written by his friend Dr. Brownrigg, Bishop of Exeter. After his death the following works of his were published:—

"An Answer without a Question, or the late Schismatical Petition for a Diabolical Toleration of several Religions, expounded, being presented to the Juncto at Westminster, 16th August, 1646, with some Observations on the Mystery of their Iniquity, with the Juncto's answer thereto." A pamphlet of one sheet, written shortly before his death. London, 1649.

"The Valley of Vision, in Twenty-one Sermons." 4to. London, 1651.

"Prælectiones Theologica habitæ in Collegio Greshamensi." Issued by Dr. Pearson, his nephew, son of the Rev. Mr. Pearson, afternoon lecturer at Newcastle, by whom Dr. Holdsworth was brought up, and prefaced by a biography of the author. Folio. London, 1661.

# Anthony Hood,

HOSTMAN, ALDERMAN, AND MAYOR OF NEWCASTLE.

WHOSOEVER happened to be in Northumberland Street, Newcastle, about the early breakfast hour of any working day at the close of last century, would see a stately, well-dressed gentleman of the old school emerge from what is now known as Singleton House, and make his way down Pilgrim Street and the Manors to the Broad Chare. This worshipful personage was Anthony Hood, hostman,

alderman, and ex-mayor—a gentleman who, realising some, at least, of the golden dreams of the coal trade, filled a leading position among representatives of that industry upon the Quayside of Newcastle.

Anthony Hood, born about the year 1750, began his commercial career in the coal-fitting office of Messrs. Simpson & Blackett, successors to Sir Edward Blackett and partners, successors to Sir Walter Blackett, "the king of Newcastle." The following extracts from the books of the Hostmen's Company show his parentage and the date of his admission into the fraternity:—

"1744. 23rd August. John Hood, late apprentice to Ralph Sowerby, Esquire, a free brother of this fraternity, and turned over to Mr. Francis Simpson, being a free burgess of the Corporation, was this day, on his petition, admitted to his freedom of the said fraternity."

"1782. 4th January. Anthony Hood, son of John Hood, deceased, a free member of this fraternity, was on his petition admitted a member of the same."

Mr. Simpson, of the firm of Simpson & Blackett, was Alderman John Simpson, of Newcastle and Bradley, whose son married a daughter of the Earl of Strathmore, and became the father of the first Baroness Ravensworth; Mr. Blackett was Alderman John Erasmus Blackett, father of Lady Collingwood. The coals which they "fitted" were known in the market as "Lady Windsor's," "Tanfield Moor," "Simpson's Pontop Pike," and "Garesfield"; these last coming from the colliery of that name, belonging to the Marquis of Bute, one of the far-famed "Grand Allies."

In this excellent training school Anthony Hood acquired his knowledge of business. After his probation expired, he remained in the office, rising successively to the positions of confidential clerk, manager, and partner. Upon the death of Mr. Simpson, in April, 1786, the partnership must have been dissolved, and the interests divided; for, in the Newcastle Directory of the following year, "Blackett, J. E. Esq. and Co., fitters," are located in the "middle" of the Broad Chare, and "Hood, Anthony, fitter," is entered as carrying on business in the same street without any indication of his whereabouts. Presumably, therefore, at the dissolution of the partnership, he remained in the old house of Mr. Simpson, which, as we know from other sources, was "just north of the great gate of the Trinity House." A later Directory confirms the suggestion of a division of the "fittage," for Mr. Blackett is announced as

vending Windsor's Pontop and Tanfield coals, while Mr. Hood retains Simpson's Pontop and Garesfield.

It may be proper here to describe the method by which the export coal trade of the Tyne was carried on in the days of the Blacketts and the Simpsons, before the advent of steam haulage and steam navigation. Most, if not all of the Tyneside collieries whose produce was sent to sea were situated above Tyne Bridge. The coals were brought to the river in single horse waggons, and deposited in covered spaces called "Dykes"—two of which are still extant, one at Dunston, and the other at Derwenthaugh. From thence they were shipped into keels, manned by three men and a boy, who lifted the coals into their craft, navigated it to the export vessels at Shields or elsewhere, cast the coals into the ship, and returned to the Dyke for a fresh supply. The remuneration of the keelmen for this service was from 11s. 8d. to 13s. 4d. a keel, with an allowance of beer known as the "can." The price of coals on board ship was about 11s. a chaldron of 53 cwt., or 4s. 9d. a ton, though in 1725, Hutton and Tanfield coals, being a new and superior article, brought a shilling a chaldron more. The capacity of the ships which traded between the Tyne and the Thames was from 8 to 10 keels, of 21 tons 4 cwt. each; the burthen of those which supplied smaller ports along the coast was sometimes as low as 4 keels. Fitters in Newcastle generally owned a fleet of keels, and contracted with coal-owners annually for fittage at rates varying from 1s. 4¾d. to 1s. 5¼d. a chaldron. Occasionally they owned the export ships also, and sent cargoes, at current rates of freight, to be sold in the London coal market, or consigned to dealers in the coast towns. Colliers which went to the Thames frequently brought back old iron for Crowley's works at Winlaton: those which traded to the smaller ports generally loaded return cargoes of oak and beech timber for shipbuilding, beech wheels for coal waggons, beech rails and barrow boards for waggonways on the surface and tramways underground. Much of the beech came, by way of Chichester, from the Duke of Richmond's estate of Goodwood. Nothing but wood was used for colliery traction. Beech rails ran about 4 inches square in random lengths, and were sold by the running yard. A colliery in proper working order used from 5,000 to 10,000 yards of beech rails in a year. One Newcastle firm alone, in the year 1800, imported 1,528 loads, or 269,113 yards of rails and barrow boards for its colliery customers.

Such was the nature of the trade which Mr. Anthony Hood conducted. In the pursuit of it all his time and his energies were absorbed till he was forty-five years of age, and then, having realised a competence, he began to turn his attention to public affairs. There had been some difficulty in obtaining men of position and influence to accept municipal office in Newcastle, and Mr. Hood, once tempted to accept civic honours, rose rapidly. At Michaelmas, 1795, he was appointed Sheriff of the town, and as soon as his term of office expired, he was made one of the twenty-four electors, and a member of the Common Council. The following January (1797), on the death of Mr. John Hedley, he obtained an alderman's gown, with a seat on the bench of magistrates, and was considered to be shaping his way to the Mayoralty. So, at least, is to be inferred from the opening verses of a *jeu d'esprit*, written by Thomas Davidson, the poetical attorney, and addressed to Nathaniel Punshon, the Under-Sheriff, entitled—

GOTHAM CORPORATION.

(A New Song.)

Tune—"*The Vicar and Moses.*"

My good Mr. Pun.
We know you like fun,
And also to crack a good joke;
'Tis well known to the nation
That our Corporation
Has long lain under a cloak.

But after your year,
How strange 'twill appear,
(Pray Heaven it prove for your good);
To all this great nation,
That our Corporation
Will then crouch under a *Hood.*

Now we poor folks
Who're not used to jokes,
But with the sweets take the bitters;
The folks in our station
Think our Corporation
Has long been outfitted by Fitters.

Mr. Davidson's poetical prophecy proved to be correct. On Michaelmas Monday, 1797, Alderman Anthony Hood was elected Mayor of Newcastle.

It was a time of disturbance and peril when Mr. Hood accepted the office of chief magistrate. Fears of French invasion checked industry and interrupted commerce; the coast was covered with military camps; the river and harbour towns were scoured by the press-gang. Wars and rumours of fresh wars produced general stagnation; glorious victories alternated with crushing defeats. A few days after Mr. Hood's election the town was illuminated for the victory of Camperdown, locally memorable through the heroism of Jack Crawford. In February the fraternity of hostmen, of which the Mayor was a prominent member, subscribed £100 for the defence of the country, and resolved to contribute the same sum annually as long as their funds would admit, and the continuance of the war demanded. The Common Council, with equal patriotism, voted an annual gift of £500, and determined that, after Michaelmas following, "the residence of the Mayor in the Mansion House, and all the occasional public entertainments heretofore given there shall be discontinued during the present calamitous state of the country." The inhabitants, with commendable alacrity, held a public meeting under the Mayor's presidency and enrolled themselves in an armed association for the town's defence. Even the festivities of Ascension Day were made subservient to the war scare; for when the Mayor in his gilded barge reached the mouth of the harbour, he, and the excited citizens who accompanied him, were entertained by experiments on board a keel, fitted up as a gun vessel with an eighteen-pounder, "in conformity to a resolution of the keelowners." These alternations of hope and fear, defence and defiance, characterised the whole time of Alderman Hood's Mayoralty.

Mr. Hood was elected Mayor for the second time in 1807, and had a comparatively peaceful and uneventful time. Contemplating a gradual retirement from business, he purchased, the following year, the house at Wallsend now owned and occupied by Mr. R. R. Dees, and known as Wallsend Hall—a fine old mansion, described in Bourne's "History of Newcastle" as the residence of John Moncaster, who, in 1724, was sheriff of Newcastle. Here, alternating with his house in Northumberland Street, Mr. Hood spent the few remaining days that were left to him. He quitted the Mayoralty on the 3rd of October, 1808, and on the 24th July, 1810, having taken part, the day before, in the ceremony of laying the foundation-stone of the Moot Hall, Newcastle, he suddenly died. Sykes states that "he felt indisposed during the procession, which prevented his attendance

at dinner, and he died in the night, to the great grief of all his acquaintances." At his death he was alderman, J.P., and Deputy-Lieutenant for Newcastle; Lieutenant-Colonel of the Loyal Associated Volunteer Infantry; one of the stewards of the Hostmen's Company; fitter for Longbenton, South Moor, Marley Hill, Simpson's Pontop, Adair's Main, Whitfield, Blaydon, and Garesfield coals.

By his marriage with Elizabeth Snowdon, Alderman Hood had one son, John Lionel Hood, and four daughters. One of the daughters (Mary) married Lieutenant Woods, of the 4th Dragoon Guards, known in after years throughout the North of England as Mr. William Woods, banker; the others died unmarried. After the alderman's death his widow took into partnership Mr. George Henderson, who had served his time in the office, and occupied for some years the post of confidential clerk and manager. Through this connection the old firm of Anthony Hood & Co. exists to-day. For when Mrs. Hood died, her place was taken by her son-in-law, Mr. Woods, and when Mr. Henderson departed he was succeeded by his son, Mr. Thomas Hood Henderson, from whose retentive memory, at the venerable age of eighty-one, all that is worth reading in this narrative was derived. Upon Mr. Woods' death, his son, John Anthony, succeeded him, until, in 1869, Mr. Thomas Hood Henderson and Mr. John Anthony Woods retired, and their places were taken by Mr. W. G. Woods.

## John Lionel Hood,

THE LAST MAYOR OF NEWCASTLE OLD CORPORATION.

JOHN LIONEL, only son of Alderman Anthony Hood, was born on the 21st of December, 1799, and baptised on the 17th of April, 1800. For his godfathers he had Lionel Robson, a wealthy freeman of Newcastle, one of the fraternity of Shipwrights, from whom his second name, Lionel, was derived; and John Ord, a Master in Chancery, whose father (Robert Ord, of the Fenham family) had settled in Scotland, and become Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer there. His godmother was the Lady Ann Simpson, of Bradley.

Deprived of a father's care when he was but ten years of age, young Mr. Hood was brought up by his mother, and her business partner, Mr. George Henderson, with a view to his continuing the

public life which the sudden death of the head of the firm had interrupted. Accordingly, having married a daughter of Mr. Samuel Parker, head of the lead-manufacturing firm of Walkers, Parker, & Co., and taking up his residence in St. Thomas's Place, Barras Bridge, he entered the Corporation of Newcastle, in 1825, as Sheriff. In October, 1834, he was elected Mayor.

Mr. Hood's Mayoralty, like that of his father in 1797, came at an interesting time. For although war and war's alarms had passed away, and the country was at peace with all the world, there were industrial triumphs and domestic reforms to be won; and these contests, if less deadly than the other, were scarcely less arduous. The people of Tyneside, in Mr. J. L. Hood's municipal year, were excited by expectations of commercial prosperity flowing from the successful adaptation of steam to locomotion, and agitated by the approaching end of a protracted struggle for Municipal Reform. Mr. Hood was privileged to assist at the opening of a railway from Newcastle to Carlisle, which practically linked the North Sea to the Atlantic Ocean, and he was fated to be the last Mayor of Newcastle under the old municipal *régime*.

The Corporation Reform Act was passed on the 9th September, 1835, and on the 5th of October following, being the first Monday after Michaelmas, Mr. Hood should, in due course, have handed over the reins of office to his successor. But the new Act made new arrangements. The first election of councillors under its provisions was to be held on the 26th December, aldermen were to be elected on the last day of the year, and on New Year's Day the newly-elected Corporation was to assemble and choose the Mayor and other officers. In the interval the Mayor elected in 1834 was to continue in office, and superintend the elections. By this arrangement Mr. Hood's Mayoralty extended over fifteen months. Just before it ended the Corporation auditors met and passed the following resolution:—"Resolved unanimously.—That the thanks of the freemen now assembled to audit the accounts of the ancient body corporate of this town, down to the time of its extinction as heretofore constituted, be presented to the Right Worshipful John Lionel Hood, Esq., Mayor, for the talent, discretion, diligence, and urbanity he has invariably shown in the execution of the arduous duties of his office during the fifteen months of his mayoralty; and that it is their opinion, that the new mode of election of corporate officers about to come into operation, however beneficial to this

borough it may be in other respects, cannot place in the chair he now occupies, a more able, honourable, and courteous officer."—HENRY INGLEDEW, JOHN BROWN, Secretaries.

At the election of councillors Mr. Hood was chosen by the ward of St. Andrew's South, Mr. Charles John Bigge heading the poll with 146, and Mr. Hood coming close behind with 145 votes. This contest ended, the election of aldermen came on, and aldermen's gowns being in the estimation of some people badges of honour, there was a struggle for them. "To the victors belong the spoils." Mr. Hood had not been an active friend of municipal reform, and its triumphant supporters claimed all the honours of the fight. Mr. John Fife sounded the key-note of this policy at the declaration of the polls, when, in presence of the Mayor, who acted as returning officer, and amid the cheers and laughter of his friends, he declared that if ever his opponents presumed to make the slightest attempt to grasp at political power their entrance into the Council-room would be like the entrance into hell, over the gates of which, according to the Italian poet, there is written—"You who enter here, leave hope behind you!" Accordingly when the names of the aldermen were read out from the voting papers, that of the Mayor was missing. The victorious Whigs had rejected Mr. Hood, and conferred the honours upon men of their own colour. Next day, New Year's Day, at the election of Mayor, the same tactics prevailed. Mr. Hood was nominated by Mr. Joseph Lamb, and seconded by Mr. Robert Plummer, and at this distance of time one can hardly help feeling that his unanimous re-election would have been a courteous and a graceful act. But that was not to be. Mr. Charles John Bigge was put in nomination by Mr. Fife and Mr. Thomas Doubleday, and carried all before him. Only eight aldermen and councillors voted for Mr. Hood, all the rest supported Mr. Bigge, who became, accordingly, the first Mayor of the Reformed Corporation of Newcastle.

Within a few weeks of the Mayor-choosing, Mr. Hood received from the Government what was probably intended to be a *solatium* for his defeat—he was placed upon the commission of the peace for the borough. This honour, as he explained in a letter to his successor, he declined "for obvious reasons" to accept, adding that he was "fully confirmed in that determination by perceiving that, at the foot of the Home Office circular, Lord John Russell hoped it would be acceptable to the Council of the borough; as, however necessary

it might be to the character of a Minister of the Crown to offer this apology to the Town Council, any appointment made under such circumstances would be at all times resigned by me."

While this episode was the talk of the town, the friendly but anonymous hand that penned the greater part of "The Corporation Annual; or, Recollections (not Random) of the First Reformed Town Council of the Borough of Newcastle-upon-Tyne," was writing the following paragraph about Mr. Hood and his treatment by the Council:—"A gentleman of high and honourable bearing and polished manners. A Conservative, and was the last Mayor under the old *régime*, and although it was admitted by the Clique and their partisans that he had conducted himself with distinguished ability and impartiality, he was, nevertheless, proscribed by them, and declared to be unfit to fill the offices of Alderman, Mayor, and Magistrate; but finding that the town was disgusted at their disgraceful conduct to this gentleman, they attempted to allay that feeling by secretly getting Lord John Russell to put his name in the commission of the peace. Mr. H., however, saw the flimsy device, and indignantly spurned the proffered honour, and he has since expressed in public, with some force, but much petulance, the opinion he entertains of the conduct of what he has been pleased to call the 'upstart crew.'"

During his term of office, Mrs. Mayoress presented Mr. Hood with a daughter, and in accordance with ancient custom, his colleagues voted a sum of money to be expended in a commemorative gift of plate. Shortly after his refusal of a seat on the bench, opportunity was taken to make the presentation. There is a note of the event in the local newspapers of the day, thus worded:—"On Saturday, April 2 [1836], was presented to Mrs. Hood, the lady of J. L. Hood, Esq., the late Mayor of the old Corporation, a splendid tureen, for the purchase of which £100 was voted by the Common Council on her having had a daughter during the mayoralty. The projecting edge of the tureen is beautifully ornamented with a composite border of leaves and mouldings. On the top of the lid are gracefully carved and arranged acanthus leaves and stalks. The bottom is formed in the shape of what is called a scroll foot, and is much of the fashion of plate of the time of Louis XIV. The general outline of the tureen is from the celebrated piece of antiquity called the Warwick Vase. On one side are the arms of Mr. Hood; on the other the following inscription:—'To Mrs. Hood, Mayoress of New-

castle, this token of regard and admiration was presented by the Common Council on the occasion of the birth of a daughter, Theodosia Rose, in the Mansion House, A.D. 1835.' This elegant and admirably finished piece of plate was made by Mr. Thomas Watson, silversmith, of this town; the silver extracted at the lead works of Messrs. Walkers, Parker, & Co."

Disappointed and dissatisfied with the course which the new Town Council had adopted towards him, Mr. Hood gradually relaxed his interest in its affairs. He attended but four meetings of the corporate body after its reconstitution, and the only public question in which he interested himself was that of the maintenance of the Mansion House. Being one of the committee appointed to consider and report upon this subject, he informed his colleagues that, while Mayor, he had spent £1,430 in hospitality—viz., upon :—

| | |
|---|---|
| The Annual Ball and Supper . . . . | £300 |
| Entertaining the Judges at the Assizes and a public dinner . . . . . | 500 |
| Four Sessions' dinners . . . . . | 200 |
| Four Common Council dinners. . . . | 80 |
| Dinners on the King's Birthday, and in the Barges on Ascension Day . . . . | 100 |
| Servants' Wages and Liveries . . . . | 250 |
| | £1,430 |

He was, however, strongly opposed to the abolition of the Mayor's official residence, or even to material retrenchment in the expenditure there, believing, as he expressed it, that "every sovereign expended at the Mansion House caused three or four others to be expended in the town, thereby producing the most beneficial results to great numbers of people." In accordance with these views he voted steadily against the various proposals which ended in the breaking up of the old home of the Mayors, and the public sale of the furniture. After that event he was seen in the Council Chamber no more. At the annual meeting of the Corporation on the 9th November, 1837, he resigned his office of councillor, and terminated his connection with the public life of Tyneside. Removing to the South of England, he died at Tunbridge Wells on the 5th of November, 1847, in the forty-eighth year of his age.

# John Clarke Houston,

A GIFTED PREACHER.

ALL that is known to the present generation of the eloquent young Presbyterian minister who bore the name of John Clarke Houston, is contained in a brief memoir, from the pen of the Rev. George Gilfillan, prefixed to a volume of his sermons published by Robert Ward, of Newcastle, in 1853. Short as was Mr. Houston's career, the greater part of it, spent upon Tyneside, was sufficiently raised above the common level to justify inclusion in our series.

John Clarke Houston was born in Ballymena, Ireland, on the 14th of March, 1824. His father was a Doctor of Divinity, minister of the Reformed Presbyterian Church in that town, who assisted a somewhat limited income by keeping a school. In his father's school he was educated, and having received some instruction in the classics from a Catholic teacher, he was sent, in 1841, to Belfast College. While but a child he showed remarkable talent for public speaking. At the age of fifteen he joined the temperance crusade under Father Mathew, and, in the turn-down collar and short jacket of a school-boy, delivered harangues which experienced speakers regarded with astonishment. These exercises interfered with his studies at college, so that, though he passed through his classes respectably, he failed to gain that distinction in any of them which his abilities might have secured, except in the class of elocution, where he occupied the first place, and gained the silver medal. As a set-off to his academic failure, he received innumerable medals from teetotal societies, and earned the distinction of being, next to Father Mathew himself, the most eloquent advocate of temperance principles in the sister kingdom.

Trained by his father in the doctrines of the Reformed Presbyterian Church, Mr. Houston, having completed his collegiate course, entered the ministry. He was licensed to preach on the 15th August, 1845, being then but a few months over twenty-one years of age. Within a year, his views of church government changed; in July, 1846, he quitted the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the Eastern Reformed Synod, and joined the United Secession Church of Scotland. Admitted into fellowship with that church at Glasgow, he supplied

vacant pulpits till, in the early part of 1847, he came over to England. In his journey southwards he preached to admiring congregations at Norham, Coldstream, Newcastle, and Stockton, and at the last-named town received a cordial invitation to settle. Shortly afterwards a call was moderated in his favour as assistant to the Rev. James Pringle, then in the forty-third year of his ministry at Clavering Place Chapel, Newcastle. This was a position worthy of his abilities, in a field congenial to his tastes, and he accepted it. Ordained on the 30th of June, 1847, he married Miss McVickers, sister of a college companion, and entered into the ministerial life of Tyneside.

For a time all went well with the young preacher. Possessing a vivid imagination, associated with high literary and theological attainments, and combining fervid eloquence with philosophical

JOHN CLARKE HOUSTON.

acuteness, he soon made his mark in the town. From all parts of the district, hearers of every denomination went to listen to the new minister; while among Mr. Pringle's congregation he was regarded with feelings of almost idolatrous veneration and attachment. Shortly after his settlement he engaged in a controversy with the *Eclectic Review* upon the subject of capital punishment, and when it was over, he issued a large and elaborate pamphlet in favour of the gallows—a pamphlet which Mr. Gilfillan describes as the ablest defence of an indefensible thing that he had ever read. With this exception he entered into none of the controversies of the day, but expended his energies in preaching and teaching to the flock over which he had been made co-pastor. With one of that flock, Councillor Robert Robinson, paper merchant in the Side, afterwards

an alderman of the borough, he was upon terms of affectionate intimacy. At Mr. Robinson's house, the Priory, in Summerhill Grove, thoughtful men frequently assembled to discuss current topics with the gifted young preacher, and listen to his fluent conversation. Mr. Gilfillan mentions an evening spent there with undisguised admiration. "We shall never forget," he writes, "the two or three hours we spent after lecture, under the hospitable roof of Mr. Robinson, in the company of Mr. Houston, and of the gifted W. B. Scott—a gentleman who, in appearance as well as in pictorial genius, seemed to us to bear a very striking resemblance to his late brother David. We were much pleased with the manly openness of his [Mr. Houston's] manner, the marks of sincerity, energy, and talent which his appearance bore, the sturdy simplicity of his language, and even with the undisguised and unmitigated accent which proclaimed his country." The date of this interview was December, 1850. Within two years from that date, the eloquent preacher had resigned his charge, severed his connection with the U.P. Church, and found a premature grave.

The circumstances which led to these disasters, it would be neither profitable nor interesting to discuss. Mr. Houston's conduct in the matter does not seem to have shaken the confidence of his friends, but rather to have increased it. For when he left Clavering Place they gathered round him, sent him down to Tynemouth to restore his shattered health, and on the 19th of August, 1852, when he returned from the sea-side, two hundred of them met in public meeting to testify their sympathy and attachment. With Alderman Robinson in the chair, they presented him with an address, a purse of gold, and a silver tea service, and made speeches, eulogising his moral character, his talents, his Christian virtues, and his exemplary conduct as a minister. On the following Sunday he preached in the garden of the Priory his last sermon. "With the rich trees of autumn clustering round, the great silent sky above, the grasses and flowers below, and a dying man, speaking to an audience who felt instinctively that he was dying, the scene must have been impressive and solemn in the extreme." Before the week was out the dying minister retired to his chamber, from which, alive, he never emerged. His decease occurred on Thursday, the 28th of October, and on the following Monday he was buried in Westgate Cemetery.

Mr. Houston's intellectual qualities, writes Mr. Gilfillan, were of a very superior order. "He was open in his disposition, generous and

true-hearted, a warm friend, and a manly, honourable foe. To great strength and clearness of intellect, he united much liveliness and vigour of imagination. He could first draw a strong, clear outline of thought, and could then make the colours of fancy flash warmly and vividly along it. His strong rugged sense, as well as the stern theological training he received, saved him from the overvaulting ambition and the false and forced flights in which many of his countrymen indulge."

The denominational storm which beat round the head of the young minister did not cease with his death. His friends left Clavering Place, and, after various changes of habitation, erected a church of their own near the foot of Rye Hill, where their descendants still worship.

## Thomas Houston,

POET AND SATIRIST.

HALF a century before the Rev. J. C. Houston came to Newcastle, a youthful genius, bearing the same family name, settled in the town, lived a life of even briefer duration, and excited an interest scarcely inferior, though in an altogether different line of action. His baptismal name was Thomas, his business was that of a brassfounder, and it is said that, like the preacher, he was a native of Ireland. Nothing is known about his early years, and beyond that which is afforded by his writings, but scanty information can be gathered respecting his career in Newcastle. The records and annals of the time give no clue to his doings, the newspapers are silent, the histories dumb. A correspondent of the *Newcastle Magazine*, writing in March, 1821, suggested that a sketch of his life would be interesting, but no one supplied it; not even the editor, in whose father's office one of Houston's books had been printed. There seems to have been "a conspiracy of silence" among local biographers over the short life of this poetical artisan.

Thomas Houston made a bound into notoriety by the publication, in the year 1800, of a satirical sketch, entitled "Newcastle Sportsmen; or, A Race to Hell"; and from that time till his death, barely three years later, at the early age of twenty-six, his pen was

never idle. He contributed to magazines at Edinburgh and elsewhere, published a comedy, printed four or five poetical *brochures*, and left behind him the manuscripts of several projected works of a similar character. From the few references to himself which occur in his publications it would appear that he was a youth in whom a keen and active intellect maintained an unequal struggle with a weakly constitution, ending, as such inequalities are apt to do, in premature decay and death. In the autumn of 1803 he was admitted an in-patient of Newcastle Infirmary, where he gradually sunk, and on the 27th December he died. His remains were interred in the Infirmary burial-ground.

The character of Mr. Houston's effusions, some of which are of more than average merit, may be learned from his title-pages:—

"Newcastle Sportsmen: or A Race to Hell! Between three noted Characters of the present Day, viz., A Hipocritical and Debauched Clergyman, A Cruel Military Man, and A Religious Corn Dealer, A Monopolizer of Provisions, and a Starver of the Poor; with a Postscript. Likewise a Love Elegy, with Three Odes; Intended as Hints to such as will take them. By his learned Friend, Cuthbert Cudgel, Esq." Newcastle: J. Mitchell, 1800, 12mo, 28 pp.

"An Apology, or Key to the Race to Hell: or the Rise and Origin of that Poem, exemplified in A Story of the Kingdom of Beingo, one of the Islands of the Moon. To which is vulgarly added An Ode to Avarice. By Cuthbert Cudgel, Esq." Newcastle: M. Angus & Son. No date. 12mo, 18 pp.

"An Epistle to the Earl of Warwick, or A Prospect of Britain. A Poem in Three Books." Newcastle: M. Angus & Son. 1801, 12mo, 20 pp.

"The Progress of Madness; or The Irishman Insane. A Poem—Part I. And written on a parallel case with that of Robson, the reputed Lunatic, who was confined two Months and two Days in a Madhouse near Newcastle." Copperplate Vignette of two men seizing a third; Carriage in waiting; Madhouse in the distance. Newcastle: Vint & Anderson, 1802. 12mo, 24 pp.

"The Progress of Madness, etc. Part II. To which is added The Squire's Expedition, or The Guinea Hen. A New Song, by the same Author." Newcastle: Vint & Anderson, 1802, 12mo, 24 pp.

"An Epistle from Silly Billy, an Ideot in Newcastle, to General Bonaparte, Chief Consul in France." Portrait of Bonaparte, full page. Newcastle: D. Bass, 1803, demy 8vo, 16 pp.

"Term Day, or the Unjust Steward. A Comedy in Five Acts." Newcastle: D. Bass, 1803, demy 8vo, 60 pp.

At the end of one of his books Mr. Houston announced proposals for publishing by subscription, in twelve monthly numbers, at 6d. each, a series of his poems, beginning with the "Race to Hell," and comprising:—

"Lysias and Phœbe, or Love in its Last Stage—a Pathetic Poem in five Epistles."

"The Art of Marriage, or a Guide to Matrimony—a Poem in two Books."

"The Cock Fight; an Epic in three Books, or the Rights of Nations, Kings, and Subjects Exemplified."

"Northern Tales, or Entertainment for Twelve Winter Nights."

"The British Illiad; or a Siege of the Temple of Fame. An Epic in Six Books."

"Songs, Odes, etc."

After Houston's death the book last named was issued for the benefit of his widow, with the title of "A Collection of Poems, Odes, and Songs, Never Before Published. By the late T. Houston, Author of the 'Term Day,' 'Progress of Madness,' etc." It contains "The Cock Fight," above mentioned, a long poem on "The River Tyne," "The Woes of Erin," "An Ode to Whisky," and two or three songs.

Among the songs is one headed "Mary Drue," the two commencing and two ending verses of which—a fair specimen of the poet in his sentimental mood—read as follows:—

"On a pleasant April morning,
Wand'ring Tyne's sweet banks along;
(Spring with flow'rs the woods adorning,
Woods and groves with birds of song),

Pensive stray'd I; none was nigh me,
When a maid appear'd in view—
Slow she came, or seem'd to fly me—
Heav'ns 'twas charming Mary Drue.

[Four similar double verses tell the usual story.]

Sweet as notes from lutes ascending,
To my ear these accents came,
Smiles and looks of love attending,
Touch'd my soul with gen'rous flame;

O'er her charms disorder'd stooping,
Rapt'rous sight!—divinely new,
On my breast her head lay drooping,
While I clasp'd sweet Mary Drue."

# Blythe Hurst,

CLERGYMAN AND SCHOLAR.

BLYTHE HURST, a self-educated artisan, who rose from the blacksmith's forge to the pulpit of the Church of England, was born at Winlaton on the 6th of July, 1801. His father, a smith, maintained and educated his family much in the same manner as most of the better class of skilled workmen did at that time. The son was brought up under religious influences, his father being a very regular attendant at a Dissenters' meeting-house in the village. At the age of four, young Hurst was put to school, but at seven—the usual age for boys to be set to work at Winlaton in those days—he left school, and was sent to make small nails at the smith's shop, in order to add to the income of the family. He attended, however, the Sunday-school established by the late Archdeacon Thorpe, and here he improved considerably his previously imperfect knowledge of reading, etc. He continued at the school until he was fifteen years of age. During that period, he pursued the art of drawing, in which he made much progress, and in the meantime he had commenced to learn the business of patten-maker, Winlaton then being famous for the manufacture of these articles, and producing more than half of the whole number made in England.

About this period, Mr. Hurst says of himself:—"I was severely afflicted, which led me to think seriously about religion, and to surrender my heart to God. As to my previous character, it was strictly moral my mind always being impressed with a sense of the importance of religion, and I was free from many of those vices to which youth is generally addicted." With these impressions he became a member of the Wesleyan Methodist denomination, and zealously prosecuted the task of self-education. In this way he exercised himself, after work hours, in composition from English grammar, afterwards directing his mind to the study of languages, for which he evinced a peculiar adaptability. From the part which he had taken in religious matters, he was induced to become a local preacher, and his ministrations were attended with a fair amount of success. He was rather shy, retiring in disposition, kept very little company, and devoted every minute of his leisure hours to mental improvement.

Shortly after attaining the age of manhood, he married a daughter of James Hurst, an enterprising manufacturer of chain cables and patten-rings, with other descriptions of iron work, and the young man found employment under his father-in-law, to whom, beyond the identity of name and the matrimonial tie, he was in no way related. Blythe Hurst prosecuted his private studies with an increased vigour in the new position in which he was placed, and in the course of a few years he had, by dint of perseverance, acquired a thorough knowledge of French, Latin, Greek, Hebrew,

The Rev. Blythe Hurst.

Syriac, and Arabic. With very limited means, and a family of several daughters growing up, for whose maintenance it was incumbent on him to provide, he still contrived to purchase the necessarily expensive books requisite for the purpose of self-culture. While at work he used to write upon his "flame stone"—a stone suspended before the smith's fire to protect the eyes of the workmen—the conjugations of the verbs of the languages he was studying, and in the evenings he wrote out his exercises. He thus led a blameless life, respected by his neighbours, and regarded

with a considerable degree of admiration by his immediate friends and connections on account of his uncommon abilities.

Neither his work nor his studies prevented him from preaching regularly every Sunday, and taking his full share in all the religious meetings of the denomination with which he was connected. Subsequently he became a member of the New Connexion Methodists, and was considered one of the most effective local preachers of that body; but, after a time, he separated himself from it also, not so much because of any disagreement he had with its doctrines or church government as because of an unhappy personal feud which had sprung up in the Connexion at Winlaton, and which induced him and others to become members of the Church of England.

Great exertions were made about the year 1840 by Robert Owen and his followers to spread a knowledge of their doctrines among the people. Alexander Campbell, one of Owen's leading disciples, visited Winlaton for the purpose of expounding the new social system of his chief. A great deal of discussion was engendered in the village as to the truth or falsehood of the new doctrines; and some of Mr. Hurst's friends, knowing his extensive acquaintance with theological topics, pressed him to engage in a controversy with, or to deliver lectures in reply to, the socialist lecturer. This Mr. Hurst declined to do, alleging as his reason for refusing that the principles of truth are seldom, if ever, advanced by angry debates. He, however, combated Mr. Campbell's arguments in a pamphlet entitled, "Christianity no Priestcraft," in which he vigorously defended the doctrines of Christ from the attacks made upon them by some of Owen's followers. The Rev. Henry Wardell, Rector of Winlaton, perceiving evidences of learning and ability in the pamphlet, sent a copy of it to Dr. Maltby, Bishop of Durham, informing him that it was the production of a man who worked for his daily bread as a blacksmith. His lordship replied, expressing the great satisfaction with which he had perused the pamphlet, remarking that "although it might be written by a common man, it was the production of no common mind," and asking Mr. Wardell to furnish him with some further particulars of the author's life. The bishop next wrote to Mr. Douglas, then Rector of Whickham, instructing him to see Mr. Hurst, and to ascertain his ability to make a ready application of his acquirements. Mr. Douglas, paying a visit to the literary blacksmith, found him at work at the anvil. Dr. Maltby subsequently wrote

to the Rev. Dr. Davies, Rector of Gateshead, who, after he had examined Mr. Hurst in various languages, reported most favourably of his acquirements. Then the bishop corresponded direct with the working student, advising him as to his course of reading, recommending to his attention the most suitable books, and enclosing the means of following out his suggestions. Mr. Collinson, a former Rector of Gateshead, father of Captain Collinson, the Arctic navigator, also took an active interest in Mr. Hurst, whom he invited to his house, and showed him many kindnesses. Some time afterwards, Dr. Maltby, having occasion to visit Newcastle, had an interview with Mr. Hurst, and made arrangements for his ordination.

On the 9th July, 1842, the "learned blacksmith" proceeded to the Bishop's palace at Auckland, where he was most hospitably received. Having passed the necessary examinations with great credit, he was in due course ordained a clergyman of the Church of England. Here the interest evinced in Mr. Hurst's progress by Bishop Maltby did not stop; for, through the patronage of his lordship, Mr. Hurst was appointed curate of Garrigill, near Alston. On leaving his native village to enter upon the duties of that office, he was presented with a pocket communion service and a purse of gold, as a token of the great respect and esteem in which he was held by his friends and acquaintances, the interesting event taking place at the residence of Mr. Alderman Laycock. The gift was feelingly acknowledged by the reverend recipient, who, in the course of his address, said—"I am taught to look upon this act of Christian benevolence as a providential supply. In illustration of this point, I shall advert to one particular circumstance which I shall never forget. When the Bishop of Durham kindly consented to admit me as a candidate for holy orders, I, with a family, was thrown upon my resources for support. We lived upon the little we had earned with care. A short time before the ordination, I was told that our 'barrel of meal was nearly wasted,' and our 'cruse of oil' nearly run out. I said, in reply, that if the ministerial office was not worth a sacrifice, it was worth nothing, and that God, in His providence, would send us a supply, if needed. Soon after this, He put it into the heart of a gentleman (who I suppose is present) to show me the kindness which I have experienced from your hands this day. It is an act which shall ever live in the records of my grateful remembrance."

In 1845 a new church was erected in the mining village of Nenthead, a little to the east of Garrigill, and Mr. Hurst was appointed its first incumbent. Five years later he became vicar of Slaley, near Hexham, and in the year 1854 he was promoted to the vicarage of Collierley, which he held with much acceptance up to the time of his death, in June, 1882, at the age of eighty-one.

## William Hutchinson,

MERCHANT ADVENTURER.

INSEPARABLY associated with Ambrose Barnes, leader of the Puritans in Newcastle during the exciting period of the Restoration and the Revolution, was another sturdy and unbending Nonconformist—William Hutchinson. Within a few months of each other these two men came, the one from the Yorkshire side of the Tees, and the other from the banks of the Swale, to be merchants' apprentices in the commercial metropolis of the Tyne. Among the enrolments of apprenticeship in the books of the company of Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle, the entries of their respective indentures appear upon one and the same page. Companions in boyhood, friends in youth, relations by marriage, they ran their course as public men side by side, for the better part of half a century, and when death divided them, their names occur, linked together, as we see them upon the tombstone of the old church of All Saints, in the voluminous records of local history.

William Hutchinson, "son of Francis Hutchinson, late of Gilling, Yorkshire, gentleman, deceased," was bound apprentice to Benjamin Ellison, merchant adventurer and mercer, on the 10th of October, 1646. He served his full period of ten years, and obtaining his freedom commenced business on his own account in the autumn of 1656. On Christmas Day in that year, at St. John's Church, Newcastle, he and Ruth Hodgson, spinster, were married "by Mr. Christopher Nicholson, in presence of Mr. Robert Ellison and William Chatur." Christopher Nicholson, who was an alderman and justice of the peace (Sheriff of Newcastle in 1645-46), had married, in the same church, eighteen months before, Ambrose Barnes to Mary Butler.

Mr. Hutchinson had been brought up in the doctrines and formularies of the Church of England. He was a moderate Churchman, and probably would have remained so if he had been let alone. But, as the biographer of Barnes relates, "going one Lord's Day to his parish church, he was stopt at the church porch, and forbid entrance, as being then just excommunicated. Which gave him such disgust, that the worthy man, who was before the less-half of a Dissenter, never afterwards came to church." From that time forward he cast in his lot with the Puritans. Attaching himself to Dr. Gilpin, the ejected of Greystoke, he formed part of the congregation which, braving the terrors of the Conventicle Act, assembled in Dr. Gilpin's house, near the White Friars, Newcastle, every Sabbath Day. There, with "diverse other persons to the nomber of fortie," he and his wife were found on that memorable Sunday, August 1st, 1669, when Cuthbert Nicholson, cordwainer, one of the town sergeants, instigated "Parson Jo. Shaw," of St. John's, with "the churchwardens, constables, and serjeants-att-mace," to break open Dr. Gilpin's door, and laid an information against the worshippers, some of whom were past mayors and sheriffs of the town, before the magistrates. There, also, it is presumed they continued secretly to assemble till the publication of the Declaration of Indulgence rendered it possible for them to worship openly and in safety. The Declaration was launched from the throne in March, 1671-72, and in January, 1675-76, as appears by an abstract of deeds in the writer's possession, Mr. Hutchinson purchased of John Watson a piece of waste ground, without the Close Gate, formerly belonging to Sir Richard Tempest, and used as a garden. Upon it Mr. Hutchinson erected a sugar-house and a distilling house; adjoining it he constructed a quay, or wharf, to provide means of transport to and from his manufactory; out of it he gave a site, upon which Dr. Gilpin's congregation built a meeting-house, and a manse for the preacher. Thus originated the first dissenting chapel in Newcastle—famous long after as the "Close Gate Meeting-House."

William Hutchinson and Ambrose Barnes were now at the period of middle life. Children had been born to them, and were growing up around them into men and women. On the 2nd June, 1679, the two families were drawn together by even closer ties than those of friendship. On that day, Jonathan, the eldest son of William Hutchinson, was united in marriage to Ambrose Barnes's eldest daughter, Mary. Of all his children Mary was her father's favourite;

for, as the biographer of Barnes tells us, "there was so great a sympathy between him and her, they scarce seemed to differ." "She was of masculine reason," he continues, "and of uncommon judgment and Christian experience. She was a mother in Israel, and a mother in her father's house, a blessing to all who had to do with her. Old Mr. Hutchinson would say he would give a thousand pound if his wife had the sincerity, reason, and discretion that his daughter-in-law was mistress of."

The part which William Hutchinson played, under the direction and guidance of his friend Ambrose Barnes, during the short and luckless reign of James II. has been described in our biographical sketch of Sir William Creagh. When, in 1687, the king gave the town a new charter, he ordered the election of a Catholic Mayor, a Nonconformist Sheriff, and two Catholic, four Church of England, and four dissenting aldermen. Among the last four were Hutchinson and Barnes. Sorely puzzled at the extraordinary turn which affairs were taking, the electors proved recalcitrant. They would neither obey the king's mandate nor take steps to oppose it. The government of the town, therefore, drifted into the hands of the Royal nominees, and William Hutchinson became an alderman and a magistrate.

So long as unanimity was needed for civic administration only this heterogeneous conclave worked well enough. But when the question of succession to the higher offices of the municipality became ripe for discussion party spirit asserted its old predominance. The Catholic and High Church party plotted the re-election of Sir William Creagh, or the appointment of a sound Churchman as Mayor, and they intended to have a Sheriff of the same, or a like colour. Barnes, fully alive to their schemes, was determined to frustrate them. He could not, or would not, accept office himself, but there was his bosom friend, William Hutchinson; who more suitable than he for the Mayoralty? And there was another ardent Nonconformist, Matthias Partis, tobacconist, whose brother Thomas had married a daughter of a noted Puritan family—Killingworth of Killingworth; who better qualified than he for the Shrievalty? On the morning of Michaelmas Monday, 1688, very early indeed, while Sir William Creagh and his adherents slept the sleep of the innocent and confiding, the electors discharged their duties. When the Catholic and High Church party awoke from their slumbers, they found to their amazement that the election was over, and

learned, to their vexation, that the Mayor of Newcastle was William Hutchinson, and that the Sheriff was Matthias Partis.

Short-lived was the triumph of early rising. Six weeks and no more did William Hutchinson enjoy—if he did enjoy—the dignity of the chief magistracy. On the eve of inevitable Revolution King James recalled his new charters, and ordered displaced aldermen, councillors, etc., to resume their functions. On the fifth of November, William Hutchinson and Matthias Partis were removed from their high position; Nicholas Ridley and Matthew White were elected in their room; the former aldermen resumed their gowns; the ejected councillors returned to their seats. William Hutchinson's career had practically come to an end. He lived but a year and four months afterwards, dying on the 6th of March, 1689-90, little more than sixty years old. Upon his tombstone in the churchyard of All Saints', Newcastle, was inscribed the following epitaph:—

"This is the Burial-Place of William Hutchinson, Merchant Adventurer, who departed this life, ye 6th of March, 1689. Jonathan Hutchinson, Esqr., died June 11th, 1711. Mary his wife, daughter of Mr. Ambrose Barnes, died Jany. 11th, 1724. William, their son, died Septr. 20th, 1710. Mr. Joseph Airey, merchant, who married Ruth Hutchinson their daughter; he died 2nd of Feby., 1748, and is interred here. Julia Airey, wife of Joseph Airey, Esqr., and daughter of Christopher Fawcett, Esqr., obiit 29th Septr., 1792, aged 30 years. And, on the 30th of Jany., 1794, Joseph Airey, Esqr., aged 34 years."

Jonathan Hutchinson, eldest son of the old Puritan, and son-in-law of Ambrose Barnes, entering upon a parliamentary career, made a respectable figure in current politics. At the general election in 1701, Sir Francis Blake, of Ford Castle, who had been returned both by the freeholders of Northumberland and the burgesses of Berwick, chose the county seat, and Jonathan Hutchinson took his place as one of the representatives of the border borough. Jonathan was re-elected for the same town four times, sitting in two Parliaments of William III. and three Parliaments of Queen Anne. His father-in-law's biographer relates that—"Though he was none of the Long-Heads, who are fit to steer the helm of State, yet for his honesty and steadiness to his principles, he was well known and respected by both the factions of Whig and Tory. Coming one day out of the Speaker's chambers, Mr. Robert Harley, since that made Earl of Oxford, observing somewhat lying in the way, which they must pass over, sais, after a jocular fashion, 'Come, Mr. Hutchinson, lend me your hand, and I'll help you down.' The other as nimbly

replyed, 'Sir, I thank ye, and I promise ye I had rather have your hand to help me down than to help me up,' meaning that he cared not for rising on the Tory side of the House, or, rather, that he chused to fall with honest men rather than to rise with knaves on either side. The Duke of Marlborough and Prince of Mendleheim showed him peculiar sivilities, and when there was some intention for making barracks for the garrison of Barwick, his grace, as General of the army, assisted him in it. He died a Member of Parliament [June 11, 1711], and was succeeded by Richard Hamden, Esq., of the county of Bucks."

Benjamin, the youngest son of William Hutchinson, inherited the business in the Close, and carried on the sugar-house and distillery till December, 1694, when he disposed of his interest in the concern to Robert Bewicke. What became of him afterwards is not recorded. Ruth, second daughter of William Hutchinson, married at All Saints', December 28th, 1685, Enoch Hudson, of Brunton, in the parish of Gosforth, a wealthy coal-owner, and a lessee of lead-mines in Alston Moor. He died in the autumn of 1715, and being a Dissenter, was interred in the "Quig's" burial-ground, Sidgate (Percy Street), Newcastle, where at one time was a stone to his memory, inscribed: "Enoch Hudson de Brunton generosus. Obiit September 12, 1715. Æt. 56."

# Charles Hutton,

MATHEMATICIAN.

CHARLES HUTTON, LL.D., F.R.S., and member of several other learned societies, was the youngest son of Henry and Eleanor Hutton of Newcastle, and was born at their house in Percy Street, in that town, on the 14th of August, 1737. Henry Hutton, the father, who filled the office of deputy-overman, or some other subordinate position of trust at Benton Colliery, died in June, 1742, and the following year the widow married an overman at the same pit named Francis Fraim or Frame.

When he was about seven years of age, engaged in some childish quarrel, Charles Hutton had the misfortune to put out the elbow-joint of his right arm. He concealed the disaster from his mother

till restoration of the joint was beyond the power of surgery, and so, being considered unfit to earn his living by manual labour, he was sent to school to be made "a good scholar," while his brothers were taken to the pits. His first teacher was an old Scotchwoman who lived at the corner of Percy Street and Gallowgate; she taught him to read. His next teacher was one Robson, who kept a school at Benwell; he taught him to write. Removing with his parents to High Heaton, he was placed under the care of Mr. Ivison, a clerical schoolmaster at Jesmond; there he learned to "sum," and there he

CHARLES HUTTON.

made the acquaintance of that which became the passion of his life —"the Mathematics." How long he remained with Mr. Ivison is unknown. Mr. John Bruce, who wrote the biography from which these facts are taken, was unable to trace his later youth further than was disclosed by the pay-sheets of Benton Colliery for September, 1755, and March, 1756. At those dates he was certainly hewing coals for a living.

About this last-named date, 1756, Mr. Ivison obtained a curacy at Whitburn, and being interested in his old pupil, whose mathematical

recreations he had continued to superintend, he arranged to transfer the school to him. This being done, Charles Hutton left the pits to begin life as a Jesmond schoolmaster. Before long his schoolroom became too small for him, and he removed to Stott's, or Stote's Hall, a Jesmond mansion standing not far from the ruined chapel of St. Mary. His predilection for Mathematics was encouraged by attendance, when his day's work was over, at an evening school in Newcastle, kept by a competent teacher named James. In 1760 James retired from the profession, and his withdrawal brought Mr. Hutton into Newcastle. The following is a copy of the advertisement with which he announced his intention of opening a school in the town:—

"To Be Opened, *On Monday, April 14th, 1760, at the Head of the Flesh Market, down the Entry formerly known by the name of the Salutation Entry, Newcastle,* A Writing and Mathematical School, where persons may be fully and expeditiously qualified for business, and where such as intend to go through a regular course of Arts and Sciences, may be compleatly grounded therein at large, viz.: in Writing, according to its latest and best improvements; Arithmetic in all its parts; Merchants' Accompts (or the true Italian method of Book-keeping); Algebra; Geometry, elementary and practical; Mensuration; Trigonometry, plane and spherical; Projection of the Sphere; Conic Sections; Mechanics, Statics and Hydrostatics; the Doctrine of Fluxions, etc. Together with their various applications in Navigation, Surveying, Altimetry, and Longimetry; Gunnery, Dialling, Gauging, Geography, Astronomy, etc., etc., etc. Also the use of the Globes, etc. Likewise Short-hand, according to a new and facile character never yet published. By

C. HUTTON.

*** For the accommodation of such gentlemen and ladies as don't chuse to appear at the public school, I propose (at vacant hours) to attend them in their own apartments."

This advertisement attracted the attention of Robert Shafto, of Benwell Hall, who sent for Mr. Hutton, offered him the free use of his library, and proposed to re-peruse with him the mathematical works that he had studied at college. Hutton jumped at the offer, and an arrangement was made from which both of them derived benefit. When, in 1764, Hutton published his first book—his Arithmetic—it was to Robert Shafto that he dedicated the work:—

"The Schoolmaster's Guide, or a Complete System of Practical Arithmetic." 12mo, Newcastle, 1764. "To Robert Shafto, Esq. This System of Practical Arithmetic is, with the utmost Deference, Inscribed by his Most Obliged Humble Servant, Cha. Hutton."

Finding his first adventure in publishing successful, Mr. Hutton occupied his spare evenings upon another book—a treatise on Mensuration. It was published in numbers, delivered regularly to over a thousand subscribers, and when completed consisted of seven hundred pages, bearing the title of—

"A Treatise on Mensuration, Both in Theory and Practice." 4to. Newcastle-upon-Tyne: T. Saint, 1770.

It was for this book on Mensuration that Thomas Bewick cut his first wood block—an outline sketch of St. Nicholas' Tower, Newcastle, illustrating the measurement of heights and distances. The armorial bearings which head the dedication to the Duke of Northumberland, and a copper-plate at page 600, are by Ralph Beilby—Bewick's master.

Mr. Hutton had begun, in 1764, to contribute, like other North-country mathematicians, to the Ladies' Diary, and now (1771) he projected a reprint of what he called the "useful" parts of that remarkable publication, from its commencement in 1704. The proposal met with a generous response, and Mr. Hutton proceeded to issue his reprint in quarterly parts. Copious notes supplied defects in original solutions, new mathematical correspondence was admitted (mostly the editor's own under fictitious names), a few original essays, questions, etc., were thrown in, and in 1773 "The Gentleman and Lady's Miscellany" was completed in five volumes.

Meanwhile Mr. Hutton was employed by the Corporation of Newcastle to make a survey of the town, including the Moor and Leazes, and this completed, he published, in 1772, an engraved map of Newcastle and Gateshead, based upon his official survey.

"An Accurate Plan of Newcastle and Gateshead, with their Environs, on two Imperial Atlas Sheets of Paper. With a large Historical, etc., Account of the Place, a Neat View of the Ruins of the Bridge, and an Account of the late High Flood in the North by which part of it was thrown down." Engraved by J. Ellis, London. Dedicated to Sir Walter Blackett, Mayor, and the Corporation, etc., of Newcastle, 13th January, 1772.

The sudden fall of the Great Bridge of Tyne during the flood of November, 1771, induced him to issue a pamphlet of iv.-102 pages, entitled—

"The Principles of Bridges: Containing the Mathematical Demonstrations of the Properties of the Arches, the Thickness of the Piers, the Force of the Water against them, etc.; Together with Practical Observations and Directions drawn from the whole." 8vo. Newcastle: T. Saint, 1772.

All this time Mr. Hutton's school was increasing in numbers. He had removed from the Flesh Market to St. Nicholas' Churchyard, and from there to the Back Row, and at last, finding no place sufficiently large and convenient, he built a schoolroom for himself in Westgate Street. The publication of his work on Mensuration had given him a high reputation in Mathematics, and he obtained many pupils who took lessons in that department alone. Among them were John Scott and "Bessie" Surtees, afterwards Lord and Lady Eldon. Sixty years afterwards Lord Eldon, writing to Lieut.-General Hutton, the schoolmaster's son, expressed a lively sense of the benefit he had received in those early days from his father's instructions, adding, that he regarded that benefit as one of the many blessings he had enjoyed in life.

About the beginning of 1773 a vacancy occurred in the Professorship of Mathematics at the Royal Military Academy, Woolwich. Election to this office depended upon the result of competitive examination. Eleven mathematicians, some of them men of note, entered the lists, "yet the superiority of Hutton was so decisive," that the examiners unanimously recommended him for the post. Lord Townshend, the Master General, acting upon this recommendation, appointed him, and he entered upon his duties at the close of May, 1773. "The wisdom of the appointment was fully manifested by the success of the experiment; by the very extraordinary credit that branch of education soon attained at the academy; by the great number of excellent officers Mr. Hutton qualified; by the very punctual and regular attendance he always gave to the duties of his office; by the importance of the extra services he rendered, in making numerous experiments for the improvement of gunnery, and by the books he composed and printed for the use of the academy; and, finally, by the entire approbation of his Majesty and the governors of the academy, expressed on many occasions. This firm confidence in his judgment and integrity was further implied by his being desired successively to nominate and recommend the other two mathematical masters employed in the academy."

Although in his new position, as at Newcastle, Mr. Hutton devoted himself to his professional duties, his mind was actively engaged in philosophical research, and his pen busy in giving the results of his investigations to the world. In 1776 he contributed to the "Philosophical Transactions" of the Royal Society

a paper describing "A New and General Method of finding Simple and Quickly Converging Series, by which the Proportion of the Diameter of a Circle to its Circumference may easily be computed to a great Number of Decimals." In 1778 he wrote two papers for the Society, which were said to have been the most valuable that had been communicated since the chair was filled by Sir Isaac Newton. The first of them was upon the "Force of Exploded Gunpowder, and the Velocity of Balls Projected from Artillery." These results had been determined by a series of experiments made with a new instrument of Mr. Hutton's own invention; and, so sensible was the Royal Society of the value of the communication, that the annual gold prize-medal was voted to him, and presented by the President, Sir John Pringle, in an address expressed in most flattering terms. A proof of the estimation in which this paper was held, even abroad, is given in the life of the celebrated Lagrange, by the Chevalier Delambre, who states that at the most violent period of the French Revolution all foreigners were peremptorily ordered to quit France, and Lagrange, a native of Italy, was of course included; but his colleagues of the Institute presented a memorial to the Convention, soliciting permission for him to remain at Paris, as he was then engaged in experiments of the greatest importance to the country, namely, upon "Hutton's Reports on the Force of Fired Gunpowder." On this plea, an exception was decreed in Lagrange's favour. He was therefore permitted to continue his researches, though it does not appear that he made any report on the subject.

The other paper which Mr. Hutton presented to the Royal Society was "An Account of the Survey and Measures taken at Mount Schehallion, in Perthshire, in order to ascertain the Mean Density of the Earth." This operation, which had always been considered a desideratum in the scientific world, was commenced in 1755, by order of the Royal Society, under the direction of Dr. Maskelyne, Astronomer Royal. After the dimensions of the mountain had been taken, and the deflections of the plumb-line ascertained with accuracy, and verified by repeated experiments, the most difficult and important part of the undertaking yet remained to be executed, namely, the calculations and deductions. These Mr. Hutton undertook, and in his paper he demonstrated that the weight of the earth was in proportion to that of the hill Schehallion as 9 is to 5.

Mr. Hutton's reputation as a mathematician had by this time

risen to high-water mark, and he began to receive the honours which follow successful achievement. In 1779 the University of Edinburgh conferred upon him the degree of LL.D., and the Royal Society made him its Foreign Secretary. He had been some time before appointed editor of all the Almanacks published in England except two—Poor Robin's and the Gentleman's Diary. The crippled Newcastle pit-lad had become one of the first mathematicians of the age.

After his departure from Newcastle in 1773, Dr. Hutton never re-visited the scenes of his youth. He subscribed to three local institutions—the Royal Jubilee School, the Literary and Philosophical Society, and the Schoolmasters' Association, and gave a hearty welcome to Newcastle friends who visited him. But out of the Thames Valley he could not be induced to venture. When, in 1807, he resigned his professorship at Woolwich, he fixed his abode in Bedford Row, London, and there, enjoying a pension of £500 a year, and engaged in re-editing and re-issuing his books, he passed the remainder of his days.

Towards the close of the year 1821, some of Dr. Hutton's friends proposed to commemorate his labours in the advancement of mathematical learning during sixty years by presenting him with a marble bust of himself, by an eminent artist. The bust was executed and presented to the doctor the following year, and each subscriber was presented with a medal, containing, on the obverse a profile of Dr. Hutton, and on the reverse emblems of two philosophical discoveries associated with his name—the Density of the Earth and the Force of Gunpowder. After Dr. Hutton's death, which occurred on the 27th of January, 1823, the bust was presented to the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle, and in the library of that institution it is still to be seen.

# William Ingham,

AND ROBERT HIS SON.

THE writer of purely local biography finds himself occasionally in the position of the ancient Israelites—reduced to the necessity of making bricks without straw. For if his hero be neither a man of wide-spread reputation, nor a crazy eccentric, his chief resource for material will be the obituary paragraphs of old magazines and newspapers, than which few things in the sphere of biography are less satisfying and less trustworthy. Like the compilers of epitaphs, the writers of these obituaries expended their energies chiefly in the production of unstinted eulogy. The ability and skill of the deceased, his benevolence and piety, his devotion to duty and fidelity to conscience, his advancement in knowledge and success in business—these are the topics upon which, with marvellous iteration, they enlarge. Details of birth, parentage, and education are generally wanting; dates of honours, achievements, and family ties are frequently to be sought elsewhere. Little but praise of transcendent talent and incomparable virtue appears, so that the industrious biographer who turns to them for light and knowledge, finds them too often

> "Like to the apples on the Dead Sea's shore,
> All ashes to the taste."

These somewhat trite observations are elicited by a search for notes of the life of Mr. William Ingham, a celebrated surgeon of his day in Newcastle, and by finding that the only sketch of him is the following, published in the *Northumberland and Newcastle Monthly Magazine* for January, 1818:—

"This gentleman, whose father was a surgeon at Whitby in Yorkshire, was apprenticed to the late Mr. Lambert of Newcastle, under whose tuition that sedulous industry was elicited which characterised his future life.

"The subject of the present memoir embraced every opportunity which the celebrated London school of that day afforded, to acquire complete initiation into the theory and practice of his arduous profession. On returning to Newcastle, the progress and zeal of his pupil did not pass unobserved. Mr. Lambert offered him a share of

his practice, and an arrangement was formed, founded in prudence, and productive of mutual advantage.

"Mr. Ingham was soon after elected, by a considerable majority, a surgeon of the Newcastle Infirmary. Accustomed to philosophic research, and possessing himself of every improvement, he took the lead in establishing the high character which his profession has attained in a district nearly centrical between the Metropolis of England and that of North Britain.

"In his public capacity, ample testimony will be borne by his surviving colleagues to the purity of his views, and the ingenuous-

William Ingham, Surgeon

ness of his opinions. His manual dexterity, combined with the most matured judgment, were found inestimable in the general cause of humanity, nor were his professional labours in private practice less appreciated; a character strongly marked by integrity and honour, gave to his directions the force of law, and to his opinions an incontrovertible weight. From hence arose the preponderancy of his decisions in all questions of medical policy.

"From the precision of his discipline, the pupils of this highly revered master have almost uniformly attained pre-eminence in their profession; the colonial, the land and sea-service, as well as the walks of private practice, have been embellished by the disciples of

his school. To the great extent of his experience and observation were superadded a methodical system, and a punctuality, which might justly be proverbial.

"After fulfilling, for upwards of thirty years, the arduous duties of a surgeon to the Infirmary, with honour to himself, and to the entire satisfaction of the governors, Mr. Ingham's resignation was accepted with the most poignant regret. The general sense of his services was perpetuated by a full-length portrait, which, by the unanimous vote of a quarterly court, was ordered to be placed in the Governors' Hall.

"To those who were connected with Mr. Ingham by the more tender ties, everything from this pen were utterly incompetent to the display of his virtues; they are registered where 'Every day the leaf is turned to read them.'

"He died November 26th, 1817, aged 64 years."

Chronological details lacking in the foregoing narrative are these:—Mr. Ingham was born at Whitby on the 3rd December, 1753. He came to Newcastle at the age of fourteen, and served his time with Mr. Richard Lambert, the eminent surgeon, founder of the Infirmary. Previous to 1778, when the first Newcastle Directory was published, he had entered into partnership, in the Bigg Market, with Mr. Lambert, whom, in that year, he succeeded as one of the Infirmary surgeons. In 1779 he saw his sister married to Christopher Blackett, of Wylam, and about the same time was married himself, his wife being Jane, daughter of Mr. Robert Walker, of Westoe. Upon the retirement of Mr. Lambert from the active duties of his profession, Mr. Ingham carried on the practice in the Bigg Market, where he lived and brought up his family. He acted as honorary surgeon to the Newcastle Loyal Associated Volunteer Infantry, enrolled in 1803, and held his post at the Infirmary for thirty-three years. Dying, as before stated, in November, 1817, he was buried in St. Nicholas' Church, where a monument preserves his memory, with that of his eldest son, William, who died July 23rd, 1800, aged 18; of his wife, who died March 7th, 1825, aged 66; and of Eleanor, his only daughter, who died October 20th, 1835, aged 46.

Robert Ingham, youngest son of the doctor, was born at the surgery in the Bigg Market, in 1794. He received his preliminary education at Mr. Birkett's school at Ovingham. From thence he proceeded to Harrow, and in due time was entered at Oriel College, Oxford. He matriculated there on the 4th of April, 1811, obtained

his bachelor's degree in 1815, was elected a fellow of his college in 1816, and took his master's degree two years later. Choosing the law for his profession, he became a pupil of Mr., afterwards Sir John Patteson, Justice of the Queen's Bench, and co-editor of "Saunders's Reports." Called to the Bar at Lincoln's Inn, in 1820, he went the Northern Circuit, where his family influence brought him an extensive general practice, especially at Quarter-sessions, in rating and settlement appeals, and similar business on the civil side.

Residing upon property at Westoe, inherited from his maternal grandfather, Mr. Ingham interested himself in the political enfran-

chisement of the town of South Shields, and in March, 1832, when the passing of the Reform Bill was regarded as certain, he issued a political address to the prospective electors. His principles were those of a moderate Whig. He would vote for shorter Parliaments, a reform and simplification of the law, the abolition of the slave-trade, and the destruction of the "press-gang"; but he was not prepared to give protecting duties to the shipping interest, and would support free trade only in cases where it could be effected without injustice. Upon these declarations, when the Reform Bill had

received the Royal Assent, and one representative had been allotted to South Shields, he went to the poll, and won an easy victory. Three candidates opposed him—Mr. George Palmer, protectionist; Mr. W. Gowan, radical; and Mr. Russell Bowlby, independent. Mr. Ingham polled nearly as many votes as all the other candidates put together, the official declaration being—Ingham, 205; Palmer, 108; Gowan, 105; Bowlby, 2. In 1835 he was opposed by Mr. Bowlby only, and received 273 votes, against 128 recorded for his opponent. In 1837 he was returned without opposition; but in 1841, when the elections turned upon the question of Free Trade, of which he had become the champion, he was defeated by Mr. J. Twizell Wawn. Mr. Wawn represented the borough for eleven years, and upon his retirement in 1852 Mr. Ingham again came forward, and beat the Hon. H. T. Liddell, afterwards the first Earl of Ravensworth, by 191 votes. From that date till his withdrawal from public life in 1868 he was opposed but once, and then unsuccessfully. He was a good commercial member, devoted to the interests of his constituency, fighting their battles for river improvement and Customs independence, always accessible, and never found wanting when liberal and progressive legislation needed his support.

While he was out of Parliament, in 1850, Mr. Ingham, who held the post of Attorney-General for the County Palatine of Durham, was made a bencher of the Inner Temple, to which he had been admitted *ad eundem*, from Lincoln's Inn, in 1825. The following year he obtained the silk gown of a Queen's Counsel, and was appointed Recorder of Berwick. For some time afterwards he continued his attendance at the Assizes, and pleaded in the civil courts at Westminster. But gradually his parliamentary and official duties diverted his practice at the Bar, and in the later years of his life he came to be known on circuit as the hospitable entertainer of judges and leading counsel rather than as a pleader or an advocate. Under his roof, at Westoe, Samuel Warren wrote the greater part of his novel, "Ten Thousand a Year," and at one time or another, for thirty years, all the eminent lawyers who came the Northern Circuit found their way to Mr. Ingham's bachelor home. To them and to a wide circle of friends Mr. Ingham was an admirable host.

> "A man of letters, and of manners too,
> Of manners sweet as virtue always wears
> When gay good-nature dresses her in smiles."

Charles Sumner, the American lawyer and statesman, was Mr. Ingham's guest during the British Association week, 1838, and in his "Memoirs and Letters" are preserved many sunny memories of Westoe Hall and its accomplished owner. To his friend, George S. Hillard, on the 24th August, 1838, Mr. Sumner wrote:—"From my chamber window I look upon the mouth of the Tyne and the German Ocean, and the venerable ruins of Tynemouth Priory, coeval with the Conquest, and the foam of the sea breaking on this rock-bound coast, and lashed into great fury by a raging storm. Think of this picture: the white sea I am well accustomed to; but these reverend arches, the sturdy and graceful witnesses of centuries, I know much less about. I am the guest of Mr. Ingham, the M.P. for South Shields. . . . I am struck by the elegance I find in such a quiet retreat. Yesterday my host invited some company, fourteen gentlemen, to meet me and another friend staying with him, who all passed the night in the house. You sit down to dinner usually between seven and eight o'clock; and one would sooner commit the unpardonable sin than appear in boots; these will do for Paris, but not for England."

When Mr. Ingham suffered defeat at South Shields election in 1841, Mr. Sumner wrote to Lord Morpeth, afterwards seventh Earl of Carlisle:—"I see that my friend Ingham has lost his seat. A more worthy, amiable, and conscientious person I never knew. He was, of truth, 'all compact.' In my estimate of men, his absence from Parliament will be a loss to his country."

Again, in 1842, when sending his brother George recommendatory letters to friends in England, he wrote:—"Robert Ingham, for whom I enclose a note, was a true friend of mine. He will be glad to see you as my brother, and will give you a warm welcome. He is a bachelor of forty-nine, living in the Temple, with a pleasant country-house not far from Newcastle. In politics he is a moderate Whig. He is a warm, but kind Churchman, and is a most delightful character. In all his views he is pure and elevated; in conversation modest, quiet, and unambitious, but sensible, well-informed, and with that tinge which every English gentleman, no matter what his pursuit, has derived from the classical fountain."

Mr. Ingham's retirement into private life gave his constituents and fellow-townsmen at South Shields an opportunity of testifying their appreciation of his long and faithful services to the town. The form in which they expressed their gratitude was creditable to themselves, and pleasing to the man whom they desired to honour. They

built an Infirmary at Westoe, and high up on the front of the edifice they placed the following inscription:—

"This Building was erected by Public Subscription for the benefit of the Sick and Suffering, and called 'The Ingham Infirmary,' to commemorate the public services and private worth of Robert Ingham, Esq., Q.C., of Westoe, the first Member of Parliament for the Borough, and its Representative for 25 Years."

On the 21st of October, 1875, Mr. Ingham died at Westoe, at the good old age of eighty-two years. His remains, honoured by a public funeral, were interred in South Shields and Westoe Cemetery.

# Thomas Ions,

DOCTOR OF MUSIC.

"Of all the arts beneath the heaven,
That man has found, or God has given,
None draws the soul so sweet away,
As music's melting, mystic lay;
Slight emblem of the bliss above,
It soothes the spirit all to love."

—HOGG.

EXCLUDING living persons, about whose merits this is neither the time nor the place to write, it may be safely asserted that 'twixt Tyne and Tweed no great musical genius has ever been born. The three eminent men whose cultivation of the divine art in and about Newcastle has given to Northumberland the very moderate position which it occupies in musical history, had their place of nativity beyond its boundaries. Charles Avison, the foremost of them, migrated hither from Cumberland; William Shield, next in order, and perhaps even more widely known, was born at Swalwell; Dr. Ions, the last of the trio, whose budding genius death nipped in its early unfolding, first saw the light at Gateshead. From these accidents of birth no unfavourable conclusions need be drawn, least of all the inference that Northumbrians are not a musical people. Every student of their history knows to the contrary. From the times of the harpers and small pipe players to these days of American organs and services of song, the people of Northumberland have tuned their ears to melody, and revelled in the concord of sweet sounds. Yet the fact remains that, in the copious pages of musical biography, the birthplace of no composer

of eminence is assigned to the wide district which lies between Tyneside and the Border.

Thomas Ions was born on the 19th of August, 1817. He was the eldest son of James Ions, of Gateshead, for many years manager of the plate-glass works of Messrs. Cookson & Co., and Sarah, his wife, daughter of Thomas and Mary Jamson, of the same place. From infancy he showed a remarkable precocity in music. It is said that when but a child he attracted the notice of a leader in the municipal cavalcade from Newcastle as it swept by his father's house to meet the Judges of Assize at Sheriff Hill. Held up in his nurse's

Thomas Ions, Organist.

arms to see the glittering show, he drew such extraordinary tones from a toy fiddle that the astonished horseman exclaimed, "There's a musician for you! He'll be famous some day; take care of him!" Naturally proud of his child's accomplishments, the elder Ions, a man of high attainments in science and mechanics, made a pianoforte, out of which the tiny performer extracted wonderful music. Mr. Falla, the nurseryman, who lived near, noting his precocity, encouraged the boy to come to his house to hear good music, and there his juvenile fingers first pressed the keys of an organ.

At the proper age the young musician was sent to the Royal Free Grammar School of Newcastle to be educated. The Rev. Edward

Moises, head-master, was on the eve of retiring from his post, and neither he nor his successor, Dr. Mortimer, made excessive claims upon the energies of the lads entrusted to their care. Young Ions found ample time, both in and out of school, to cultivate his favourite pursuit—to study the laws of harmony, and to compose short voluntaries for his own amusement. At the age of twelve he became a pupil of Mr. Munro, organist of St. Andrew's Church, Newcastle. A couple of years later, when he left school, he was placed in the office of Mr. George Tallentire Gibson, solicitor, and the charge of his musical education was transferred to Mr. John Wesley Marr, who presided at the organ in Brunswick Place Wesleyan Chapel, which place of worship Mr. Gibson attended. Mr. Marr, pleased with the progress of his pupil, accustomed him to play in public, sitting down with him to difficult duets, and displaying his powers to the best advantage.

When he was fourteen years old, it became necessary that the lad should choose his calling, and he was bound apprentice to Messrs. Edward Bilton & Co., a firm of well-known merchants upon Newcastle Quayside. No restraint being placed by his employers upon the cultivation of his musical genius, the youth was able to arrange with Mr. Ingham, of St. Mary's Church, Gateshead, to act as assistant organist, in return for lessons in the theory and practice of his favourite art. The arrangement lasted a few months only. Mr. Ingham transferred his services to Carlisle, where he presided at the cathedral organ, and young Ions, at sixteen years of age, was appointed his successor. Within a year another opening presented itself. On the 3rd of October, 1834, Mr. Thomas Thompson, organist of St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, died, and in the *Newcastle Chronicle* of January 3rd, 1835, appeared a paragraph announcing that "At the meeting of the Common Council on Tuesday [December 30th, 1834], Mr. Thomas Ions, organist of St. Mary's Church, Gateshead, was elected organist of St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, which situation he had filled since the death of Mr. Thompson." Thus, soon after he had entered his eighteenth year, Mr. Ions had attained to the highest musical post which Newcastle could bestow.

It was a condition precedent to the appointment of organist at St. Nicholas', that the holder of it should devote himself to the profession of music. Messrs. Bilton & Co., willing to assist their apprentice in following the evident bent of his mind, cancelled his

indentures, and set him free to cultivate his art as best he might. Relieved from the drudgery of office work, Mr. Ions more than justified the generous treatment of his employers. He was already conductor of a musical group known as the Newcastle and Gateshead Choral Society, and now he established an amateur glee club in the town, which gave its first subscription concert in the new Music Hall, Blackett Street, on the evening of mayor-choosing day, November 9th, 1837. During short vacations, he proceeded to London, and placing himself under the tuition of the eminent composer and pianist, Moscheles, carried to a higher stage of advancement his musical education. By these means and by incessant practice at home, he made such progress in his art that at the last of the Newcastle Musical Festivals—that of 1842, which comprised three morning performances in St. Nicholas' Church, and three evening concerts at the Theatre Royal, he was selected to fill the responsible position of assistant conductor. Sir George Smart, who wielded the baton on that occasion, struck by the accomplishments of his subordinate, paid him a high compliment, proffered sound advice, and ended with the remark—"You have only a short ladder to climb to reach the top of your profession."

Married, in 1834, to Eliza, daughter of Mr. William Mason, of Bedford Place, Kensington—a niece of his predecessor at St. Nicholas' organ—Mr. Ions began to ascend the "short ladder" indicated by Sir George Smart. He covered half the distance in July, 1848, when he matriculated at Magdalen Hall, Oxford, and obtained the degree of Bachelor of Music. His trial exercise was an anthem, "By the Waters of Babylon"—a composition exhibiting refined taste and tender pathos, being graceful, flowing, and like himself free from affectation. Upon his return to Newcastle he endeavoured to revive public interest in the performance of sacred music, which, since the great festival six years before, had fallen into desuetude, if not into disfavour. With materials available in the parochial choirs, and the remnant of the old Choral Society, he assisted to launch upon its long and successful career the Newcastle Sacred Harmonic and Choral Society, of which, until his death, he was the energetic conductor.

Towards the end of 1849, Mr. Ions published a volume of sacred music entitled, "Cantica Ecclesiastica." This was a field in which his faculties displayed their highest development. To the services of the Church he consecrated his powers of conception and

execution, every resource of his art being made contributory to true devotional feeling. The "Cantica" is described as exhibiting sound judgment and refined taste, just appreciation of the true nature and requirements of church music.

The final round of the ladder was attained by Mr. Ions in February, 1854. Let the local papers of the day tell the story:—"The University of Oxford has conferred upon Mr. Ions the degree of Doctor of Music—a rank and distinction enjoyed by only seven or eight persons in these kingdoms, and with which, in the person of our professor, the North of England is, for the first time, honoured. The performance of the exercise for the degree was held in the New College Hall, Sir Henry Bishop, as Professor of Music, presiding. The words of the composition are mostly taken from the Psalms, and the music is stated to be of great beauty and merit. Towards the close of the performance the whole of the members of the University rose from their seats, as if to express the approbation which could only be manifested in silence."

Proud of their conductor, the Newcastle Sacred Harmonic Society celebrated this crowning achievement of his life by a demonstration. Under the presidency of one of their number, Alderman R. W. Hodgson, Mayor of Gateshead, they assembled with their friends, to the number of four hundred, and with Mr. Thomas Sopwith, F.R.S., as spokesman, presented Dr. Ions with valuable tokens of their appreciation and good will—expressing, as the inscription on each gift declared, "gratitude to him as conductor, and admiration of his abilities as a musician, urbanity as a gentleman, and virtues as a man and fellow-citizen."

Dr. Ions did not long enjoy his honours. On Friday, September 25th, 1857, he proceeded upon a round of duty in private tuition at Gateshead, and in his usual cab, late in the afternoon, he left the house of Mr. John Sowerby, at Shipcote, for Newcastle. With one of Mr. Sowerby's daughters he had been singing, just before he left, Linley's "Little Nell":—

> "One day they missed him long, and sought
> Where most he loved to stray;
> They found him dead upon the turf
> Where little Nelly lay."

And when the cab arrived in Newcastle "they found *him* dead" within. So peacefully had he passed away that a bunch of flowers, gathered for him by another of Mr. Sowerby's daughters, was still

held in a gentle grasp, unwithered and uncrushed. His remains were interred in the family vault at St. Edmund's, Gateshead, with the honours of a public funeral.

The premature death of this gifted musician, in the very height of his fame, excited among the community of Tyneside, where he was best known, unqualified sorrow. These feelings found expression afterwards in a movement to re-construct the east window of St. Nicholas' Church, as a memorial of his life and work. In the summer of 1860 the object was achieved. On Sunday, September 30th in that year, being the Sunday following the anniversary of his death, a day then and still devoted by the choir to "Ions' commemoration services," the window was formally "inaugurated." At the foot of the central light comes the inscription—

"To the Honour and Glory of God, for the adornment of His House, and in Memory of Thomas Ions, Mus. Doc. Oxon, 22 years Organist of this Church, who died, September 25, 1857, aged 40 years, this stained glass window was erected by public subscription. A.D. 1860."

Dr. Ions left no issue, and his mantle as organist, conductor, and teacher fell upon his brother, Mr. W. J. Ions, who presiding for many years over the musical services at St. Nicholas', helped to keep green the memory of the first doctor of music with which the district of Tyneside was honoured. To his courtesy the reader is indebted for the following list of Dr. Ions's compositions:—

Anthem—"By the Waters of Babylon." Exercise for the degree of Bachelor of Music. Novello, London.
"Cantica Ecclesiastica": A Collection of Music for the Church Service. (2) With Organ and Pianoforte Accompaniment, Metzler, London. (2) Vocal Score, Novello.
Morning Service—"Benedicite and Jubilate." Metzler.
"Christmas Madrigal for four voices." *Musical Times.*
"Hark, the Herald Angels sing." Do. do.
"Jesus Christ is Risen To-day." Do. do.
"Harvest Home Song." Do. do.
Song—"O thou Sea!" Archdeacon Coxe's words. Metzler.
Do.—"No, not that Harp." Do. do.
Do.—"Clear, Serene Eyes." Do. do.
Do.—"He Left Her in a Winding Lane." Words by Spencer T. Hall. Metzler.
Do.—"Fanny of the Dale." Words by John Cunningham. Do.
Do.—"Farewell, my Long Love-Cherished Friend." Words by Miss Greene. Metzler.
Do.—"No more shall the Spring." Metzler.
"Galop de Londres." Dedicated to Lady Bloomfield. Do.

"Le Plaisir des Dames." Four Short Recreations for the Piano. Metzler.
"Tyne and Wear Quadrilles." Dedicated to Alderman Potter. Horn, Newcastle.
"The Derwent Waltzes." Dedicated to Pupils of Miss Simons. D'Almaine, London.
"The Kensington Band March." Metzler.

Among various works which Dr. Ions left unpublished are—

"The Exercise for the Degree of Doctor of Music." 76 pp.
"A full orchestral score of 'By the Waters of Babylon.'"
"An Unfinished Morning Service in C." Completed by Mr. W. J. Ions, and performed at the inauguration of the Memorial Window in 1860, and again at the commemoration service, September 28th, 1890.
"Morning and Evening Services in A major."
"Evening Service in E flat."
"Motett for Five Voices—'Lo, My Shepherd's Hand Divine.'"
Nine Anthems; and numerous Chants, Kyries, Responses, and Glees.

# Archibald Jack,

CONGREGATIONAL MINISTER.

FORTY years ago, one of the central figures in the pastoral roll of the Congregational Churches of the North of England was the Rev. Archibald Jack, minister to the Independent community at North Shields. He was not a native of the district, nor attached to it by ties of family relationship or descent. He was neither a "popular" preacher nor a platform orator; least of all was he a practitioner of those arts which enable ambitious men to loom out large in public view. Yet for more than a quarter of a century he was a leader of thought and action among his co-religionists in Northumberland and Durham, possessing at the same time, in a marked degree, the respect and confidence of earnest workers in other denominations who came within the sphere of his influence.

Mr. Jack was born in Edinburgh on the 6th November, 1788, educated at the High School of his native city, and, at the age of fourteen, bound apprentice to a firm of law printers there. While serving his time, profiting by the pious training he had received at home, he united with other young men in forming Sunday-schools, establishing juvenile Bible and missionary associations, and organising meetings for prayer and village preaching in connection with the Church of Scotland. In 1814 he removed to Glasgow to superintend the printing business in which he had become a partner, and, having adopted the principles of Congregationalism, entered Glasgow University to study for the Independent ministry. He had read Latin with a Writer during his apprenticeship, and at the University he devoted himself to Greek and Hebrew, Logic and Moral Philosophy. In 1818, he was a prizeman in the Moral Philosophy class, and the year following in that of Hebrew. His theological course was superintended by Dr. Wardlaw at the Academy of the Congregational body in Glasgow, and when it was completed, he took temporary charge of churches at Aberdeen, Falkirk, Stirling, and Whitehaven. At Whitehaven his ministrations were so acceptable that he was invited to remain, and on the 25th of February, 1820, he was ordained by Dr. Wardlaw to the pastorate of Duke Street Chapel in that town. The following year he married Mrs. Hannah Fox,

daughter of Mr. Nicholson, of Kirkoswald, and widow of Captain Fox, of St. Bees—a lady with four daughters.

Mr. Jack's marriage and settlement at Whitehaven brought upon him serious responsibilities, involving arduous exertion and unremitting labour. To assist a scanty income, he kept a school, in which for five days a week he taught from eight in the morning till five in the afternoon. He preached in his own chapel five times a week, served two country places once a fortnight, took his turn at the Seaman's Bethel, attended public meetings, acted on committees, and did the usual visiting among his flock. Labours so abundant

Revd Archibald Jack.

brought their reward. His congregation grew in numbers and influence; and out of it he sent two young men, one to be a minister and the other to be a missionary. His school work was eminently successful also. One of his boys, Andrew Gowan, was widely known in after-life as the Rev. Dr. Gowan, of Dalkeith; another, William Thomson, top boy of his class in 1830, became Provost of Queen's College, Oxford, and Archbishop of York.

During his ministry at Whitehaven, repeated invitations to accept other pastorates were sent to Mr. Jack from congregations in various parts of the country. To none of them did he lend a favourable ear, till, worn out by fourteen years' hard work, he received, in 1834, an

offer from St. Andrew's Congregational Church at North Shields, whose minister, the Rev. William Hendry Stowell, was leaving to become Theological Tutor in Rotherham College. This was an offer that appeared to be in every way advantageous; it was united and cordial, and Mr. Jack accepted it. He left Whitehaven for his new charge in October, 1834, and was publicly "recognised" as minister in the March following.

As soon as Mr. Jack had fairly settled down to his work, the restless energy of his nature led him into numberless activities. His chapel services on Sunday were only two, but he made them three by preaching in the afternoons to the fishermen at Cullercoats, or in some other outlying village; on Monday evenings he gave addresses in his chapel schoolroom; on Thursdays lectured to his flock, and on Fridays preached to the inmates of the Workhouse. Into the work of various local organisations he threw himself with abounding zeal. He revivified the "Shields Auxiliary to the Bible Society," was appointed its co-secretary with the late Dr. Bramwell, and wrote its annual reports for thirty years. To the "Indigent Sick Society" of the town he rendered similar service, acting as secretary and preparing the reports to the close of his life. He was the chief originator of the "Town and River Mission," the burden of which for many years he bore upon his own shoulders. Joining the "Northumberland and Durham Congregational Association," he accepted the office of treasurer, and with the Rev. Alexander Reid, of Newcastle, as secretary, raised the Association from the status of a small and feeble body to one of strength and influence. In conjunction with the Rev. Dr. Duncan, of the Scotch Church, he started the "North Shields Young Men's Christian Instruction Society," in connection with which he taught a French class, delivered lectures, and did a large share of the general work. In 1854, when he had completed the twentieth year of his ministry at Shields, his congregation marked their appreciation of his services by a celebration, at which they presented him with a valuable silver inkstand, and a purse of two hundred guineas.

At the height of what is known as the "Rivulet" controversy, Mr. Jack was unanimously elected to the Chairmanship of the Congregational Union of England and Wales. The controversy took its name from the publication, in 1853, of a collection of hymns entitled "The Rivulet," by a young Independent minister, the Rev. T. T. Lynch. In these hymns the writer expressed liberal

ideas of theology—so liberal, indeed, that he was accused of teaching rationalism, and a heresy hunt of remarkable heat and vigour was begun. Dr. John Campbell, editor of the *British Banner* newspaper, and conductor of the Congregational magazines, kept up the chase with extraordinary zeal and persistence, and with him were many men of position and authority in the Independent body. Between them and their quarry stood the Rev. Thomas Binney, the Rev. Henry Allon, and other leaders in the denomination, equally powerful, but more liberal and tolerant. By the beginning of 1856 the controversy had assumed alarming proportions, threatening to end in disruption and secession. It was so fierce and bitter at the meeting of the Union in May of that year, that the autumnal gathering could not be held. And although at a special assembly in January, 1857, matters were put in train for a settlement, yet it was feared that at the ensuing May meeting, when Mr. Jack's term of office began, the warring elements would again clash and struggle, and render the sitting abortive. Fortunately these fears were not realised. There was much latent heat, but Mr. Jack's firmness and tact kept it in check. Under his wise and judicious rule the strife gradually calmed down, and by the time that his chairmanship ended, little remained but the scars and bruises of previous encounters.

As the years rolled on, Mr. Jack found himself less able to maintain the full round of active duty to which he had devoted his manhood and his prime. In 1861 his congregation provided him with an assistant, with whom he laboured for seven years longer, and then, in February, 1868, having entered upon the eightieth year of his age and the forty-eighth of his ministry, he resigned his charge. A retiring stipend, and a purse of two hundred and sixty guineas raised by his admirers and friends of all denominations upon Tyneside, enabled him to pass his remaining years in peace and comfort. He preached occasionally, prepared and saw through the press a volume containing twenty of his discourses, paid a last visit to his former flock at Whitehaven, and died on the 9th September, 1870. He was buried in the Old Cemetery at North Shields, his life-long friend, the Rev. Alexander Reid, of Newcastle, father of Mr. T. Wemyss Reid, conducting the funeral service, and ministers of all denominations—Church of England, Presbyterian, Methodist, Baptist, and Quaker, besides those of his own community—being grouped around.

Mr. Jack left no issue. He brought up the four daughters of his wife as his own, and they all made happy and prosperous marriages. Hannah, the youngest of them, was united, in 1840, to the Rev. Peter Lorimer, afterwards D.D., and Professor of Theology in the English Presbyterian College, London, who, in 1871, published a volume of 264 pages, entitled "A Good and Faithful Servant: Memoir of the late Rev. Archibald Jack, of North Shields." From Professor Lorimer's book most of the facts contained in the foregoing narrative have been derived.

Although Mr. Jack wielded the pen of a ready writer, he did not often venture into print. So far as can be ascertained, the following is a list of all the publications which were issued by his authority during his long and laborious life:—

"A Sermon occasioned by the death of the Rev. Charles Church, M.A., one of the East India Company's chaplains at Madras." 1822.

"Letters to the Rev. William Jackson, A.M., on the subject of Nonconformity." 1826.

"A Sermon preached in St. James's Chapel, Newcastle, on the occasion of the settlement of the Rev. William Campbell, M.A." 1840.

"A Sermon occasioned by the death of the Rev. John Williams, Missionary to the Islands of the South Seas." 1840.

"A Charge at the Induction of the Rev. Anthony T. Gowan, at Dalkeith, and the Rev. Richard Penman, at Chester-le-Street." 1843.

"An Affectionate Address to the Inhabitants of the Borough of Tynemouth, on a Visitation of Cholera." 1849.

"Varied Aspects of 'The Word of Life'; Twenty Select Sermons." Dedicated to the Congregational Churches at Whitehaven and North Shields. 1869.

# John Jackson,

WOOD ENGRAVER.

"Bewick had no 'school,' in the sense in which that word is used by those who inherit the manner and the method of some individual artist. The pupils who quitted him to seek their fortune in London, either made their way with difficulty, or turned to other pursuits, and the real popularisation of wood engraving did not take place until some years after his death."—AUSTIN DOBSON.

JOHN JACKSON, one of the most notable of the pupils of Thomas Bewick, was a native of Tyneside, born in the same parish as the great engraver himself, on the 19th of April, 1801. His parents were, to use a common expression, "poor, but respectable." Their

means did not enable them to afford the lad a high-class education, but they gave him sufficient instruction to fit him for his probable course in life. He was a sharp and clever boy, displaying, among other attainments, a remarkable aptitude for drawing. Of his skill in that direction, the doors and shutters, the walls and gateways of Ovingham, bore abundant evidence. Similar testimony had marked the boyhood of Bewick, and the villagers, mindful of the master's success in life, saw in young Jackson genius that only needed encouragement to win for its possessor equal fame and honour. With the help of friends and neighbours, the parents of the lad were able to bind him apprentice to the firm of Armstrong & Walker, letter-press printers and engravers in Newcastle.

Shortly after his apprenticeship began, Messrs. Armstrong & Walker fell into difficulties, and young Jackson was turned over to Mr. Bewick. With him he completed his term of servitude. So, at least, writes Mr. Robert Robinson, in "Thomas Bewick: His Life and Times," though another authority states that through some obscure disagreement the connection was prematurely terminated, Bewick going so far as to cut his own and his son's name out of the unexpired indentures. By whatsoever means his service came to an end, whether by effluxion of time, or by unexplained quarrel, the young man found that employment in Newcastle was difficult to obtain, and he left his native valley to seek fortune in London. For a time his quest was as hopeless there as at home. The French wars had exhausted the resources of the country, and few persons had means to buy illustrated literature. Such books as they did purchase were "Annuals," and works of that character, embellished by engravings on steel. Not more than three or four engravers in London had sufficient business to employ even occasionally an assistant, and an apprentice or two upon woodcuts; for that method of illustration had not come to be regarded as a formidable rival to steel and copperplate. Under these circumstances young Jackson placed himself in the hands of William Harvey, Bewick's favourite pupil, who was acquiring reputation in the metropolis as a designer. Mr. Harvey was busy at the time with designs, from drawings by Northcote, for the first series of the celebrated "One Hundred Fables," and he gave Jackson some of them to engrave. Jackson's style pleased both Northcote and Harvey; his services were retained, and when the work was issued his name appeared to a hundred and fifty out of the two hundred and eighty cuts which the book con-

tained. Introduced to Charles Knight, he assisted in illustrating the *Penny Magazine* and various other publications of that spirited and enterprising publisher. In course of time, as wood-engraving became more popular, work flowed in upon him, and he became one of the busiest engravers in London.

"The Pictorial Press: Its Origin and Progress," by Mr. Jackson's son, Mason Jackson, contains an interesting paragraph, relating to the infancy of the art at the time when his father commenced his artistic career in the metropolis:—"Illustrations were so seldom used that the preparation of even a small woodcut was of much moment to all concerned. I have heard the late William Harvey relate that when Whittingham, the well-known printer, wanted a new cut for his 'Chiswick Press' series, he would write to Harvey and John Thompson, the engraver, appointing a meeting at Chiswick, when printer, designer, and engraver talked over the matter with as much deliberation as if they were about to produce a costly national monument, and after they had settled all points over a snug supper, the result of their labours was the production, months afterwards, of a small woodcut measuring perhaps two inches by three."

In Raine's "Memoir of the Rev. John Hodgson" is a passing reference to Jackson in connection with a project wherein Mr. Hodgson was to have become his co-worker. Sir John Edward Swinburne, dating from Capheaton on the 8th July, 1828, wrote to the historian:—"I have had an application that I must consult you about from an artist engraver in wood, who, with Harvey, has published a very pretty book that I can shew you. His name is Jackson [Sir John does not appear to have known that he was a local man], and he has undertaken, under the Duke's auspices, the engraving of a series of illustrations of the poem of Chevy Chase; the Ballad to be given with all notes and matter connected with it. The publishers, therefore, wish to have the services of a competent editor, and I am requested to apply to you for that purpose."

A year and a half later Sir John sent Mr. Hodgson a "sort of plan of the form in which Jackson proposes to publish the Chevy Chase." There were to be ten large engravings, and the preface and notes were to be supplied by the historian at such length as he might think useful. "Jackson," he adds, "has been very ill with determination of blood to the head for several months; he seems now very ill, with incessant cough, but is able to work." The correspondence ends, in March, 1831, with a note from Sir John, informing

Mr. Hodgson that he will lose no time in finding out Jackson, and ascertaining what his views are, but he suspects that Jackson is not going on with the work—as indeed proved to be the case, for the undertaking was shortly afterwards abandoned.

A few years after the Chevy Chase project had been given up, Mr. Jackson undertook a useful and laborious work—a "History of Wood Engraving, accompanied by upwards of three hundred Illustrations of the Art." As in the previous case, making no pretension to literary skill himself, he sought a writer capable of compiling the historical and descriptive part of the volume. Such a man he found in William A. Chatto, author of a capital book about angling, and the writer of a still more popular work, "Rambles in Northumberland and on the Scottish Border. By Stephen Oliver the Younger." Out of this collaboration arose a mighty quarrel respecting the authorship of the volume. Mr. Jackson, being the proprietor, illustrator, pay-master, and proprietor of the work, omitted Mr. Chatto's name from the title-page, although he allowed him to write a separate preface explaining the part he had played in the undertaking. Thereupon Mr. Chatto, who, it is admitted, was not very generously treated in the business, rushed into print with complaint and explanation, claim and counterclaim. The affair is of no interest now, except to the curious in controversy, or collectors of materials for a new edition of the "Quarrels of Authors," who can, if they please, unearth the details of the dispute from the pages of the *Athenæum* for August and September, 1839.

It is, however, of some interest to learn what were the motives which induced Mr. Jackson to take in hand so extensive and so valuable a history of the art which Thomas Bewick restored, revived, and made popular. In his own preface to the book he tells us that his attention having been naturally more readily directed to matters connected with his own profession than any other, he had found almost a total absence of practical knowledge in all English authors who had written the early history of wood-engraving—that, indeed, the history and practice of the art were not to be found in any book in the English language. He continues:—"Both with a view to amuse and improve myself as a wood-engraver, I had long been in the habit of studying such productions of the old masters as came within my reach, and could not help noting the simple mistakes that many authors made in consequence of their knowing nothing of the practice. Every additional piece of information obtained strengthened

my opinion that 'if the *practice*, as well as the *history* of wood-engraving, were *better understood*,' we should not have so many erroneous statements respecting both the history and capabilities of the art. At length, I determined upon engraving at my leisure hours a *fac-simile* of anything I thought worth preserving. For some time I continued this course, reading such English authors as have written on the origin and early history of wood-engraving, and making memoranda, without proposing to myself any particular plan. It was not until I had proceeded thus far that I stopped to consider whether the information I had gleaned could not be applied to some specific purpose. . . . Although I had the hardihood to venture upon such an undertaking, it was not without a hope that the history of the art, with an account of the practice, illustrated with numerous wood-engravings, would be looked upon with indulgence."

Another work which Mr. Jackson projected would have been of service to that indefatigable illustrator of Northumbrian folk-speech, Mr. R. O. Heslop. It was a pictorial glossary of North-Country words. Brockett's book was to have been supplemented by numerous phrases and colloquial expressions, and the interest of the volume to have been enhanced by illustrations after the style of Bewick. For this undertaking he prepared several cuts, and collected a goodly number of words and phrases, but he did not live to complete it. His health had always been delicate; he was unable to take much exercise; and as he approached the prime of life one attack of illness quickly succeeded another till, on the 27th March, 1848, within a few weeks of his forty-seventh birthday, he succumbed to his maladies.

Several good examples of Mr. Jackson's skill are to be found in a volume of 150 selected engravings from the *Penny Magazine*, published in 1835, and referred to before a committee of the House of Commons as illustrating the progress and advantage of popular woodcut art. Others appear in the "Treatise on Wood Engraving," now known to students as "Jackson and Chatto." In the later editions of the book are specimens of the work of his son, Mr. Mason Jackson, who, inheriting his father's genius, achieved no small degree of success in his father's profession, and has published at least one useful book—the volume above quoted, entitled "The Pictorial Press: its Origin and Progress."

# Thomas Jackson,

VICAR OF NEWCASTLE.

"Learning, as well as office, is requisite for a minister. An unlearned scribe without his treasure of old and new is unfit to interpret God's oracles. 'The priest's lips should preserve knowledge,' is no less a precept to the minister, than a promise to the people. A minister without learning is a mere cipher which fills up a place, and increaseth the number, but signifies nothing."—T. ADAMS.

THOMAS JACKSON, the most eminent man that has filled the office of vicar of Newcastle, and one of the greatest divines that the Church of England has produced, was a native of the county of Durham. Born at Smelthouse, near Witton-le-Wear, the second son of Henry Jackson of that place, he was baptised in the church there on the 21st of December, 1579. It would appear that at an early age he lost his father; for the will of Henry Jackson, of Smelthouse, leaving "to Thomas, my second boye; all my lands that I have in Ferry-on-the-hill," bears date October 9th, 1587. Where the lad obtained his preliminary education is not stated. His friends, it is said, desired to bind him apprentice to some merchant in Newcastle, where his family had wealthy and influential connections, but his inclinations tended away from a mercantile career, and leaned towards a life of labour in the Church. Therefore, "at the instance of a noble lord," they sent him to Oxford to be trained for the ministry. He entered Queen's College at Midsummer Term, 1595, and the following spring was admitted a scholar of Corpus Christi, where he took his arts degrees, and in 1606 was elected a probationary Fellow. Proceeding D.D. in 1622, he left college for parish work at Winston among his Northern kindred. On the 27th November, 1623, on the eve of his forty-fourth birthday, he accepted, from the Bishop of Carlisle, an offer of the living of Newcastle.

Dr. Jackson was already favourably known throughout the kingdom by his writings. He had published at least four out of twelve separate treatises which he wrote for a great work on the Creed, and his settlement in the North occurred at a time when the district was singularly bare of eminent ecclesiastics. Neile, Bishop of Durham, welcomed him to his diocese, and gave him a dispensation to hold the rectory of Winston along with the vicarage of

Newcastle. Anthony Wood states that he was "much followed and admired in Newcastle for his excellent way of preaching, which was then puritanical." Edward Vaghan, who wrote the copious life of the doctor which is prefixed to an edition of his works in three thick folio volumes, adds that he was furnished with all the learned languages, arts, and sciences, but especially metaphysics, the "handmaid to Divinity," and, being thus equipped, "he was preferred to a living in the Bishoprick of Durham in their Donation, and from thence (with consent from the same College obtained, where no request could be denied him) removed to the Vicarage of Newcastle, a very populous Town, furnished with multitudes of men, and no small variety of Opinions. At Newcastle (when he went out) what money he had, he usually gave to the poor, who at length flocked so unto him, that his servant took care that he had not too much in his pocket. At a certain time, Dr. Henderson, the Towns Physician, his neighbour and intimate acquaintance (having made a Purchase), sitting sad by him, and fetching a sigh, he demanded what was the reason? He said that he had a payment to make, and wanted money: Dr. Jackson bad. him be of good chear, for he would furnish him; and calling for his servant, told him the Physicians need, and asked what money he had. The man stepping back silent, the Doctor bids him speak, at length the man said Forty shillings; he bad him fetch it, for Mr. Henderson should have it all: at which Mr. Henderson turned his sadness into laughter; Dr. Jackson demanded his reason: He said that he had need of Four hundred pound, or Five hundred pound. Dr. Jackson answered that he thought Forty shillings was a great sum, and that he should have it, and more also if he had it. Thus in a place of busie Trade and Commerce, his mind was intent upon better things, willing to spend and to be spent for Them, not seeking Theirs, but Them."

Dr. Jackson's life in Newcastle was, as Vaghan indicates, simple and unobtrusive, and therefore uneventful. To his great work on the Creed, and to the composition of sermons, he devoted the greater part of his time. The community among which he laboured admired him afar off; they knew him as a learned divine, and a great writer upon divine things, but the world in which he dwelt was not theirs. His interest in their public and commercial life was naturally small; his concern for their spiritual welfare, though warm and sympathetic, was not of that familiar pastoral character to which they had been

accustomed. Hence local historians take little or no notice of Dr. Jackson's career upon Tyneside; and most of that which we know about him is derived from the effusive pens of Wood and Vaghan. It is easy to see how the omission has arisen. Dr. Jackson was a most accomplished, exceedingly amiable, and highly cultivated man, the pride of his college, the ornament of his University, and one of the greatest preachers of his time. But for these very reasons he was unsuited to the work of a parish clergyman. His place was the divinity hall, the library, the lecture-room, and to these congenial spheres of activity he soon returned. When he had been seven years in Newcastle, the fellows of Corpus Christi elected him President, and surrendering parochial cares to Yeldard Alvey, he went to Oxford, and resumed the career which his tastes, his training, and his gifts marked out for him.

Dr. Jackson lived but ten years after his departure from Newcastle. He received valuable preferment in the Church during that time, the king and Archbishop Laud vieing with each other in doing him honour. A prebend at Winchester, a Royal chaplaincy, the vicarage of Witney, and the deanery of Peterborough came to him in rapid succession, and had he desired it he might have been a bishop. He died September 21st, 1640, and was buried in the inner chapel of his college.

"If you shall curiously Inquire what this Charitable man left in Legacy at his death," writes Vaghan, "I must needs answer that giving all in his Life time, as he owed nothing but Love, so he Left nothing when he Dyed. The Poor was his Heir, and he was the Administrator of his own Goods." Further, "As preferments were heaped upon him without his suit or knowledge, so there was nothing in his power to give, which he was not ready and willing to part withal, to the deserving or indigent man. His Vicarage of St. Nicholas Church in Newcastle he gave to Mr. Alvye of Trinity College, upon no other relation but out of the good opinion which he conceived of his merits. The Vicarage of Witny, neer Oxford, after he had been at much pains, travel, and expence to clear the Title of the Rectory to all succeeding Ministers, he freely bestowed it upon the worthy Mr. Thomas White. A College Lease of a place called Lye in Gloucestershire, presented to him as a gratuity by the Fellows, he made over to a third (late Fellow there), merely upon a Plea of Poverty. That which remained unto him was dispersed unto the Poor, to whom he was a faithful dispenser in all places of

his abode, distributing unto them with a free heart, a bountiful hand, a comfortable speech, and a chearful eye."

Anthony Wood, writing of Dr. Jackson's learning, states that he was "profoundly read in the fathers," and of "a wonderful and deep judgment." "None wrote more highly concerning the attributes of God, and more vigorous in some of his works against the Church of Rome than he. In a word, he was a man of a blameless life, studious, humble, courteous, and very charitable, devout towards God, and exemplary in private and public, beloved of Laud, archbishop of Canterbury," etc., etc. It is said that all the doctor's later preferments were attributable to Laud's friendship for him. Indeed, his appointment to the presidency of Corpus Christi College was one of the charges brought against Laud in after years. Laud's answer was that he believed Dr. Jackson to be learned, honest, and orthodox; to which it was replied that he might be both learned and honest, but for all that he was an Arminian, and in the eyes of Calvinistic Parliamentarians, to be an Arminian was a serious disqualification. The writer of the "Memoir of Ambrose Barnes," however, did not so regard it; he styles him "Our English Rabbi," one "whose learned works have perpetuated his memory," and so on.

The principal writings of Dr. Jackson were collected by Bernard Oley and published, with the life by Edward Vaghan above quoted, in 1673. They were re-issued in twelve octavo volumes by the Parker Society, Oxford, in 1844. A synoptical table of them appears in "Repertorium Theologicum," published by the Rev. J. H. Todd, M.A., in 1838. Among those which were published while he was Vicar of Newcastle are the following:—

"Christ's Ansvver vnto Iohn's Qvestion: Or An Introduction to the knowledge of Iesus Christ, and him crucified. Deliuered in certaine Sermons in the famous Towne of New-castle vpon Tine. By Thomas Iackson, Dr. of Diuinitie, Vicar of Saint Nicolas Church there, and Fellow of Corpus Christi College in Oxford." Sm. 4to. London, 1625. Dedicated to the Bp. of Durham. "From my Study in Corpus Christi Colledge in Oxon, Decemb. 20, 1624."

"A Treatise of the Holy Catholike Faith and Chvrch. Diuided into three Bookes. By Thomas Iackson, Dr. in Diuinitie, Chaplaine to his Maiestie, in Ordinarie, and Vicar of Saint Nicholas Church in the Towne of Newcastle-vpon-Tyne." Sm. 4to. London, 1627. Dedicated to Sir Richard Anderson, of Pendley, in Hertfordshire. "From my Vicarage in Newcastle-vpon-Tine this first of Januarie, 1626."

"A Treatise of the Divine Essence and Attribvtes. By Thomas Iackson, Vicar," etc. Sm. 4to. London, 1628. Dedicated to the Earl of Pembroke. "From my Study in Newcastle-vpon-Tine, November 20, 1627."

# William Jackson,

TOWN CLERK OF NEWCASTLE.

An active and influential man in his day was William Jackson, Town Clerk of Newcastle. He was born about the year 1561 or 1562, a son of John Jackson, scrivener, and his wife Jane, who, being daughter and heir of William Brigham, was related to the Mitfords, Lewinses, and other well-to-do Newcastle families. It does not appear that the scrivener was blessed with too much of this world's goods. Perhaps he had been unfortunate. In any case, in 1590 we find Alderman Barker forgiving him a debt, and about the same time William Jackson, the son, filling the position of a sergeant-at-mace under the Corporation. Sergeants-at-mace were officers who combined the duties of a constable and a bailiff, and the post being honourable, was frequently filled by members of respectable families. It is probable that William Jackson, having been trained to his father's profession of a scrivener, and being a member of the fraternity of hostmen, and able to transact business that his colleagues were incompetent to handle, was at the head of the sergeantry. The close confidence to which he was admitted, and the importance of the missions upon which he was engaged, seem to justify that inference, for we find him, at the date above mentioned, acting in London, as a sort of solicitor for the Corporation, and on his way to, if he had not already obtained, the town clerkship.

The municipal authorities in Newcastle at this period of their history were in much tribulation. Under circumstances described on page 70 of our first volume, the "grand lease" of the manors of Gateshead and Whickham, and of the coals lying thereunder, had been assigned to certain prominent citizens for the benefit of the burgesses at large; and the way in which the "grand lessees" used, or rather misused, their powers, was the theme of endless complaint, criticism, and abuse. One Kingsmote brought an action against the "grand lessees" in 1590, and William Jackson, knowing the law, and knowing also the "inns and outs" of the coal trade, was able to be of great service. He was sent to London to protect the interests of the town, and no doubt he did his work to the satisfaction of those who sent him. The municipal accounts for 1591 show that he was

engaged in it for six weeks:—"Paide to William Jackson, for his charrges to London about the townes busines and for paymente of lawiers fees from the 29th of October untill the 10th of December, being 42 daies, 4s. daie, 8*l* 8s. 0d., and for law fees, and other charrges, 10*l* 18s. 7d., as followeth: Paide for post horses for his . . . carryinge home, 17s. 4d.; paide to Mr. Hickes, to make enquirie what the deane of Yorke had done eyther with the Queene, or his lord and master, 20s.; paid to Mr. Godfraie, Mr. Harris, and Mr. Vaughanne, for drawing, writtinge, and perusinge the booke for the courte, and the questions in paper, 4*l* 10s. 0d.; paide for a dynner and a super, and other charrges when the booke was perused, 19s. 3d.; paide for the presentmente booke, 7s. 4d.; paid to Mr. Spencer and his men for seekinge the recordes in Morrison's office for 500 yeares, how the dead streete was answered, and for copies of some parte of the originall, 22s.—19*l* 6s. 7d."

Shortly before this date, Mr. Jackson had been appointed clerk to the local commission for reporting recusants and apprehending seminary priests, and in October, 1592, he received £3 6s. 8d. "for taking paines" in the execution of his office during three years. At the same time there was "paide to Mr. John Oldam att London for 61 yeardes of brode cloth for the seriauntes and Wm. Jackson's lyverie, att 8s. 8d. per iiarde, 26*l* 8s. 8d."

This entry indicates either that William Jackson was a sergeant-at-mace, or other subordinate officer still, or that the Corporation dressed the town clerks in livery. Within a few years afterwards he was undoubtedly Town Clerk. How his promotion was obtained is set forth in one of the petitions against the "grand lessees" with which the Council of State was worried at this time. The petitioners, some of whom were aldermen, and others members of the municipal body, accused the holders of the grand lease of favouritism, jobbery, and self-aggrandisement in the administration of their trust. William Jackson, it was alleged, had been the pliant instrument of their iniquities, and he had received the reward of his subserviency in the shape of the town clerkship, purchased for him as they thought, although they did not boldly say so much, with the town's money. In one of the petitions, dated 1597 (see vol. i. p. 73), all this, and much more, comes out:—"There is neither recorder, nor other good lawyer to judge uprightly, or to give advice therein, but one William Jackson, the other day a common sergeant-at-mace of small education, who hath lately bought the Town Clerk's office, chiefly

by the means of Mr. Anderson and the grand lessees, for that he is the principal broker for them in all their matters, and, therefore, doth what he lists, extorting new fees upon the poor burgesses, whereof complaint hath been made in open guild."

Another allegation against him was that no satisfactory account could be obtained of his expenses when away from home, though that charge is scarcely borne out by the extract from the municipal accounts just quoted, or by the following excerpt from the same source; in both of them the items appear to be given with remarkable candour, considering that some of them were for "presents" to secretaries and other persons of influence:—"Paide Mr. William Jackson, towne clarke, for his charges to London to the earle of Essex [and] to the lord treasurer touching Mr. Rumford, as also into Yorkshire to Mr. Recorder [Sir John Saville] for advice toucheinge the office of the watter sargante, challenged by the lord Admirall, and aboute the busines of this corporation in which busines is disbursed as followith, viz., paide to the earle of Essex for his first yeares anutye granted by this corporation 6*l* 13s. 4d.; more for change of money into gold, o*l* 2s. od.; for a velvett purse, 10s.; given to his secretarye, 2*l*; given to my Lord Treasurer's secretarye, 1*l* 10s. od.; paid by direction of Mr. Maior for counsell and advice in sundrie causes belonginge to this towne, 3*l* 4s. 4d.; for his horses and his owne charges for 44 daies at 7s. 6d.—16*l* 10s.; paide for boate in repareinge to the courte, 20s. Totallis, 30*l* 19s. 8d., whereof the towne hath paide 20*l*."

The dispute was ended by the lessees assigning the "grand lease" to the mayor and burgesses in 1599, and by the grant of Queen Elizabeth's charter the year following. In the "Great Charter," as it was called, William Jackson is named twice, first as "Clerk of the Crown," to which office he was appointed for life, and second as a member of the guild of Hostmen—a guild which, by this document, was for the first time constituted a body corporate. He had become wealthy; on the 18th December, 1602, he was able to acquire from Thomas Arrowsmith, of Staindrop, a mansion and several parcels of land at Cotham Mundeville, near Aycliffe—the usual preliminary step towards the foundation of a county family. A few years later he assigned the town clerkship to William Simpson, one of his friends, who, like himself, had been roughly handled by the petitioners of 1597. So, at least, must be inferred from an entry in the register of burials at St. Nicholas' Church, in which the inter-

ment of Simpson on the 19th May, 1609, appears as that of "William Simpson, Towne Clarke." Simpson was "clerk of the chamber" in 1602, and Jackson is named in the will of Jane, widow of Christopher Mitford, a former mayor, dated October 16th, 1606, as "my cousin William Jackson, town clerk." The transfer must have taken place between those dates, and if Simpson bought the office as Jackson is alleged to have done, and as we know their successors did, he cannot have enjoyed it long.

At this point a break occurs in the historical continuity of William Jackson's career. Relieved of the town clerkship, he drops out of sight for a time. From 1606 to 1621 his name does not appear in local annals, nor in any documents to which students of Newcastle history have had access. The omission covers very nearly the period in which Sir John Jackson filled a high office in the town—that of Recorder. Why it should be so is not apparent, but the coincidence is certainly curious.

According to a pedigree published by Surtees in his "History of Durham," William Jackson married Isabel, daughter of Gilbert Read, of Newcastle, and had by her two sons and a daughter. The daughter, Judith, married Abraham Booth, merchant; one of the sons, Henry, married Dorothy Mansfield, and settled upon his father's property at Cotham Mundeville; the other son is described by Surtees as Sir John Jackson, of the Inner Temple, who married Elizabeth, eldest daughter and co-heir of Sir John Saville, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, and for a time Recorder of Newcastle. We know, from different sources, that there were at least two other children, issue of William Jackson—Anne, who became the wife of Roger Anderson, of Jesmond, and William, who was buried at All Saints', in September, 1602. But in no local record other than Surtees' history is any relationship alleged between William Jackson, town clerk, and Sir John Jackson. Hunter, in the "History of South Yorkshire," publishes a pedigree of the Jacksons of Hickleton, wherein Sir John Jackson, who married Elizabeth Saville, is described as the son of John Jackson, of Edderthorpe, near Darfield, by his wife Ellen, daughter of John Wilkinson, of Bolton-on-Dearne. The pedigree of Jackson, of Newcastle, in the Visitation of 1615, which it is to be presumed was supplied by William Jackson himself, to the satisfaction of St. George, Norroy King of Arms, names "John Jackson of Grayes Inn" as the "2nd sonne" of the Town Clerk; while Foster's "Gray's Inn Admission Register" shows that "John

Jackson, son of William J. of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, gent.," was admitted a member of Gray's Inn on the 10th of May, 1613—four years after Sir John Jackson had become Recorder of Newcastle.

Leaving these doubts unsolved, but with a strong suspicion that Surtees was mistaken, we may resume the narrative by noting that Sir John Jackson filled the office of Recorder of Newcastle, in succession to his father-in-law, Sir John Saville, from 1609 to 1621, and that upon his resignation or retirement, William Jackson's name appears again in local history. It occurs in a subsidy roll of that same year, 1621. He was assessed to the subsidy in All Saints' parish on a goods value of 13s. 4d.—an amount which indicates a comparatively good position, for in the whole town were only eight persons whose goods bore a higher assessment. The following year he gave evidence before a commission appointed to hear a dispute between the farmers of the coal dues and the Mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, respecting a due of 2d. a chaldron. He described himself as sixty years of age, and testified that in a previous dispute of this character, heard before the Lords of the Council at York House, he and Mr. Chapman, alderman, had acted as solicitors for the town, and that the right of the town to the due had been admitted. A few months later, in April, 1623, Robert Ledger, the sheriff, died, and William Jackson, presumably the ex-town clerk, filled his place until the next election occurred at Michaelmas. At that election Henry Bowes was chosen Sheriff; but in May following he also died, and again the complaisant William Jackson performed the duties for the rest of the term. Before the year was out another commission, which sat on the vexed question of the coal dues, had William Jackson before them as a witness for the town. That was his last recorded appearance. He died on the 8th of August, 1630, and was buried in St. Nicholas' Church, under a tombstone which bore the following inscription:—

"Here lyeth the body of Will. Jackson, Esq., and sometime shiriff of this town. He departed to the mercy of God, 8th August, 1630. And also Judith Booth, his daughter, wife was to Abraham Booth, merchant adventurer. She departed 4th January, 1630."

# Sir Ralph Jenison,

MERCHANT AND COAL-OWNER.

THREE sons of Robert Jenison, a Yorkshire squire, leaving their paternal home near Selby in the early part of the sixteenth century, and coming northwards, founded families that afterwards acquired distinction in the counties of Northumberland and Durham. From Thomas, the eldest son, issued the Jenisons of Low Walworth; from William, the second son, came the Jenisons of Hurworth and Neasham Abbey; from Ralph, the youngest of the three, descended the Jenisons of Newcastle and Elswick. Thomas Jenison, inheriting his father's wealth, bought Walworth, and lived the life of a country gentleman there; William and Ralph were merchants in Newcastle.

Ralph Jenison (1), third son of the Yorkshire squire, married, November 20th, 1576, Margaret, daughter of Cuthbert Hunter of Newcastle, merchant, and widow of Andrew Bewick. During his brother's lifetime he took no active part in municipal affairs, but three years afterwards, at Michaelmas, 1590, he accepted the office of Sheriff. In 1596 he succeeded to the Mayoralty, and was elected Governor of the Merchants' Company. The following spring, on Whit-Monday, when but half-way through his year of office, he died. Two sons survived—William Jenison, merchant and alderman, who married Alice Matfen, and died in August, 1634, and Robert Jenison, D.D., Puritan vicar of Newcastle.

Ralph Jenison (2), afterwards Sir Ralph Jenison, of Elswick and Walworth, was the second son of William Jenison and Alice Matfen, and therefore grandson of Ralph Jenison (1) and nephew of Dr. Jenison, the Puritan vicar. Born in September, 1613, he was fortunate enough to escape the perils of plague and pestilence, and avoiding the common risks of mortality, to live right through the most stirring periods of English history—the Civil Wars, the Restoration, the Revolution, and the reign of William and Mary. When he died, April 3rd, 1701, he had entered his eighty-eighth year, and had seen more than most men of subversion in Church and State, interruption of commerce and industry, and disturbance in municipal administration.

Like his father, Ralph Jenison had devoted his early manhood to mercantile pursuits. Combining, as did so many members of

leading families in Newcastle, the business of a merchant adventurer with that of a coal-owner, he was a prosperous, and probably a wealthy citizen. In after-life, Ambrose Barnes heard him boast of "the success of his returns in trade," which were so great that, "though he had sometimes many thousand pounds at once in ventures abroad, he never lost a penny at sea." But when local industry was crippled, navigation suspended, and the coal trade ruined by civil war, he turned his attention to public affairs. He was not a strong adherent of either of the great factions that fought for mastery in those terrible times. His name does not appear in any of the violent contentions which characterised their fratricidal struggle. Such leanings as he had were probably towards the Puritans and Parliament men, with which his uncle, the vicar, had identified himself. They, at any rate, thought so. For in the autumn of 1648, when their triumph was assured, and all the avenues to place and power were in their hands, they elected him (with Thomas Bonner, one of their strongest partisans, as Mayor) to the Shrievalty of Newcastle.

Ralph Jenison's election as Sheriff occurred on Monday, the 5th of October, and a fortnight later he participated in an important ceremony. Oliver Cromwell, returning South from the re-taking of Berwick, stayed three days in Newcastle. The victorious leader of the Parliamentary army entered the town with his officers on Saturday, the 17th, and was received with "very great acknowledgments of love," accompanied by "many guns, and the ringing of bells." On the evening of the 19th he was "sumptuously feasted" by Mayor Bonner, at his house on the Sandhill, while tar barrels and links illuminated the darkness, the church bells sent out joyous peals, and the town waits, standing on the foot-bridge that spanned the Lort Burn, regaled the guests with local music. Another duty pertaining to that year's Shrievalty was not so agreeable. Twenty-one prisoners, tried at the Assizes, were left for execution in Newcastle. Of what crimes they were convicted is not stated; but they were hung, and unless Sir Arthur Hazlerigg, the military governor of the town, or his deputy, Lieut.-Col. Paul Hobson (founder of the Baptists in the North of England), superintended the execution, that unpleasant duty must have been discharged by Mr. Sheriff Jenison.

When, by the establishment of a Commonwealth, commercial affairs had taken a favourable turn, Mr. Jenison's interest in municipal matters subsided for a while. He even ran the risk of

displeasing his colleagues in the governing body by his enterprise. Brand quotes from the books of the Common Council an entry showing that, in June, 1657, a complaint had been lodged against him and against William Wallis, for having, as coal-owners, diverted a third part of the water usually coming to the public pants in Newcastle, by sinking below the level of the water-course. Mr. Jenison was threatened with a prosecution, but upon his submission, and staying the workings, proceedings were suspended. A later entry, dated September in the same year, indicates that harmony had been restored, for it states that "Mr. Ralph Jenison, in Common Council, gave leave to the town to make a trench to hinder the rain water that came off the ridges, and fell into the water-course in the Quarry Close, to the great prejudice of the water."

After the Restoration, Mr. Jenison came to the front again. Accepting the Monarchy, as he had accepted the Commonwealth, with no show of either favour or distrust, he secured the confidence of the Royalist leaders, and was marked out for a share of the honours which, once more, had become theirs to distribute. At Michaelmas, 1668, he was elected Mayor of Newcastle, with "Robert" Jenison (who may have been either his own son, his brother, or his cousin, a son of the old vicar) as Sheriff.

The irony of fate brought to Ralph Jenison the task of watching and repressing some later developments of the party under whose auspices he had occupied the Shrievalty twenty years before. The Conventicle Act was in operation, and he, being chief magistrate, was charged with its execution. Bishop Cosin, knowing his antecedents, was suspicious that the Act was not enforced in Newcastle as it ought to be, and he communicated his fears to the King, to Archdeacon Basire, and lastly to the Mayor himself. He had heard that conventicles were frequently held in the town, under the very eyes of the magistrates, and that at one of them the wife of the Mayor was present, and he urged that the law should be more rigidly enforced, so that these "seditious meetings" might be dispersed, and the ring-leaders of them appropriately punished. Mr. Jenison and the aldermen replied to the angry prelate that they had put the law in motion whenever they had sufficient information of its infringement, and that if any offenders had not been punished, it was for want of sufficient evidence to ensure a conviction. To which the Bishop answered, in a sarcastic letter, dated London, December 22nd, 1668:—

"I am glad to find that you declare your readiness to put the Laws in execution against Conventicles, and unlawfull assemblies for pretended religious worship in that town whereinto both you and myselfe are in this case intrusted to have a particular and diligent inspection. But, on the other side, I am sorry to hear from you that you have had neither any information, nor any evidence given you agst such unlawfull assemblies in your Town, when the noteriety of the fact, by their numerous meeting at your Barber-Chirurgeons' Hall, upon All-Saints' Day last, being Sunday the 1st day of November, was such, that it was voic'd and made known to all the Town and Country about; notice being also taken what speciall Psalme, or New Rejoycing Song, they then chose and applied to themselves, as 'Holy Saints,' of 'bearing a double edged Sword in their Hands to bind Kings in chains, and Lords in iron bands'; of which notorious and unlawfull meeting both myselfe and divers others here at this distance were shortly after informed; and I tooke the best care I could thereupon to have an address made unto you, Mr. Major, by a speciall person under my Episcopall Jurisdiction, to desire you that you would not suffer any such scandalous and offensive meeting to be held among you, contrary to the known laws of this Church and Realm of England, and greatly indangering the publick peace thereof. And this I did before I acquainted his Majestie or his principall Secretaries with it: Neither was there any letter sent to you and the Aldermen from his Majestie concerning this matter before a second information came both to my selfe, and Mr. Brabant (one of your own Society), of another numerous and unlawfull meeting at one of the ringleaders' houses, upon the 25th of November, wherein they appointed and kept a Fast, with preaching and praying, which they held out from 8 of clock in the morning till 4 in the evening, the work being held forth by their four chief leaders and abettors, Mr. Gilpine, Mr. Durant, Mr. Leaver, and Mr. Pringle. Of all which surely you had, or might have had, knowledg; and if you had not, you will give me leave to say, without offence, that many of your Townsmen are very backward in discovering to you, and attesting their knowledg of such disorderly assemblies, and that you are very great strangers to the affaires and disturbances of your owne Town, the government whereof, under his Majesty, is committed to your care."

A few months after this gibing letter had been written, the famous raid of Cuthbert Nicholson, town sergeant, and "Parson John Shaw,"

of St. John's, upon the house of Dr. Gilpin, in the White Friars, came off. "Before Ralph Jenison, Mayor of Newcastle," the indomitable Nicholson told his story, and laid information against Dr. Gilpin's congregation, including five ex-mayors and four ex-sheriffs of Newcastle, and eccentric John Pigg, the town surveyor. What became of the information is not stated, but the result was not satisfactory to the Bishop, for, on the 6th of August, he wrote again to Ralph Jenison and his colleagues, giving them a final warning to put the law against conventicles in execution. "I would faine vindicate the Towne of Newcastle," so his lordship wrote, "from the foule imputation of being the nursery of faction in these Northern parts, which, as things now stand, I cannot do; but rather must, and according to my duty will, report the contrary to the King and his Counsell, and then any one may easily foresee the evill consequences." Mayor Jenison and the Corporation appear to have resented these reiterated lecturings from the Bishop, for when, a few days later, his lordship requested them to appoint Robert Bonner, of Hartburn, to the curacy of St. Andrew's parish, they deliberately ignored his nominee, and elected another man.

Turning from great events to small, it may be noted that during Ralph Jenison's mayoralty, the Glass House Bridge, a wooden structure spanning the Ouseburn, was rebuilt of stone, by Thomas Wrangham, shipwright, "on account of Lands which the Town let him." Thomas Wrangham was a person of importance in those days. In the old church of All Saints' the historian Bourne read his epitaph:—"Under the adjacent Marble is inter'd the Body of Thomas Wrangham, the famous and beloved Ship-builder of this Town. . . . He built Five and Forty Sail of Ships, and dyed of a Feaver in the 42d Year of his Age, May the 26th, 1689. He was a man of a most generous Temper, of a plain and unaffected Conversation, and a sincere and hearty Lover of his Friend."

Admitted to his freedom on the 15th May, 1648, Alderman Ralph Jenison, three months after his election to the Mayoralty, was appointed Governor of the Hostmen's Company. That important position he held for six successive years, retiring at the end of that time in favour of his cousin Thomas, son, by the second marriage, of Dr. Jenison, the vicar. Two years later (May 18th, 1677), he was knighted at Whitehall, and shortly afterwards withdrew from public life. Acquiring Walworth from the elder branch of the Jenison family, he found sufficient occupation in superintending

his estates, and municipal matters interested him no more. Within six months of attaining his eighty-eighth year, he died, and a few days later his remains were brought to St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, for interment.

Sir Ralph Jenison was twice married. By his first wife, Barbara, daughter of Henry Bowes, of Newcastle, and sister of Sir Francis Bowes, of Thornton, he had issue—Robert Jenison, of Elswick, from whom descended Ralph Jenison, M.P., and Master of the Buckhounds to George II.; Henry, a merchant; William, town clerk of Newcastle; and Barbara, wife of William Widdrington, of Cheeseburn Grange. By his second wife, Jane, daughter of Ralph Carr, of Newcastle, and widow of Samuel Rawlings, Ambrose Barnes's master, he had no children.

## Robert Jenison,

VICAR OF NEWCASTLE.

ROBERT JENISON, son of Ralph Jenison (1), and Margaret Hunter (widow of Andrew Bewick), his wife, was born at his father's house in Newcastle, in 1581 or 1582. The school at which he was educated, and the University in which he was trained and took his degrees, are not known. When he was about thirty years of age, in June, 1611, King James I., uniting the hospital of St. Mary Magdalene to the chapel of St. Thomas à Becket at the north end of Tyne Bridge, granted a charter of incorporation to the conjoined foundations, and appointed "the Rev. Robert Jenison, M.A.," to be their first master. Within a few years of his appointment it was discovered that he was a preacher of remarkable ability. The parishioners of Allhallows', or All Saints', appreciating his talents, induced him to undertake a weekly lecture in their church, and his ministrations among them proved so acceptable, that they took special means to reward him for his exertions and to retain his services. At a vestry meeting held the day after Christmas, 1622, "a motion was made by the Churchwardens to the Right Worshipful Sir Peter Ridall, Knt., and the rest of the Four-and-Twentie that 'Whereas Mr. Doctor Jenison, now present Lecturer, whose paines and labours in this parish is extraordinary amongst us, for better incuradgment of his sayd paynes, we whose names be here under

written ar content willinglie to pay quarterlie those severall sumes under mentioned for his stypand.'" The "severall sumes" amounted altogether to £10 5s. 0d.

The year before this generous appreciation of his work was recorded in the Church Books of All Saints', Dr. Jenison had ventured into print, issuing what the unknown biographer of Ambrose Barnes describes as "a book not unlearned," entitled, "The Height of Israel's Heathenish Idolatrie." The year after that occurrence, he published a second volume, "The Cities Safetie: A Treatise Useful for these Dangerous Times." Written in the argumentative and expansive style of the period, these books added considerably to his reputation, and attracted towards him, not only the parishioners of All Saints', but residents in other parishes, and dwellers round about. John Blakiston, afterwards M.P. for Newcastle and one of the regicides, was among those who deserted their own churches to sit under Dr. Jenison. During the inquiry that followed the notable quarrel between Blakiston and Vicar Alvey at Barbara Carr's wedding, in 1635, it was alleged that Blakiston, although a parishioner of St. Nicholas', had not for four or five years taken the sacrament there, but "oftener repaired to Allhallows' than to St. Nicholas'"—the inference being that he preferred the preaching of Dr. Jenison to that of Mr. Alvey, or rather that the teachings of the lecturer of All Saints' were more in accordance with his advanced views, than those of the High Church vicar.

In 1636 a great outburst of plague occurred in the North of England. It reached Newcastle in May that year, and raged with such fury that 114 persons died of it in the first fortnight, and, by the end of the winter, 5,037 inhabitants of the town had perished. Dr. Jenison, who about this time obtained a Thursday evening lectureship at St. Nicholas', improved the occasion by writing a book with the long-drawn title of—

"Newcastle's Call, To her Neighbour and Sister Townes and Cities throughout the Land, to take warning by her Sins and Sorrowes. Lest this overflowing scourge of Pestilence reach even unto them also. As also a Direction how to discover such sins as are the procurers of God's judgments by divers methods. By R. Jenison, Dr. of D. Whereunto is added the number of them that dyed weekely in Newcastle and Garth-side from May 6 to December 31, 1636. London: Printed for Robert Milbourne, at the signe of the Vnicorne, neere to Fleet Bridge." 252 pp.

It was not without reason that John Blakiston preferred the ministrations of Dr. Jenison. The doctor had been gradually drifting,

with increasing numbers of his fellow-townsmen, in the direction of Puritanism, and his sympathies with the Scottish people in their opposition to the king and High Church party were beginning to find open expression. The loyal authorities, alarmed at the progress of anti-prelatical opinion in the town, attempted to check the movement by bringing pressure upon him. Private remonstrance proving ineffectual, they reported him to his suffragan and to the king. In the early part of 1639, his opinions, his teachings, and his ministerial practices were the subject of investigation before Sir Jacob Astley (who had been sent to secure the town against a possible surprise from the Scots), the Mayor (Alexander Davison), and Alderman John Marley. The doctor's answers were not to their liking, nor to that of the king, and the inquiry ended in his suspension.

While he was under suspension articles were exhibited against him in the Ecclesiastical Court at York, in which he was formally charged with omitting to use the sign of the cross in baptism; administering the communion to persons not kneeling; omitting to read service in surplice and hood before sermon; preaching against bowing at the name of Jesus; holding meetings for discourses in divinity and extemporary prayer; having conference with Scotch covenanters, etc., etc. Archbishop Neile had an interview with the doctor on these matters, and received such explanations as enabled him to write to the king in his favour. His Majesty thereupon consented to Dr. Jenison resuming his ministrations, but subject to conditions which the doctor was unable to accept. A further meeting with the Archbishop did not end so favourably as the first. Dr. Jenison refused to follow the king's directions, and the disappointed prelate dismissed him with these words:—"I do not either set you at liberty to go to Newcastle, or prohibit your going thither. Had you submitted yourself to his Majesty's directions you might have gone thither; but as you refuse, I think his Majesty will not be pleased with it; and remember that you stand suspended."

Dr. Jenison had reason to remember, for all the efforts that were made by him and his friends to obtain a withdrawal of his suspension were unavailing. Meanwhile, the cause that he had espoused was spreading with remarkable celerity. Sympathisers with his views were strong enough on the Michaelmas Monday following his suspension to put his half-brother, Robert Bewick, a pronounced Puritan, into the Mayoralty, and to make John Emerson, another Puritan, Sheriff. Five days after this election, which was construed

into an act of defiance to the king, a Royal mandate was sent to the Corporation of Newcastle, directing them to appoint Dr. Wishart, a Scottish prelatist, to the lectureship of All Saints' and St. Nicholas', in the room of Dr. Jenison, "suspended for nonconformity, and to be questioned for sundry other misdemeanours."

After deprivation Dr. Jenison returned to his kindred in Newcastle. His presence in the scene of his triumphs was a cause of great uneasiness to the Royalist party. The Bishop of Durham remonstrated, and desired him to leave the district; to which he answered that he held no secret conventicles, nor did anything to the king's disservice; that by his suspension and deprivation himself, his wife, and children were "undone," and that he was also in bodily infirmity; "yet in obedience to his Majesty's pleasure he would prepare himself, as soon as he could, to remove his dwelling, as the season of the year, his health, and poor means might enable him to do it." He did remove, some time in the summer of 1640, to Dantzic, where he ministered to a small flock for a small stipend, and waited the turn of events. In the meantime his Newcastle congregation became clamorous for his recall. At a vestry meeting in All Saints' in the spring of 1641, "A letter, signed by the Mayor and all the aldermen at present within the Town, for the calling home of Doctor Jenison, our ancient pastor, was read and approved of every person here present, who also have testified their willingness and great desire to have him again return unto us, by signing the said letter, and are willing to confirm him in his former place here, and continue their benevolence as heretofore."

Later, on the 10th of September, the vestry met at seven in the morning, and "with one consent absolutely refused to admit of Dr. George Wiseheart to be a preacher in this parish." In this proceeding they were justified by the House of Commons, by whose orders in June, 1642, Dr. Wishart was formally deprived of his appointment. The following month Dr. Jenison returned to England, but not to stay. Writing afterwards he stated that, "Upon notice of a time then set [July, 1642] for the sitting of the Assembly of Divines, I undertook a long and tedious, as also hazardous voyage; but arriving and finding that the King's consent to their assembling was expected and relied upon, and it very unlikely to be got, upon leave obtained I hastened to return unto my poor flock at Dantzigk, and was content with some expence of time and money to undergo the same hazards."

The siege and capture of Newcastle, in October, 1644, enabled the friends of Dr. Jenison to realise their wishes. Their hero came back to a higher position than he occupied before. The House of Commons, at its sitting on the 5th of December, in that year, resolved—"That Dr. Jenison be restored to the Place and Advantages he formerly had and enjoyed in the Town of Newcastle, and to the Vicarage of Newcastle in the Place of Mr. Alvey, removed for his Delinquency; with all the Profits and Advantages thereunto belonging; in as full and ample Manner as the said Mr. Alvey might or ought to have enjoyed the same."

At home again, and among his triumphant friends, Dr. Jenison had full scope to promulgate the principles for which he had suffered suspension, deprivation, and exile. On the 16th February, 1645, he was at the Trinity House, administering the Covenant, for which the grateful brethren gave him 30s., paying, at the same time, "for beer which was bestowed upon Mr. Thwing, schoolmaster, while he was writing the Covenant in parchment, 1s. 6d." In July following, the Common Council appointed him to his old post of Thursday's lecturer, and allowed him a salary of £100, which they increased a few months later to £140. As Vicar, he must have taken a lively interest in the discussion between King Charles and Alexander Henderson, who was sent by the Covenanters to Newcastle in May, 1646, to convert the king to Presbyterianism, and possibly was present when the episode of the psalm occurred (if ever it did occur), and the people sang the king's selection in preference to that of the preacher. Three weeks before Henderson's arrival, on the occasion of a public fast, he had delivered in St. Nicholas' a notable sermon, which in 1648 he published under the title of—

"The Return of the Sword, or a Divine Prognostick Delivered in a Sermon at Newcastle: Manifesting that breach of Covenant is a Prognostick of the return of the Sword. By Robert Jenison, Dr. of D. Levit. 26, 25. I will bring a Sword upon you that shal avenge the Quarrel of my Covenant. Ezek. 17, 18, 19. Seeing he hath despised the Oath by breaking the Covenant (when lo! he had given his hand) he shal not escape. As I live, saith the Lord, surely mine Oath that he hath despised, and my Covenant that he hath broken, even it wil I recompence on his own head. London: Printed by John Macock, for Luke Fawne, at the sign of the Parrot in Pauls Church-yard." Small quarto, 36 pp.

Another book, consisting of "Sermon Notes," preached at two Ordinations, that of Mr. William Henderson, April 13th, 1649, and

that of Mr. John Brabant, June 9th, 1649, was issued by the Doctor about the time that Hopkins, the witchfinder, was enacting those disgraceful scenes in Newcastle Guildhall which Ralph Gardiner describes in "England's Grievance Discovered." He also published—

"The Faithfull Depository of Sound Doctrine and Antient Truths, maintained against all oppositions of Science, falsely so-called, and against the Prophane and vaine Bablings of unsound Teachers: Or a Treatise on the 1 Tim. 6, 20. By R. J., Dr. D.—With the Author's Farewell to his Hearers, Readers, if not to the World." Newcastle: Printed by S. B., 1649. 50 pp.

This book the author dedicated "To the Reverend his Brethren and honoured Friends of the Classis of the Town and County of Newcastle-upon-Tine," and the dedication concludes with—"So I rest and remaine still the same in this mine old age [67 years], that is, the Lord Christ's, yours, and the Churches' servant—R. Jenison." It was the last volume which the Doctor wrote, and probably the last effort of his pen, though he put his name to the letter sent by his brother Ministers to Cromwell, complaining of the Arminian and Socinian teachings of Captain Robert Everard. How many books Dr. Jenison wrote from first to last has not been recorded. Besides those which are enumerated in the course of this narrative, three, unknown elsewhere, appear in William London's "Catalogue of the most Vendible Books in England" for sale at his shop in Newcastle in 1657, namely—

"Of Compunction, or Pricking of Heart; the Time, Means, Nature, Necessity, and Order of it, and of Conversion." 4to.

"A Treatise of God's Promises touching the Elect, and concerning the extent of Christ's death." 12mo.

"The Apparelling of Christ." 8vo.

Little more remains to be written of Dr. Jenison's career. He occurs in 1647 as owner of the land upon which the convent of the White Friars stood, and as receiving from the Corporation annually a pound of pepper, in acknowledgment that that part of the town wall which ran by it had been erected on the ground of the convent. In 1649, he was admitted a member of the Society of Hostmen, and in September of that year the Common Council agreed to hold him harmless "from delapidations concerning the vicarage house," which had been badly injured during the siege. He died on the 6th November, 1652, and on the 8th was buried beside his father in his own church of St. Nicholas.

Dr. Jenison was twice married. His first wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. Favour, a York divine, by whom he had one son, Robert, a Newcastle merchant, and two daughters, Elizabeth and Mary, married the same day (May 8th, 1649), Elizabeth to Henry Bowes, and Mary to Peter Sanderson, Sheriff of Newcastle in 1651-52. His second wife was Barbara Sanderson, sister of his son-in-law, who brought him one son, Thomas (Sheriff 1661-62, Mayor 1674-75), and, surviving him, became the wife of John Emerson, the Sheriff of 1639-40 before mentioned, and Mayor in 1660-61.

Whenever the future historian of Newcastle deals with the intermarriages of local families, he will devote a page to the marital connections of the Jenisons. He will point out that the second wife of Dr. Jenison (a daughter of Samuel Sanderson) married for her second husband John Emerson; that her only son by the Doctor, Thomas Jenison, was united to John Emerson's daughter; that the Doctor's two daughters by his first wife were married on the same day—Mary to Peter Sanderson, her stepmother's brother, and Elizabeth to Henry Bowes; and that Barbara Bowes, the first wife of Sir Ralph Jenison, was Henry Bowes's first cousin. He will also describe how Sir Ralph and Jane Rawlings were bereaved of their respective partners in the same week of July, 1656; how the dead wife and the deceased husband were buried at St. Nicholas' within three days of each other; and how, on the 8th October in the same year, the widower and the widow celebrated their nuptials in the same church that, only three months before, had witnessed their mourning, if not their sorrow.

## William Jenison,

### FATHER AND SON.

WILLIAM JENISON, second son of the Yorkshire squire, having served his time with a Newcastle merchant adventurer, took up his freedom, married Barbara, one of the daughters of Ralph Carr, and started business for himself. His marriage, bringing him into relationship with the Carrs, the Andersons, and other notable Newcastle families, introduced him to public life, and encouraged him to take a share in

the municipal government of the town. At Michaelmas, 1568, he undertook the duties of Sheriff, received an alderman's gown shortly afterwards, and in the spring of 1571 he was elected one of the representatives of Newcastle in Parliament. This Parliament, the third of Queen Elizabeth's reign, was summoned for important business, and as soon as the elections were over, on the 2nd April, 1571, the members assembled at Westminster. On the 10th of that month William Jenison, if he happened to be present, heard the Speaker recite "a commandment from the Queen's Majesty to spend little time in Motions, and to avoid long Speeches." With such commendable diligence were her Majesty's commands obeyed, that on the 29th of May the session ended, and the Queen gave her assent to forty-one Acts, which had been passed in as many days!

At the annual mayor-choosing on Michaelmas Monday following, Mr. Jenison was made chief magistrate of Newcastle, and he was occupying that position when the burgesses sent him again to serve them at Westminster. Queen Elizabeth allowed the Parliament elected upon this occasion to continue for eleven years (though it sat but three or four times during that wide interval), and so long did Mr. Jenison continue to represent Newcastle. Meanwhile he was a defendant in protracted litigation instigated by a brother alderman, Richard Hodgson, respecting a waste called Fithey or Fitburn Moor, near Kenton, rights of turbary at Benwell, and common land rights at Scotswood. In the Exchequer Rolls are long details of the proceedings, valuable for reference when questions affecting privilege of turf and common are under discussion, but of no interest here. By the time the dispute was fairly settled, Mr. Jenison was for the second time Mayor of Newcastle (1581-82); and when Parliament was dissolved, and a general election was ordered (1584), he went back for the third time to Westminster. To the succeeding Parliament, elected in October, 1586, he did not go, and before the next one assembled he was beyond the reach of the Queen's writs or the Sheriff's returns. On the 2nd July, 1587, he was buried in the church of St. Nicholas, Newcastle, with appropriate solemnity.

William Jenison's will is preserved at Durham, and it is a document of a somewhat peculiar character. Barbara, his widow, is made sole executrix, and the will contains but one bequest, *i.e.*, a house in the Side to his daughter Isabel, and her husband, George Simpson,

draper. The rest of his property, it is to be presumed, went to his son and heir, William Jenison (2). What that property was we know from the inventory. Besides the mansion in Newcastle, he had a house at Thorpe, and another at Haswell; corn and cattle at Benwell, Haswell, Eden, Norton, and three or four other places; a spacious warehouse in the Close, Newcastle; a share in the "grand lease" of Gateshead and Whickham valued at £1,000; leases of coal-mines at Cross Moor, Fitbie or Fitburn Moor, Newbiggin, Hollinside, and Cocken; coals lying wrought at as many as thirteen different pits on the south side of the Tyne, and at Cocken, Fitburn Moor, and elsewhere; a salt-pan at Jarrow; a valuable stock of goods in his shop in Newcastle, three keels, two lighters, etc., the total value being appraised at £4,259 1s. 10d.

The furnishings of his house in Newcastle were of the luxurious character befitting an owner of so much valuable property. He had plate and pewter, tapestry and silk, damask and diaper (including 123 table napkins, "a towell with Adam and Eve," towels with crosses, and towels without); ten feather, and a couple of down, beds; carpets and cushions out of number. Literature was represented by a Bible, four "Chronicles," and four "other great books"; music by a pair of virginals; domestic comfort by a clock, two spinning-wheels, a bird-cage, and a looking-glass; hospitality by salt beef and brawn, cheese and butter, stock fish and salt fish, claret and sack, verges and vinegar. Knowing by the aid of this inventory the kind of clothes which Mr. Jenison wore, we can reproduce him "in his habit as he lived." He had in his house when he died, five fine cloth gowns, faced with marterons and velvet valued at £32; three grogram gowns, £8; a velvet jacket, £6 13s. 4d.; a black damask jacket, £2 13s. 4d.; and jackets of black taffeta, worsted, black cloth, and black frieze; two black leather jerkins; two satin and five other doublets; three pair of long and two pair of round breeches—truly a costly and handsome wardrobe, fit for an Alderman, Mayor, and Member of Parliament.

William Jenison (2), eldest son and heir of this right worshipful personage, married, at Grindon, the year following his father's decease, Anne, youngest daughter and co-heir of William Claxton of Wynyard. Five years later, at Michaelmas, 1593, he entered the municipal circle as Sheriff, and, in due course, became an alderman and a magistrate. In the autumn of 1599, having lost his wife a few months before, he was elected Mayor, and in that capacity had the

honour of receiving Queen Elizabeth's grant to Newcastle of "The Great Charter."

Still treading in the footsteps of his sire, Alderman Jenison became a candidate for Parliamentary honours. Queen Elizabeth summoned her last Parliament to assemble on the 27th October, 1601, and at the election in Newcastle on the 14th of that month, the ex-Mayor, entering the lists, was successful in obtaining his father's seat. Although the Commons sat but six weeks, they added to the statute-book one great historical measure—that famous 43rd of Elizabeth, "for the relief, ordering and employment of the poor," which became the foundation of our modern poor-laws. The Journals of the House for this period have not been printed—probably they do not exist—and it is not possible to state what part, if any, Alderman Jenison took in that crowning act of a long reign. Judging from later issues of the Journals he was not at all inclined to be a silent member. Having filled for two years in succession (1605 and 1606) the office of Governor of the Hostmen's Company, and, for the second time, the office of Mayor, and Governor of the Merchants' Company (1610-11), he was sent to the "addled Parliament" (so named because it produced no legislation) in 1614. While there he introduced a Bill giving the right of election to the county and city of Durham, and the town of Barnard Castle—places that then, and for long after, were under the rule of the prince-bishops, and entirely unrepresented in Parliament. The speech with which, on Saturday, the 12th May, 1614, he brought the Bill forward is not published in the Journals, but what took place is thus reported:—

"Mr. Jenison moveth for the first Reading of the Bill for Durham: Which thereupon questioned; but at length, by Order, read.

"L. 1. An Act for Knights and Burgesses to have place in Parliament, for the County Palatyne, City of Durham, and Borough, or Town of Barnards-castell, *alias*, Castle-barnard."

The Bill was referred to a committee on the last day of May, but within a week the session came to an end, and Mr. Jenison's labour, like that of many other M.P.'s, before and since, was lost. For some unexplained reason he did not resume his Parliamentary career. He had married for his second wife Mary, second daughter of Sir John Widdrington of Widdrington, and widow of Henry Grey of Morpeth, and he may have retired to his property in the county of Durham, and passed the remainder of his days in the pursuits of a country squire, like his grandfather and his uncle. He was living in 1615, and that

is all that can with certainty be asserted of him. It is possible that he was the William Jenison who filled the office of mayor in 1621, who figured conspicuously in the history of the coal trade about that date, and who in 1624 was named in a petition to the king as "William Jenison, reported to be a Commissioner of the Peace in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and that he is suspected to be popish, and backward in religion." But it is also possible that the person indicated in one or other of these transactions was William, eldest son of Ralph Jenison, the youngest of the three Yorkshire brothers, and, therefore, cousin to the ex-Mayor and M.P.

## Robert Johnson,

ARTIST.

THE short-lived genius who bore the name of Robert Johnson was a son of Thomas Johnson, joiner and cabinet-maker, at Shotley, near Whittonstall, where he was born in 1770. In boyhood he showed considerable ability in drawing, and Thomas Bewick's mother, who knew the family, induced her son and his partner, Ralph Beilby, to take the lad as an apprentice. A benevolent lady in Newcastle paid the expense of his taking advanced lessons from a drawing-master, and after a time Bewick entrusted him with the drawing of figures upon the wood for the engravers. At this class of work he became an adept. He made fair progress too in copper-plate engraving, but for wood engraving, in which his master was winning fame and honour, he had no inclination and did not practise it. At the expiration of his apprenticeship he commenced business as a copper-plate engraver at the head of Dean Street.

Shortly before he left the Bewick workshop the Marquis of Bute paid his masters a visit, and being shown a portfolio containing water-colour drawings which Johnson had painted, was so well pleased with them that he purchased selections to the value of £50. This money Messrs. Beilby and Bewick claimed the right to retain as money earned by an apprentice in the course of learning his business, of which drawing formed a part. The claim was contested in the Sheriff's Court of Newcastle on the 29th of April, 1795, and Johnson won.

In the summer of 1796, when he had been working on his own account for six months or so, Messrs. Morrison, a firm of publishers at Perth, engaged him to make drawings of nineteen portraits at Taymouth House, Kenmore, for Pinkerton's "Iconographia Scotica." He proceeded to Kenmore, and had completed fifteen of the number, when he took cold, and, on the 29th of October, died. The circumstances attending his decease, which were of a very saddening character, are detailed in Pinkerton's "Literary Correspondence."

Johnson's claim to a place among men of mark rests upon a drawing of the North Side of St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle, afterwards engraved by his quondam workfellow Charlton Nesbit, a copper-plate view of Sunderland Bridge, then newly erected, and water-colour drawings of local scenes, chiefly architectural, in the possession of eminent collectors. The engraving of the St. Nicholas picture was undertaken for the benefit of the artist's surviving parents. At that time it was considered to be a remarkable achievement, covering, as it did, fifteen by twelve inches, and being cut upon twelve separate pieces of box cramped together, and mounted on an iron plate to prevent warping. Thus ran the preliminary announcement of the undertaking:—

"In January, 1798, will be published an engraving on wood, representing a north view of St. Nicholas' Church, in Newcastle-upon-Tyne; from a highly-finished drawing of the late Robert Johnson, painter, and engraved by C. Nesbit, late pupil to Mr. T. Bewick. Size of the print, fifteen inches by twelve; being the largest engraving on wood ever attempted in the present mode. The patronage of the public is earnestly solicited to the above, being undertaken solely for the emolument of the aged parents of the deceased artist. Conditions:—1st. To be printed by Mr. Bulmer, at the Shakespeare Press, London, upon a superfine wove paper, hot pressed. 2nd. The price to subscribers will be five shillings, to be paid on delivery. Subscriptions will be received by Mr. Bulmer, Shakespeare Printing Office, Cleveland Row, London; Mr. Hill and Mr. Fairbairn, Edinburgh; Messrs. Morrison, Perth; by the different booksellers in Newcastle, York, Durham, Shields, Sunderland, Berwick-upon-Tweed; also by H. Hancock, G. Burnett, and T. Thompson, Newcastle; and by Thomas Johnson [the artist's father], Gateshead."

On the south side of Ovingham Church, not far from the memorials of the Bewicks, is a stone inscribed to Johnson's memory by friends and admirers. An engraving of it appears in Jackson's "History of Wood Engraving," with a footnote on an adjoining page, which asserts that Johnson, during his apprenticeship, did water-

colour drawings for most of the cuts in Bewick's "Fables," that their finish and accuracy of drawing are admirable—like miniature Paul Potters—and that most of them were copied on the block by William Harvey, the rest chiefly by Bewick himself.

# George Johnston,

A DISTINGUISHED NATURALIST.

DR. GEORGE JOHNSTON, founder of the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club, and one of the most indefatigable explorers into the secrets of Nature which the North of England has produced, was neither a Northumbrian by birth, nor a long resident 'twixt Tyne and Tweed. He was, nevertheless, so intimately associated with Northumberland all his life, that he may properly be included in the present series. For, shortly after his birth, which happened on the 20th of July, 1797, his parents removed from the little Berwickshire village of Sinprin, in which he first saw the light, to this side the Border, and took up their residence at Ilderton, under the shadow of Cheviot. At Ilderton his boyhood passed away; at Berwick-upon-Tweed his professional life was spent; he was therefore a Northumbrian bred, if not born; a dweller all his life within the county, though not for long on the south side of its northernmost river.

Part of his elementary education Dr. Johnston obtained at Kelso, the remainder at Berwick Grammar School. At the proper age he proceeded to Edinburgh University. There he had the advantage of lodging in the family of the Rev. Dr. Thomas McCrie, who had just before gained celebrity by the publication of the first edition of his "Life of John Knox." With them he remained till, choosing medicine as his profession, he was apprenticed to Dr. Abercrombie. Under the doctor's tuition he acquired, in 1817, the diploma of the College of Surgeons. As soon as his indentures expired, he went to London, and gave himself an extra term under the famous anatomist and collector, Joshua Brookes. Being then fully qualified for practice he returned to the North, and opened a surgery at Belford. In that place, however, there was not sufficient encouragement for a young practitioner, and, a few months later, he removed to Berwick.

While a student at the University, Dr. Johnston developed a remarkable aptitude for the study of Natural History, and as soon as

his professional work at Berwick was sufficiently established to afford him leisure, he returned to his favourite pursuit. He took his degree of M.D. in 1819; was admitted a fellow of the College of Surgeons in 1824; after that he divided his working hours between his patients and his pastime. The year 1829 was the starting-point of his scientific career. It was the year in which J. C. Loudon started the *Magazine of Natural History*, to which Dr. Johnston became a frequent contributor; the year in which the Natural History Society of Northumberland, Durham, and Newcastle-upon-Tyne was founded; the year in which Dr. Johnston made his first essay as an author.

The subject of his first book was the "Flora" of Berwick, and he followed it up two years later by a second volume, containing the "Cryptogamia." Meanwhile, he had been investigating some of the obscurer forms of animal life, found, but ill comprehended, upon the banks of the Tweed and the shores of the North Sea. To the first volume of the "Transactions" of the Northumberland Society he furnished an interesting, but unimportant, account of the anatomy of a whale stranded near his residence. To the second volume he contributed a valuable paper (read April 16th, 1832) entitled "A Descriptive Catalogue of the Recent Zoophytes found on the Coast

of North Durham"—a paper which, expanded subsequently into a "History of British Zoophytes," became a recognised text-book, and is still a standard work of reference, on the subject.

Stimulated by the success of the Northumberland Society, Dr. Johnston suggested the formation of a club to study the Natural History of Berwickshire. The members were to be those who had congenial tastes in Natural History and Archæology; the meetings were to take the form of excursions to favourite localities, where, amidst the green fields and valleys, or along the hillsides, the pursuit of science might be practically carried on, while, without formality, the members could, in pleasant friendly intercourse, communicate to each other what they were doing in their favourite branches, and might afterwards place upon record, in some simple way, any discoveries which might be made. Dr. Johnston's suggestion was adopted; in September, 1831, the club was formally begun; its success was assured from the first; the good work it has accomplished may be seen in the eleven portly volumes which record its proceedings. For a while it stood alone, but in course of time its influence spread to other localities. One of its members, Ralph Carr-Ellison, started, upon a similar basis, the Tyneside Naturalists' Field Club; another, Sir Thomas Tancred, established a like organisation in Gloucestershire, and, now, all over the United Kingdom are Societies based on the model of Dr. Johnston's experimental club in Berwickshire.

To the publications of his newly-formed social organisation Dr. Johnston contributed, in 1836, a further instalment of his treatise on Zoophytes—a description of the Berwickshire species. In 1842 he published a "History of British Sponges and Lithophytes"—a work that may fairly be described as unique, and, for the time, exhaustive. At the period when those books were written, students of the lower forms of life upon the earth were few and isolated, and channels of publicity for their researches were scant and meagre. Dr. Johnston's publications were among the first systematic works that were devoted to the organisms they describe; they opened out a new field of research and exploration, into which students of Nature throughout the kingdom, and nowhere more thoroughly than in the North of England, plunged with ever-increasing wonder and delight.

Dr. Johnston's researches were not confined to the zoophytes and lithophytes. He investigated the annellides, nereides, mollusca, and indeed nearly all the forms of invertebrate life. Upon these he wrote copiously in the *Edinburgh Philosophical Journal*, the *Annals*

*of Natural History*, the *Magazine of Zoology and Botany*, and in the volumes of his own club. In 1850 appeared, under a collected form, a series of his magazine articles on the mollusca, entitled "An Introduction to Conchology, or Elements of the Natural History of Molluscous Animals." Many of his papers embrace descriptions of fish and other inhabitants of the sea; others deal with the flora and the fauna of the district. For in his daily rounds as a doctor, and his wanderings as a student of Nature, nothing that was curious and interesting escaped his notice. It was his observant eye that first detected in 1838, in the lake of Dunse Castle, that pestilent water-weed, the anacharis, which, brought from Canada shortly before, rapidly spread itself all over the kingdom, and has been ever since the plague of lakes, and fish-ponds, and sluggish rivers. The last book that he published was the first volume of a work on the "Natural History of the Eastern Borders" (the botanical portion), a book which he regarded with fatherly affection.

Dr. Johnston was one of the founders of the Ray Society for the publication of works on Natural History, and officiated as one of its secretaries till his death. He received the honour of election as fellow and member of many learned societies, and from the University of Aberdeen the honorary degree of LL.D.

Amidst all his labours, professional, literary, and scientific, Dr. Johnston found time to take part in public life. For many years he was an alderman and magistrate, and three times—in 1837, 1840, and 1846—he was elected Mayor of Berwick. During the Highland Society's Show in 1841 he discharged his official duties with so much spirit and success, that his fellow-citizens presented him with a handsome service of plate, in testimony of the manner in which he had sustained the honour of the ancient town. For nearly forty years he was one of the medical officers of Berwick Dispensary.

Dr. Johnston died on the 30th of July, 1855. His widow, whose name descends to posterity linked with a distinct and elegant species of coraline, the Plumularia Catharina, and whose drawings illustrated most of his early books and papers, outlived him sixteen years, and died in 1871. His only son entered the Royal Navy. One of his daughters married Dr. P. W. Maclagan (brother of the Archbishop of York), who succeeded him in his medical practice. Another daughter, Mrs. Barwell Carter, resides in the old Berwick house, the Anchorage, Woolmarket, wherein the doctor lived, and has published a selection from her father's extensive correspondence.

# The Brothers Joicey,

JAMES, JOHN, AND EDWARD.

AMONG men who have realised to their fullest extent what the late Mr. John Clayton, Town Clerk of Newcastle, was accustomed to designate as "the golden dreams of the coal trade," and who have used their affluence for noble ends, a foremost place must be given to the brothers Joicey.

James Joicey, born in 1807, the eldest of five sons and two daughters of George Joicey of Backworth, was the founder of the family fortunes. Having received a sound mercantile education, he chose the profession of a colliery viewer, or, as it is now termed, mining engineer, and served his apprenticeship with the owners of the pits at South Hetton. When he was out of his time, joining hands with Joseph Smith, railway engineer, he undertook the construction of a new line to Hartlepool, assisted in the winning of a pit at South Hetton, and laid down a line from Hetton to Seaham Harbour. In 1837, in conjunction with Mr. Smith, he leased a portion of the coal royalty of South Tanfield, and in less than a twelvemonth sank the Oxhill pit, and thus began his career as a coal-owner.

After a brief partnership Mr. Smith retired from the firm, and Mr. Joicey came into full possession. He took up his abode within easy distance of the colliery, and devoted to its development all the energies of a sanguine temperament and a strong will. As time went on, and his affairs prospered, he extended his operations. Oxhill pit was followed in 1844 by those of East Tanfield and Twizel; in 1855 by Alma and Second; and in 1857 by Hand and Hold. Before he died, James Joicey and his brothers John and Edward, who had joined him in partnership, forming the firm of James Joicey & Co., were the owners of ten flourishing collieries, yielding wealth to their projectors, and giving employment to hundreds of well-housed miners and their families.

A writer in the *Newcastle Weekly Chronicle*, who, presumably, knew James Joicey well, describes him as "a man full of thought, who practised what he felt; scrupulous and exacting in business, he

was imperious in the faithful discharge of engagements; though placid in temper, nothing was more offensive to him than negligence; precise and punctual, he insisted upon similar nicety from all. He had the best men at command, from miners to overmen, viewers to managers; he paid those liberally who did their duty, and studiously forwarded their interests, wishes, and comfort in domestic affairs. Though willing at all times to give advice, to administer consolation to his employés, to be at their beck whenever required, James Joicey was not the man to be made a convenience of. His well-known decision of character kept at bay those who might presume too far in soliciting favours, and then turning them to bad account. A pioneer and administrator of the highest stamp, he was one who made the best of everything within his boundaries. Manly independence, shrewdness, and honesty, were his watchwords. If he laboured not with hands, he was paramount in all that related to his undertakings, and spared no zeal in training others who might succeed him in the firm."

Besides his extensive colliery undertakings, James Joicey, in conjunction with George, his third brother, established the engineering firm of J. & G. Joicey, Forth Banks, Newcastle. George Joicey died in 1856, leaving issue the present Sir James Joicey, Bart., M.P., and Jacob Gowland Joicey, now head of the firm.

James Joicey married, late in life, a sister of Dr. Watson, of Burnopfield, by whom he had two sons (James and John George) and a daughter. He died suddenly in the offices of the firm upon the Quayside, Newcastle, on the 7th of May, 1863, aged 56, and was buried at Tanfield. In the chancel of Tanfield Church is a memorial brass inscribed:—

"In affectionate remembrance of James Joicey, who died 7th May, 1863, this church was restored in 1864, by John and Edward Joicey, only surviving brothers."

John Joicey, the fourth of the five brothers, was born at Tynemouth, in 1817. It was at first intended that he should be a medical practitioner, and for that purpose he studied for some time with a surgeon in Newcastle. But, showing a distaste for the medical profession, and a strong bias towards the coal trade, he was apprenticed to his brother James. Having passed through the various grades of colliery practice, he became a partner in the firm, and assisted in its development. When its success was well assured he began to take an interest in what is called public life. The

volunteer movement first attracted his sympathies; he assisted to officer a local corps, and, rising in command, became eventually Lieut.-Colonel of the 1st Administrative Battalion of the Durham Rifles. Indeed, in the later years of his life, he was better known as "Colonel" Joicey than by any other designation. Placed upon the Commission of the Peace, he was soon afterwards made a Deputy-Lieutenant, and, in 1878, appointed High Sheriff of the county of Durham. His high position and commanding influence in the coal trade gave him a seat in the River Tyne Commission as one of the representatives of the coal-owners; finally, he had the good fortune to win a seat in Parliament as one of the members for the Northern Division of the county of Durham. The contest came off on the 9th of April, 1880, the candidates being Colonel Joicey and Mr. (now Sir) Charles Mark Palmer, Liberals, and Sir George Elliott, Conservative. Colonel Joicey headed the poll with 6233 votes, Mr. Palmer came next with 5901 votes, and Sir George Elliott last with 5092 votes. Generous and characteristic was the speech which the new Liberal member made on the declaration of the poll. "The electors of North Durham," said Colonel Joicey, "have this day achieved a great victory. You have completed the Durham Thirteen. I beg to thank every one of you for the kindness and support you have given to the Liberal cause. I have now attained the object I had in view when I came forward to contest this seat. Gentlemen, you have indeed won a great victory; but now that that is done we must not have one word of ill-feeling against our opponents. We have been elected members for North Durham, not by any particular section, but we are representatives of the whole Division."

Outside of his commercial and public life, Colonel Joicey was known far and wide for his open-handed and unostentatious benevolence. Having acquired the estate of Newton, near Stocksfield, and erected upon it a magnificent family residence, he rebuilt the church there at his own expense. To a legacy of £2000 which his brother Edward had bequeathed to the Natural History Society of Newcastle, he added £12,000, out of which he purchased the leasehold interest in, and presented as a freehold gift, the site upon which the Hancock Museum was erected. In conjunction with the same brother, Edward, he restored the church at Tanfield, built new churches at Stanley and West Pelton, and contributed freely to the construction of Nonconformist chapels, and the maintenance of

schools, reading-rooms, and other educational agencies in the district over which the Joicey collieries extend.

Colonel Joicey married, in 1867, Rose, daughter of the Rev. John Ewen, of Hopekirk, Roxburghshire, by whom he had four daughters. He died on the 15th of August, 1881, and was buried in Newton churchyard, leaving as one of his executors, and successor in the management of the extensive collieries and shipping operations of the firm, his nephew, Sir James Joicey, Bart., M.P.

Edward Joicey, the youngest of the five brothers, and the junior partner in the firm of James Joicey & Co., was born in 1824. He was a premium apprentice with Messrs. Robert Stephenson & Co., and having served his time as a mechanical engineer entered upon a commercial life under the superintendence of his brother James. His health did not permit him to take so active a part in the affairs of the firm as his elder brothers, but in the early stages of their joint career he was a prominent man upon the Quayside of Newcastle, as the representative of the "fitting" or vending department, now, and for many years, controlled by Mr. Joseph Thompson, J.P., of North Dene, Gateshead. He was a genial, kind-hearted man of business, who, in his later years, surrendered himself to the innocent pleasures of country life, and the exercise of unbounded charity. Some of the deeds of beneficence in which he acted with his brother, the Colonel, have been named in a previous paragraph; among his own were the erection and endowment of St. Helen's Church, Gateshead Fell, the restoration of Greenhead Church, near Haltwhistle, and the establishment of St. Bede's and Christ Church Mission Rooms in Gateshead. He erected Whinney House, Gateshead, for a town residence, and purchased the beautiful estate of Blenkinsopp Hall for a summer resort; and dying on the 2nd of September, 1879, aged 55, was buried in Jesmond Cemetery. By his marriage with Miss Clifton of Staindrop, he had issue one son, Edward Joicey, now of Blenkinsopp Hall, and two daughters.

END OF VOL. II.

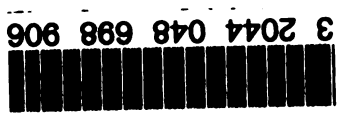
ILL record updated to IN PROCESS
Record 32 of 140

ILL pe
CAN YOU SUPPLY ? YES NO COND FUTURE
:ILL: 6229403 :Borrower: DRB
:Status: IN PROCESS 20030507
:OCLC: 12994997 :Source: FS5ILL
:Lender: AUM,AUM,*HLS,PUL,PUL
:CALLNO:
:AUTHOR: Welford, Richard, 1836-1919.
:TITLE: Men of mark 'twixt Tyne and T
:IMPRINT: London, Walter Scott, 1895.
:VERIFIED: WorldCat Desc: 3 v. Type: Bo
:PATRON: Rollison, Laura

:SHIP TO: Interlibrary Loan,Dartmouth
6025 Baker-Berry Library
Wentworth Street
Hanover
N.H. 03755

:BILL TO: Same

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.
A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the



3 2044 048 698 906

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

NOV 7 197[illegible]

WIDENER

JUL 30 1998

CANCELLED

WI

MA

CA